Text Flying With In The Book

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY
OU_150923
UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY

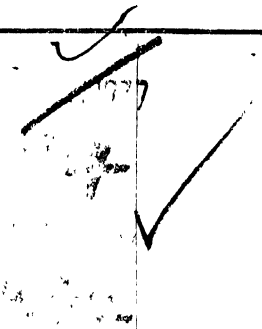
491.43 /S15E 42102
Saksena, Baburam
Evolution of awadh. 1937.

Call No. 491.43/S15E Accession No. 4.2102

Author Saksena, Baburam

Title Evolution of awadhi 1937.

This book should be returned on or before the date last marked below.



EVOLUTION OF AWADHI

(A BRANCH OF HINDI)

BY

BABURAM SAKSENA, M.A., D.LITT.,

READER, DEPARTMENT OF SANSKRIT AND PRAKRIT LANGUAGES,
UNIVERSITY OF ALLAHABAD.

MUNSHI RAM MANOHAR LAL
Orient[illegible] Foreign Book Sellers
P.B 1165, [illegible] Sarak, DELHI-6

ALLAHABAD
THE INDIAN PRESS, LTD.
1937

First Edition]

Printed and published by
K. Mittra, at The Indian Press, Ltd.,
Allahabad.

To

Professor R. L. Turner

with

gratitude, affection and devotion

from

his first pupil

of

Indian Linguistics

PREFACE

This work is based upon a Thesis submitted for the degree of Doctor of Letters of the University of Allahabad in 1931 and approved by a Board of Examiners comprising of Sir George A. Grierson, Professors R. L. Turner, Jules Bloch, S. K. Chatterji and Dr. A. C. Woolner. It was hoped that the University of Allahabad would publish it but owing to financial stringency the then Vice-Chancellor, in spite of his wishes, could not find funds for it. In the circumstances it was kind of The Indian Press, Ltd., to agree to print and publish it.

The main additions to the thesis are (*a*) the origin of sounds in Part I, (*b*) the appendices giving unpublished texts of Early and Modern Awadhi, (*c*) the index of words, and (*d*) the map. I hope these will prove useful.

The transliteration alphabet of the International Phonetic Association has been adopted for transcribing such modern languages as I know intimately and that of the Royal Asiatic Society for the rest. The current abbreviations found in works of Linguistics have been used in this book also.

It remains for me now to acknowledge my gratitude to those who helped me in the preparation of this work. My revered *guru* Professor R. L. Turner planned this work for me in 1921 at Benares and supervised its completion. I received my first and last lessons in Linguistics at his feet and all that I know of the subject is entirely due to him. I am also deeply beholden to the Professor for his kind permission to dedicate this work to him. Professor S. K. Chatterji did me the favour of looking through the manuscript before it went to the press ;

and he made many useful suggestions. Professor Jules Bloch wrote the encouraging Foreword. Mahamahopadhyaya Dr. Ganganatha Jha and Professor P.K. Acharya gave all facilities and encouragement. Dr. Dhirendra Varma kindly saw most of the proofs with me and several improvements in the arrangement of matter are due to his suggestions. Professor Amaranatha Jha looked into the proof of the Foreword and Mr. Bhagwat Dayal corrected the first proof of the Introduction. Mr. Lalta Prasad Sukul collected three specimens of Modern Awadhi and Mr. Siddhanath Choube helped me in the preparation of the statistics of the frequency of pronouns. Mr. Mata Prasad Gupta translated two texts and Mr. Udai Narain Tewari prepared the index. Mr. Shiva Prasad Singh prepared the sketch of the map. To all these kind friends my best thanks are due.

While in London in 1929-30, I received instruction and advice from Professors Daniel Jones and E. W. Scripture and from Mr. A. Lloyd James, Mr. Stephen Jones, Mr. N. B. Jopson and Dr. H. W. Bailey. I am grateful to all these teachers.

This work has been my companion for the last seventeen years ; I am not unaware of its deficiencies. However, I dare submit it to the world of linguists only in the hope that it will receive their kindness and indulgence.

śivās te panthānaḥ santu

December 1st, 1937. B. R. SAKSENA

FOREWORD

It is gratifying to see Linguistic science settle down and prosper once more in India, its birth-place. It is a well-known fact that grammar, which had been cultivated in Europe with a view to fixing the best usage in each language, did not become a science, capable of universal acceptance and application, until India revealed Sanskrit to the world. Not that Sanskrit was in itself a sufficient revelation: Bopp, it is true, traced all the consequences of the relationship, more than once recognised by others before him, between Sanskrit and the Indo-European languages of Europe, and thus constituted the new science of Comparative Grammar. Earlier Rask had already established the relationship between the Germanic languages and Greek, Latin, Lettic and Slavonic.

All the same, it was the revelation of Sanskrit that permitted the immense and rapid progress of historical Linguistics. But in spite of the numerous instructive archaisms of Sanskrit and clear gradation of sounds and the mechanism of forms in that language, how much less benefit should we have derived from this discovery had we not had the wonderful analysis of these facts by the Sanskrit Grammarians themselves, an analysis a knowledge of which was to lay the foundation not only of comparative and historical grammar, but of a science of general and universal validity? See a powerful mind like Volney's when in 1795 it tackles the problem of the "Simplification of Oriental languages" in a treatise (in recognition of which he was elected an honorary member of the Asiatic Society of Bengal). He took up the subject again in his book on 'the European alphabet applied to Asiatic languages.' There we witness his painful efforts

to lay the foundation of Phonetics. He discovers that a vowel, as distinguished from a mere glottal sound, is articulated "in and by means of the cavities of the mouth and nose" and that a consonant is "the contact of two or several parts of the mouth, made perceptible to the ear by the muffled sound of its breaking away." What would he have said, if he had been told that two thousand years before his time these problems had already been solved and thoroughly investigated, that for instance, consonants were actually called contacts—*sparśa?* Without calling to mind all the subtleties of the Prātiśākhyas, all we need remember is the order of the Sanskrit alphabet, where the sounds are placed according to the degree of aperture and the place and mode of articulation, in order to realize that Indian science supplied the one necessary basis for the constitution of that phonetic science that Volney dreamed of, though with still purely practical purposes. In any case it already provided us with the model of a precise classification, enabling European linguists to understand much better the evolution of languages, which was the object of their first researches.

This is not the place for a survey of this research work, but we can sketch the way in which Europe, after having received Sanskrit grammar as a wonderful present from India, gave her back historical Linguistics in exchange. The first application of the method to Indian languages was the "Essay on Pali" by Burnouf and Lassen (1826) in which the latter specified the circumstances of the transition from Sanskrit to Middle Indian. Strangely enough, a roundabout way had to be taken before we arrived at modern Aryan. According to the testimony of Beames himself, it was the initiative of Bishop Caldwell in connection with Dravidian languages (1856) that suggested to his mind the idea of turning to account his perfect fluency in four different languages and his fair knowledge of three others, to draw up a general survey of them. The study of the Indian branch

of Indo-European languages far-outdistanced as it was, thanks to Grimm, by the researches in the Germanic family, was not then very much behind the study of Keltic, Slavonic and Latin.

Just as with Europe, it was then a general survey that opened the way, the study of particular languages came only afterwards. In this respect Dravidian lost the lead, as Kittel's grammar of Canara was published only in the 20th century. In the Aryan domain, thanks once more to the help of native grammarians, progress was not slow. As early as 1872 Trumpp's Sindhi was published, a descriptive grammar with comparative illustrations ; in 1880 Hoernle gave in one book the thorough description of a modern dialect together with its comparative grammar. The method had now taken root in India and was yielding good fruit when applied by Europeans.

Bnt what the Europeans were able to do by adding to their reading knowledge the first-hand practice of native languages, would not the Indians themselves do the same by grafting on their intimate experience of local usage the newly revised method of which the Europeans showed them the use?

The Great Bhandarkar in his fine Wilson Lectures (1877) even before the publication of Beames' volume concerning the Verb, was the first to endeavour to show the development of Indo-Aryan from Vedic down to the present-day languages.

After him perhaps for some time, at any rate, it was not so useful to treat this subject again * as to get a deeper insight into the principal languages. From this point of view the most important Indian contribution is Professor

*Mention should be made here of Professor Bloch's own brilliant work, l'Indo-Aryen (Paris, 1934), a landmark in the field of Indian Linguistics. Obviously the Professor's modesty has prevented him from making a reference to it.

—B. R. Saksena.

Chatterji's "Origin and Development of Bengali Language," a book too well-known for me to characterize it and give it here the praise it deserves.

Here is now Dr. Saksena's contribution. The language he describes is not so illustrious as Bengali or Marathi. Awadhi is but one of the Eastern Hindi dialects; but let not our ignorance blind us to its importance. If we annex Bagheli to it, as Linguistic science bids us to do, Awadhi is the language of a people numbering more than twenty millions and a half. This number is a little less than that of those who use Polish, but definitely more than European Spanish or Dutch; in India it is almost as large as Telugu can boast of, and more than Marathi or Tamil; still all these languages are among the twenty most extensive in the world according to Prof. Tesnière's calculations. Moreover Awadhi glories in a fine literature, though not in the present generation, as Dr. Saksena explains in this treatise. As is well-known the renowned Rāma-charitamānasa of Tulsī Dās was written in an old form of this language. It may be added that this work bears a date, which is extremely important to the philologist; and that some manuscripts are almost contemporary with the work. An earlier record still is the Padmāwat of Muhammad Jāisī, a text which besides its being dated, has the advantage of avoiding Sanskritisms; neither does it excessively Islamise its diction. A language that possesses such masterpieces and that is able to resist victoriously the encroachments of Hindustani in current usage was well worth studying for its own sake.

But it prescribed to the historian a special difficulty which was to prevent him—fortunately to my mind—from following the plan already used by other scholars for Marathi or Bengali.

The documents in Awadhi are not of the same kind in different periods: we have just seen that there is no written Awadhi today. Now, the description of a spoken

language entails special problems and imposes duties of its own.

First of all, the scrupulous precise phonetic notation, which is not quite so necessary when the spelling gives useful hints as regards its previous stages, now becomes indispensable if only to avoid an unconscious imitation of neighbouring literary languages. But this phonetic accuracy demands special training; here again Europe gave the clue, the teachings of grammar having been elucidated there by the results of physiology and acoustics. Here the analysis of sounds was carried out with a precision far superior to the powers of hearing, thanks to the artificial palate, which Oakley Coates had borrowed from the dentists (1871) and to the sound-registering instruments borrowed by Rosapelly (1876) from the physiologists who had more or less adopted them from the 18th-century meteorologists.

To master these methods, Dr. Saksena undertook a visit to Europe and devoted himself to a course of tedious laboratory work. The results of this can be seen in the photographs illustrating this book. This is the first time that the historical treatment of an Indian language has been supported by a description carried out according to the graphic method. It is desirable that particularly in this point Dr. Saksena should find followers, and that the Universities in India might offer facilities to their members for a voyage to Europe to enable them to work on these lines.

The description, specially the graphic description, of an unwritten living language, cannot be made in a general way, the whole study must be based on a particular speech, if not on an individual speaker. Dr. Saksena started from his own dialect, which was the right thing to do. His former study of Lakhīmpurī, which he had done under Professor Turner's guidance was already conspicuous by qualities of order and precision and contained important remarks. Later on, thanks to the consent of the Allahabad University, to

whom we should all be grateful for this, he was able to explore the other dialects and prepare the still unpublished monographs which served as a basis for the present work. He thus prepared himself for the use of the geographical method, which is one of the most recent achievements of European Linguistics.

The main originality of Dr. Saksena's work lies in the accurate and complete description of both the ancient and modern stages of Awadhi. The historical explanations have been assigned a subordinate position, and rightly so, as the connection of Awadhi with Indo-Aryan in general renders useless the repetition of theories which have already been propounded in the well-known and authoritative works on the subject. In a few places Dr. Saksena has left a few facts unexplained which, in the present stage of our knowledge, are impossible to be tackled. Dr. Saksena has, in such cases, shown the facts and stated the problems connected with them in a clear light. This in itself constitutes great progress.

Dr. Saksena, in the following pages, gives evidence of a close, varied and comprehensive study of his own language and of promise of studies on parallel lines. It is with great pleasure that I underline the merits and novelty of the great work which Dr. Saksena has produced.

JULES BLOCH

CONTENTS

Page

Preface i
Foreword iii
Map

INTRODUCTION

Section

1. Name of the language 1
2. Linguistic boundaries of Awadhi ... 2
3. Characteristics of Awadhi 5
4. Origin of Awadhi... 6
5. Importance of Awadhi 9
6. Materials for the study of Awadhi ... 11
7. Dialects of Awadhi... 19
8. Formation of Awadhi 19
9. Vocabulary of Awadhi 19
10. Orthography of Awadhi 20

Part I

AWADHI PHONETICS

CHAPTER I

INDIVIDUAL SOUNDS

11. Sound-system—Early Awadhi ... 23
12. ,, ,, Modern Awadhi ... 24
13. Mutes—Early Awadhi 26
14—33. Modern Awadhi—Plosives and Affricates—
p, b, t, d, ṭ, ḍ, k, g, ph, bfi, th, dfi, ṭh, ḍfi, kh, gfi, c, ɟ, ch, ɟfi 28

Section		Page
34.	General Notes on the Plosives ...	32
35—54.	Origin of **k, kh, g, gh, c, ch, j, jh, ṭ, ṭh, ḍ, ḍh, t, th, d, dh, p, ph, b, bh** ...	33
55.	Nasals—Early Awadhi	42
56—62.	,, —Modern Awadhi	43
63.	General Notes on Nasals	44
64—66.	Origin of Nasals	45
67.	Early Awadhi semi-vowels	47
68.	Modern Awadhi **j**	47
69.	,, ,, **w**	48
70.	,, ,, **r**	48
71.	,, ,, **ṛ**	49
72.	,, ,, **rh**	,,
73.	,, ,, **ṛh**	,,
74.	,, ,, **l**	,,
75.	,, ,, **lh**	,,
76.	Origin of **j** (y) and **w** (v)	50
77-78.	,, **r, rh**	,,
79.	,, **ṛ** (r)	51
80.	,, **ṛh** (ḍh)	52
81-82.	,, **l, lh**	52
83.	Early Awadhi Sibilants and *h*	53
84—86.	Modern Awadhi Sibilants and Aspirate ...	54
87.	Origin of **s**	54
88.	,, ,, **h, h**	56
89.	Early Awadhi Simple Vowels	57
90—100.	Modern Awadhi Simple Vowels ...	58
101-2.	General Notes on the Vowels	61
103—12.	Origin of Vowels	63
113—19.	Whispered Vowels	74
120.	Early Awadhi Nasalised Vowels ...	77
121-22.	Modern Awadhi Nasalised Vowels ...	77
124-25.	Origin of Nasalised Vowels	79

Chapter II

VOWEL COMBINATIONS

Section		Page
126.	In Early Awadhi	81
127.	In Modern Awadhi	82
128.	Origin	84

Chapter III

129—31.	The Syllable	85

Chapter IV

132—35.	The Word	87

Chapter V

137-38.	The Accent	91

Chapter VI

139—56.	Assimilation	93

Chapter VII

157-58.	The Sentence	99

Chapter VIII

159—61.	The Intonation	101

Chapter IX

162-64.	Other Characteristics	103

GRAPHIC ILLUSTRATIONS

Inscriptions from Kymograph Machine
Palatograms
Drawings of the palate
Charts

Part II

HISTORICAL GRAMMAR OF AWADHI

Chapter I

NOUNS

Section		Page
165.	Stem in Early Awadhi	107
166.	,, ,, Modern Awadhi	108
167—69.	Forms of the Stem	110
170—74.	Gender	112
175-76.	Number	115
177—86.	Origin : Stem, Gender and Number ...	115
187—89.	Case in Early Awadhi	120
190-91.	Terminations of Cases in Early Awadhi ...	124
192—96.	Cases in Modern Awadhi	126
197-98.	Terminations of Cases in Modern Awadhi ...	129
199—202.	Cases other than Direct and Oblique in Modern Awadhi	130
203—15.	Origin of Cases	132

Chapter II

ADJECTIVES

216.	General Observations	137
217.	Gender and Number in Early Awadhi ...	137
218—21.	Gender and Number in Modern Awadhi ...	138
222.	Stem in Early Awadhi	142
223-24.	Stem in Modern Awadhi	143
225.	Degrees of Comparison	144
226.	Origin	145

Chapter III

NUMERALS

227-28.	Cardinals	146
229.	Ordinals in Early Awadhi	152
230.	Ordinals in Modern Awadhi	153

Section		Page
231.	Multiplicatives, etc.	154
232.	Origin	155

Chapter IV

PRONOUNS

233.	Introductory	157
234.	First Person in Early Awadhi ...	157
235.	First Person in Modern Awadhi ...	162
236.	Origin	163
237.	Second Person in Early Awadhi ...	163
238.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	169
239.	Origin	170
240.	Third Person in Early Awadhi ...	170
241.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	178
242.	Origin	179
243.	Proximate Demonstrative in Early Awadhi	181
244.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi	184
245.	Origin	185
246.	Relative and Correlative in Early Awadhi	185
247.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi	189
248.	Origin	191
249.	Interrogative in Early Awadhi ...	191
250.	,, in Modern Awadhi ...	193
251.	Origin	194
252.	Reflexive in Early Awadhi	195
253.	,, in Modern Awadhi	198
254.	Origin	199
255.	*aura* in Early Awadhi	200
256.	*kōī* ,, ,, ...	201
257.	*saba* ,, ,, ...	203
258.	**Aur** in Modern Awadhi	204
259.	**koiz** ,, ,, ...	204
260.	**sAb** ,, ,, ...	205
261.	Origin of Indefinite Pronouns ...	205

Section		Page
262.	Compound Pronouns in Early Awadhi ...	206
263.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	206
264.	Pronominal Adjectives in Early Awadhi ...	207
265.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi	209
266.	Origin	210

Chapter V

POSTPOSITIONS

267—70.	Introductory	212
271.	Accusative-Dative in Early Awadhi ...	215
272—74.	Accusative-Dative in Modern Awadhi ...	216
275.	Genitive in Early Awadhi	217
276.	,, in Modern Awadhi	220
277.	Origin of Accusative-Dative-Genitive ...	221
278.	Instrumental-Ablative in Early Awadhi ...	222
279.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi...	224
280.	Origin	224
281.	Locative in Early Awadhi	225
282.	,, in Modern Awadhi	226
283.	Origin	227
284.	Other Postpositions—Use	227
285.	,, in Early Awadhi ...	227
286.	,, in Modern Awadhi ...	229
287.	Origin	230

Chapter VI

VERBS

288-89.	Root	232
290.	Auxiliary in Early Awadhi	233
291.	,, in Modern Awadhi... ...	234
292.	Origin	237
293.	Tenses	238
294-95.	Participles in Early Awadhi	239
296-97.	,, in Modern Awadhi ...	247

Section		Page
298—300.	Origin	252
301.	Present Indicative in Early Awadhi ...	254
302.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	257
303.	Origin	258
304.	Past Indicative	260
305.	Future Indicative in Early Awadhi ...	261
306.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	264
307.	Origin	265
308.	Imperative in Early Awadhi	266
309.	,, in Modern Awadhi ...	268
310.	Origin	268
311.	Future Imperative in Early Awadhi ...	269
312.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	269
313.	Origin	270
314.	Past Conditional in Early Awadhi ...	271
315.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	272
316.	Origin	273
317.	Present Imperfect Indicative in Early Awadhi	273
318.	,, ,, ,, in Modern Awadhi	274
319.	Past Imp. Indicative in Early Awadhi ...	275
320.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi...	275
321.	Future Imperfect Indicative	276
322.	Imperfect Imperative in Early Awadhi ...	276
323.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi...	276
324.	Imperfect Future Imperative	276
325.	Present Imperfect Conditional ...	277
326.	Present Perfect Indicative in Early Awadhi	277
327.	,, ,, ,, in Modern Awadhi	277
328.	Past Perfect Indicative in Early Awadhi...	278
329.	,, ,, ,, in Modern Awadhi	279
330.	Future Perfect Indicative	279
331.	Perfect Imperative	279
332.	Perfect Future Imperative	280
333.	Past Perfect Conditional	280

Section		Page
334.	Origin of periphrastic tenses	280
335.	Absolutive in Early Awadhi	280
336.	,, in Modern Awadhi ...	281
337.	Origin	282
338.	Verbal Noun in Early Awadhi ...	282
339.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	283
340.	Origin	284
341.	Noun of Agency in Early Awadhi ...	285
342.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	285
343.	Origin	286
344.	Phonetic Rules for Conjugation in Early Awadhi	286
345.	,, ,, ,, in Modern Awadhi	287
346.	Causative in Early Awadhi	288
347.	,, in Modern Awadhi ...	288
348.	Origin	290
349.	Passive in Early Awadhi	290
350.	,, in Modern Awadhi	293
351—53.	Origin	295
354.	Compound Verbs in Early Awadhi ...	296
355.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	298
356.	Origin	300

Chapter VII

ADVERBS

357.	General Observations	301
358.	Adverbs of Time in Early Awadhi ...	301
359.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	301
360.	Origin	302
361.	Adverbs of Place in Early Awadhi ...	303
362.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	304
363.	Origin	305
364.	Adverbs of Manner in Early Awadhi ...	306
365.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	306

Section		Page
366.	Origin	307
367.	Miscellaneous Adverbs in Early Awadhi ...	307
368.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	308
369.	Comparison of Adverbs	308
370.	Origin	308

Chapter VIII

CONJUNCTIONS

371.	In Early Awadhi	310
372.	In Modern Awadhi	310
373.	Origin	311

Chapter IX

EMPHATIC FORMS

Sections		Pages
374.	Two varieties	313
375.	Inclusive Forms in Early Awadhi ...	313
376.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	314
377.	Origin	317
378.	Restrictive Forms in Early Awadhi ...	318
379.	,, ,, in Modern Awadhi ...	319
380.	Origin	321
381—84.	Repetition, etc.	322
385.	Origin	324

Chapter X

WORD ORDER

386-87.	In Early Awadhi	325
388—98.	In Modern Awadhi	327
399.	Origin	332

APPENDIX I

SPECIMENS OF EARLY AWADHI UNPUBLISHED TEXTS

(With English Translation)

(*a*) Awadha Bilāsa 338
(*b*) Prēma Pragāsa 381
(*c*) Gura Anyāsa 393
(*d*) Yūsuf Zulēkhā 404

APPENDIX II

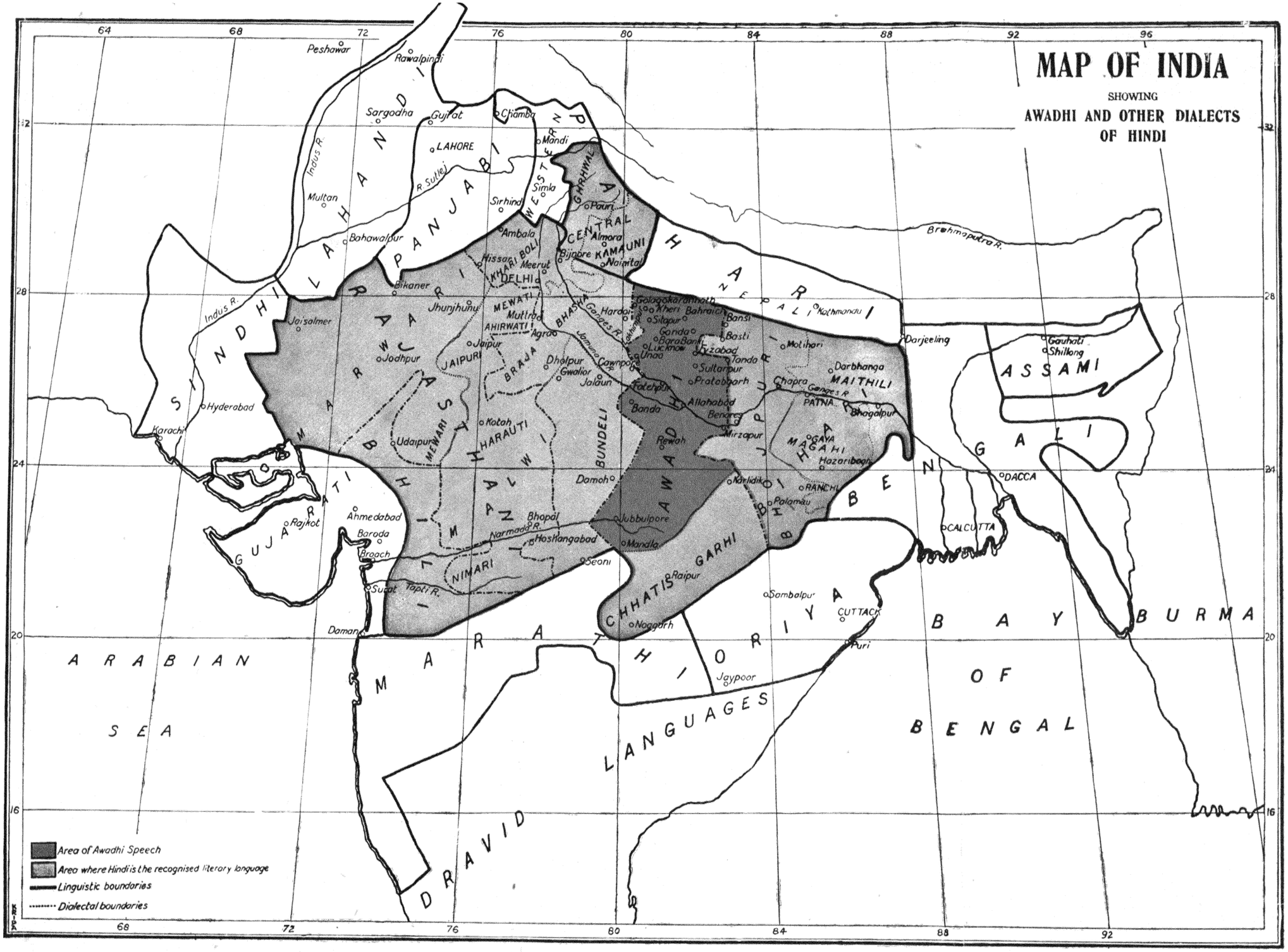
MODERN AWADHI TEXTS

(With English Translation)

(*a*) **gulgulaːwaːliː kʌthaː** 432
(*b*) **chʌndə** 438
(*c*) **cwaːrʌn ki kʌthaː** 442
(*d*) **ʈhʌkurʌn ki bʌfiaːduriː** ... 446
(*e*) **ãdfiʌre kį beimaːniː** 450
(*f*) **lʌrikini ki pʌti-seːwaː** 452
(*g*) **guruː kifieː kə phʌl** 456
(*h*) **baːmfiʌn ʌu bokʌraː keːr kʌthaː** ... 458
(*i*) **sijaːr ʌu sijaːrin** 462
(*j*) **baːbaː ki kʌraːmʌt** 464
(*k*) **kʌcefiəriː maː bʌjaːn** 468
(*l*) **mukʌdimaː kʌi haːl** 470
(*m*) **bʌmfiʌniː kʌi bʌjaːn** 472
(*n*) **bfiikhaːriː baːmfiʌn kʌj kʌthaː** ... 474

INDEX

Part (1) of Sanskrit, Prakrit, Persian and Early Awadhi words 479
Part (2) of Modern Awadhi and Hindustani words 527


MAP OF INDIA
SHOWING
AWADHI AND OTHER DIALECTS
OF HINDI
Area of Awadhi Speech
Area where Hindi is the recognised literary language
Linguistic boundaries
Dialectal boundaries
ARABIAN SEA
BAY OF BENGAL
DRAVID LANGUAGES
MARATHI
ORIYA
BENGALI
ASSAMI
MAITHILI
MAGAHI
BHOJPURI
AWADHI
CHHATISGARHI
BUNDELI
KANAUJI
BRAJA BHASHA
HARAUTI
MEWARI
MARWARI
JAIPURI
AHIRWATI
MEWATI
KHARI BOLI
PAHARI
CENTRAL
WESTERN
PUNJABI
LAHANDI
SINDHI
GUJARATI
NEPALI
Peshawar
Rawalpindi
Sargodha
Gujrat
Chamba
Mandi
LAHORE
Multan
Bahawalpur
Sirhind
Simla
Pauri
Almora
Bijnore
Naini Tal
Ambala
Meerut
DELHI
Bikaner
Jhunjhunu
Jaisalmer
Jodhpur
Jaipur
Agra
Hardoi
Gonda
Basti
Lucknow
Unao
Sultanpur
Pratabgarh
Allahabad
Banda
Rewah
Mirzapur
Benares
Jaunpur
Gwalior
Jalaun
Kanpur
Dholpur
Kotah
Udaipur
Hyderabad
Karachi
Ahmedabad
Rajkot
Baroda
Broach
Surat
Tapti R.
Damoh
Jubbulpore
Mandla
Hoshangabad
Narmada R.
Bhopal
Seoni
Raipur
Sambalpur
Nagpur
Daman
Jaypoor
CUTTACK
Puri
Kanker
Palamau
RANCHI
Hazaribagh
Gaya
PATNA
Bhagalpur
Darbhanga
Motihari
Chapra
Ganges R.
Basti
Bansi
Gorakhpur
Kathmandu
Darjeeling
Gauhati
Shillong
DACCA
CALCUTTA
Brahmaputra R.
Indus R.
R. Sutlej
Jamuna R.
Ganges R.
64
68
72
76
80
84
88
92
96
32
28
24
20
16

INTRODUCTION

INTRODUCTION

Name of the Language.

§ 1. Awadhī is the main dialect of the Eastern Hindi branch of the Indo-Aryan group of languages spoken in Northern India. The term Awadhī appears to denote the language of Awadh (Oudh), but, as a matter of fact, the language is not confined to the province of Oudh. It is not spoken in parts of the province (Hardoi district and parts of Kheri and Fyzabad), while it extends to the districts of Fatehpur, Allahabad, Jaunpur and Mirzapur of the Agra province. But as it is chiefly spoken in Oudh, the name may be accepted, at least in preference to the other two names, *Pūrbī* (*Linguistic Survey of India*, Vol. V, Part II, p. 43 and Vol. VI, p. 10) and *Kōsalī* (*Linguistic Survey of India*, Vol. VI, p. 9) which have sometimes been employed for it. *Pūrbī* literally means *eastern*, and is sometimes used for Awadhī and at others for Bhōjpurī. It may very well be a suitable name for Eastern Hindi to distinguish it from Western Hindi. Kōsalī may be the name of the language of the Kōsala Kingdom which no longer exists and the boundaries of which cannot be fixed with certainty. Another name employed sometimes to denote this language is Baiswāṛī (*Linguistic Survey of India*, Vol. VI, p. 9), but it is generally and more appropriately used for a restricted area of Awadhī, that of Baiswāṛā—comprising portions of the Unao, Lucknow, Rae Bareli and Fatehpur districts. Baiswārā is notorious for its harshness and so is the language of the area. Inquiries made by me from cultured residents of the area bear out this statement. The main difference from other dialects of Awadhī is phonetic—in the pronunciation of **e** as **jʌ**, **o** as **wʌ**, and **ɐɪ** as **jɑɪ** and **oɪ** as **wɑɪ**.

The name of Awadh (Oudh) is connected with *Ayōdhyā*, the ancient town, which remained a town of considerable importance during the Mohammedan period as well. Tulsīdās uses the word *Avadha* for *Ayōdhyā* and so does Lāldās Gupta who spells it as *Audha* also.

Linguistic Boundaries of Awadhi.

§ 2. On the West of Awadhī there are two dialects of Western Hindi, *viz.*, Kanaujī and Bundelī, while on its East there is the Bihārī dialect Bhōjpurī. Compared with Awadhī, the distinguishing features of Kanaujī and Bundelī (see *Linguistic Survey of India*, Vol. IX, Part I, pp. 83, 85, 92) are: (1) the agentive postposition **nex** (Awadhī does not have this), and (2) the noun, adjective and past participle (masc. sing.) in **-ox, Au,** Awadhī **ax**. The distinguishing features of Bhōjpurī (see *Linguistic Survey of India*, Vol. V, Part II, pp. 43 and 53) are: (1) the present tense with the enclitic **lax** (*e.g.*, **paxix lax**), (2) the past tense in **-l**, and (3) the dative postposition **lax**. With these distinctive features of its neighbours, we should fix the exact linguistic boundaries of Awadhī chiefly and of Eastern Hindi generally.

On the West, the **-ox** forms appear from Gōlā Gōkaran Nāth (Kheri district). If we draw a straight line from Gōlā to Nērī (Sītāpur district), it will correctly divide Kanaujī from Awadhī. From Nērī, the river Gomati forms the south-western boundary of Awadhī right up to the point where it divides the Hardōī district from Lucknow. From there a line may be drawn to the south-west roughly along the boundary line of the districts of Hardōī and Lucknow, and Unao up to the point where the district of Unao ends. From here, the district of Cawnpore belongs to Western Hindi and the districts of Unao, Fatehpur and Allahabad belong to Awadhī.

Of the Tirhārī specimens given in the *Linguistic Survey of India* (Vol. VI, pp. 132—156), some, we can say,

go under Bundelī while others under Awadhī. For instance, the Banda specimen on page 133 combines **nex** (agentive postposition of Bundelī) with an Awadhī verb **difiis** (**maɽai nex bā̃ɽʈi difiis**). The Fatehpur specimen of Tirhārī (p. 138) is, however, pure Awadhī. The Hamīrpur specimen (p. 140) has better reason to be with Bundelī than the Banda specimen, because it has both the characteristics of Western Hindi. A few instances of Awadhī verbs are found in this specimen also. The Gahōrā specimen (p. 150) appears as pure Awadhī, while the Juṛār and Banāpharī specimens are the mixtures of Bundelī and Awadhī (Bāghēlī).

Awadhī and Bāghēlī.—Linguistically, Bāghēlī does not differ from Awadhī. In the *Linguistic Survey* 'Its separate existence has only been recognised in deference to popular prejudice' (*Linguistic Survey of India*, Vol. VI, p. 1). The two characteristic points of difference mentioned in the *Survey* (VI, p. 20), *viz.*, 'the enclitic **tex** or **tʌi**' and the **fi** form of the 1st person future' are found in other dialects of Awadhī as well. The enclitic **tex** or **tʌi** is nothing but the contracted form of the auxiliary **hʌtʌx, hʌtʌi, hʌtix** found after the participles. Similar contraction is found not only in other dialects of Awadhī and in Chattīsgaṛhī but in Western Hindi as well. The **-fi** form of the 1st person future is similarly found in other dialects of Awadhī, *e.g.*, in Lakhīmpur, Sītāpur, Lucknow and Bārābankī. Other minor characteristics (*Linguistic Survey of India*, Vol. VI, p. 122) similarly are found in other dialects of Awadhī, *e.g.*, the 'tendency to change a **w** to **b** as in **ʌbaxJ**' 'a noise' **JʌbaxbJ** 'an answer'. There are two points, however, (1) adjectives in a strong form in **fiax**, as in **nikəfiax** 'good' and (2) the honorific imperative in **-ix**, *e.g.*, **dexix**, 'be good enough to give,' which are not generally found in other dialects of Awadhī. The strong adjective in **-fiax** has correspondences sometimes still, *e.g.*, Lmp. **puranifiax** 'old, experienced' and the honorific,

imperative form is a borrowing from the neighbouring dialect of Biharī—Bhōjpurī.

From these facts, it appears best to take Bāghēlī only as a dialect of Awadhī and not as a form of Eastern Hindi standing on a par with Awadhī. Gōḍwānī or Maṇḍlāhī (*Linguistic Survey of India*, Vol. VI, p. 158) has more connection with Awadhī than with Bāghēlī, as we do not find the main characteristic of Bāghēlī (**tʌi** enclitic) in it. To the East of Gōḍwānī lies Chhattīsgaṛhī, and to the West Bundēlī. Therefore, as expected, we find in it a fusion of both these dialects.

On the south, Awadhī is bounded by Chattīsgaṛhī, another form of Eastern Hindi. This has several characteristics which differentiate it from Awadhī. The definitive enclitic **-hʌr** is used after nouns and pronouns, the plural is made by adding **-mʌn**, the accusative-dative postposition is **lʌr** (side by side with **kʌr**) and the instrumental postposition is **lɛr** (which is commoner than **sɛr**), the genitive postposition **kɛr** does not change for number or gender, the enclitic for restrictive emphatic form is **-cʌ** (Awadhī **-i**). The pronouns also are different and have something in common with Bhōjpurī. In other points Chattīsgaṛhī agrees closely with Awadhī (for details see '*A Grammar of the Chhattīsgaṛhī Dialect of Hindi* by Hiralal and Grierson published by the C. P. Government—and *Vikāsa*, the official monthly organ of the District Council, Bilāspur, C.P., which occasionally contains articles in the dialect).

On the north, the Awadhī area is bounded by the territory of the Nepal Government. Most of this consists of uninhabited tracts, forests and barren land. Here and there one finds a small village occupied by some aboriginal tribe, *e.g.*, the Ṭhārūs. There are certain market places (*maṇḍīs*) which are occupied by the people from Pilibhit, Kheri, Bahraich and Gonda during the winter season and they carry on a profitable trade with the Nēpālī hillmen who come

down to sell their hill-products, woollen blankets, turmeric, etc., and to purchase the products of the plains, tobacco, ornaments, etc. These markets close down by May and from then up to the beginning of December they are deserted. Thus the Awadhī language does not come in close contact with Nepālī.

On the east, Awadhī is bounded by Bhōjpurī. The boundary of the district of Gonda corresponds with the Eastern boundary of the language itself. Then we move towards the East along the river Ghāghrā right up to Tāṇḍā. A straight line from Tāṇḍā to Jaunpur and thence to Mirzapur will correctly represent the south-eastern boundary of Awadhī. Pure Awadhī is spoken right up to a few miles to the west of Mirzapur town. From there the boundary of the Allahabad district on the south-east and the boundary-line of the Rewa territory to the east, form the eastern limits of Awadhī. Only in the south-eastern triangle of Mirzapur district (the Sōn-pār tract, see *Linguistic Survey of India*, pp. 130-31), is Awadhī spoken more or less mixed up with Bhōjpurī. Further south to Sōnpārī one finds Awadhī bounded by the Surgujiā dialect of Chattīsgaṛhī.

Characteristics of Awadhi.

§ 3. Thus Awadhī stands between Western Hindi and Bihārī. Of the three varieties of the forms of the noun-stem—short, long and longer, Western Hindi has generally the short form, Awadhī both the short and the long while Bihārī has the longer and the long generally. Of the observance of the gender of nouns and adjectives, we find Western Hindi rigorous, Awadhī a little loose while Bihārī mostly does not observe the distinction of gender. The direct case (singular) of consonantal bases in Awadhī ends in **-ṷ**, in Western Hindi this **-ṷ** is absent, particularly in Hindustānī. The direct plural of consonantal bases in some dialects of Awadhī has the termination **-Ai**. As regards postpositions, Awadhī is

clearly distinguished from Western Hindi by the absence of the agentive postposition in the former. In this respect it agrees with Bihārī. The accusative-dative postposition in Awadhī is **kaː, kə** while in Western Hindi it is **koɾ, kʌu** and in Bihārī **keɾ**. The locative postposition in Awadhī is **maɾ** in Western Hindi and Bihārī generally **meɾ**. The pronouns show considerable distinction. Awadhī personal genitive adjectives are **toɾr, moɾr,** Western Hindi **teɾr-, meɾr-**; Awadhī oblique of **hʌmaɾr** is **hʌmʌɾeɾ** and Western Hindi **hʌmaɾreɾ**. The nominative singular of the relative and interrogative pronouns has the forms **jɔɾ, koɾ** in Awadhī, and **jeɾ, keɾ** in Bihārī. Of the verb, the auxiliary in Western Hindi is **h-** (**hʌi**, etc.) while in Awadhī it is generally **h-** (**hʌi**), **ʌfi-** (**ʌfiʌi**), **baɾʈ-** (**baɾʈʌi**) in the present and **baɾʈ-** (**baɾʈeɾ**) or **aɾch** (**aɾcheɾ**) in Bihārī. The imperfect participle in Awadhī has lost traces of the ancient case termination (except -i̯ in Western Awadhī) while in Hindustānī **-aɾ** (**jaɾtaɾ**) or **-u** (**jaɾtu**) is generally found. This **-u** may be whispered in actual existence like **-i̯** in Awadhī. The past tense, based on the imperfect participle, adds affixes in Awadhī while it does not do so in Western Hindi. The best Awadhī characteristic is the affix **-isi̯** or **-is**. The future in Awadhī has vestiges of the ancient simple future as well as of the participle in *-tavya*, while in the neighbouring dialects of Western Hindi we find only the former and in Bihārī only the latter.[1]

Origin of Awadhi.

§ 4. To what Prakrit is Awadhī (or Eastern Hindi) connected in origin? To the west of Awadhī are dialects connected with Śaurasēnī and to the east there are Bihārī dialects whose origin is taken back to Māgadhī. It was natural for Grierson, therefore, to connect Eastern Hindi, with

[1] Only Western Bhōjpurī retains some forms derived from the ancient simple future.

Ardhamāgadhī—a language said to lie between Śaurasēnī and Māgadhī. But when we come to take up individual characteristics we find difficulties. Śaurasēnī was distinguished by treating the Sanskrit *-t- -th-* as *-d- -dh-* in opposition to the Mahārāṣṭrī (*-y-*) zero- and *-h-* and by the Nominative singular of bases as *-ō* while Māgadhī had *-ē*. The retention of explosion in *d* and *dh* might point to the more archaic character of Śaurasēnī as compared with Mahārāṣṭrī. Śaurasēnī had the dental sibilant (*s*) while Māgadhī had the palatal (*ś*). In Śaurasēnī *r* was retained while in Māgadh it was substituted by *l*. Ardhamāgadhī does not possess the two main characteristics of Māgadhī, *viz.*, *ś* and *l* for Śaurasēnī *s* and *r*. In this it agrees with Śaurasēnī. But it has both *-ē* and *-ō* forms of the Nominative singular. And the texts of Ardhamāgadhī (chiefly Jain canon) amply bear out the double treatment of the base in the Nominative singular *dēvō* or *dēvē*, *sō* or *sē*, *kē*, *jē*)—see *Ardhamāgadhī Reader* by Dr. Banarsi Das Jain.

When we judge Awadhī by the main characteristic of Ardhamāgadhī, we find that the *-ē* treatment of the Nominative singular is traceable only in the imperfect participle in **-ị** in some dialects and also possibly in **-ex** perfect participle when used in the singular. Neither the nouns nor the postpositions except **kex** (direct singular genitive found in the eastern dialects of Awadhī) have any trace of *-ē*. On the other hand, the **-ụ** of the direct singular clearly points to the Śaurasēnī *-ō*. The **-ị** and **-ex** in the imperfect and the perfect participles respectively, however, are found in the neighbouring dialects of Western Hindi as well.

Eastern Hindi has more affinity with Pāli than with Jain Ardhamāgadhī. But Pāli represents a much earlier stage of language than Jain Ardhamāgadhī. The texts in the latter language were recast and edited in the fifth century A.D. We can assume that earlier Ardhamāgadhī was different from the later language in character and that this earlier Ardhamāgadhī was the basis of Awadhī.

When did the characteristics of the various modern dialects become fixed? The earliest specimens of Braj, Awadhī or Maithilī already bear the characteristics. The Maithila Apabhraṁśa (*avahaṭṭha*), traces of which are found in the language of the *Kīrtilatā* of Vidyāpati, has the characteristics of Maithilī already in several respects. No Apabhraṁśa works corresponding to Eastern Hindi are available[see the article on Apabhraṁśa Literature by Hiralal Jain—*Allahabad University Studies*, Vol. I, pp. 157—185; *Apabhraṁśa kāvyatrayī*—G.O.S. 1927, *Kīrtilatā*—Nāgarī Prachāriṇī Sabhā, Benares, and *Jasaharacariu*, *Nāyakumāracariu*, *Sāvayadhamma-dōhā* (Karanja, Berar) published since Jain's article which mentions the Apabhraṁśa literature available till then—1925].

In the early Muslim period, portions of the Awadhī area were in the kingdom of Jaunpur. In Akbar's period, the territory was under the Sarkārs of Jaunpur, Allahabad and Oudh. It appears that the Hardoi district was more or less always with Kanauj. The armies regularly used to march from Kanauj to Khairabad in the Sitapur district, which indirectly explains the Kanaujī influences in the southern portions of the Sitapur district.

The characteristics probably belong to the pre-Muslim period, a suggestion put forward by Mr. Dhirendra Varma ('Identity of the Present Dialect-areas of Hindustan with the Ancient Janapadas'—*Allahabad University Studies*, Vol. I, pp. 189—201).

The area where the Bāghēlī dialect of Awadhī and Chattīsgaṛhī are spoken is merely an extension of Kōsala towards South—the Dakṣiṇa Kōsala. It was particularly known as Goṇḍwānā in the Muslim period and was inhabited by wild tribes. The colonisation from Oudh extends over a long period, some of the families having migrated from the Rae Bareli and Unao districts only in the latter half of the nineteenth century.

Importance of Awadhi.

§ 5. According to the *Linguistic Survey* (VI, p. 2) Eastern Hindi is spoken by 24,368,099 people of which 3,755,343 are put down under Chhattīsgaṛhī and the rest 20,612,756, under Awadhī (including Bāghēlī).

Awadhī serves an area which has been historically important from ancient times. Here stands Ayōdhyā (also known as Sākēta), the capital of the Kōsala kingdom which was very important up to the Buddhist period. The activities of Buddha were mainly in the Kōsala kingdom and he spent a considerable period of his time in Sāvatthī and the portions round about it. Allahabad is an ancient sacred place and has been politically important during the Gupta, Moghal and British periods. Fyzabad and Lucknow played a very important part during the reign of the later Moghals. The Nawabs of Oudh have been famous for their culture, gaiety and splendour. The Rulers of Rewa have not only been great patrons of learning and art but have themselves been poets and literary men. Tan Sen, the Prince of Indian musicians, was in the court of Mahārāja Ram Chand Singh from where he was taken away by Akbar.

In the literary field Awadhī stands immortalised in the *Rāmacarita-mānasa* of Tulsīdās.

Awadhī today is merely the common language of the people, and is not a literary vehicle. The Hindustānī dialect (whether Hindi or Urdu) is the literary language of the Awadhī area. The uneducated people speak Awadhī amongst themselves and so do the educated people if they are talking amongst Awadhī people. I have found that in the district towns, educated people coming from outside the Awadhī area generally adapt themselves to Awadhī forms and very soon become good Awadhī speakers. In the larger towns, however, such as Lucknow, Allahabad, Fyzabad, where there is a

large admixture of educated people from the non-Awadhī area the vehicle of thought amongst educated people is Hindustānī. In the district towns also, as the official work is all in Hindustānī, the educated classes are familiar with both the Hindustānī and Awadhī forms and speak both according to need. At the homes of Awadhī speakers, however, the practice differs with people. In the district towns, girls married to Awadhī people from outside the Awadhī area, adopt Awadhī and discard their dialects within a year or two. But in the larger towns, with the gradual assertion of woman's individuality in the family, a girl normally speaking Hindustānī retains her speech so that her children, when brought up, speak Hindustānī and not Awadhī which is spoken by only a few members of the family. These are the beginnings of the ousting of the unliterary dialect. Individual Awadhī speakers when outside the Awadhī area have adopted the dialect of the place; for instance, girls of Oudh married to the people of the Kanaujī area have discarded Awadhī and adopted Kanaujī. When families shift, however, they retain their dialect longer in their homes, *e.g.*, an Awadhī family settled in the Mēwāṛī area retains Awadhī at home. But the children owing to the close contact of Mēwāṛī speakers very soon adopt Mēwāṛī habits of speech and it is expected that Awadhī will be ousted from the family after a generation or two.

It should be borne in mind that the various dialects of Hindi, Western or Eastern, are mutually intelligible not only with regard to neighbouring dialects but to others also. A speaker of Braj can make himself intelligible in Oudh even to the uneducated people. If he resides in Oudh he will adopt Awadhī but may retain certain characteristics of his original dialect. And this weakness is condoned, though sometimes it does raise a little joke at the expense of the Braj speaker. The strict purity of the dialect is not ordinarily insisted upon.

Materials for the Study of Awadhi.

§ 6. Awadhī was used as a literary vehicle, side by side with Braj, before they were ousted by Hindustānī in the last century. Braj has still some votaries, but Awadhī has none. It is only occasionally that we find traces of Awadhī in the Hindustānī written by the writers of Oudh. Awadhī forms creep in, particularly in the commentaries written in Hindi (for instance, *Kuṇḍaliyā Rāmāyaṇa Saṭīka* by Baijnāth Kurmī of Mānpur, district Bārābankī and published by the Newal Kishore Press, Lucknow, in 1892, or his *Adhyātma Rāmāyaṇa Saṭīka*).

Quite an important literature, though not as extensive as that of Braj, however, exists in Early Awadhī. The *Rāmacarita-mānasa* (popularly known as the *Rāmāyaṇa*) of Tulsīdās, the most important work in any modern Indo-Aryan language, is in Awadhī. It was written in Saṁvat 1631 (1575 A.D.) and though the plot is mostly a borrowed one, either from Vālmīki's *Rāmāyaṇa* or from the *Adhyātma Rāmāyaṇa* both of which are in Sanskrit, the poetic genius exhibited in the work stands unrivalled in Indian literature. Another important work in Awadhī is the *Padmāvat* of Malik Muhammad Jāyasī written in Hijrī 947 (1540 A.D.). It is a romantic poem of considerable interest and a philosophical allegory runs throughout. The work is linguistically important as Jāyasī was a Mohammedan, and to all appearances ignorant of Sanskrit, and he has used a language which is devoid of Sanskrit or Arabo-Persian diction. His Awadhī is purer than that of Tulsīdās, though strict purity of dialect is absent and should not be expected. The speakers (or the scribes, at any rate) of the various dialects, Braj, Kanaujī, Awadhī, etc., were mutually intelligible in those days as to-day and there was no rigidly fixed literary form par excellence. The writers, therefore, imperceptibly borrowed from the neighbouring dialects.

Tulsīdās has written in Braj quite as successfully as in Awadhī. Several editions of *Padmāvat* and *Rāmacarita-mānasa* exist. From the linguistic point of view the *Padmāvat* edited by Grierson and Sudhākar Dwivēdī is excellent and has been referred to in the following pages. The only other known work of the author *Akharāvaṭa* is also in Awadhī. Of the editions of the *Rāmacarita-mānasa*, the Nāgarī Prachāriṇī Sabhā, Benares edition, is the least objectionable and has been utilised for references here. The text of the *Ayōdhyā-kāṇḍa* based on the Rājāpur manuscript, said to have been written by the poet himself, edited by Lala Sita Ram, has also been consulted. Of Tulsīdās's numerous other works, *Pārvatī Maṅgala* and *Jānakī Maṅgala* are in good Awadhī.

The other published work is *Indrāvatī* written obviously on the model of *Padmāvat*, by Nūr Muhammad in Hijrī 1157 (1757 A.D.), about two hundred years later than *Padmāvat*. The Nāgarī Prachāriṇi Sabhā published about half of the text in 1906. The manuscript was in the Persian character, but only a copy of it in the Kaithī character was available to the Sabhā. The text is, therefore, not very reliable linguistically. The dialect represented is Awadhī of the most eastern area, near about Mirzapur.

Besides the above-mentioned three authors who have been the basis of studies in Early Awadhī and have been extensively drawn upon in the following pages, two important manuscripts described below have been consulted.

(1) *Avadha-bilāsa*—(described under No. 32 in the Report on the search of Hindi manuscripts for the year 1901) in the Library of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, Calcutta (a manuscript of a portion of the book is in Ayōdhyā, see No. 107 of the *Hindi Search Report* for 1914—17). It was begun in Awadha (Ayōdhyā) by Lāldās Gupta in the bright half of the month of Baisākha, in the Saṁvat year 1700 (A.D. 1643), *i.e.*, about a hundred years

after Jāyasī's work. The author gave up the work on the fifth day of the bright half of Phālgun, the same year. The work, even as it is, is extensive, extending over 301 leaves (602 pages) with 20 to 23 lines on each page. It deals with the life of Rāma and is like the *Rāmacarita-mānasa* in the *dōhā* and *caupāī* metres.

It is divided into 18 cantos (*bisrāms*). The first, which ends on leaf 18b, contains a recommendation and an appeal to the readers to study the book, the poet's respect to the deities, his humble attitude and the importance of devotion and good company. The second canto gives a detailed account of Ayōdhyā, the origin of the river Sarayū, an account of the music played in the town and ends (on leaf 55b) with the occupation of Ayōdhyā by Svayambhū Manu with Vasiṣṭha as his priest. The third canto which ends on leaf 77b contains the reasons why Viṣṇu came down to the Earth as Rāma and why the two Gaṇas of Śiva were born as Rāvaṇa and Kumbhakarṇa. The 4th canto (ending on leaf 127b) describes the terrorism of Rāvaṇa and Kumbhakarṇa, Earth's appeal to Viṣṇu and the latter's promise to come down, the story of Rāhu and the quarrel between Śiva and Pārvatī. The 5th describes in detail the charity of Raghu at Sonakhara Tīratha and ends on leaf 139a. The 6th canto named the Entrance of the King (Daśaratha) in Prayāga and his meeting with Lōmapāda ends on leaf 154b. The 7th describes the meeting of the king with Ṛṣyaśṛṅga (ending on leaf 167b) and the 8th brings the youthful sage down to Ayōdhyā (ending on leaf 199a). The 9th is named *Garbhaprakāsa* (ending on leaf 209b) and describes the sacrifice for the sons and the subsequent conception. In the 10th (ending on leaf 226 a) the princes are born and in the 11th (ending on leaf 240a) the festivities and rejoicings in connection with the birth are elaborately described. The 12th canto in the first half describes the childhood of Rāma and in the second

it describes the birth of Sītā. It ends on leaf 254b. The 13th ends on leaf 263a and describes the boyhood of Rāma who is represented as having read the various grammars (Śākaṭāyana's, etc.) and Kāvyas (Raghu, Kumāra, Mēghadūta, Naiṣadha, Māgha, Kirāta). This is only one of the many instances of absurd anachronisms. The 14th canto (ending on leaf 265b) describes the all-pervading might of God who has innumerable assistants in the shape of officers, writers and *faujdārs*. Here occurs a mistake in numbering the cantos. The next canto (15th) numbered as 16th ends on leaf 278b and gives a description of Rāma's pilgrimage to holy places and his instructive discussions with the saints. The writer has tried to give a summary of discourses on philosophical topics in this canto. The 16th (numbered 17th) canto ends on leaf 288b and describes the longing of Sītā for Rāma, Viśvāmitra's arrival in Ayōdhyā and his request to the king for Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa, and the story up to the breaking of Śiva's bow in Mithilā. The 17th (numbered 18th) canto (ending on leaf 296b) contains a description of the marriage of Rāma and Sītā and a detailed account of the dowry given by Janaka. The last canto the 18th (wrongly numbered the 19th) describes the happy residence of Daśaratha in Ayōdhyā with his sons and daughters-in-law, a few stories of ideal charity, the giving of boons to Kaikēyī and the departure of Rāma for the forest. After the colophon to the canto in a couplet the writer possibly describes his own departure from Ayōdhyā on the fifth day of the bright half of Phāgun.

From the literary point of view the work is of little value. But it has importance linguistically and as a work which gives details of the every-day life of the poet's time. The character is Dēvanāgarī mixed with Kaithī. The appearance of the manuscript is old, and, as there is no mention of the copyist, the probability is that it is the author's own copy. The orthography is striking. ष represents

j and ब *b*, and only a dot below them is added to represent *y* and *v*, respectively. ष regularly represents *kh*, च *ch*, श *s*, ढ *ḍh*, ऐ *e* or *y*. The nasalisation has been mostly left unnoted. The mātrā for the long vowel very often represents a short vowel, *grabhahi* represents *garbhahi*, *achara* represents *acchara*. There are many instances of wrong Sanskritisation, *e. g.*, *jakta* for *jagata*. The grammar generally agrees with that of the *Rāmāyaṇa* of Tulsidās.

(2) *Yūsuf-Zulēkhā*.—The manuscript is in the Persian *nastāliq* script, pp. 346 with 13 to 15 lines per page, size 7.5″ × 4.5″. The last leaf and the first three leaves are slightly mutilated, otherwise the manuscript is in good condition. It was in the possession of Hafiz Samiullah Khan Tarin, B.A., LL.B., of Gangyo, district Sultanpur, and has been purchased by the Hindustānī Academy, Allahabad, which is proposing to publish it.[1] The work was written by Shēḳh Nisār of Shēkhūpūr, in Hijrī 1200, V.S. 1847, Śaka 1712 or 1790 of the Christian era, as mentioned in the introductory verses. The work gives the well-known story of Yūsuf and Zulēkhā on the model of *Padmāvat* both in subject-matter and in language. It is a fine specimen of the Awadhī language of the last part of the 18th century.

Besides the above, the following manuscripts mentioned in the Reports on the Search for Hindi Manuscripts appear to be in Awadhī:

(*a*) Report for the year 1900.

No. 4. *Mṛgāvatī*—a romantic poem, a precursor of *Padmāvat*, written in Hijri 909 (1512 A.D.) by Qutban in the reign of Sher Shah's father Husein Shah. This is possibly the earliest available work in Awadhī.

(*b*) Report for the year 1901.

No. 13. *Baitāla Pacīsī* written by one Bhawānī Shankar who lived at Bhadaini in Benares. The date of composition is V. S. 1871 (1814 A.D.).

[1] Since the above was written, a notice of the manuscript has appeared in the "Nāgarī Prachāriṇī Patrikā," Vol. XI, pp. 445—467.

No. 12. *Shrī Rāmāyaṇa* by Jhāma Dāsa written at Vindhācala, Mirzapur, in V. S. 1818 (1761 A.D.).

(*c*) Report for the year 1902.

No. 110. *Bhakta Saktā kā jhagaṛā*, composed in Hijrī 1053 during the reign of Jehangir—Awadhī mixed with Kanaujī.

No. 111. *Haṁsa Jawāhira*, composed in Hijrī 1149, V.S. 1858 (1801 A.D.) by Qāsim Shāh of Dariyabad (Oudh)—pure Awadhī.

No. 112. *Gyāna Dīpa*—by Shēikh Nabī of Jaunpur, composed in 1024 A.H. (1619 A.D.)—pure Awadhī.

(*d*) Report for the year 1904.

No. 7. *Rājā Citramukuṭa kī Kathā*—no information about the author or the date of composition is available from the manuscript—Awadhī mixed with Western Hindi (postpositions *nē* and *kara*).

No. 19. *Kathā cāra Darvēśa* by Bhūpa Narayana composed in V. S. 1841 (1797 A.D.)—pure Awadhī. The other two books of the author, No. 29 (*a*) and (*b*) (Report, 1909-11) are not in Awadhī.

No. 32. *Citrāvalī* by Usmān, composed in 1613 A.D. on the model of *Padmāvat*—pure Awadhī.

(*e*) Report for the years 1909-11.

No. 26. *Baitāla Pacīsī* by Bhawānī Sahāya, date of composition not mentioned, date of manuscript 1839 V. S., mixed Awadhī.

No. 49. *Krisṇacaritāmṛta* by Kṣemakaṛana Miśra of Barabanki district (born in 1771 and died in 1861 V. S.—date of composition not known)—pure Awadhī.

No. 78. *Śabdāvalī* by Dūlanadāsa, about 1760 A.D.

No. 85. *Sumanaghana* (a translation of Gulistān by Gaṅgā Dāsa, written in V.S. 1879).

No. 221. *Upākhyāna Vivēka* by Pahalawāna Dāsa, composed in V.S. 1865. Another manuscript is No. 131 of the Report for 1917-19.

No. 273. *Rasa Ratnāgara* by Saīd Pahāṛa, date not known.

No. 296. *Bhakti Jayamāla* by Śiva Rāma, written in V.S. 1787 (1730 A.D.).

No. 318. *Śabdāvalī* by Tŏwara Dāsa, written in V.S. 1887 (1830 A.D.).

(*f*) Report for the years 1912-14.

No. 17. *Hari Canda Kathā* by Bēnī Baksa of district Sitapur, written in V.S. 1836 (1779 A D.)—pure Awadhī.

No. 88. *Bacanāvalī* by Yugalānanda Sharaṇa of Ayōdhyā "born about V.S. (1863—1807 A.D.)"—a prose work in Awadhī mixed with Hindustānī (*rākhatē haṁ, mānanā, hōyagā*, etc.).

No. 160. *Bhāgavata*, by Sabala Siṁha (born about 1645 A.D.).

Nos. 162 and 163. *Prahalāda carita* and *Raghubansa Dīpaka*, by Sahaja Rāma who "flourished about 1732 A.D."

No. 191. *Saguna Vilāsa,* by Udaya Nātha, written in V.S. 1841 (1784 A.D.).

(*g*) Report for the years 1917-19.

No. 13. *Daṅgawa Parva* by Balabīra, composed in V.S. 1608 (1552 A.D.).

No. 36. *Hitōpadēśa* by Canda, composed in V.S. 1563 (1506 A.D.). Another manuscript is No. 28 of the Report for 1920—22.

No. 48. *Mahābhārata Sabhā Parva,* etc., by Dharma Dāsa, written in V.S. 1711 (1656 A.D.). Another manuscript is No. 41 of the Report for 1920—22.

No. 84 (*b*). *Sīya-Rāma-rasa mañjarī*, by Jānakī Caraṇa written in V.S. 1881 (1824 A.D.).

No. 187 (*b*). *Ekādasī Māhātmya*, by Sūraja Dāsa, written in V.S. 1923 (1866 A.D.).

(*h*) Report for the years 1920—22.

No. 118. *Bhāgavata Daśama Skandha Bhāshā* by Navala Dāsa, written in V.S. 1823 (1766 A.D.).

No. 185. *Karṇa Parva*, by Śrīpatī of Maūnagara, written in V.S. 1719 (1662 A.D.).

In the catalogue of Hindi manuscripts in the British Museum a book (No. 25 *Līlāvatī*) is mentioned as being in the Baiswāṛī dialect. I had an opportunity of examining the manuscript while I stayed in London and found it to be in Rājasthānī. Of the manuscripts of Hindī in the India Office Library I did not find any in Awadhī (except *Rāma-carita-mānasa* and *Padmāvat*).

It may be pointed out here that the study of Early Awadhī is beset with difficulties. The text of the works has not yet been critically established. It is difficult to find out how far the *tatsama* words found in the texts were correctly pronounced. Or possibly they might represent merely a difference in writing but not in speech. For instance was श pronounced or was it another symbol for स? That ष was normally pronounced ख is clear from the fact that it replaces ख in the manuscripts at many places. The accuracy of the forms also is not authenticated. We sometimes find that the forms of other dialects creep into works in Awadhī, *e.g.*, the *-ga* (Hindustāni) future in the Rāmāyaṇa. These might be due to the carelessness of the scribes or might belong to the authors themselves. As remarked above, the various dialects of Hindi were not mutually unintelligible.

For Awadhi as spoken to-day, the only available material is that contained in the volume on Eastern Hindi of the *Linguistic Survey of India*. On investigation it was found to be fairly correct. This has been amply supplemented by me with folk-tales and songs collected from the Awadhī area. Sometimes in the Hindi dramas of modern days, Awadhī is uttered by the minor illiterate characters, for instance, in the farces written by G. P. Srivastava (Gonda) and in the *Nētrōnmīlan Nātak* by the Misra Brothers (Sitapur and Lucknow). The late Pt. Shridhar Pathak also employed Awadhī occasionally in his poems.

Dialects of Awadhi.

§ 7. Of the main Awadhī area, the dialects can be divided into three divisions—Western, Central and Eastern. The dialects of Kheri (Lakhimpur), Sitapur, Lucknow, Unao and Fatehpur are Western, those of Bahraich, Barabanki and Rae Bareli are Central while those of Gonda, Fyzabad, Sultanpur, Partabgarh, Allahabad, Jaunpur and Mirzapur are Eastern. This division is based on the commonness of certain linguistic traits detailed in the grammar given hereafter.

Formation of Awadhi.

§ 8. In the following pages sounds and grammar of Awadhī, Early and Modern, have been studied in detail. As regards sounds of Modern Awadhī, I have examined my own dialect,[1] Lakhīmpurī, very minutely and have verified the results by experimental phonetics wherever this was practicable. Information about other dialects is based on personal observation of the actual speech of the people. I got tales and songs from the villagers by going to the villages myself and tried to keep them away from the influence of Hindustānī as far as possible. The grammars of the dialects are based on the material thus gathered and have been supplemented by certain data taken from the literate and habitual speakers of Awadhī of the various tracts.

Vocabulary of Awadhi.

§ 9. The vocabulary does not require any special remarks. It is predominantly Aryan, but here and there there

[1] I was born in the Lakhīmpurī area and habitually spoke Lakhīmpurī until I had to leave Lakhīmpur (at the age of 17 years) for University education. I, however, spent my vacations at my native place. I have been regularly speaking Hindustānī now, except at my home where even now Awadhī is spoken. The inscriptions and palatograms appended here all specimens of *my* speech—taken in London. For want of proper facilities in India, it was not possible to verify the results arrived at by me through experiment, by testing the speech of other speakers of Awadhī.

is a sprinkling of words of the non-Aryan substratum and of foreign origin. It is only in vocabulary that the speech of one class differs from that of another. The Brahmins are fond of Sanskrit words while the Kayasthas, due to their closer association with the Muslim administration, have a larger percentage of words of Persian origin in their speech than other classes of Hindus. The Banias pick up the words of their special trade from the towns and the agricultural classes employ their own words for expressing the concepts of their occupation. The percentage of special words, however, is so small that it is almost negligible and all understand one another without the slightest difficulty.

The speech of women does not differ from that of men in essentials. Women, however, are more emotional in expression. They avoid words expressing reprehensible ideas. Indian women (particularly Hindu women) never utter the names of their husbands and also generally avoid uttering the names of their eldest sons. In quarrels where men would generally come to blows, women satisfy themselves by showering abuse and curses. Their vocabulary of abuse is thus more copious.

Orthography of Awadhi.

§ 10. Awadhī is reduced to-day to writing only for short messages from one village to another. The script is Kaithī in such cases. The Banias write their accounts in Huṇḍīwālī (also known as Muṛiyā). These are merely convenient forms of the Dēvanāgarī script. The educated classes generally use either the Persian or the Dēvanāgarī script.

PART I

AWADHI PHONETICS

CHAPTER I

INDIVIDUAL SOUNDS

Sound-system

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 11. The texts reveal the following sounds:

(*a*) Consonants

(*i*) mutes

k	*kh*	*g*	*gh*
c	*ch*	*j*	*jh*
ṭ	*ṭh*	*ḍ*	*ḍh*
t	*th*	*d*	*dh*
p	*ph*	*b*	*bh*

(*ii*) nasals

ṅ *ñ* *ṇ* *n* *m* *ṃ*

(*iii*) semi-vowels

y *r* *l* *v* *ṛ* *ṛh*

(*iv*) sibilants

[*ś*] [*ṣ*] *s*

(*v*) aspirate

h [*ḥ*]

(*b*) Vowels

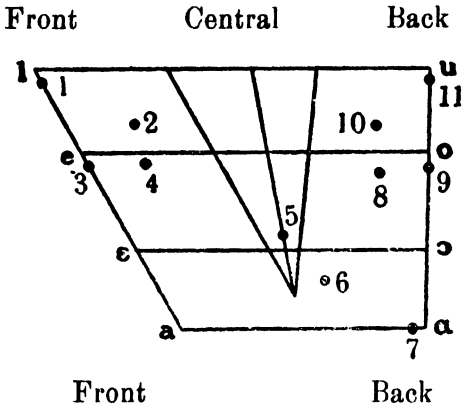
a *ā* *i* *ī* *u* *ū* **e* *ē* **o* *ō* [*ɤ*]

NOTE—The letters given in brackets are found in the texts though rarely. As shown below they are merely orthographic symbols to represent other sounds (*s*, *kh*, *h* and *ri*). The sounds with asterisks are represented in writing by symbols next to them.

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 12.	Bilabial.	Dental	Alveolar.	Palatal.	(Palatal) Retroflex.	Velar.	Glottal.
1. Plosives ...	p b	t d			ʈ ɖ	k g	
,, Aspirates	ph bɦ	th dɦ			ʈh ɖɦ	kh gɦ	
2. Affricates ...				c ɟ			
,, Aspirates				ch ɟɦ			
3. Nasals ...	m		n	(ɲ)	(ɳ)	(ŋ)	
,, Aspirates	mɦ	nɦ					
4. Lateral ...				l			
,, Aspirate				lɦ			
5. Rolled ...			r				
,, Aspirate			rɦ				
6. Flapped ...					ɽ		
,, Aspirate					ɽɦ		
7. Fricative ...			s				h ɦ
8. Semi-vowels ...	w		j				

9. Vowels



The position of Awadhi vowels is shown by dots in the above chart.

1. **iɪ, ĩɪ**
2. **i, ĩ, i̯**
3. **eɪ, ẽɪ**
4. **e, ẽ, e̯**
5. **ɔ**
6. **ʌ, ʌ̃**
7. **ɑɪ**
8. **o, õ**
9. **oɪ, õɪ**
10. **u, ũ, u̯**
11. **uɪ, ũɪ**

NOTE.—(1) In the following pages a complete description of sounds of modern Awadhi has been given. This has been verified and attested by experiments wherever it was possible. In the case of Early Awadhi it has not been possible to describe the sounds in detail on account of the absence of evidence. The presumption, however, is that the pronunciation in the early stage also was much the same as in modern Awadhi.

(2) As observed by Dr. Bloch (*Langue Marathe* § 28) 'it is by the grammatical forms chiefly that the Indo-Aryan languages, situated to the east of the Indus, are distinguished from one another. The phonetic system in them is, on the other hand,

perceptibly identical . . . ' Detailed phonology of Indo-Aryan has already been discussed by Grierson (BSOS, Vol. I, Part III. 1920), Bloch (*Langue Marathe*—Phonetique), Turner (*Gujarāṭī Phonology*, JRAS., 1921-22) and Chatterji (*Origin and Development of Bengali*, Vol. I). I have, therefore, confined myself particularly to Awadhi.

Plosives and Affricates

A. Early Awadhi

Mutes

§ 13. The Mutes occur initially and medially. For instance

k *kēli* 'play' (J. 49), *ākusa* 'goad' (J. 39), *kai* 'of' (T. 164), *ṭikā* 'coronation' (T. 159), *kūara* 'prince' (N. 9)., *kanaka* 'gold' (N. 14), *keu* 'some one' (*Lāl*), *dhanuka* 'bow' (*Lāl*), *kamāva* 'earned' (Nisār), *akāratha* 'useless' (Nisār).

kh *khāi* 'having eaten' (J. 121), *likhī* 'written' (J. 121), *khēlata* 'playing' (T. 377), *nirakhata* 'seeing' (T. 374), *khīcahai* 'will drag' (N. 21), *bakhānū* 'description' (N. 21) *khaṇḍa* 'part' (*Lāl.*) *ukhārī* 'uprooted' (Lāl.), *kharī* 'standing' (Nisār), *dēkhi* 'having seen' (Nisār).

Note.—In Lāldās the symbol for *ṣ* all through represents *kh*; similarly in Tulsīdās also.

g *gāṭhi* 'knot' (J. 120) *māraga* 'path' (J. 120), *garajai* 'thunders' (T. 375), *māga* 'path' (T. 375), *gosāī* 'master' (N. 21), *jōgī* 'yogin' (N. 21), *gunavārē* 'meritorious' (Lāl.), *jagya* 'sacrifice' (Lāl), *garaba* 'pride' (Nisār), *agyā* 'order' (Nisār).

Note.—In Nisār the symbol for *k* represents both *k* and *g*.

gh *ghāli* 'having put' (J. 124), *siṅghala* 'Ceylon' (J. 120), *ghamaṇḍa* 'pride' (T. 375) *nāghehu* 'crossed' (T. 386), *ghaṛī* 'hour' (N. 15), *sugharāhī* 'look pretty' (N. 12), *aghōrahi* 'Aghōra'

(Lāl. , *saṁghārē* 'slaughtered' (Lāl.), *ghāli* 'having put' (Nisār), *paraghaṭ* 'plainly' (Nisār).

c *caleū* 'started' (J. 121), *bica* 'middle' (J. 122).

ch *chapāia* 'should not be concealed' (J. 123 , *āchai* 'is' (J. 123).

j *jō* 'who' (J. 123), *banijā* 'merchant' (J. 127).

jh *jhākā* 'peeped' (J. 61), *samujhi* 'having realised' (T. 383)

ṭ *ṭūṭa* 'broke' (T. 116), *chōṭī* 'small' (J. 140).

ṭh *ṭhakurasohāī* 'pleasing to the master' (T. 163), *jhūṭhi* 'false' (T. 163).

ḍ *ḍagai* 'moves' (T. 108), *bhāṇḍārī* 'storekeeper' (J. 109).

ḍh *ḍhōla* 'drum' (T. 366), *paḍhī* 'well-read' (J. 83).

NOTE.—Intervocally *ḍ* and *ḍh* are found only after a nasal (*ṇ*) or after nasalisation, otherwise they become *ṛ* and *ṛh* respectively. The manuscripts generally have *ḍ* and *ḍh* (for *ṛ* and *ṛh* also) but the printed books differ. Jāyasī's *Padmāvat*, for instance, keeps *ḍ* and *ḍh* throughout in the edition of the Bengal Asiatic Society while the *Rāmacaritamānasa* of Tulsīdās gives *ḍ*, *ḍh* and *ṛ*, *ṛh* distinctly in the Nāgarī Pracāriṇī Sabhā edition. *Indrāvatī* of Nūr Muhammad has promiscuously both the symbols[1].

ṛ, *ṛh* *baṛa* 'big' (T. 107), *baṛhai* 'increases' (T. 103), *chāṛaū* 'I leave' (N. 20), *kāṛhai* 'pulls' (N. 17), but *kàḍhai* in the next line.

t *tumhārē* 'yours' (T. 102), *nakhata* 'stars' (T. 103).

th *thira* 'steady' (J. 70), *māthai* 'on the head' (J. 72).

d *dēkha* 'having seen' (J. 72), *ōdara* 'stomach' (J. 78).

dh *dhani* 'blessed' (J. 80), *gandha* 'smell' (J 79).

p *pūri* 'complete' (J. 79), *dipā* 'shone' (J. 81).

ph *phōrai* 'to be broken' (T. 163), *hariphāreuri* 'a variety of fruit' (J. 420).

[1] *ṛ* and *ṛh* have been dealt with here, therefore, and not under semi-vowels.

b *bairī* 'enemy' (J. 249), *jāba* 'shall go' (J. 249).

bh *bhūlaũ* 'forget' (J. 249), *ūbhi* 'having got bored' (J. 160).

B. MODERN AWADHI

p

§ 14. The sound **p** is a breathed bi-labial unaspirated plosive. In a word it can occur initially as in **pʌin**[1] 'sharp', **paɪtaɪ** 'leaf', medially as in **piɪpʌr** 'a kind of tree', **upɪʌr** 'above' or finally as in **sʌraɪp** 'curse', **naɪp** 'measure'.

b

§ 15. The sound **b** is a voiced bilabial unaspirated plosive. It is fully voiced, inasmuch as the voice begins earlier than the explosion, and thus slightly differs in shade from English **b** In a word it can occur initially as in **baɪp** 'father', **biṭijaɪ** 'daughter', medially as in **kʌbisaɪ** 'yellow clay,' and finally as in **ɟaɪib** 'shall go'.

NOTE.—Final **b** is generally unexploded and devoiced (See Ins. I)

t

§ 16. The sound **t** is a breathed dental unaspirated plosive. The passage of breath is closed by making the tip of the tongue touch the points of both the upper and lower teeth (see Pal. 2). In a word it can occur initially as in **tɪrṇ̣** 'three', **turʌt** 'at once', medially as in **pʌturijaɪ** 'harlot', **kutʌwaɪ** 'dog', or finally as in **saɪt** 'seven', **pʌraɪt** 'a big dish'.

d

§ 17. The sound **d** is a voiced unaspirated dental plosive. The closure is made just as to pronounce **t** but the vocal cords vibrate all the time until the explosion. In a word it can occur initially as in **diſiṣ̣i** 'he gave', **dulʌſiaɪ**

[1] Unless otherwise stated, the examples given in the following pages have been taken from the Lakhīmpurī dialect.

'bride-groom', medially as in **kuɪdʌb** 'to jump', **baɪdʌrɳ** 'cloud' or finally as in **tõɪd** 'protruding belly,' **gẽɪd** 'ball'.

ʈ

§ 18. The sound **ʈ** is a breathed unaspirated retroflex plosive. The closure is made by the touch of the back of the tip of the tongue at the smooth surface of the hard palate right above the rough back of the teeth-ridge (see Pal. 3). In a word, it can occur initially as in **ʈẽɪu** 'habit,' **ʈʌʈuaɪ** 'pony,' medially as in **khʌʈijaɪ** 'bedstead,' **loʈijaɪ** 'water-jug' or finally as in **bflaɪʈ** 'bard,' **bflẽɪʈ** 'present'.

ɖ

§ 19. The sound **ɖ** is a voiced unaspirated retroflex plosive. The closure is made just as in **ʈ** but the voice is heard all along until the explosion. It can occur initially in a word as in **ɖeuɾflex** 'one and a half time,' **ɖebijaɪ**, 'casket,' or medially and finally when preceded by its nasal as in **kʌɳɖaɪ** 'cow-dung cakes,' **mʌɳɖiɪ** 'grain-market, **lʌɳɖ** 'penis', **ʈhʌɳɖ** 'cold'.

k

§ 20. The sound **k** is a breathed unaspirated velar plosive. The back of the tongue rises up towards the soft palate almost at the point where it meets the hard palate and makes the closure there ordinarily. When a front vowel follows it, however, the closure is made further forward on the hard palate particularly on the sides (see Pal. 4 and 5). In a word, it can occur initially as in **kʌpoɽaɪ** 'cloth,' **kinaɪriɪ** 'border,' medially as in **pʌlokaɪ** 'bed,' **khirkijaɪ** 'window,' or finally as in **taɪk** 'opportunity,' **niɪk** 'good'.

g

§ 21. The sound **g** is the voiced unaspirated velar plosive. The closure in the mouth is formed just as for **k**, but here the voice is heard all through until the sound explodes. In a word, it can occur initially as in **goɪflũɪ** 'wheat,'

gãɪʈhi̯ 'knot,' medially as in **leɦẽgaɪ** 'petticoat,' **bʌgijaɪ** 'garden' or finally as in **bɦãɪg** 'an intoxicating plant,' **ʈãɪg** 'leg'.

ph

§ 22. The sound **ph** is the aspirated form of **p**. It resembles the Southern English *p* of stressed syllables with this difference that in the Awadhi sound the aspiration is stronger as with all the aspirated sounds treated below. In a word, it can occur initially, *e.g.*, in **phʌrikaɪ** 'a gate made of straw,' **phoɪrʌb** 'to break,' medially, *e.g.*, in **tʌlphʌti̯** 'writhing,' **sʌphaɪ** 'clear,' or finally as in **baɪph** 'vapour,' **maɪph** 'pardon'.

bɦ

§ 23. The sound **bɦ** is the aspirated form of **b**. The voice is heard throughout the aspiration. In a word, it can occur initially as in **bɦaɪiɪ** 'brother,' **bɦiɪɟʌb** 'to be wet,' medially, *e.g.*, in **khʌmbɦaɪ** 'a pillar,' **goɪbɦiɪ** 'cauliflower' or finally, *e.g.*, in **ʈoɪbɦ** 'spaces of sewing,' **ɟiɪbɦ** 'tongue'.

th

§ 24. The sound **th** is the aspirated form of **t**. In a word, it can occur initially as in **thʌ̃bɦəraɪ** 'post,' **thuɪkɳ** 'saliva', medially as in **paɪthʌr** 'stone,' **mɜthʌuriɪ** 'small tablets made of *urd* and used as meat,' or finally as in **saɪth** 'with,' **maɪth** 'forehead'.

dɦ

§ 25. The sound **dɦ** is the aspirated form of **d**. The voice is heard throughout the aspiration. In a word, it can occur initially as in **dɦowaɪiɪ** 'washing,' **dɦaɪn** 'paddy,' medially in **bə̃ɪdɦʌb** 'to tie,' **sẽɪdɦi̯** 'an opening in wall made by burglars,' or finally as in **kə̃ɪdɦ** 'shoulder,' **bə̃ɪdɦ** 'string'.

tʰ

§ 26. The sound **tʰ** is the aspirated form of **t**. In a word, it can occur initially as in **tʰʌʈʃiijaɪwʌb** 'to put in standing posture', **tʰʌur** 'room, space', medially as in **laɪtʰiɪ** 'stick', **mʌɳtʰaɪ** 'whey' or finally as in **kaɪtʰ** 'wood', **ɖʃiɪtʰ** 'obstinate'.

ɖʃ

§ 27. The sound **ɖʃ** is the aspirated form of **ɖ**; the voice is heard throughout the aspiration. It can occur initially in a word as in **ɖʃoɪwaɪ** 'presents', **ɖʃoɪlʌk** 'drum' or medially when preceded by its nasal as in **tʰʌɳɖʃaɪiɪ**' 'cooling beverage'.

kh

§ 28. The sound **kh** is the aspirated form of **k**. In a word, it can occur initially as in **kheɪt** 'field', **khoɪlʌb** 'to open', medially as in **mukhijaɪ** 'headman', **ãɪkhiɪ** 'eyes', or finally as in **bʃuɪkh** 'hunger', **sʌnduɪkh** 'box'.

gʃ

§ 29. The sound **gʃ** is the aspirated form of **g**; the voice is present throughout the aspiration. In a word it can occur initially as in **gʃẽgʃʌrijaɪ** 'a girl's petticoat', **gʃeɪrãudaɪ** 'a baby's toy-house of sand', medially as in **nãɪgʃʌb** 'to cross', **sũɪgʃẽu** 'I smelt' or finally as in **gʃaɪgʃ** 'a person who cleverly hides his motive'.

c

§ 30. The sound **c** is the breathed affricate unaspirated palatal consonant. The closure of the breath is made by the front of the tongue at the rough back of the teeth-ridge and is followed by friction (See Pal. 6). The touch continues a little longer than in the case of other plosives **k, t,** etc., and a slight affrication is perceptible. This affrication is, however, much less than in the corresponding English sound **tʃ**.

c can occur initially as in **cʌnaɪ** 'gram', **coʈɪaɪ** 'thief', medially as in **khãɪciɪ** 'a basket', **pãflicaɪnị** 'cognizance', or finally in a word as in **pãɪc** 'five', **naɪc** 'dance'.

ɟ

§ 31. The sound **ɟ** is the voiced variety of **c** and may be called a voiced affricate unaspirated palatal consonant. In a word it can occur initially as in **ɟãɪgfl** 'thigh', **ɟʌun** 'which', medially as in **bflãɟʌb** 'to string', **mĩɪɟeũ** 'I crumbled (trans.)', or finally as in **raɪɟ** 'mason', **mũɪɟ** 'a kind of grass'.

ch

§ 32. The sound **ch** is the aspirated variety of **c**. In a word it can occur initially as in **chʌgoriɪ** 'goat', **chãɪʈʌb** 'to wash', medially as in **paɪchɛɪ** 'behind', **tirchaɪ** 'crooked', or finally as in **chũɪch** 'empty', **kõɪch** 'lap apron'.

ɟfl

§ 33. The sound **ɟfl** is the aspirated form of **ɟ**. In a word it can occur initially as in **ɟflʌloraɪ** 'mashed vegetable leaves', **ɟflĩɪgaɪ** 'shrimp', medially as in **mʌ̃ɟfloɪlaɪ** 'of middling size', **suɪɟflʌb** 'to be visible', or finally as in **sãɪɟfl** 'evening', **ɟflãɪɟfl** 'an ornament for ankles'.

General Notes on the Plosives.

§ 34. The voiced plosives are generally shorter than the breathed ones. For instance, **t** of **paɪtiɪ** 'leaf' is longer than **d** of **paɪdiɪ** 'broke wind' (See Inscs. 2 and 3). The voiced plosives have strong voice when they are intervocalic. In the initial and final positions the voice is comparatively less strong (Cf. Inscs. 3 and 4).

In an intervocalic breathed plosive, faint voice appears generally in the initial stage of closure (plosion) as well as in the explosion (See **k** of Insc. 1).

The aspirated forms of the plosives are merely plosives with **h** or **fl** (see aspirated sounds in Inscs. 1, 4, 7, 10, 15,

19 and 22). The aspiration, however, is united closely with the explosion. It is convenient to treat the aspirates as separate sounds, as they have been so treated all through by Indian grammarians.

A long consonant is about sixty per cent longer than the corresponding short one (See Inscs. 5 and 6, **paɪtaɪ** and **pʌtɪaɪ** 'leaf').

Final plosives preceded by a short vowel are longer than those preceded by a long vowel (See Inscs. 7 and 8 **piṭh** and **piɪṭh** 'back').

The general remarks made about plosives are applicable to the affricates also. An affricate is generally a little longer than a plosive, breathed or voiced, (See Inscs. 11 and 12 **cʌṭibaɪ** 'shall lick' and **sĩcibaɪ** 'shall irrigate').

C. Origin of Sounds

k

§ 35. Initial Awadhi **k-** is derived from MIA *k-* which came from OIA

(*i*) *k-* *kārya* > **kaɪɹ** 'business'

(*ii*) *kr-* *krośa* > **koɪs** 'a distance of two miles'

(*iii*) *sk-* (exceptionally) *skandha* > **kãɪdɦ** 'shoulder'.

Medial and final **-k** is derived from MIA

(*i*) *-k-* after *ṅ* *vaṅka* (< Skt. *vakra*) > **bãɪkaɪ** 'crooked'

(*ii*) *-kk-* *cikkaṇa* > **cɪkʌn** 'smooth', OIA *pakva* (MIA *pikka*) > **paɪk** 'ripe'.

In words of foreign origin **k** represents foreign *k* and *q*, and sometimes *g*, *e.g.*, **kʌlʌm** < *qalam* 'pen', **dukaɪn** < *dukān* 'shop', **bʌkucaɪ** < *bugcā* 'a load'. **k** is also found in certain words which appear to be *Deśī*. *e.g.*, **boɪkaɪ** 'a bamboo box'.

Besides **k** is found in many modern suffixes, *e.g.*, **bʌṛaɪ** : **baṛkaɪ** 'big'.

kh

§ 36. Initial **kh-** comes from MIA *kh-* which was derived from OIA

(*i*) *kh- khādya-* > **khaɪɟaɪ** 'a variety of sweetmeat'

(*ii*) *kṣ- kṣetra* > **khetɪ** 'field'

(*iii*) *sk- skambha-* > **khʌmbʰaɪ** 'pillar'.

Medially and finally **kh** comes from MIA

(*i*) *-kkh- pakkhī-* > **pɑ̃ɪkhiɪ** 'small winged insects', **suɪkh** 'dry', **ukhaɪrʌb** 'to dig up'

(*ii*) *-ṅkh- *kaṅkha-* > **kɑ̃ɪkhi̯** 'armpit'.

In some words *kh* represents OIA *ṣ* by its pronunciation as *kh*, *e.g.*, **doɪkhɳ** < *doṣaḥ* 'defect'.

In foreign loan-words **kh** represents foreign *kh* generally, *e.g.*, **ʌkhʌroɪʈ** < *akhrōṭ* 'nuts', and in **bʌkhʌt** < *vaqt* 'time' it represents *q*.

g

§ 37. Initially **g-** comes from MIA *g-* which is derived from OIA

(*i*) *g- gata-* > **gaɪ** 'went'

(*ii*) *gr- grāmaḥ* > **gɑ̃ɪu** 'village'.

g represents *jñ* in *ardhatatsama* words, *e.g.*, ***jñāna***: **gjaɪn** 'knowledge' and *-k-* in **geɪraɪ** < *ekādaśa* and *gh* in **ʌrʌgɳ** < *arghyaḥ* 'offering'.

Medially and finally **-g-** comes from MIA

(*i*) *-gg- aggī* > **aɪgi̯** 'fire'

(*ii*) *-g-* after *ṅ*, *aṅga-* > **ɑ̃ɪgaɪ** 'a sort of coat'.

In foreign loan-words **g** represents foreign *g* and *ġ*, *e.g.*, **gʌrɪb** < *ġarīb* 'poor', **gumaɪn** < *gumān* 'pride'.

gʱ (*gh*)

§ 38. Initial **gʱ-** is derived from MIA *gh-* which itself comes from OIA

gh- ghṛta- > **gʱiu** 'clarified butter'.

In **ghaɪn** 'one sweep of material put in pan for baking' **gh** is possibly connected with *g-* (*grahaṇa*).

Intervocal and final **-gfi** comes from MIA

(*i*) *-ggh- vaggha* > **baɪgfi** 'tiger'

(*ii*) *-gh-* after *-ṅ- laṅghai* > **nɑ̃ɪghaɪ** 'crosses'.

In **aɪogfiiɪ** 'a wooden vessel', the possibility of derivation is from 'learned' *arghya-* 'offering' owing to water and flowers, etc., having been offered in such a vessel.

gfi is also found in many *deśī* words, *e.g.*, **gfiĩɪc** or **gfi˜ʈuaɪ** 'neck'.

c

§ 39. Initial **c-** comes from MIA *c-* derived from OIA

(*i*) *c- cakra-* > **cʌkiaɪ** 'stone-mill'

(*ii*) *cy- cyavati* > **cuʌi** 'leaks'.

Medially and finally **-c** is derived from MIA

(*i*) *-cc- saccaṃ* > **sɑ̃ɪcɳ** 'true'

(*ii*) *-c-* after *-ñ- aṅcala* > **ɑ̃ɪcʌr** 'breast'.

In foreign loan-words *c* represents foreign *c* (**tʃ**) *e.g.*, **ʌckʌn**: *ackan* 'tunic'.

ch

§ 40. Initial **ch-** is derived from MIA *ch-* which comes from OIA

(*i*) *ch- chedana-* > **cheɪniɪ** 'chisel'

(*ii*) [*ṣ-* in **chaɪ** < *ṣaṭ* 'six'].

Medial and final **ch** comes from MIA

(*i*) *-cch- acchaï-* Early Aw. *āchai* 'is', *maccha-* > **mʌchoriɪ** 'fish', *macchiā* > **maɪchiɪ** 'fly', cf. **mʌmaɪkhiɪ** 'bee'

(*ii*) *-ch-* after *ñ*, *pauñchai* > **põɪchaɪ** 'wipes'.

ɟ (j)

§ 41. Initial **ɟ-** is derived from MIA *j-* which comes from OIA

(*i*) *j- jihvā* > **ɟiɪbfi** 'tongue'

(*ii*) *jy-* *jyeṣṭha* > **ɟeɾʈh** 'elder'
(*iii*) *jv-* *jvalati* > **ɟaɾai** 'burns'
(*iv*) *dy-* *dyūta-* > **ɟuə̃ɾ** 'gambling'
(*v*) *y-* *yauvana* > **ɟoɾbʌn** 'youthfulness'.

Medial and final **-ɟ** is derived from MIA

(*i*) *-jj-* *ajja* > **aɾɟ** 'to-day', **uɟaɾ** 'white', **bʌniɟ** 'merchandise'

(*ii*) *-j-* coming after *ñ* **pə̃ɾɟaɾ** < *pañjara* 'skeleton'.

In *tatsama* words intervocal **-ɟ-** represents Sanskrit *-j-* *e.g.*, **raɾɟaɾ** 'king'.

In foreign loan-words **ɟ** represents foreign *j* (**ɟʌmaɾ** < *jamaç* 'collection') and *z* (**mʌɟaɾ** < *mazaḥ* 'fun'), **ð** (**guɟʌɾ** < **guðar** 'sustenance'), **đ** (**hʌɟuɾɾ** < **huđūr** 'Your Honour'), **ƶ** (**ɟulum** < **ƶulm** 'oppression'), all of which were pronounced as *z* in Persian.

ɟɦ (*jh*)

§ 42. Initial **ɟɦ-** represents MIA *jh-* which is mostly found in onomatopoetic words, and *Deśī* words:

jh- *jhaṭṭa-* > **ɟɦʌʈ** 'soon'.

Medial and final **ɟɦ** comes from MIA

(*i*) *-jjh-* *bujjhai* > **buɾɟɦʌi** 'understands'. *aṇajjhāō* > **ʌnɟɦaɾ** 'holiday'

(*ii*) *-jh-* coming after *ñ-* *sañjhā* > **sə̃ɾɟɦ** 'evening'.

ʈ (*ṭ*)

§ 43. Initial **ʈ-** comes from MIA *ṭ-* (OIA *tr-*) and from *deśī* words.

ṭuṭṭai > **ʈuɾʈʌi** 'breaks', **ʈə̃ɾg** 'leg'.

Medial and final **-ʈ** is derived from MIA

(*i*) *-ṭṭ-* *vaṭṭai* > **baɾʈeɾ** 'is'

(*ii*) *-ṭ-* after *ṇ-* *kaṇṭaa* > **kə̃ɾʈaɾ** 'thorn'

(*iii*) *-ṭṭ-* of *deśī* words, *e.g.*, **peɾʈ** < * *peṭṭa* 'stomach'.

In **ɖə̃ɾʈʌb** which possibly comes from √*daṇḍa-*

-ʈ- appears to represent devoiced *-ɖ-*.

In loan-words from English ʈ represents English *t*, *e.g.*, **ʈɛɪm** : English *time*.

ʈh (*ṭh*)

§ 44. Initial **ʈh-** is derived from MIA *ṭh-* and is also found in *deśī* words, *e.g.*, **ʈhaɪkur** 'lord', **ʈhʌg** 'robber'.

Medial and final **ʈh** comes from MIA

(*i*) *-ṭṭh- aṅguṭṭha-* > **ãguʈhaɪ** 'thumb'

(*ii*) *-ṭh-* coming after *ṇ- gaṇṭhī* > **gãɪʈhi̯** 'knot'.

NOTE.—In **hũɪʈhaɪ** 'three and a half' < *ardha-caturtha*, OIA *-rth-* which is represented as **-th-** in Awadhī (**cʌuth** < *caturtha*) appears as **ʈh**. The cerebralisation is attested at the Prakrit stage, however (Chatterji: p. 493). Pkt. *-ṭṭh-* in *kaviṭṭha*: Skt. *kapittha* is, however, found as *th* in Aw. **kʌithaɪ**, cf. Mālvī *kabiṭh*.

Medial and final **ʈh** is found in many *deśī* words also, *e.g.*, **ʈhɛɪʈh** 'entirely'.

N.B.—For *-ṭṭh-* of Pkt. represented as **-ɽɦ-** in certain cases see below.

ɖ (*ḍ*)

§ 45. Initial **ɖ-** represents MIA *ḍ-* derived from OIA *d daṇḍa-* > **ɖãɪɽaɪ** 'stalk', *daṃśaka* > **ɖãɪs** 'a biting insect', *dvi-ardha* > **ɖɔɪɽɦ** 'one and a half'.

Where Aw. **ɖ-** corresponds with Sanskrit *ḍ-* (*e.g.*, **ɖoɪraɪ** : *ḍora-* 'thread', the latter represents either a late MIA cerebralisation or a loan-word from *deśī*.

ɖ- occurs in many words of *deśī* origin, *e.g.*, **ɖaɪr**, 'branch', **ɖõɪgiɪ** 'boat'.

Medially and finally **-ɖ** is found only after **ɳ** and in what appear as modern loan-words from other dialects: **pʌɳɖaɪ** 'the keeper of a sacred place', **gʌɳɖaɪ** 'a thread with some mystical influence of some saint, worn on the neck or on the wrist; a group of four', **kʌɳɖaɪ** 'cow-dung cake.'

NOTE.—In Early Awadhī medial *-ḍ-* possibly represents **ɽ** mostly.

ɖɦ (*ḍh*)

§ 46. Initial **ɖɦ-** is derived from MIA *ḍh-* which comes from OIA

(*i*) *dh* with *ɾ*, etc., *dhɾṣṭa* > **ɖɦːɾʈh** ' naughty '

(*ii*) *ḍh* which is either late cerebralisation or is found in a *deśī* loan-word, *e.g.*, **ɖɦoɾwʌː** < *ḍhaukatē-* ' brings, gathers'.

Medial and final **-ɖɦ** is found only after **ɳ** and in few words : **ʈhʌɳɖɦ** ' cold '.

There are a large number of words where **ɖɦ** occurs initially ; these are probably of *deśī* origin, *e.g.*, **ɖɦoɾl** ' drum ', **ɖɦeɾr** ' many ', **ɖɦʌkuliɾ** ' a paddle', **ɖɦũɾɽɦʌ** ' searches '.

t

§ 47. Initial **t-** comes from MIA *t-* derived from OIA

(*i*) *t- tapta* > **taɾt** ' hot '

(*ii*) *tr- trīṇi* > **tiɾn** ' three '.

Medial and final **-t** represents MIA

(*i*) *-tt- putto* > **puɾtɳ** ' son ', *satta* > **saɾt** ' seven '

(*ii*) *-t-* after *n- danto* > **dɑ̃ɾt** ' tooth '.

In *tatsama* and *ardha-tatsama* words, **-t-** might represent Sanskrit *-t-*, *e.g.*,

ɟʌtʌn ∠ *yatna* ' means '.

In foreign loan-words *t* represents *t*, *e.g.*, **mʌut** ' death '.

th

§ 48. Initial **th-** comes from MIA *th-* derived from OIA

(*i*) *st- stana* > **thʌn** ' udder '

(*ii*) *sth- sthālī-* > **thʌrijɑɾ** ' dish '

Medially and finally **-th** is derived from MIA

-tth- derived from OIA

(*i*) *tth- kapittha-* > **kʌithɑɾ** ' a fruit '

(*ii*) *-kth- siktha* > **siɾth** ' a grain '

(*iii*) *-rth- sārtha-* > **saɪthiɪ** 'companion'

(*iv*) *-st- prastara* > **paɪthʌɪ** 'pebble'.

th in all positions occurs in *deśī* words also, *e.g.*, **thʌpʌɽaɪ** 'slap', **thuɪthun** 'horse's nostrils'. In *tatsama* and *ardha-tatsama* words Aw. **-th-** might represent Sanskrit *-th-*, *e.g.*, **kʌthaɪ** 'story'.

d

§ 49. Initial **d-** comes from MIA *d-* derived from OIA

(*i*) *d- dadhi-* > **dʌfiiu** 'curds'

(*ii*) *dr- droṇa-* > **doɪnaɪ** 'a cup made of leaves'.

Medial and final **-d** goes back to MIA

(*i*) *-dd- haliddā-* > **hʌrdiɪ** 'turmeric', *bhādra-pada-* > **bfiaɪdʌũ** 'the Bhādrapada month'

(*ii*) *-d-* after *-n- manda-* > **mãɪdaɪ** 'ill'.

NOTE.— **-d** derived from MIA. *-d* after *n* is not found in the Eastern dialects where the nasalisation plus *-d* in such cases is represented by *n*, *e.g.*, Lmp. **cãɪdiɪ**, J. **caɪniɪ** 'silver'.

In Lmp. **dʌurʌb** (Eastern **dfiʌurʌb**), deaspiration of Skt. *dhāv-* 'to run' is possible.[1] *dh-* in this verb is attested by Early Awadhī (Tulsi : *dhāi* 'having run').

dfi (*dh*)

§ 50. Initial **dfi-** goes back to MIA *dh-* derived from OIA

(*i*) *dh- dhānya* > **dfiaɪn** 'corn, paddy'

(*ii*) In Aw. **dfiiɪ, dfiijaɪ** 'daughter', **dfi-** goes back to MIA *dh-* (Pāli *dhītā*) representative of *d-* in OIA (*duhitā*).

Medial and final **-dfi** is derived from MIA

(*i*) *-ddh- duddha* > **duɪdfi** 'milk', *giddha* > **giɪdfi** 'vulture'.

[1] (*i*) *dhāvati* > *dhāai*

(*ii*) *dravati* > *davaï* > *dava-ḍa-ï* > *dauṛe*

(*ii*) *-dh* after *n*, *bandhai* > **bãɪdɦaɪ** 'ties', *randhai* > **rãɪdɦaɪ** 'cooks'.

NOTE— **-dɦ** derived from MIA *-dh-* after *-n-* is not found in Eastern dialects where the nasalisation plus **-dɦ** in such cases is represented by **-nɦ**, *e.g.*, **baɪnɦaɪ** 'ties', **ʌnɦʌɪrɪɪ** 'darkness'. In Lakhimpurī and other Western dialects **-dɦ** intrudes in other cases also where Eastern dialects have **-nɦ** derived from MIA, *e.g.*, Lmp. **ʤõdɦʌɪjaɪ** (Eastern **ʤonɦʌɪjaɪ**) < *joṇhā-* 'moonlight'. Lmp. **kãdɦʌɪjaɪ** (Eastern **kʌnɦʌɪjaɪ**) < *kaṇha*—'Kṛṣṇa'.

dɦ- occurs in certain words which are of obscure origin, *e.g.*, **dɦʌmaɪrɪ̤** 'wild sport', **dɦuɪm** 'show, pomp'.

p

§ 51. Initial **p-** comes from MIA *p-* derived from OIA

(*i*) *p- patrī-* : **paɪtɪɪ** 'leaf', *pṛcch-* : **puɪch-** 'to ask'

(*ii*) *pr- priya-* : **pijaɪ** 'beloved', *prasar-* : **pʌsʌr-** 'to lie down'.

Medial and final *-p* comes from MIA

(*i*) *-pp- uppajjai* : **upoʤʌɪ** 'is born', *sappa* : **sãɪp** 'snake', *appaṇam* : **ʌpʌn** 'one's own'

(*ii*) *-p-* after *-m- kampai* : **kãɪpʌɪ** 'trembles'.

p is found in many words of *deśī* origin, *e.g.*, **peɪʈ** 'belley', **ʈoɪpiɪ** 'cap'.

p in foreign loan-words represents foreign *p*. In **supeɪd** 'white' it stands for Persian *f* (*sufaid*).

ph

§ 52. Initial **ph-** comes from MIA *ph-* derived from OIA

(*i*) *ph- phala* : **phʌl** 'fruit', *phālguna* : **phaɪgun** 'the month Phālgun'

(*ii*) *sp- spand-* : **phãɪd-** 'to jump'

(*iii*) *sph- sphuṭ-* : **phuɪʈ-** 'to break'.

Medial and final *ph* represents MIA

(*i*) *-pph- vappha-* : **bʌɪph** 'vapour', *upphaṇāi*: **uphonʌɪ** 'bursts up as foam'

(*ii*) *-ph-* after *m gumpha-* : **gʊɪphʌɪ** 'twining'.

ph occurs in *deśī* words, *e.g.*, **phẽɪʈʌɪ** 'a wrapper', **hã̃ɪphʌb** 'to breathe deeply when exhausted'.

In foreign loan-words, *ph* represents *f*, *e.g.*, **sʌphʌɪ** 'clear' : Pers. *sāf*.

b

§ 53. Initial **b-** represents MIA (*a*) *b-* which represents OIA

(*i*) *b- budhya-* **buɪʝfl-** 'to understand'

(*ii*) *br- brāhmaṇa* : **bʌɪmflʌn** 'Brahmin'

(*iii*) *dv- dvādaśa* : **bʌɪrʌɪ** 'twelve' (and so forth in the numerals).

(*b*) *v-* which represents OIA

(*i*) *v- vātāvali-* : **bʌjʌɪrɪ̣** 'wind', *vismar-* : **bisʌr-** 'to forget', *uvaviṭṭha-* : **bʌiʈh-** 'sitting'

(*ii*) *vy- vyāghra-* : **bʌɪgflɻ** 'tiger'.

(*c*) *m-* which represents OIA

m- mukula : **bʌur** 'blossom of the mango tree.'

Medial and final **-b** represents MIA

(*i*) *-b-* after *m*, *amba-* (< *āmra*) : **ã̃bijʌɪ** 'green mangoes', *tambūla-* : **tã̃bʊɪliɪ** 'seller of betel-leaves'.

(*ii*) *-bb- dubbala* : **dʊɪbʌr** 'thin', *kabbura-* : **kʌbrʌɪ** 'spotted'.

N.B.—Western Awadhī does not have **-mb-** as **-m** as Hindustānī and Eastern Awadhī have, for instance W. Aw. **kã̃bʌrɪɪ** (variant **kʌmʌrɪɪ**) 'blanket' < *kambala-*, **ʝʌmunɪɪ**

<*jambū-* is a loan-word, the pure Western Awadhī word being **phʌrɛ̃ɪdaɪ** < *phalendra-*

In the numerals **-bb-** has been retained, **chʌbbis** 'twenty-six'.

In **bʌɦini̯** 'sister' there is evidence of a transference of aspiration from the first to the second syllable.

In *tatsama* or *ardha-tatsama* words *-b* may represent Sanskrit *-v-*, *e.g.*, **pʌrbiɪ** < *parvan* 'festival'.

In foreign loan-words and in *deśī* words Aw. **b** represents foreign *b*.

bɦ (*bh*)

§ 54. Initial **bɦ-** represents MIA *bh-* derived from OIA

(*i*) *bh- bhikṣā* > **bɦiɪkh** 'alms', *bhūmi* : **bɦuĩ** 'ground'

(*ii*) *bhr- bhrāṭṛ-* > **bɦaɪiɪ** 'brother', *bhrāṣṭra-* > **bɦaɪʈhaɪ** 'kiln'

(*iii*) *-bhy- abhyantara* > **bɦiɪtʌr** 'within'.

In **bɦʌĩsaɪ** (Skt. *mahiṣa-*) 'buffalo' and **bɦɛ̃ɪʈiɪ** (Skt. *mēḍhra-*)- 'sheep', **bɦ-** is possibly derived from *m* through the transposition of *-h-* (Chatterji, p. 515). Another suggestion is that these words might be *deśī* in origin.

Medial and final **bɦ-** represents MIA

(*i*) *-bbh- gabbhiṇī* > **gaɪbhini̯** 'pregnant', *jibbhā* > **ɟiɪbɦ** 'tongue'

(*ii*) *-bh-* after *m kumbhaāra-* > **kũbɦaɪr** 'potter'

(*iii*) *-mh bāmhaṇa* > **bãɪbɦʌn** 'Brahmin' (beside **baɪmɦʌn**).

bɦ occurs in several *deśī* words, *e.g.*, **bɦiɪr** 'crowd', **bɦʌbbɦaɪ** 'agitation'.

Nasals

A. Early Awadhi

§ 55. Out of the five nasals, *ṅ* and *ñ* are found always in the middle of a word before a mute of their own class.

ṇ occurs medially, both intervocally and before a mute of its class, *n* and *m* occur in all positions. For instance :

ṇ *bhūṣaṇa* 'ornaments' (T. 141).

n *nindahī* '(they) blame' (T. 191), *āna* 'another' (T. 190), *kīnha* 'did' (T. 191), *dēotanha* 'gods' (J. 495), *nhāi* 'having taken a bath' (T. 223).

m *māhura* 'poison' (T. 222), *amia* 'nectar' (T. 231), *tumha* 'you' (T. 227).

ṁ always represents one of the five nasals before the mutes of its class, *e.g.*,
maṁgala 'auspiciousness' (T. 198), *puṁja* 'heap' (T. 198), *daṁḍavata* 'obeisance' (T. 199), *suṁdari* 'the Beauty' (J. 488), *sammata* 'agreed' (T. 223).

B. Modern Awadhi

m

§ 56. The sound **m** is the voiced bi-labial nasal. It can occur initially as in **mʌfiinaɪ** 'month', **mefieruaɪ** 'woman', medially as in **lʌmbaɪ** 'long, tall', **seɪmi** 'French beans', or finally as in **cilʌm** 'a sort of smoking-pipe made of clay', **moɪm** 'wax'.

n

§ 57. The sound **n** is the voiced alveolar nasal. It may be noted, however, that the tip of the tongue while touching the gums touches the teeth also (See Pal. 7).

It can occur initially as in **neuraɪ** 'mongoose', **naɪt** 'relative', medially either singly as in **bʌnaɪwʌb** 'to make', **miaɪnaɪ** a palanquin', **kʌnɪeɪ** 'the corners of a kite' or before a plosive of its class or before **s** as in **bundaɪ** 'earrings', **pʌnthiɪ** 'a posture of sitting with feet on the thighs', **bʌnsiɪ** 'flute'; before a plosive of another class in compound words as in **kʌnpʌʈiɪ** 'temples of cheeks', **kʌnʈoɪp** 'a head-gear covering the ears also', **kʌnkʌijaɪ** 'a kite', **kʌnchedɔnaɪ** 'the ceremony of piercing the ears', and finally as in **loɪn** 'salt', **sʌin** 'beckoning'.

ɳ

§ 58. The sound **ɳ** is the voiced retroflex nasal but is pronounced a little more forward as compared to the plosives **ʈ, ɖ** (See Pal. 8). It can occur only medially and there too only before a retroflex plosive, *e.g.*, in **bʌɳʈaɪdɦaɪr** 'utter ruin', **mʌɳʈhaɪ** 'whey', **mʌɳɖix** 'grain market', **ʈhʌɳɖɦi** 'cool'.

ŋ

§ 59. The sound **ŋ** is the voiced velar nasal (See Pal. 9). It can occur medially and only before a velar plosive, *e.g.*, **sʌŋkʌr** 'Lord Śiva', **sʌŋkh** 'conch-shell', **phʌŋgeɪ** 'persevering entreaty', **sʌŋgɦʌtiɪ** 'companion'.

ɲ

§ 60. The sound **ɲ** is the voiced palatal nasal but is pronounced a little more forward as compared to **c, ɟ** (See Pal. 10). It can occur only medially and there too immediately before affricate consonants, *e.g.*, in **khoɲcaɪ** 'a dish of sweets', **tʌmʌɲcaɪ** 'pistol', **pʌɲchaɪ** 'features', **pʌɲɟaɪ** 'paw', **sʌɲɟɦaɪ** 'evening'.

mɦ

§ 61. The sound **mɦ** is the aspirated form of **m** and occurs only medially, *e.g.* **bʌrəmɦaɪ** 'Brahmā'.

nɦ

§ 62. The sound **nɦ** is the aspirated form of **n** and occurs only medially, *e.g.*, **kʌnɦʌijaɪ** 'Kṛṣṇa'.

General Notes on Nasals

§ 63. Awadhi possesses only two nasals **m** and **n** which are found in various positions in a word and are separate phonemes. The other three **ɳ ŋ ɲ** are found only medially and before the consonants of their class. They come under **n** phoneme. The palatograms show that **ɳ** and **ɲ** are spoken a little forward as compared to **ʈ** and **c** respectively

and that the positions of ɳ and ŋ are not very different. The aspirated forms of the nasals (*i.e.*, **nɦ**, **mɦ**) are not closely united — they are disintegrated sounds.

A nasal before a plosive is longer than otherwise. For instance, compare the length of **sunti** and **suni** (Inscs. 13 and 14).

A nasal nasalises the previous vowel always, *e.g.*, in **sʌŋkh** (Insc. 15) and also the following vowel, *e.g.*, in **suni** and **maxiɪ** (Insc. 14 and 46). It nasalises the following voiced consonants, *e.g.*, in **bʌɳɖaɪ** (Insc. 16), but does not nasalise a breathed consonant (See **bʌɳʈaɪ**, Insc. 17).

NOTE.—A Nasal has become unvoiced in the middle of a sentence expressing the sense of imperative and wonder (*Vide* Charts 3 and 5).

C. ORIGIN

n and nɦ

§ 64. Initial **n-** is derived from OIA

(*i*) *n-* > MIA *ṇ* (except in Paiśācī and Pāli), *e.g.*, *nakṣatra-* > **nʌkhʌt** 'star', *nemi* > **niu** 'foundation'

(*ii*) *jñ-* > *ñ* in Pāli, Māgadhī and Paiśācī but *ṇ* in other Prakrits, *e.g.*, *jñāti-* > **nʌi-ɦʌr** 'a married woman's father's house'.

(*iii*) *sn-* > *ṇh* in MIA and later separated by anaptyxis, *e.g.*, *snā-* > **nʌɦaɪ-b** 'to bathe'.

Medially and finally **-n** is derived from OIA

(*i*) *-jñ-* > MIA *-ṇṇ-* (Pāli, Paiś. and Māg. *-ññ-*) *e.g.*, *vijñapti-* > **bintiɪ** 'prayer'

(*ii*) *-ṇ-* ✓*gaṇ-* > **gʌnʌb** 'to count,' ✓*śṛṇu-* > **sunʌb** 'to hear'

(*iii*) *-ṇy-* > MIA *-ṇṇ-* *e.g.*, *puṇya* > **punni** 'merit'

(*iv*) *-n-* *e.g.*, *navanīta* > **nʌinuɪ** 'butter', *jānāti*: **ɟaɪnʌi** 'knows'

(*v*) *-nn- chinna-* > **chinaɪrị** 'a woman of loose character'

(*vi*) *-ny- e.g., anya* > **aɪn** 'another', *mānya* : **maɪnị** 'honoured relative'

(*vii*) *-rṇ-* MIA *-ṇṇ-*, *e.g., karṇa* > **kaɪn** 'ear', *varṇa-* > **baɪnị** 'habit'

(*viii*) *-sṇ-* > MIA *-ṇh-*, *e.g., kr̥ṣṇa-* > Eastern Awadhī **kʌnfiʌijaɪ** 'Kr̥ṣṇa'.

(*ix*) *-sn-* > MIA *-ṇh-*, *e.g., jyotsnā-* > East. Aw. **ɟonfiʌijaɪ** 'moonlight'

(*x*) *-hn-* > MIA *-ṇh-*, *e.g., cihna* > **cɪnfi** 'a token'.

N.B.—In certain modern dialects of Awadhī **-n-** represents ancient **-nd-**, for which see the origin of **-d-** and **-dfi-** §§ 49-50.

n is also found in words of *deśī* origin and in foreign loan-words.

In a few words **n** represents OIA *l*, *e.g.*, **naɪgfiʌb** : *laṅgh-* 'to cross', **noɪn** : *lavaṇa* 'salt', **nẽgulaɪ** : ? *lāṅgūla-* 'the only boy amongst the girls fed on the ninth day of Āśvin in honour of the Devī'; **ʌrgʌnɪɪ** : *argalā* - 'a rope hung up for putting clothes on'.

m and mfi

§ 65. Initial **m** comes from MIA *m-* derived from OIA

(*i*) *m- mātā-* : **maɪɪ** 'mother', *maśaka*: **maɪsaɪ** 'mosquito', *madhu-makṣikā-* : **mʌ-maɪkhɪ** 'bee'

(*ii*) *mr- mrakṣaṇa* : **maɪkhʌn** 'butter'

(*iii*) *śm- śmaśru* : **moɪch** 'whiskers'.

Medially and finally *-m-* comes from MIA *-mm-*, *e.g.*, *sammuha-* : **sʌmʌhez** 'in front', *ghamma* : **gfiaɪm** 'sun'.

In certain loan-words in the Western dialects, and in the Eastern dialects *-m* represents MIA *-m* + labial mute, *e.g.*, **cuɪmʌb** < *cumb-* 'to kiss'.

-mh- comes from *m* + labial plosive or *-mh-* *e.g.*,
m + *-bh-* **kumflaɪr** < *kumbha -āra* 'potter'
-mh-, *e.g.*, *bamhaṇa-* : **baɪmflan** 'Brahmin'.
m occurs in *deśī* words and in loan-words also.

ɲ ɳ ŋ

§ 66. These three nasals are found in Awadhī before the mutes of their classes only and then also mostly in loan-words either from Sanskrit or foreign languages or in *deśī* words. For examples see §§ 58—60.

Old semi-vowels, Modern semi-vowels and Rolled, Flapped and Lateral consonants.

A. Early Awadhi

§ 67. *y*, *r*, *l* and *v* occur initially as well as medially. For instance :

y *yaha* 'this' (J. 113), *pāyā* 'got' (J. 135).
In the manuscripts the symbol for *y* represents *j* also.
r *rākhā* 'kept' (J. 225), *nīarē* 'near' (J. 225).
l *lēhu* 'take' (J. 273), *hilagi* 'having got entangled' (J. 273).
v *vaha* 'she' (J. 210), *kāvṛnī* 'loving woman' (J.)
In the manuscripts the symbols for *v* and *b* are often confused.

Note.—For Early Awadhī *ṛ*, *ṛh* see § 13.

B. Modern Awadhi

j

§ 68. The sound **j** is pronounced like **i**, only the more sonorous character of the following sound gives it a consonantal character (See Pal. 15). The tongue is very much in the position of *i* (short), the air-passage being a little narrower (Compare Pal. 17). It occurs in a few words initially as in **jʌflu** 'this'. Medially it occurs optionally

between two vowels and serves as glide from the less open to the more open vowel, *e.g.*, **piaɪs** or **pijaɪs** 'thirst', **ɖiʌʈ̥** or **ɖ̥ijʌʈ̥** 'a lamp-stand'.

w

§ 69. The sound **w** is pronounced like **u**, only the more sonorous character of the following sound gives it a consonantal character. In pronouncing it the lower lip touches the upper lip slightly as also the lower teeth but there is no friction except possibly when it is in the initial position. The lip-rounding required for pronouncing this sound is much less than that for the corresponding English sound **w**.

It occurs initially in a few words, *e.g.*, in **waɪr** 'side', **wʌfiu** 'that', medially it occurs between two vowels and serves occasionally as glide from the less open to the more open back vowel, *e.g.*, **puwaɪ** or **puaɪ** 'a kind of cake', **soɪwaɪ** 'slept', **sʌwʌtɨ̥** 'co-wife', **gə̃waɪr** 'villager'.

Note 1.—**w** comes in place of **u** in certain cases of assimilation (See § 152).

Note. 2. In Bāghēlī, **-w-** is generally pronounced as **-b-**

r

§ 70. The sound **r** is the rolled voiced alveolar consonant (See Pal. 11). In pronouncing it the tip of the tongue taps twice or thrice against the alveolar region above the teeth-ridge. It can occur initially as in **rõɪwə̃ɪ** 'hair on the body', **rĩɪdfiʌb** 'to cook', medially as in **beraɪm** 'ill', **muraɪuɪ** 'green grocer'. or finally as in **sʌmbaɪr** 'Monday', **cʌmaɪr** 'cobbler'.

r has an epenthetic vowel before it when it comes initially, *e.g.*, in **raɪm se** (Insc. 18) a tiny vowel appears before **r**.

Note.—For the elision of intervocalic **-r-** in the Absolutive in the Eastern dialects see below Part II Chapter VI (Verbs).

ɾ

§ 71. The sound **ɾ** is the voiced flapped retroflex consonant (see Pal. 12). The back of the tip of the tongue goes up and taps on the rough back above the gums. It can occur singly, and only medially, as in **ɑ̃xɾix** 'bulb', **bfiẽxɾix** 'sheep', or finally, as in **goxɾ** 'feet', **hɑ̃xɾ** 'bones'.

The tapping is only once. As the palatogram shows, the contact is perceptibly higher than in the case of **r** but not so high as in the case of **ʈ**.

rfi

§ 72. The sound **rfi** is the aspirated form of **r**. It can occur only medially as in **ʌrrfiix** 'a kind of pulse', or finally as in **rixrfi** 'spinal cord'.

ɾfi

§ 73. The sound **ɾfi** is the aspirated form of **ɾ**. It can occur either medially as in **baxɾfi̥** 'more', **sixɾfiix** 'steps', or finally as in **buxɾfi** 'old', **koxɾfi** 'leprosy'.

l

§ 74. The sound **l** is the voiced alveolar lateral consonant (see Pal. 13). The tip of the tongue just touches the upper teeth and their root to block the passage and a slight hollow (less than in English **l**) is made, the air passes at the sides. It can occur initially as in **luxʈʌb** 'to rob', **lõxdax** 'a lump', medially as in **kaxli̥** 'tomorrow', **phulʌurix** 'a variety of scone', or finally as in **caxl** 'trick', **ʌmoxl** 'invaluable'.

NOTE—**l** has a subsidiary phoneme before retroflex sounds.

lfi

§ 75. The sound **lfi** is the aspirated form of **l**. It occurs only medially as in **pʌlfiaxwʌb** 'to coax a cow to give milk'.

C. Origin

j (*y*) and w (*v*)

§ 76. These sounds are found very seldom in Awadhī. In the initial position they are found in the pronouns **jʌfiu**, **wʌfiu** which also have alternative forms. In the medial position they serve only as glides between two vowels. They do not occur finally except in some dialects where they stand for **i** and **u** respectively.

Sanskrit *y-* is represented in the initial position by **j** even in the MIA period, and in the medial position it was elided. Sanskrit initial *v-* is represented by **b-** in Awadhī and the medial one by **u** or **b**.

Initial *y-* of foreign words is represented by **i-** or zero in Awadhī (*e.g.*, *yār* Pers.—'friend', Awadhī **iaxr**, *yād-* Pers.—'memory', Aw. **axdi̯**, **ʌkixn** 'belief') and *v-*, *va-* generally by **u-** (*e.g.*, Pers. *vakīl* : Aw. **ukixl**).

In a few words **-w-** medially represents OIA *-p-* (*e.g.*, *sapatnī* : **sʌwʌti̯** 'co-wife'), or with nasalisation it corresponds to OIA *-m-* (*e.g.*, **gʌ̃waxr** : *grāma-* 'villager').

r

§ 77. Initially **r** represents MIA

r- coming from OIA *r-*, *e.g.*, *rātri* : **raxti̯** 'night'.

Medially and finally **r** represents MIA

(*i*) *-r-* coming from OIA *-r-*, *e.g.*, *apara* : **ʌur** 'another', *kēdārikā* : **kejaxriz** 'a bed in a garden', *carma-kāra* : **cʌmaxr** 'cobbler'.

-r- coming from OIA *-t-*, *-d-* in the numerals, *e.g.*, *saptati* : **sʌtxʌri̯** 'seventy', *dvādaśa* : **baxrax** 'twelve', *saptadaśa* : **sʌtxʌrax** 'seventeen'.

(*ii*) *-l-* coming from OIA *-l-*, *e.g.*, *ālasya-* : **axrʌsu̯** 'lethargy', *prapā -śālā* : **pʌusʌrax** 'a place for supplying water', *phalati* : **phʌrex** 'bears fruit',

phalaka- : **phʌrɪʌɪ** 'plank of wood', *musala-*: **muɪsʌrɽ** 'pestle', *viḍāla—*: **bilaɪrɪɪ** 'cat'.

NOTE.—Braj and Bhōjpuri agree with Awadhī, Hindustānī retains **-l-**.

(*iii*) *-ḍ-* coming from OIA *-ṭ-*, *e. g.*, *kaṭu-* : **kʌruɪ** 'bitter', *kīṭa-* : **kirʌwaɪ** 'insect', *viṭapa-* : **birʌwaɪ** 'tree', *puṭa-* : **purijaɪ** 'anything wrapped with paper or leaves'.

NOTE.—Braj and Bhōjpuri agree with Awadhī, Hindustānī represents OIA. *-ṭ-* by **-ɽ-**.

In *ardhatatsama* words, Sanskrit *-r* + consonant is represented in Awadhī by the process of epenthesis, *e.g.*, *dharma* : **dhʌrʌm** 'religion', *samartha* : **sʌmʌrʌth** 'powerful'.

Evidence of such an epenthesis in earlier stages is found from Skt. *ādarśa-* : Aw. **aɪrʌsiɪ** 'an ornament, containing a mirror, worn on the wrist'.

Intervocal **-r-** is dropped out in certain forms of the verb (see Part II, Chap. VI).

r appears in *deśī* words in all positions, and medially and finally it sometimes corresponds with Hindustānī **-ɽ**, *e. g.*, **raɪrị** 'quarrel', **thʌpʌraɪ** (Hin. **thʌpɪʌɽ**) 'slap', **kuɪraɪ** (Hin. **kuɪɽaɪ**) 'rubbish'.

r appears in foreign loan-words also.

rh

§ 78. This sound occurs only in what appear to be *dēśī* words (see § 88).

ɽ (*r*)

§ 79. Awadhī **ɽ** which occurs only medially or finally represents MIA

-ḍḍ- *uḍḍēi* > **uɽʌi**, 'flies',

-ḍ after *ṇ-*, in cases where the nasal survives only as nasalisation, *e.g.*, *aṇḍa-* > **ãɪɽɪɪ** 'the bulb of a fruit', *ḍaṇḍa* > **ɖãɪɽ** 'oar'.

ɾ occurs in many *deśī* words also, *e.g.*, **goxɾ** 'foot'.

ɾfi (*ḍh*)

§ 80. Awadhī **ɾfi** occurs only medially or finally and represents MIA

-ḍḍh- *vaḍḍhai* > **baxɾfiʌi** 'increases', *saḍḍha* + − > **saxɾfiex** 'and half', *vuḍḍha* − > **buxɾfi** 'aged'.

Where **-ɾfi** represents *-ḍh* of the Prakrits, the words are certainly loan-words from other dialects, *e.g.*, **pʌɾfiʌi** < *paḍhai* 'reads', **gaxɾfi** < *gāḍha* 'thick'.

l

§ 81. Initial **l-** represents MIA

l- coming from OIA, *e.g.*, *lakṣa* : **laxkh** 'a lac', *lajjā* : **laxj** 'shame, modesty'. In **laxʈhix** 'stick' it represents OIA *y-* (*yaṣṭi-*).

Medial and final **-l** represents MIA

(*a*) *-ll-* coming from OIA

(*i*) *-dr-* *bhadra-* : **bhʌlax** 'good'.

(*ii*) *-r-* *prerayati* : **pexlʌi** (Pkt. *pellai*) 'enters by force'.

(*iii*) *-ry-* *paryaṅka-* : **pʌlkax** 'bedstead'.

(*iv*) *-ly-* *kalya-* : **kaxlfiị̊** 'yesterday or tomorrow'.

(*v*) *-ll-* *vallī-* : **baxlix** 'the ear of the maize plant'.

(*vi*) *-lv-* *bilva* : **bexl** 'a particular tree'.

(b) Medial **-l-** in numerals corresponds to MIA, OIA *-r-* in figures 'forty' and in those based on it, *e.g.*, *catvārimśat* : **caxlis** 'forty'.

In **lʌʈ-** 'to lose', *l-* would represent *n-* if the word be derived from *naṣṭa-* (Chatterji, p. 545) the loss of aspiration being a difficulty.

Medial **-l-** also corresponds to MIA *ḍ*, *ḷ* derived from OIA *-ḍ-*, *e.g.*, *viḍāla-* : **bilaɪriɪ** 'cat'.

l occurs in *dēśī* and foreign loan-words also.

lh

§ 82. This sound occurs only in what appear to be *dēśī* words and from OIA *hl-*, *e.g.*, *prahlādayati* > **pʌlhaɪwʌi** 'coaxes to give milk' (see § 88).

Sibilants and Aspirate

A. Early Awadhi

§ 83. Of the three sibilants, *s* is the normal one. But *ś* also is found particularly in Tulsīdās and in Lāldās. In the latter it sometimes replaces *s* which possibly shows either that *ś* and *s* both represented the sound *s* or there is ultra-Sanskritisation of *s* into *ś*. The symbol for *ṣ* occurs to represent *kh* both in Tulsīdās and Lāldās. It is hardly possible that *s* existed as a sound.

ś *śrutikīrti* 'name of Shatrughna's wife' (T. 139), *śrāpa* 'curse' (T. 93), *dēśa* 'country' (Lāl.), *śō* 'that' (Lāl.).

s *vasiṣṭha* 'Vasiṣṭha' (T. 139), *bhūsana* 'ornament' (T. 138), *varaṣahī* 'rain' (T. 139), *laṣana* 'Lakṣmaṇa' (T. 192), *bisēṣi* 'particularly' (T. 219); *ṣabari* 'news' (Lāl.), *dēṣi* 'having seen' (Lāl.).

s *suā* 'parrot' (J. 113), *jaisa* 'as' (J. 113), *saguna* 'omen' (T. 295), *bisāla* 'big' (T. 294), *sō* 'that' (T. 295).

Aspirate

h *hai* 'is' (J. 160), *mohī* 'me' (J. 160), *līnhi* 'taken' (J. 160).[1]

ḥ occurs in Tulsīdās and Lāldās in *tatsama* words only, *e.g.*, *jūthaḥ* 'the herd' (T. 295), *niḥkāmī* 'devoid of desires' (Lāl), cf. *niha kalaṃka* 'spotless' (J. 24).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 84. The sound **s** is the breathed alveolar fricative consonant (see Pal. 14). The tip of the tongue touches the upper teeth also. It differs from English **s** in having less friction. It can occur initially as in **soɪrʌfi** 'sixteen', **sẽɪtị** 'free', medially as in **kʌsʌb** 'to tighten', **pʌsijaɪ** 'watchman', or finally as in **pʌcaɪs** 'fifty', **ʈhoɪs** 'solid'.

The sound has no tendency to become voiced in intervocalic position. Final **s** is less pronounced than a plosive.

h

§ 85. The sound **h** is what has been defined as 'Breathed Glottal Fricative'. It 'is the sound of pure breath having a free passage through the mouth.' In a word it can occur initially as in **hʌm** 'we' (see Insc. 47), **huãɪ** 'there'.

It should be noted that the aspirated forms of breathed plosives and affricate contain this sound as their second element (See Inscs. 7, 8, 15).

ɦ

§ 86. The sound **ɦ** is the voiced variety of **h**, and occurs intervocally as in **kʌɦãɪ** 'where', **liɦeũ** 'I took', or finally as in **saɪɦ** 'banker', **dẽɪɦ** 'body'. In the final position, however, the sound finishes with absence of voice, *e. g.*, in **saɪɦ**, **ɦ** is **ɦ-h** (see Insc. 20).

It should be noted that the voiced aspirated plosives, affricate, nasals, rolled, flapped and lateral consonants contain this sound as their second element. This second element tends to be voiceless before whispered vowels, *e.g.*, **duɪdfiɳ** tends to become **duɪdhɳ** (see Insc. 19).

C. Origin

s

§ 87. The dental sibilant is the only one in Awadhi as in Braj and Bhōjpurī and represents OIA *s*, *ś* and *ṣ*

singly as well as in some combinations, through MIA *s* or *-ss-*.

s represents MIA. *s*, *-ss-* derived from OIA.

(*i*) *s-* *sapatnī* : **sʌwʌtį̊** 'rival, co-wife', *saktu-* : **setuar** 'barley-flour', *śvāsa* : **sə̃ar** 'breath', *vas-* : **bʌsʌb** 'to reside'.

(*ii*) *ś-* *śr̥ṅga* : **sĩrg** 'horn', *śuṇḍā-* : **sũrṛį̊** 'trunk', *āśā* : **asa** 'hope', *maśaka-* : **masar** 'mosquito'.

(*iii*) *ṣ-* *soḍaśa* : **sorrar** 'sixteen', *mahisī* : **bfiʌĩsį̊** 'the buffalo'.

(*iv*) *-sm-* *-vismr̥-* : **bisʌrʌb** 'forget'.

(*v*) *-sy-* *ālasya* : **arrʌs** 'indolence'.

(*vi*) *-sr-* *srotas-* : **sort** 'stream'.

(*vii*) *-sv-* *svāmī-* : **sarĩr** 'a saint', *svara* : **sur** 'tune'.

(*viii*) *śm-* *raśmi-* : **rʌsʌrir** 'string'.

(*ix*) *śyāmāka* : **sə̃rwar** 'a wild rice', *śyāla* : **sarr** 'wife's brother'.

(*x*) *śr-* *srāvaṇa*', : **sarwʌn** 'the month of *śrāvaṇa*', *aśru-* : **ə̃rsur** 'tear'.

(*xi*) *śv-* *śvāsa* : **sə̃as** 'breath', *śvasura* : **sʌsur** 'father-in-law'.

(*xii*) *rś-* *parśu-* ; **pʌsurir** 'rib'.

(*xiii*) *rṣ-* *karṣati* : **kʌsʌi** 'pulls'.

(*xiv*) *ṣy-* *puṣya* : **pars** 'the month *pausa*', *ruṣyati* : **rursʌi** 'gets angry'.

NOTE.—In the group *r* and sibilant, epenthesis is witnessed very often, *darśana* : **dʌrəsʌn** 'holy sight', *varṣ-* : **bʌrsʌb** 'to rain'.

š and *s* of foreign words are always represented by *s* in Awadhi.

h, ɦ

§ 88. Initial **h-** is derived from MIA *h-* which comes from OIA

(*i*) *h- hasta* : **hɑ̃ɪth** 'hand', *haridrā-* : **hʌrdiɪ** 'turmeric'.

(*ii*) *bh-* in the case of root *bhū-* which is already in the Prakrits found as *ho-*, Aw. **hoɪi** 'be' etc.; also in **hɑ̃ɪɽiɪ** 'a vessel' < *bhāṇḍa-*, Aw. has **bɦɑ̃ɪɽɑɪ** 'treasure', also.

In the pronoun **hʌm** 'we' and its derivations, we find a development of *-sm-* into **h**, through *-mh-* in the Prakrits and in **hʌi**, **ɑɪɦi**, **ʌɦʌi** we find **h** coming from *-st-* through *-tth- th*, possibly.[1]

Medial or final **-ɦ** comes from MIA *-h* which is derived from OIA

(*i*) *-h- lauhakāra* : **lohɑɪr** 'blacksmith', *phalāhāra* : **phʌrəɦʌr** 'fruit-diet'.

(*ii*) *-kh- mukha* : **muh** 'mouth', *nakha* : **nʌɦ** 'nail', *ākheṭa* : **ʌɦeɪr** 'prey', *śikhā-* : **siɦɑɪb** 'to feel puffed up'.

(*iii*) *-gh- māgha* : **mɑɪɦ** 'the month of Māgha', *megha-* : **meɦɑɪb** 'to get wet', *araghaṭṭa-* : **rɑ̃ɦʌʈɑɪ** 'spindle', *laghu-* : **lʌɦuɾɑɪ** 'younger', *stāgha* : **thɑɪɦ** 'bottom', *saghana* : **sʌɦʌn** 'thick'.

(*iv*) *-th- kath-* : **kʌɦʌb** 'to say'.

(*v*) *-dh- avidhavā-tva* : **ʌuɦɑɪt**, 'non-widowhood', *dadhi-* : **dʌɦiu** 'curds', *putra-vadhū* : **pʌtoɪɦ** 'daughter-in-law', *madhūka-* **mʌhuɑɪ** 'a particular tree'.

(*vi*) *-bh- gabhīra* : **gʌɦir** 'deep', *nibhālayati* : **nihɑɪrʌi** 'sees closely', *pratyabhijānāti* : **pʌɦicɑɪnʌi** 'recognises', *śobh-* : **soɦɑɪb** 'to appear agreeable'.

---

[1] See § 292.

In the numerals *h* represents *ś* (**gɛɪrʌfi** —'eleven') and *s* (**ekofiʌtɪʌrị** —'seventy-one'). This is attested by the Prakrits (see Bloch : *Langue Marathe* § 160). Similarly **fi** of the pronoun **efiu** 'this' goes back to OIA *ṣ*.

In the forms of the Future verb **-fi-** represents OIA *-ṣy-* > MIA *-ss-* and later *-h-*.

OIA sibilant + nasal which is represented in MIA as *nasal + h* is separated by an epenthetic vowel, *e.g.*, *snā-* : *ṇha-* : **nʌfiaɪ-** or even **hʌnaɪ-** by metathesis.

mfi and **nfi** occur in a few *ardhatatsama* words.

Similarly **lfi-** comes from OIA *-hl-* in **pʌlfiaɪwʌb** < *prahlād-* 'to please, to coax'.

Aw. **rfi** represents Hindustānī ɽfi mostly in obscure words, *e.g.*, **rɪɪrfi** : Hin. **rɪɪɽfi** 'backbone', the origin of, **ʌrɪfiɪɪ** 'kind of pulse' is obscure.

-fi- appears to mark hiatus in **-ʌfii** besides **-ai,** an affix of Present Tense 3rd pers. sing. < *ati* (compare Bloch : *Langue Marathe* § 161). In **dɪɪnfi** < MIA *diṇṇa*, the advent of **fi** is obscure.

The treatment of *-st* of loan-words as **fiʌtɪ -** has been noticed below (§132.)

h, -fi is found in *Dēśī* words and in loan-words from foreign languages.

Simple Vowels

A. Early Awadhi

§ 89. The vowels are found in all the positions—initial, medial and final—in a word. For instance :

a *ambrita-bēli* 'nectar-creeper' (J. 52), *kadama* 'kadamba' (J. 53).

ā *āchahɪ* 'are' (J. 53), *pāsā* 'sides' (J. 53).

i *ihai* 'this' (J. 286), *dījia* 'please give' (J. 286), *tehi* '*him*' (J. 286.)

ī *īsa* 'lord' (T. 86), *tīya* 'woman' (T. 106), *bajāī* 'beat (the drum)' (T. 107)

u *uṭhai* 'gets up' (T. 107), *suhāī* 'beautiful' (T. 107), *haru* 'remove' (T. 107).

ū *ūpara* 'above' (J. 61), *ṭūṭa* 'broke', (T. 116), *kāū* 'ever' (T. 188).

ṛ occurs only in *tatsama* words and is mostly represented by *ri*:

kṛpā 'favour' (T. 293), *vritti* 'livelihood' (Lāl), *riṣi* 'sage' (T. 39), *ṛiṣi* 'sage' (Lāl.)

e The symbol for short *e* is the same in the manuscripts as well as in the printed books as for the long *ē*, only Grierson's edition of the *Padmāvat* has a different symbol. But the existence of *e* is attested by metrical compositions in all the texts—a long *ē* would disturb the metre:

ehi 'this' (T. 160) *jehi* 'whomever' (T. 115), *bhae* 'having become' (J. 58).

ē *ēkahi* 'one only' (T. 170), *dēkhu* 'see' (T. 170), *sānē* 'mixed' (T. 207).

o Like *e*, the existence of *o* (as different from *ō*) is inferred from metres; it is found with the symbol in the *Padmāvat* only:

ohī 'the same, (J. 171), *sohāhī* 'appeal' (T. 171).

ō *ōhī* 'to him' (T. 332), *ḍhōla* 'drum' (T. 366).

B. Modern Awadhi

ix

§ 90. The sound **ix** is the Close Front Vowel, a little more open than Cardinal No. I (see Pal. 16). The lip-spreading also is less tense than in the Cardinal Vowel.

It can occur initially as in **ixɽfiix** 'stubborn', medially as in **pixseũ** 'I ground', **bixs** 'twenty' or finally in a word as in **pʌthorix** 'stone', **cʌilix** 'fuel-sticks'.

i

§ 91. The sound **i** is just like English short *i* (*it*, *pit* etc.) and is pronounced with much less muscular tension than **iɪ**. The air passage is freer as the tongue does not rise so high. It has been defined as 'Close Front lax unrounded vowel' (see Pal. 17).

It occurs initially, *e.g.*, in **itəraɪb** 'to be priggish', **ilɪʌtị** 'botheration' medially as in **piləwaɪ** 'pup', **mircaɪ** 'chillies' or finally in a word, *e.g.*, in **poɪi** 'a variety of vegetable', **ʝaɪi** 'may go'.

e

§ 92. The sound **e** is like the English sound *e* in *get*, *bet*, *pen*, etc. It differs from **i** in being more open and lax. It is very short in quantity as compared to **eɪ** and is more open also and thus does not give a palatogram.

It occurs initially as in **etɪaɪ** 'so much', **euʝiɪ** 'officiating', medially as in **dekhibaɪ** 'shall see', **lifieũ** 'I took', or finally as in **se**, **ke**.

eɪ

§ 93. The sound **eɪ** is Half-close Front Vowel pronounced like Cardinal Vowel No. 2 (see Pal. 18). It occurs initially as in **eɪkaɪ** 'unity', **eɪɪaɪpheɪɪiɪ** 'mutual exchange', medially as in **kheɪlʌb** 'to play', **dfieɪlaɪ** 'half a pice' or finally as in **paɪcheɪ** 'behind', **maɪtheɪ** 'on the forehead'.

aɪ

§ 94. The sound **aɪ** is the Back Open vowel. The lips are wide apart and the tongue rests low with a slight rise in the back. It approximates, in quality, to Cardinal Vowel No. 5 and resembles the *a* of *father* in American pronunciation.

It occurs initially as in **aɪkhʌt** 'grains of rice given to menials on ceremonial occasions', **aɪdiɪ** 'ginger',

medially as in **chedaɪm** 'one-fourth of a pice', **baɪis** 'twenty-two', or finally in a word as in **ghoɪɽaɪ** 'horse', **rʌflaɪ** 'remained'.

ʌ

§ 95. The sound ʌ is the Half-open Central Vowel. In pronouncing it the tongue rises up in almost the central position. It can occur initially as in **ʌrsiɪ** 'linseed', **ʌkaɪl** 'famine' or medially as in **jʌb** 'when', **dʌs** 'ten'.

This sound is a little longer in open syllables than in closed ones and there tends somewhat towards the back and becomes slightly more open. The ʌ of **ʌkaɪl** is such, for instance. In a closed syllable before **r**, it has a slight shade of ɜ[1] as in **ʌrsiɪ**.

ə

§ 96. The sound ə is similar in quality to ʌ but the tongue in this case is a little more raised and slightly more lax.

It occurs medially or finally and in unstressed syllables. It is at the end of a syllable and never begins a syllable. It is very short in quantity, *e.g.*, in **raɪm kə** 'to Ram', **sorəhĩɪ** 'a game with sixteen Cowries'.

This vowel has a tendency to disappear, what remains is merely the explosion of the previous consonant, *e.g.*, **mʌflətaɪriɪ** is sometimes heard as **mʌhtaɪriɪ** (mother) or **ʌpənaɪ** is heard as **ʌpnaɪ**.

oɪ

§ 97. The sound oɪ is the Half-close Back Vowel, the same as Cardinal Vowel No. 7. It occurs initially in a few words as in **oɪs** 'dew', **oɪp** 'secret' or medially as in **bʌroɪʈh** 'the middle hall', **cʌʈoɪr** 'greedy' or rarely finally as in **hoɪ** '0'.

[1] The vowel which is found before *r* in such words as 'bird' **(bɜd)**

o

§ 98. The sound **o** is similar to **oɪ** in quality but is slightly more open and removed a little towards the centre. The back of the tongue rises a little less than in the case of **oɪ** .

It occurs initially as in **oʂoriɪ** 'turn', **oinaɪ** 'yarn-hump' or medially as in **bfiorohẽɪ** in the morning', **doʂoraɪi ko** 'a second time'.

uɪ

§ 99. The sound **uɪ** is the Close Back Vowel just as the Cardinal Vowel No. 8. In pronouncing it, however, the rounding and the protrusion of lips as well as the tension is less than in the ordinary Cardinal.

It occurs initially as in **uɪbʌb** 'to be bored' **uɪsʌr** 'untilled land', medially as in **duɪdfi** 'milk' **bʌnduɪkh** 'gun', or finally in a word as in **naɪuɪ** 'barber', **kʌruɪ** 'bitter'.

u

§ 100. The sound **u** is similar in quality to **uɪ** but here the tongue position is a little lower and there is a slight rise towards the centre. It is also less tense than **uɪ** .

It occurs initially as in **ukilaɪb** 'to vomit', **ubofiʌni̯** 'a rope for drawing water from the well', or medially as in **kutijaɪ** 'bitch', **sukhʌjeũ** 'I dried' or finally as in **aɪu** 'come', **kheɪu** 'paddle the oars'.

General notes on the vowels

§ 101. The length of a vowel is not fixed but generally speaking, on an average a short vowel has half the length of the corresponding long vowel in the same position (circumstances) in a sentence normally spoken. For instance **-ʌ-** in **bʌʈeɪ** has a duration of 0·094 sec. as compared to **-aɪ-** of **raɪ̯jaɪ** which has 0·187 sec. (Insc. 31).

The length of the same vowel varies very much. The average length of **iɪ** may be 40 mm. and of **i** 14; **oɪ** may be 43 mm. and **o** only 14; **aɪ** may vary in individual words from 50 mm. to 25 mm. while **ʌ** may from 14 to 22 mm. Thus **ʌ** of 22 mm. is short and **aɪ** of 25 mm. is long only by a convention which has its support from the feeling of the average speaker. For comparative lengths of the vowels, see Inscs. of **sĩɪcʌb** and **sĩcibaɪ** (32 and 12), **deɪkhʌb** and **dekhibaɪ** (4 and 33), **caɪʈʌtị** and **cʌʈibaɪ** (34 and 11), **sõɪcʌtị** and **sõcibaɪ** (35 and 36) and **phũɪkʌb** and **phũkibaɪ** (1 and 37).

The nasalised vowel is a little longer than the corresponding unnasalised vowel. For instance, compare **ĩ** of **sĩcibaɪ** with **i** of **cʌʈibaɪ** (Inscs. 12 and 11).

The long vowel which begins a word is generally longer than the final long, *e.g.*, compare the length of **eɪ** in **eɪk** with that of **eɪ** in **bʌʈeɪ** (Insc. 31).

Two short vowels coming together are generally of the same length as a long vowel, *e.g.*, compare the lengths of the vowels in **deɪkhʌu, ãɪt** and **iu** (Inscs. 38, 39 and 40).

The length of the same vowel in the same position is greater in monsyllabic words than in dissyllabic words.

The length of vowels is maintained except when a vowel occurs in a syllable which is more than two syllables away from the end. In Awadhī length is material for determining metre of verse but is free and immaterial in songs. For instance in

soɪwʌu ki ɟaɪgʌu moriɪ aɪdɦi bɦʌwaɪniɪ ɟʌgʌt keriɪ raɪniɪ (Insc. 48) the shorts and longs are not distinguishable.

§ 102. The dialects differ in the pronunciation of **e, eɪ o, oɪ**. In a specimen 12 miles south of Gonda town **eɪ** is pronounced as **jaɪ** and **oɪ** as **waɪ** but not so pronouncedly as in Baiswārā. In Sitapur **eɪ** is **eɪ** and **oɪ** is **oɪ** but when one moves southwards, only six miles south

of the town **eɪ** is found as **jaɪ** and **oɪ** as **waɪ**. Unao district has everywhere this pronunciation. In Fatehpur district on the borders of Cawnpore district **eɪ** is pronounced as **jaɪ** and **oɪ** as **waɪ** . It appears that in the area where this different pronunciation for **e, eɪ, o** and **oɪ** (as **jʌ, jaɪ, wʌ, waɪ** respectively) exists, the start was from **e** and **o** but in the latter part of the sound there came about more opening of the mouth which resulted in diphthongs **eʌ, eaɪ, oʌ, oaɪ** which later gave **jʌ, jaɪ, wʌ, waɪ**. Why these vowels came to be turned into diphthongs is hard to explain. But the area in which this peculiarity of pronunciation exists is considerable.

In Western Awadhī **bolaɪwʌb** and Eastern Awadhī **bʌlaɪwʌb** 'to call' an alternation of **o : ʌ** is found, in this respect Chhattīsgaṛhī agrees with Eastern Awadhī. Similar dialectal difference is found in Western **bʌnaɪwʌb** and Eastern **bʌnʌub.**

C. Origin

ʌ (*a*)

§ 103. Awadhi **ʌ** represents

(*i*) OIA *a*, MIA *a*, *e.g.*, *anīka* > **ʌniɪ** 'crisis', *avelā* > **ʌbeɪr** 'delay', *aṅguṣṭha-* > **ə̃guʈhaɪ** 'thumb', *antara-* > **ə̃tʌraɪ** 'gap'; *ālasya-* > **aɪrʌsụ** 'sloth', *araghaṭṭa* > **rə̃ɦʌʈaɪ** 'spinning-wheel', *bhaginī* > **bʌɦiniฺ** 'sister', *nakṣatra* > **nʌkhʌt** 'star'.

(*ii*) OIA *ā*, MIA *ā*, *e.g.*, *ā-loḷ-* **ʌroɪrʌb** 'to stir up the grain in the winnowing basket', *ā-cām-* > **ə̃cʌwʌb** 'to rinse the mouth', *āṣāḍha* > **ʌsaɪrʈɦ** 'the month *Āṣāḍha*'; *vātāvali* > **bʌjaɪriฺ** 'air', *vātākula-* > **bʌuraɪ** 'dumb'.

Note.—In such instances the old *ā* was either in an unaccented syllable, or if it was otherwise, later it was shortened in Awadhi if it was more than two syllables away from the end (see § 75).

(*iii*) In a few cases **-ʌ-** is due to anaptyxis, *e.g.*, **rʌkʌt** 'blood', **bʰʌgʌt** 'devotee'.

(*iv*) In the following instances **-ʌ-** represents MIA *-a-* but OIA *-u-* or *-ṛ-* *mukula* > *maula* > **bʌur** 'blossoms of the mango-tree', *mukuṭa* > *mauḍa* > **mʌur** 'crown (of the bride-groom)', *guru-* > *garu-* > **gʌrux** 'heavy', *kṛṣṇa-* > **kʌ̃dʰʌijax** 'Krishna' *kṛ-* > **kʌr-** 'to do'.

(*v*) In **nʌriʌr** < *nārikela* 'cocoa-nut' **ʌ** represents *-e-* (possibly through *-ya-*) and in **bʌʰlexrax** < *bibhītaka* (Chatterji, p. 403) it represents *-i-*.

In foreign loan-words **ʌ** generally represents *a* and *ā* in the manner of (*i*), (*ii*) and (*iii*), *e.g.*, **ʌrʌgu̯** '—water (*e.g.*, rose-water)' **ʌraxm** 'rest', **ʌɲjaxd** 'estimate'. In a few cases it represents other vowels as well, *e.g.*, **ʌsturax** 'razor', **ʌhisaxnu̯** 'gratefulness for some kind act', **ʌtibaxru̯** 'faith'.

ʌ does not occur finally in Awadhi in modern dialects. It is found in early Awadhi in the documents but the probability is that it was never actually pronounced even then (cf. Bloch : *Langue Marathe* § 38).

ax (*ā*)

§104. Awadhī non-final **ax** represents

(*i*) OIA *ā* > MIA *ā* (before a single consonant) and *a* (before a conjunction of consonants either the same or different), *e.g.*, *āma-* > **ãxu** 'mucus', *ālaya-* > **axru̯** 'a niche in the wall to put sundry articles', *ārya-* > **axjax** 'grandfather', *ārdrikā* > **axdix** 'ginger'; *śṛgāla* > **sijaxr** 'jackal', *nibhāl-* > **nifʌxrʌb** 'to see closely', *santāp-* > **sʌtaxwʌb** 'to oppress', *sārtha-* > **saxthu̯** 'company', *brāhmana* > **baxmfʌn** 'Brahmin'.

(*ii*) OIA *a*, MIA *a* followed by a conjunction of consonants which was simplified in Awadhī and

resulted in a compensatory lengthening of the previous vowel. The long vowel survives only if it is in the final or penultimate syllable of a word, otherwise it becomes **-ʌ-**, *e.g.*, *aṅka* > **ãɪk** 'number', *anya* > **aɪn** 'another', *aṇḍa-* > **ãɪɽiɪ** 'the bulb of a root', *vyāghra-* > **baɪgɦɲ** 'tiger' but **bʌgɦʌwaɪ**, *nāpita-* > **naɪuɪ** 'barber' but **nʌuwaɪ**

(*iii*) MIA *aā* or *āa* or *āā*, with or without the glides *y* and *w*, derived from OIA by the loss of intervocalic consonants, *e.g.*, *kumbhakāra* > **kumɦaɪr**, *varayātrā* > **bʌraɪt** 'bridegroom's party' *rājaputra* > **raɪut** 'a particular caste', *dīpāvalī* > **dewaɪriɪ** 'the Diwālī festival'; *koṣṭhāgāra* > **koʈhaɪr** 'a zamindar's village-residence'.

Awadhī final **-aɪ** is the result of contraction of vowels :

(*i*) MIA *-au* derived from earlier MIA *-aō* coming from OIA by the elision of the intervocalic consonant or from *-aṃ* or *-as* by levelling out the neuter forms, *e.g.*, *caṇakaḥ* > **cʌnaɪ** 'gram', *āmalakaḥ* > **ʌũraɪ** 'myrobalan', *gataḥ* > **gaɪ** 'went'; Pāli *potthakaṃ* > **poɪthaɪ** 'a book'

(*ii*) MIA *-āo* by the elision of intervocalic *-y-* of OIA or of other consonants, *e.g.*, *anadhyāyaḥ* > **ʌɲʝɦaɪ** 'a holiday, interruption', *upādhyāyaḥ* > **oɪʝɦaɪ** 'exorcist, snake-charmer', *cakravākaḥ* > **cʌkʌwaɪ** 'a particular bird'

(*iii*) MIA *-aha* < *-asa* < *-aśa* in numerals, *e.g.*, *dvādaśa* > **baɪraɪ** 'twelve'.

aɪ is found in foreign loan-words also and generally represents *ā* or *aḥ* of the foreign languages, *e.g.*, **ʌraɪm** 'rest', **iʂʈaɪm** 'stamp', **nʌsaɪ** 'the effect of intoxicants'

§ 105. Awadhī non-final **i-** represents

(*i*) MIA *i* derived from OIA *i* or *ṛ*, *e.g.*, *indra -aś-*? > **ĩdʌrsaɪ** 'a variety of cake', *itvara-* > **itʌraɪb** 'to be haughty', *bhaginī* > **bʌfiiniˌ** 'sister', *ghṛtam* > **ghiu** 'clarified butter', *hṛdayam* > **hijaɪ** 'heart', *dadhi-* > **dʌfiiu** 'curds', *kapiltha-* > **kʌithaɪ** 'wood-apple', *kādṛśa* > **kʌis** 'of what sort?'

(*ii*) MIA *ī* derived from OIA *ī*, *e.g.*, *bīja-* > **biaɪ** 'seed', *dīpa-paṭṭikā* > **ɖiʌʈiˌ** 'lamp-stand', *pīḍ-* > **piraɪb** 'to pain (passive)', *tīra-* > **tiraɪb** 'to come near', *sīv-* > **sĩʌb** 'to sew'.

NOTE.—In all these and in similar cases, the old *ī* is either away from the last two syllables or has become short in Awadhi in roots on the model of other passive verbs (**kaɪʈʌb**—'to cut'—active, **—kʌʈʌb** 'to cut'—passive). In **gʌfiir** <*gabhīra* 'deep' and **ʌfiir** <*ābhīra* 'Ahīr', however, the shortening of the vowel remains unexplained.

(*iii*) In a few instances **-i-** is due to anaptyxis, *e.g.*, *grahaṇa* > **girəfiʌn** 'eclipse'.

(*iv*) In the following instances **i** represents old *e-* *eṣo-* > ***ēhō* > **iu** 'this', *kedārikā* > **kijaɪriɪ** 'a bed of plants', **biʈijaɪ** 'daughter' < *bēṭā-* son, *nemiḥ* > **niu**, 'foundation'.

(*v*) In **chin** < *kṣaṇa* 'moment', **pĩɟʌraɪ** < *pañjara-* 'cage', **kinəkiɪ** < *kaṇikā* 'small grain', and **mircaɪ** < *marica-* 'pepper', Awadhi **i** represents old *a*. Are these loan-words from other dialects? Similarly in the numerals **chijaɪlis** '46', **chifiʌtɪʌriˌ** '76', **chijaɪsiɪ** '86' old *a-* is represented by Awadhi **i**.

(*vi*) In *ardha-tatsama* words Awadhi **i** represents Sanskrit *-ya-*, *e.g.*, **bithaɪ** < *vyathā* 'pain', **uddim** < *udyama* 'exertion' and in the beginning, it comes by prothesis, *e.g.*, **istiriɪ** < *strī* 'wife'.

Awadhi final **-i** (**i̯**) represents

(*i*) MIA *-ī* derived from OIA *-ī*, *-in*, *e.g.*, *bhaginī* > **bʌɦini̯** 'sister', *śreṣṭhī* > **seɪʈhi̯** 'banker', *aggī* > **aɪgi̯** 'fire', * *gāvī* > **gaɪi** 'cow'

(*ii*) *-ni* of old neut. pl. *-āni* > *āiṃ* > *-āĩ* > **-ʌi**

(*iii*) **-eɪ** in pl. masc. perfect participles, *e.g.*, **laɪgi̯** besides **laɪgeɪ**, **ʈhaɪɽɦi̯** besides **ʈhaɪɽɦieɪ**, and in **kaɪlɦi̯** 'tomorrow or yesterday' < *kalye*.

In a few instances final **-i** (**i̯**) is of modern origin and has been put in as a mark of feminine gender, *e.g.*, **pə̃ɪsi̯** 'manure' < *pāṃsu*, Early Aw. *jari* 'root' < *jaṭā*, **baɪi** 'gout' < *vāta*.

In foreign loan-words

(*i*) **i** generally represents *i*, *e.g.*, **iʝɪʌti̯** 'honour', **inaɪm** 'reward'

(*ii*) in a few words **i** represents *ī* or *e*, *e.g.*, **isaɪiɪ** 'Christian', **diɦaɪt** 'country-side'

(*iii*) **i** comes by prothesis in words such as **isʈaɪm** 'stamp'.

NOTE.—**i** is found initially in very few words of indigenous origin, it is mostly in words of foreign origin.

iɪ (ī)

§ 106. Awadhi non-final **iɪ** represents

(*i*) OIA *i*, MIA *ī*, *e.g.*, *mañjīra-* > **mə̃ʝiɪraɪ** 'a variety of cymbals', *vīṇā* > **biɪn** 'lute'

(*ii*) MIA *i-*, OIA *i-* or *ɽ-* followed by a conjunction of consonants which results in a single consonant in Awadhi and gives a compensatory lengthening

to the preceding vowel, *e.g.*, *indhanaṃ* > **ĩxdfiʌnu̯** 'fuel', *siktha* > **sixth** 'grain', *piṣṭa-* > **pixʈhax** 'powdered pulse', *vr̥ścika-* > **bixchix** 'scorpion'.

NOTE.—The long vowel survives only in the penultimate syllable, if it is in any anterior syllable, it again becomes short.

(*iii*) MIA *ĭ* + *ĭ*, *e.g.*, *sthiti-* > **ʈhixfiax** 'reliance', *tr̥tīyā* > **tixJ** '3rd day'

(*iv*) In **bixtax** < *vitasti-* 'span', **sixl** < *śītala* 'cold', **bfiixtʌr** < *abhyantara* 'inside', **ix** represents *i* + *a*, but all these are most probably borrowed words. In **bixtax** *th* was expected for *t* and in **sixl** *r* for *l* (cf. Aw. **seraxb** 'to get cold'). **bfiixtʌr** might be from * *bhintara* (*-ya-* > *i*) and not from *abhiantara*.

Final **ix** is the result of contraction of vowels:

(*i*) *ĭ* + *ĭ*, *e.g.*, future 3rd pers. sg. termination **-ix** (**kʌrix** 'will do') < *ihi*, *aśīti* > **ʌsix** 'eighty'; *akṣīṇi* > **ãxkhix** 'eyes' (the *n* of the termination becoming weakened to *m*, ~ and then being lost) and other plur. dir. and obl. sg. forms of nouns ending in *-i*

(*ii*) *i* + *ā* in the case of fem. nouns in **ix**, *e.g.*, *āryā-* > *ajjiā* > **axJix** 'grandmother', *bhrātr̥jāyā-* > **bfiauJaxix** 'sister-in-law'

(*iii*) *i* + *ō* in the case of masc. nouns in **ix** derived from *-in* bases of OIA *e.g.*, *prativeśikaḥ* > *padivēsiō* > **pʌroxsix** 'neighbour', **maxlix** 'gardener'.

NOTE.—As shown below in the case of **gfiiu** 'clarified butter' etc., *i* + *ō* has survived as **iu**. The double treatment of this group can be explained by the hypothesis that in groups *i* + *ō* which resulted in **ix**, *i* was pronounced longer than in the other case.

ix occurs in foreign loan-words and there generally represents *ī*, *e.g.*, **sʌfionaxix** 'a kind of musical instrument'.

u

§ 107. Awadhi non-final **u-** represents

(*i*) MIA *u* derived from OIA *u* or *ṛ*, *e.g.*, *udeti* > **uʌi** 'rises', *ud-ghaṭ-* > **ugɦʌrʌb** 'to become uncovered', *ujjvala* > **uʝʌr** 'white', *kumāra* > **kũaːr** 'unmarried', *śuka-* > **suaː** 'parrot', *nakula* > **neuraː** 'mungoose', *mukha* > **muɦ** 'mouth', *sṛṇoti* > **sunʌi** 'hears', *mātṛ-ṣvasā-* > **mʌusiː** 'mother's sister'

(*ii*) MIA *ū* derived from OIA *ū*, *e.g.*, *bhūmi* > **bɦuĩ** 'ground', *śūkara* > **suʌr** 'pig', *dyūta-* > **ʝũaː** 'gambling', *yūkā-* > **ʝũaː** 'louse', *madhūka-* > **maɦuʌː** 'a variety of tree', *prāghūrṇa-* > **pʌɦunaː** 'guest'.

N. B.—The shortening of the quantity is due either to accent or to elongation of the final or penultimate vowel in Awadhi.

(*iii*) MIA *va-*, *vā-* derived from OIA *va*, *pa*, *ma*, *e.g.*, *svara* > **sur** 'tone', *apara* > **ʌur** 'more', *kaparda-* > **kʌuṛiː** 'cowrie', *kacchapa-* > **kʌchuaː** 'tortoise', *samarpay-* > **sʌũpʌb** 'to entrust', *āmalaka-* > **ʌũraː** 'myrobalan'; particularly in modern loan-words *devatā* > **deutaː** 'deity', *devakī-* > **deukaː** 'a name', *tvarita-* > **turtə** (*ardha-tatsama*) 'at once', *dvandva-* > **dundiː** 'naughty'.

Awadhi final **-u** (**u̯**) represents

Late MIA *u* < early MIA-*o* generally derived from OIA *-aḥ*; but possibly many forms in MIA (particularly in neuter stems) are by analogy, *e.g.*, *grāmaḥ* > **gãːu** 'village', *tāpaḥ* > **tãːu** 'heating', **sãːpu̯** 'serpent', *nāma-* > **nãːu** 'name', *dāma-* > **dãːu** 'chance', *suvarṇa-* > **soːnu̯** 'gold', *ghṛta-* > **gɦiu** 'clarified butter'.

The **-u** of the Imperative second person plural and **-u -ụ** of the direct sg. case are thus derived.

u occurs in foreign loan-words and generally represents *u*, *e.g.* **guȷʌrʌb** 'to pass away', **umiri̯** 'age'.

NOTE – **u** sometimes dialectically replaces **o**, *e.g.*, *sphoṭa-* > **phurijaɪ** 'boil', **khaɪu** : **khaɪo** 'eat'.

uɪ (*ū*)

§ 108. Awadhi non-final **uɪ-** is derived from

(*i*) MIA *ū* coming from OIA *ū*, *e.g.*, *sūcikā* > **suɪiɪ** 'needle', *karpūra* > **kʌpuɪr** 'camphor'

(*ii*) MIA *u* (derived from OIA *ŭ* or *r̥*) followed by a conjunction of consonants, *e.g.*, *cūrṇa-* > **cuɪnaɪ** 'powdered lime', *truṭy-* > **ʈuɪʈ-** 'to break', *pr̥cch-* > **puɪch-** 'to ask', *vr̥ddha* > **buɪɽʱi** 'old'

(*iii*) **ũɪkh** < *ikṣu* 'sugar-cane' and **bũɪd** < *bindu* 'drop' are explained by assimilation of *i* to *u* at an earlier stage

(*iv*) **duɪn** < *dviguṇa* indicates **uɪ** < *iu* (possibly first transformed to *uu*)

(*v*) In **chuɪraɪ** < *kṣura-* 'razor' the lengthening of **uɪ** is unaccounted.

Awadhi final **-uɪ** is the result of contraction of groups of vowels of MIA

-uɪ < *-iaō e.g.*, *nāpitakaḥ* : **naɪuɪ** 'barber'
< *-īaō e.g.*, *navanītakaḥ* : **nʌinuɪ** 'butter'
< *-ūō*, *e.g.*, *godhūmaḥ* : **goɪfiũɪ** 'wheat'
< *-uā e.g.*, *vālukā* : **baɪɾuɪ** 'sand'.

uɪ is found in foreign loan-words also.

e

§ 109. Awadhi **e** represents

(*i*) MIA *e*, *ē* (derived form OIA *e* or *ai*), *e.g.*, *kedāra* < **kejaɪrɪɪ** 'a bed of plants', *nemi-* > **neijaɪ** 'an earthen support for jars,' *kē-* (Māg. form of Pkt. *kō*) > **keɱi̯** 'to whom', *śaivāla* > **sewaɪr** 'a kind of green moss-like plant growing in water'.

(*ii*) MIA *ĕ* (derived from OIA *ĕ*, *ya*), *e.g.*, *vipādikā* > **bẽwaɪɪɪ** 'a disease of the feet', *tithi-vāra* > **teuɱaɪr** 'festival', *dīpāvalī* **dewʌɪrɪɪ** 'the Diwālī festival', *nīpāvalī* > **newaɪrɪ̯** 'a kind of white flower' (Chatterji derives it from *navamallikā*, see Chatterji, p. 409), *vyavahāra* > **beuɱaɪr** (possibly through Pkt. *vivahāra*) 'mutual etiquette between families'

(*iii*) MIA *a* (OIA *a*), *e.g.*, *kapāṭa-* > **kẽwaɪʈaɪ** 'shutters,' *kamalā* > **keũlaɪ** '*Lakshmī*', *nakula-* > **neuraɪ** 'mongoose'

NOTE.—Both in (ii) and (iii) it will be noticed that *e* is derived from *i*, *ĭ* or *a* followed by a labial sound.

(*iv*) MIA *ĭa-* (OIA *ĭ-* + consonant + *a*) *e.g.*, *śītalāya-* > **seraɪ-** 'to get cold'. Is the root **seɱolaɪ-** 'to become moist' connected with this very root?

(*v*) At the end of words **i** corresponds with **e** dialectically, *e.g.*, **khaɪi** : **khaɪe** '(he) may eat'.

eɪ (*ē*)

§ 110. Awadhi non-final **eɪ-** comes from

(*i*) MIA *e*, *ē* (derived from OIA *e*, *ai* or *ɣ* or *ay*), *e.g.*, *kṣetra* > **kheɪt** 'field', *ākheṭa* > **ʌɱeɪr** 'shikār', *taila* > **teɪl** 'oil', *gairika-* > **geɪrɪɪ** 'red pigment', *vɣnta* > **bẽɪʈ** 'handle', *śayyā* > **seɪɟ** 'bed'

(*ii*) MIA- *ia- e.g. ḍi-aḍḷha* > **ɖɛɾʈɦi** 'one and a half', *niara-* (< *nikaṭa-*) > **nɛɾɾɛɾ** 'near', *viaṇa-* (< *vyajana-*) > **bɛɾnaɾ** 'fan'

(*iii*) MIA *-aya- e.g. kadalī-* > *kayalī-* > **kɛɾɾaɾ** 'plantain tree', *citrakara-* > *cittayara-* > *citērā* 'painter', *kārya* > * *kayara* > **kɛɾɾ** 'of'

(*iv*) In **bɛɾl** < *bilva* 'wood-apple' and **chẽɾd** < *chidra* 'hole', **pʌɾɛɾwaɾ** < *pratipaḍā* '1st day of the Hindu month' **ɛɾ** represents OIA *i* possibly through MIA *i* > *e* and in **sẽɾdɦi** < *sandhi* 'an aperture made in walls by thieves' **ɛɾ** corresponds to *a*, possibly through *saṛdhi*. The words **ʝʌnɛɾu** and **ʝʌnɛɾ** < *yajñopavīta* 'the sacred thread' are hard to explain

(*v*) **ɛɾ** occurs in the numerals **gɛɾɾaɾ** '11', **tɛɾɾaɾ** '13' **tɛɾis** '23', **tẽɾtis** '33' and **tẽɾtaɾlis** '43' where it represents MIA vowel combinations *ēā*, *aya* etc.

ɛɾ occurs in many foreign loan-words and represents *ē* or *ai* or *āi*, **ai**, *e.g.*, **tɛɾʝ** 'speedy', **ʈɛɾm** 'time'.

Final- **ɛɾ** in Awadhi represents MIA *-aē*, *e.g.*

* *cittayara-ē* > *citērē* 'painters', OIA *gata-* > MIA *gaaē* > **gʌɛɾ-** plur. of the past participle **gaɾ** 'went'.

o

§ 111. Awadhi **o** represents

(*i*) OIA *o*, *e.g.*, *jyotsnā* : **ʝõdɦʌijaɾ** 'the moon'; Is **sofiraɾwʌb** 'to rub gently' connected with *śodha-kāra* ? cf. Turner Nep. Dic. p. 624

(*ii*) OIA *upa-*, *e.g.*, *upaśālā* > **osaɾɾ** 'the ante-room'; Turner derives from *apasāra*

(*iii*) OIA *au*, *e.g.*, *saubhāgya* > **sofiaɾg** 'woman's good-luck that her husband is alive';

(*iv*) OIA *ava*, *e.g.*, *ava-ūḍha-* > **oʈɦonaɪ** 'wrapper', *avasara-* > **osʌriɪ** 'turn', *ava-tīrṇa-* > **oinaɪ** 'a spindle on which yarn is put up after spinning'.

NOTE.—In all non-final positions **o** represents ō as is clear from the instances, given above. Finally **o** corresponds with **-u** dialectically and stands for late MIA *-u*.

In **okhʌriɪ** (Skt. *ulūkhala-*) 'a mortar for pounding in' the possibility of Dravidian origin has been suggested (*vide* Turner Nep. Dic. *okhli* p. 61).

oɪ (ō)

§ 112. Awadhi **oɪ** represents

(*i*) OIA *o*, MIA *o*, ō, *e.g.*, *yoktra* > **ɟoɪt** 'yoke', *potikā* > **poɪi** 'a vegetable', *oṣṭha* > **õɪʈh** 'lip'

(*ii*) OIA *-au-*, MIA ō, *e.g.*, *gaura* > **goɪr** 'fair-coloured', *lauha* > **loɪfi** 'iron'

(*iii*) OIA *-ava-*, MIA ō, *e.g.*, *avaśyā* > **oɪs** 'dew', *putra-vadhū* > **pʌtoɪfi** 'daughter-in-law', *rasavatī* > **rʌsoɪiɪ** 'kitchen'

(*iv*) OIA *-apa-* MIA *-ava-* > *o*, *e.g.*, √ *kṣapa-* > **khoɪ-** 'to lose', *liṅga-paṭṭa* > **lɪ̃goɪʈ** 'a strip of cloth to cover private parts'

(*v*) OIA *-ama* > **aṽa* in *mama* > *mō* 'mine'

(*vi*) MIA *ua* (derived from OIA ŭ̃ + consonant + ă) *e.g.*, *śūkara-* > **soɪriɪ** 'a female pig', *sugandha* > **sõɪrdfi** fragrant', *upādhyāya-* > **oɪɟfiaɪ** 'a snake-charmer', *cāṭukara* > **cʌʈoɪr** 'one fond of delicious things', *suvarṇa* > **soɪn** 'gold'

(*vii*) In *prativeśin-* or *prativāsin* > **pʌroɪsiɪ** 'neighbour', Aw. **oɪ** represents OIA *-iva-* or *-ivā-*

(*viii*) In words where Aw. **oɪ** corresponds with OIA ŭ̃, the possibility is that ŭ̃ became *u* in MIA before

conjunct consonants and later became *o*. This was lengthened in NIA in order to compensate for the shortening of the consonant, *e.g.*, *mūlya* > *mulla* > *molla* > **moɪl** 'price', *pustaka-* > *putthaa* > *potthaa* > **poɪthaɪ** 'a big book'. Similarly we may connect **gophaɪ** (*gumpha-*) 'twining', **koɪkhi̥** (*kukṣi*) 'womb'.[1]

(*ix*) **cõɪc** (skt. *cancuḥ*) 'beak' and **mõɪch** (skt. *śmaśru*) 'hair on the face' appear to be loan-words from the substratum languages. The *a* > *o* has been sometimes explained, however, to be due to the contamination of *u* in the final syllable, if derived from OIA.

o occurs in loan-words from foreign languages, *e.g.*, *zōr* 'force', **poɪt** 'rent' (Pers.), as also from substratum languages, *e.g.*, **ɖɦõɪg** 'show'.

Whispered Vowels

A. Early Awadhi

§ 113. There being no special symbols for the whispered vowels, it is not possible to say definitely if Early Awadhi possessed these vowels. The final short vowel makes syllables which fact *a priori* establishes that the final short vowel was pronounced. The fact, however, that the final short could be pronounced long also, however, vitiates the *a priori* conclusion. The possibility is that the final short was pronounced as a vowel but with a very weak quantity.

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 114. Awadhi possesses three whispered vowels **i̥**, **e̥**, **u̥**. These are markedly present in the Western dialects but are absent in the Eastern ones.

A vowel is a sound in which the vocal cords are closely put together and have a certain stretch which results in

[1] The usual explanation of such words is from their *vrddhi* forms (see Pischel § 125 and Bloch § 80).

musical vibration. In the resonance chamber the tongue does not generally come in contact with the palate, so that a more or less free passage is left for the air. The quality of the vowel is distinguished on account of the position of the tongue. In mere aspiration, the vocal cords are wide apart and the tongue-position leaves a free passage of air. In whisper the vocal cords are closely put together but a small triangular space is left at their base for the passage of air. There is no stretch of the cords and hence there is no vibration and musical note. The resonance chamber assumes the various shapes for pronouncing the full sounds but as there is no vibration of vocal cords (in the case of vowel-sounds and voiced consonants) the full sounds are not heard. Still as the resonance chamber is making the same effort and as the air does come out, though with less force, sounds are heard and distinguished in whisper.

A whispered vowel, thus, is a sound for producing which the tongue in the resonance chamber assumes the position for the regular vowel but there is no vibration of the vocal cords.[1]

The apparatus does not distinguish between a whispered vowel and the explosion of the previous consonant; the acoustic effect is, however, decisive. A complete sentence spoken in whisper gives only breath inscription on the apparatus (See Insc. 25 **tum khaɪi aɪeu**).

§ 115. In Awadhi a whispered vowel occurs only at the end of a word and does not make a syllable.[2] Historically it was a full short vowel **-i**, **-e** or **-u**. It comes after consonants in modern Awadhi—it has a stronger whisper after a voiced consonant than after a breathed one. The whispered vowel gives place to the ordinary vowel (ɪ)

[1] See drawings of the Larynx of Mr. S. Jones (Plate 20).

[2] Unlike Japanese where it occurs medially and makes a syllable, *vide* Edwardes: *Phonetique Japanese* § 25.

when it is followed by a voiced consonant of a place of articulation different from that of the consonant which precedes it, *e.g.*, **mʌrị̥ gaɪ > mʌrị̥ gaɪ**, **ũɪʈṵ ʝaɪtị̥ > ũɪʈu ʝaɪtị̥**; (2) when the elision of a medial vowel makes the consonant preceding the whispered vowel a conjunct one, *e.g.*, **maɪrʌtị̥ > maɪrti**.

The whispered vowel of the particles is very weak as compared to that of the participial forms The **ə** of the particles has the same fate as a whispered vowel, but as its elision cannot be distinguished from the explosion of the consonant which precedes it, it is not possible to say that the whispered **ẹ̥** exists as a separate phoneme.

ị̥

§ 116. The sound **ị̥** is a whispered vowel in which the resonance chamber is in the position of pronouncing **i** but as the vocal cords are not in vibration the full vowel is not heard (See Insɛs. 26 and 27).

It occurs at the end of a word after a single consonant and does not constitute a syllable, *e.g.*, in **ʝãɪtị̥** 'going', **gɪɪlị̥** 'wet', **sãɪʝfli̥** 'evening', **khaɪnị̥** 'mine'.

ṵ

§ 117. The sound **ṵ** is a whispered vowel in which the resonance chamber is in the position of pronouncing **u** but as the vocal cords are not in vibration the full vowel is not heard (see Insɛs. 28 and 29).

It occurs at the end of a word after a single consonant and does not constitute a syllable, *e.g.*, in **sãɪpṵ** 'snake', **haɪthṵ** 'hand', **bfloɪrṵ** 'morning', **sãɪʈṵ** 'bull'.

ẹ̥

§ 118. The sound **ẹ̥** is a whispered vowel in which the resonance chamber is in the position of **-e** but owing to the absence of the vibration of vocal cords, the full vowel

is not heard. It occurs at the end of a word and does not constitute a syllable, *e.g.*, **kaɪfleseˌ** 'from what?' (see Insc. 30 **seˌ**).

C. Origin

§ 119. The whispered vowels go back to MIA corresponding short vowels.

Nasalised Vowels

A. Early Awadhi

§ 120. All the vowels shown above have their nasalised forms also. For instance:

ɑ̃, ā̃ bhavãra 'bee' (J. 35), *kãkara* 'gravel' (T. 181)

ɪ̃ saɪtālisa 'forty-seven' (J. 35)

ī̃ parichāhī̃ 'shadow' (J. 37)

ʊ̃ ʊ̃jiārā 'light' (J. 37)

ū̃ avɑ̃rāū̃ 'garden' (J. 41)

ẽ cavẽilī 'jasmine' (J. 53)

ɐ̃ piyārɐ̃ 'beloved' (T. 176)

õ khõcā 'quiver' (J. 112).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 121. The dialects possess the nasalised forms of all the vowels (except the neutral and the whispered) described in the foregoing sections and they occur in all such positions as the ordinary vowel can take up. When a nasalised vowel is pronounced, the uvula is slack and thus while the air in its major quantity passes through the mouth a small quantity escapes through the nose also.

The following instances illustrate these vowels:—

(1) **ɪ̃** **ɪ̃dflʌraɪ** 'blind', **phɪ̃saɪwʌb** 'to ensnare'

(2) **ãɪ** **ãɪkhiˌ** 'eye', **gãɪʈhiˌ** 'knot', **kʌflãɪ** 'where'

(3) **ĩ** **ĩdʌrsaɪ** 'a sweet cake of rice', **ɟflĩgowaɪ** 'shrimp'

(4) **ĩɪ** **ĩɪdfiʌn** 'fuel', **hĩɪg** 'Assafætida', **gʌĩɪ** '(females) went'

(5) **ũ** **ũɽeɪlʌb** 'to pour', **ɟũaɪ** 'gambling', **dfiʌũ** 'whether'

(6) **ũɪ** **ũɪʈ** 'camel', **mũɪg** 'a kind of pulse', **goɪfiũɪ** 'wheat'

(7) **ẽ** **ẽɽuaɪ** 'a seat made of hemp or grass', **gfiẽʈuaɪ** 'neck'

(8) **ẽɪ** **ẽɪɽiɪ** 'ankle', **gẽɪd** 'ball', **bfiorəfiẽɪ** 'in the morning'

(9) **õ** **gõʈhibaɪ** 'shall plait'

(10) **õɪ** **õɪʈh** 'lip', **sõɪʈhi̥** 'dry ginger'.

The palatogram of **ĩɪ** (19) is slightly different from that of the corresponding un-nasalised vowel. In other cases the nasalisation does not show any difference in palatograms.

§ 122. The nasalised vowels are separate phonemes in as much as the absence of nasalisation may entirely change the meaning of a word, *e.g.*, **pãɪtiɪ** 'rows', but **paɪtiɪ** 'leaf', **cãɪʈaɪ** 'slap', but **caɪʈaɪ** 'licked', **laɪɽ** 'fondling', but **lãɪɽ** 'penis', '**saɪiɪ** 'an advance to settle an agreement', **sãɪiɪ** 'a tribe of saints', **kʌfiaɪ** 'said', but **kʌfiãɪ** 'where'.

A nasalised vowel nasalises the following voiced consonant (but not the breathed one (See Insc. 21) so much so that it would be more accurate to say that a *reduced* nasal comes between the two, *e.g.*, **ĩɪdfiʌn**, **ĩɪŋgur** and **ĩdʌrsaɪ** (Inscs. 22, 23 and 24) should be written as **ĩɪndfiʌn, ĩɪŋgur** and **ĩndʌrsaɪ**. See also Inscs. 42 and 43 (**bə̃ɪfi** and **hĩɪgo**).

When a word ends in a long vowel and there is a nasalised vowel or nasal somewhere in the word, the breath passes through the nose also at the end, see **ĩdʌrsaɪ** (Inscs. 24). Carefulness in speaking may keep off the influence of nasalisation (cf. **ɟũaɪ** and **ɟuã̃ɪ** Inscs. 44 and 45).

§ 123. The pronunciation of intervocalic nasalised **-d-** and **-b-**, aspirated or unaspirated, differs with dialects. In the

Western dialects it is -d̃, -b̃-, -d̃ɦ, b̃ɦ although as shown here the nasal consonant appears before the mute. In the Eastern dialects the mute has entirely disappeared so that Western -d̃- and -b̃- appear as -n- and -m-, *e.g.*, Lmp. **bÃdɦaɪ** Sl. **bʌnɦaɪ**; Lmp. **bũɪd** Sl. **buɪn**; Lmp. **gẽɪd** Sl. **genʌwaɪ**; Lmp. **cʌndʌn** Sl. **cʌnɪʌn**; Lmp. **sÃdeɪs** Sl. **sʌneɪs**; U. **sẽɪbiɪ** A. **seɪmiɪ** or **cheɪmiɪ**; Lmp. **kÃbʌriɪ** Fy. **kʌmʌriɪ**; Lmp. **kÃdɦʌiɪ** Fy. **kʌnɦʌijaɪ**; Lmp. **bãɪbɦʌn** Fy. **baɪmɦʌn**; Lmp. **thÃbɦʌraɪ** Fy. **thʌmɦʌraɪ**; Lmp. **pʌĩdɦʌb** Fy. **pʌinɦʌb**.

C. Origin

§ 124. Nasalization in Indo-Aryan has been classed as 'dependent' and 'spontaneous'. The former comes up on account of the influence of a neighbouring nasal or *anusvāra* in OIA or MIA. This variety of nasalization occurs quite frequently in Modern Indo-Aryan including Awadhi; particularly in words where a nasal follows a vowel it has generally left its impress on the preceding vowel, *e.g.*, **dãɪt** < *danta*. But sometimes a nasal preceding a vowel appears to have nasalized its successor as is clear from the manuscripts where we find *mãī* for modern **maɪiɪ** 'mother'.

It is also clear that a nasal coming before a voiced consonant leaves nasality longer than one coming before a breathed consonant, *e.g.*, *santāpayati* > **sʌtaɪwʌi** 'oppresses', *kaṅkata-* > **kʌkʌwaɪ** 'comb', *kaṅkaṇa-* > **kʌkʌnaɪ** 'bracelet' while *andha-* > **ãɪdɦʌr** 'blind', *kampa-* > **kãɪp-** 'to tremble; cf. Aw. **pʌseriɪ**, Hin. **pʌnseɪriɪ** 'weight of five seers'.

This shows that just as to-day (see 122), nasalization in earlier stages also was less marked before a breathed consonant than before a voiced consonant.

The dependent nasalization is noticed in a few foreign words also, *e.g.*, Pers. *bandar* > Aw. **bãɪdʌr** 'monkey'.

§ 125. The spontaneous nasalization is very unstable historically and it is not possible to reduce it to general rules.[1] The same word may be found with nasalization at one place and without it at another, *e.g.*, **thuɪku** and **thũɪku**, **gflaɪs** and **gflãɪs**. But it may be noted that nasalization has been generally noticed where *r*, sibilant or *h* was present somewhere in the word, *e.g.*, *sarpa* > **sãɪp**, *akṣi* > **ãɪkhi̯** 'eye'.

[1] For studies on the subject, see

Grierson: Spontaneous Nasalisation in the Indo-Aryan Languages—J. R. A. S. 1922, p. 381.

Siddheshwar Varma: Nasalisation in Hindi Literary Works—Journal of the Deptt. of Letters, Cal. Univ., Vol. XVIII.

CHAPTER II

Vowel-Combinations

A. Early Awadhi

§ 126. All the vowel-combinations given below in the case of Modern Awadhi are generally found in Early Awadhi also. For instance :

iā, *e.g.*, *dīā* 'lamp' (J. 24).

īu, *e.g.*, *nīũ* 'lemon' (J. 52).

iē, *e.g.*, *diē* 'gave' (T. 160).

ia, *e.g.*, *piahĩ* 'drink' (J. 20).

iā, *e.g.*, *duniāĩ* 'in the world' (J. 20). *tiāgī* 'selfless' (J. 23).

iō, *e.g.*, *biōgī* 'lorn' (J. 45).

iu, *e.g.*, *cāriu* 'all the four' (J. 31).

ēī, *e.g.*, *ṭēī* 'having sharpened' (T. 166).

ēi, *e.g.*, *dēi* 'gives' (J. 22).

ēo, *e.g.*, *mahādēo* 'Śiva' (J. 425).

ēu, *e.g.*, *sēu* 'apple' (J. 52).

ei, *e.g.*, *jei* 'whoever' (J. 23).

eo, *e.g.*, *deotanhi* 'gods' (J. 55).

eu, *e.g.*, *naeu* 'bent' (J. 19).

eū, *e.g.*, *bhaeū* 'became' (J. 23).

aī, *e.g.*, *daī* 'God' (J. 21).

ai, *e.g.*, *caḍhai* 'attacks' (J. 19), *saiada* 'Syed' (J. 24).

ae, *e.g.*, *mērae* 'unites' (J. 26).

aē, *e.g.*, *gaē* 'went' (210).

au, *e.g.*, *kãdau* 'mud' (J. 19.).

aū, *e.g.*, *dūaū* 'both' (J. 273).

āī, *e.g.*, *nāī* 'like' (J. 22).

āi, *e.g.*, *jāi* 'having gone' (J. 19).
āē, *e.g.*, *lakhāē* 'showed' (J. 26).
āe, *e.g.*, *jāesa* 'Jāyas' (J. 33).
āo, *e.g.*, *ghāo* 'wound' (J. 220).
āu, *e.g.*, *niāu* 'justice' (J. 20), *pāu* 'gets' (J. 25).
āū, *e.g.*, *ṭhāū̃* 'place' (J. 45), *jarāū* 'wrought' (J. 57).
oi, *e.g.*, *hoi* 'becoming' (J. 19).
ou, *e.g.*, *dou* 'both' (T. 167).
ōī, *e.g.*, *kōī* 'anyone' (J. 20).
ōi, *e.g.*, *hōi* 'be' (J. 24).
ōu, *e.g.*, *rōahī* 'weep' (J. 254).
ōā, *e.g.*, *rōā* 'wept' (J. 225).
ōu, *e.g.*, *sōu* 'even he' (J. 20).
ōū, *e.g.*, *kōū* 'anyone' (J. 23).
ui, *e.g.*, *dui* 'two' (J. 25).
uē, *e.g.*, *uē* 'rose' (J. 50).
ua, *e.g.*, *chuai* 'touching' (J. 20), *duau* 'both' (J. 25), *cua* 'drips' (J. 41).
uā, *e.g.*, *aguā* 'leader' (J. 26).
uu, *e.g.*, *nauu* 'all the nine' (J. 56).

NOTE.—*ai* and *au* have definite diphthong symbols, but are mostly written as simple vowels.

Nasalised vowels also are frequently found in combination.

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 127. (*a*) The language has all varieties of combinations of two vowels. The following are the usual ones:

1. **iix**, *e.g.*, **piix** 'drunk'.
2. **iex**, *e.g.*, **jiex** 'became alive'.
3. **iax**, *e.g.*, **jiax** 'elder sister'.
4. **iu**, *e.g.*, **gfiiu** 'clarified butter'.
5. **exix**, *e.g.*, **dexix** 'will give'.
6. **exi**, *e.g.*, **dexi** 'may give'.
7. **exex**, *e.g.*, **khexex (cʌlʌu)** '(go on) steering'.
8. **exu**, *e.g.*, **dexu** 'give'.

9. **eu,** *e.g.*, **deukaɪ** 'a proper name'.
10. **ʌiɪ,** *e.g.*, **nʌiɪ** 'new'.
11. **ʌi,** *e.g*, **bfiʌi** 'became'.
12. **ʌeɪ,** *e.g.*, **gʌeɪ** 'they went'.
13. **ʌu,** *e.g.*, **tʌu** 'then'.
14. **ʌuɪ,** *e.g.*, **gʌuɪ** 'cow'.
15. **aɪiɪ,** *e.g.*, **aɪiɪ** 'came'.
16. **aɪi,** *e.g.*, **ɟaɪi** 'may go'.
17. **aɪeɪ,** *e.g.*, **khaɪeɪ** 'eaten'.
18. **aɪoɪ,** *e.g.*, **aɪoɪ** 'come'.
19. **aɪu,** *e.g.*, **ɟaɪu** 'go'.
20. **aɪuɪ,** *e.g.*, **naɪuɪ** 'barber'.
21. **oi,** *e.g.*, **hoi** 'became'.
22. **ou,** *e.g.*, **dfiounaɪ** 'the wash'.
23. **oɪiɪ,** *e.g.*, **hoɪiɪ** 'will be'.
24. **oɪi,** *e.g.*, **hoɪi** 'may be'.
25. **oɪeɪ,** *e.g.*, **dfioɪeɪ** 'washed'.
26. **oɪʌ,** *e.g.*, **dfioɪʌnɯ** 'the wash'.
27. **oɪaɪ,** *e.g.*, **ɖfioɪaɪ** 'presents'.
28. **oɪoɪ,** *e.g.*, **dfioɪoɪ** 'wash'.
29. **oɪu,** *e.g.*, **hoɪu** 'be'.
30. **uiɪ,** *e.g.*, **gfiuiɪ** 'the flower of reeds'.
31. **ui,** *e.g.*, **dui** 'two'.
32. **ueɪ,** *e.g.*, **ueɪ** 'rose'.
33. **uʌ,** *e.g.*, **kũʌn** 'the wells' (obl.).
34. **uaɪ,** *e.g.*, **buaɪ** 'mother'.
35. **uɪiɪ,** *e.g.*, **ruɪiɪ** 'cotton'.

NOTE.—Of these, the combinations of two short vowels, particularly **ʌi**, **ʌu** have a tendency to become diphthongs.

(*b*) The following are the most common groups of three vowels:

1. **ieu,** *e.g.*, **pieu** '(you) drank'.
2. **iʌu,** *e.g.*, **ɟiʌu** 'live'.
3. **eɪeu,** *e.g.*, **kheɪeu** '(you) paddled the oars'.

4. **eiaɪ**, *e.g.*, **neiaɪ** 'the earthen support of vessels'.
5. **ʌiaɪ**, *e.g.*, **bɦʌiaɪ** 'brother'.
6. **ʌuaɪ**, *e.g.*, **khauaɪ** 'eater (glutton)'.
7. **aɪiu**, *e.g.*, **aɪiu** 'you (ladies) came'.
8. **aɪeu**, *e.g.*, **kɦaɪeu** 'you ate'.
9. **oiaɪ**, *e.g.*, **loiaɪ** 'blanket'.
10. **oɪeu**, *e.g.*, **dɦoɪeu** 'you washed'.
11. **uiaɪ**, *e.g.*, **gɦũiaɪ** 'the root of Arum'.

NOTE.—Several dialects show a variation in the combination of vowels. For instance:

Lakhimpuri **eɪi**, **eɪu**, **ʌi**, **ʌu**, **aɪi**, **aɪu**, **oi**, **oɪi** and **oɪu** are represented in the Eastern dialects by **eɪe**, **eɪo**, **ʌe**, **ʌo**, **aɪe**, **aɪo**, **oe**, **oɪe** and **oɪo** respectively.

ʌi is found as **ʌj** in some Central and Eastern dialects. A specimen from Bahraich town records **ʌi** while only twelve miles north of it another specimen records **ʌj**.

ORIGIN

§ 128. The OIA diphthongs had become simple vowels in MIA (*ai* > *o*, *au* > *e*,) which permitted vowels coming side by side without coalescence. The same state continues in Mod IA and particularly in Awadhi. Evidence of diphthongisation is infrequent and in this respect Eastern Hindi stands generally in contrast with Western Hindi where diphthongisation of simple vowels is usually found Awadhi **ʌi** has two simple vowels **ʌ** and **i**, in Braj generally the two have the acoustic effect of a diphthong while in Hindustani of Delhi area this **ʌi** is represented by **æ**. This is found in Rājasthani as **ɛ**.

The origin of simple vowels (single) has been discussed in detail above. Vowel-combinations have no separate history.

CHAPTER III

The Syllable

§ 129. A syllable in Awadhī consists of

1. a vowel, *e.g.*, **ɪz** 'these', **ux** 'that', **i/u** 'this', **bɦʌ-i-ax** 'brother' etc.,

2. a vowel plus a consonant, *e.g.*, **exk** 'one', **in** 'these' **oxʈ** 'cheek',

3. a vowel plus the closure of a long consonant (commonly known as a double consonant), *e.g.*, **ot/xax** 'that much', **ʌl/xax** 'God (among Mohammedans)';

4. a vowel plus the first of a conjunct consonant, *e.g.*, **ʌr/six** 'linseed', **ul/ʈax** 'opposite',

5. a vowel plus a consonant plus a whispered vowel or **o**, *e.g.*, **ɟax/itḭ** '(we) going'; **ɟi/ʌtḭ** 'living', **ʌpo/nax** 'herself',

6. a consonant plus a vowel, *e.g.*, **rax/ɟax** 'king', **ki/taxb** 'book',

7. a consonant plus a vowel plus a consonant, *e.g.*, **din** 'day', **bʌs** 'control', **hʌr** 'plough',

8. a consonant plus a vowel plus the closure of a long consonant (commonly known as a double consonant), *e.g.*, **bʌp/xax** 'father', **kut/xax** 'dog', **bɦuʈ/xax** 'an ear of maize',

9. a consonant plus a vowel plus the first of a conjunct, *e.g.*, **khʌɳ/ʈax** 'sour', **kun/dax** 'log', **bɦiɳ/ɖix** 'lady's finger', **bʌr/chi** 'spear',

10. a consonant plus a vowel plus a consonant and a whispered vowel, *e.g.*, **raxmḭ** 'Rāma', **ɟaxtḭ** 'going'.

An intervocalic consonant goes with the following vowel to make a syllable and two successive vowels make two different syllables.

§ 130. Most of the syllables in Awadhi are of the variety of a consonant plus a vowel. Out of the eighty-six syllables which make the first three sentences of **gulgulaɪ waɾliɪ kʌthaɪ** (Texts No. 1), forty-four are of this variety, twenty-two of a single vowel, fifteen of a consonant plus a vowel plus a consonant, two of a vowel plus a consonant, one of a consonant plus a vowel plus a consonant and a whispered vowel and two of a vowel plus a consonant plus a whispered vowel.

§ 131. The syllabic division in Awadhi, as we see from the analysis of syllables, mostly comes after the vowel, the most sonorous element. When there is a long consonant or conjunct consonant, however, the division comes after the closure of the long consonant and after the first consonant respectively.

The general rule in Awadhi is that a long vowel should be followed by a short consonant. A short vowel may be followed by a long, or short or conjunct consonant. A consonant short or long may have a vowel of any quantity after it. In certain verbal formations where **ʌ** has been elided between **r** or **l** and a consonant, we have a long vowel followed by a conjunct consonant, *e.g.*, **baɪrʌt̪i̯** > **baɪrti** 'burns', **caɪlʌt̪i̯** > **caɪlti** 'sifts'. We have it in loan-words also, *e.g.*, **baɪlʈiɪ** 'bucket', the dialect-word being **ɖoɪlu̯**.

CHAPTER IV

The Word

§ 132. A word in Awadhi may begin either with a consonant or a vowel. Any vowel may begin a word. As regards consonants, most of them can begin a word—only a few, mentioned in their individual treatment, which occur only medially or finally do not do so. Lakhimpuri avoids the semi-vowels (**y** and **w**) initially.

(*a*) Not more than one consonant (short) may come at the beginning of a word and not more than two vowels together. In the middle of a word we may find one vowel or two or three vowels together. When there are three, the last vowel has a tendency to be separated from the preceding two by a semi-vowel, *e.g.*, **neiaɪ** 'a support for jars' becomes **neijaɪ**, **pʌuaɪ** 'a quarter of a seer' becomes **pʌuwaɪ**. In the medial position generally there is a short consonant. Sometimes we have it long—mostly in loan-words, *e.g.*, **kutɪaɪ** 'dog', the proper dialect-word being **kuɪkur.** Not more than two consonants can come together in the middle of a word and these should be :

1. Nasal and a consonant, *e.g.*, **sʌŋgʃi** 'with', **khoɲcaɪ** 'a dish of sweets', **piɳɖiɪ** 'a lump', **bundaɪ** 'earrings', **bʌmbaɪ** 'pipe'.

2. **r** plus a consonant, *e.g.*, **bʃiurkaɪ** 'an earthen cup', **bʃiurʒiɪ** 'baker', **bʌrti** 'burning', **bʌrphiɪ** 'a variety of tofee,' **bʌrsiɪ** 'anniversary', **bʌrwʌʈ** 'spleen', **ʌrɪʃiɪ** 'a kind of pulse'.

r cannot be combined with a retroflex consonant or with **j** or **l.**

3. **l** plus consonant, *e.g.*, **pʌlkaː** 'bedstead', **kʌlchul** 'spoon, ladle', **baːlʈiː** 'bucket', **bʌldiː** 'exchange', **gʌlphʌr** 'interior of cheeks', **kʌlsiaː** 'a jar', **kʌlːfi** 'tomorrow'.

The combination of **l** with **r**, **j**, **w** is not found. Group (2) is commoner than group (3).

4. **s** plus plosive. This group is found only in loan-words or in modern compounds, *e.g.*, **bʌstiː** 'habitation', **rʌstaː** 'path', **bɑ̃sphoːr** 'one who makes baskets, mats, etc., from bamboos'.

In the case of loan-words, the group **-st-** is very generally changed into **-ɦʌtː** by all those who are in villages and have little contact with town-life, **bʌstiː** > **bʌɦʌtːiː**, **rʌstaː** > **rʌɦʌtːaː**.

5. a plosive plus a plosive. Both must be either voiced or unvoiced. This combination is very rare and occurs only in compounds, *e.g.*, **khʌʈkirəwaː** 'bug'. In such a case both the plosives are fully exploded.

NOTE.—In one word only, *viz.*, **bʌrmɦaː** 'creator', there appears to be a combination of three consonants together in the medial position. But **-mɦ-** is merely an aspirated form of **m** like **-rɦ-**, **-lɦ-** and should be considered a single consonant for all purposes.

(*b*) A word may end either in a vowel or a consonant. Of the vowels generally long (**iː**, **eː**, **uː**, **aː**), or whispered vowels (**i̥**, **u̥**, **e̥** or **o̥**) are found finally. If a short vowel (**i**, **u**) is found it is generally preceded by another vowel.

Only a short single consonant (more generally breathed than voiced) is found in the final position. A conjunct consonant or a long consonant is generally followed by some vowel-sound at the end.

§ 133. A word in Awadhi may contain from one to four syllables but the dis-syllabic word is the most common. Out of the 160 words in the first paragraph of

gulgulaɪwaɪliɪ kʌthaɪ (Texts No. 1) 105 are dis-syllabic, 26 tri-syllabic, 25 mono-syllabic and only 4 quadru-syllabic.

The four-syllabic word is unusual for the language, it occurs in some noun-formations and verbal forms or in loan-words.

In a word in Awadhi a long syllable may occur only as the final or penultimate one. Any vowel which is long in a base or root is shortened if it is more than two syllables from the end of a word when declined or conjugated. This occurs only when one of the two syllables is long, or both being short, the word ends in a consonant, *e.g.*, **deɪkh + ifiʌũ > dekhifiʌũ, deɪkh + ʌten > dekhəten** but **deɪkh + eu > deɪkheu.**

NOTE.—When once the shortening has taken place according to this rule it remains in spite of the conditions being disturbed on account of a later elision of a vowel, *e.g.*, **maɪn + ətiu > mʌnətiu > mʌntiu.** Here in spite of the elision of **-ə** the first vowel continues to be short.

§ 134. In a four-syllabled word, the medial unstressed syllable with **-ə** tends to lose its vowel, *e.g.*, **mʌfiətijaɪ** 'headman' > **mʌhtijaɪ, ʌdəbʌdaɪi kə** 'hastily and suddenly' > **ʌdbʌdaɪi kə, choʈəkʌuɪ** 'youngest' > **choʈkʌuɪ, tʌrəwaɪrį** > **tʌrwaɪrį** 'sword'.

§ 135. A syllable with a long vowel, in the final position, shortens the length before short forms of the post-positions (*vide* Part II Chapter II), *e.g.*, **nʌdɪiɪ** 'river' but **nʌdɪi sę** 'from the river', **kaɪfieɪ** 'why' but **kaɪfie mə** 'in what', **gfioɪɽaɪ** 'horse' but **gfioɪɽʌ sę** 'from the horse' **goɪfiũɪ** 'wheat' but **goɪfiũ sę** 'with wheat'.

§ 136. The short syllables of the enclitics in the final position, generally in swift speech, disappear, *e.g.*, **ʌu** 'and' > **ʌ, tʌu** 'then' > **tʌ.**[1] This occurs chiefly when the next

[1] An instance of this latter *ta* is available in Tulsīdās, p. 165.

word begins with the same vowel with which the particle ends, *e.g.*, **ʌu** + **unkaɪ** > **ʌunkaɪ** 'and to them', **tʌu ui** > **tʌui** 'and they'.

NOTE.—The form and meaning of individual words differ with different districts, *e.g.*, R. **mʌnseɪruɪ**, Sl. **mʌnseɪdfiuɪ**, U. **mʌnsʌwaɪ** 'husband', Lmp. **meñʌruaɪ**, Sl. **mẽdfiaɪruɪ**, S. **mefiəraɪruɪ** 'woman', Lmp. **bfiorəfiẽɪ**, U. **bfionəfieɪ**, B. **bfinʌfiəɪ** 'in the morning'; **khisiaɪb** in the Western dialects means 'to be ashamed' while in the Eastern its significance is 'to be angry', **dikɪə** in Western dialects means 'angry' while in Eastern 'ill'.

CHAPTER V

The Accent

§ 137. Awadhi possesses a very weak stress as compared to English or other highly accented languages. That it does possess an accent—and stress accent—becomes quite manifest when Awadhi words are spoken by other Indo-Aryan speakers, say a Gujarati. There the wrong accent can at once be detected. When an Englishman pronounces **khaɪ/eũ** 'I ate', he puts the stress on the second syllable and has to be corrected. Even when he puts it on the first, he puts it so strong that the word does not sound as Awadhi. A Gujarati person would put the stress on the first syllable in a poly-syllabic word, and it at once becomes non-Awadhi.

§ 138. Mono-syllabic words possess stress only when they come in sentences. In dissyllabic, tri-syllabic or tetra-syllabic words, the stress is put on one of the last two syllables, whichever is long either by nature or positition. If both are long or short, the accent falls on the penultimate syllable. The following examples illustrate it.

(*a*) Words of Two Syllables

pi-ˈsaɪn 'flour', **pʌˈcɪs** 'twenty-five', **ˈbaɪis** 'twenty-two', **ˈkhaɪiṇ̥** 'they ate', **bɦʌˈwaɪ** 'became', **ˈsʌnduɪkh** 'box', **kʌˈɦisi̥** 'he said', **ˈnʌdɪɪ** 'river', **ˈbɦãɪʈaɪ** 'brinjal', **ˈkutɪaɪ** 'dog', **kuˈdaɪɾi̥** 'pick-axe', **ˈsaɪʄɦaɪ** 'share', **ˈduləɦin** 'bride', **ˈgãɪu** 'village', **ˈbɦaɪu** 'rate', **ˈbɦʌrtaɪ** 'smashed vegetable', **ˈsaɪdɦuɪ** 'saint', **ˈnaɪraɪ** 'pipe, tunnel', **gɦuˈnaɪ** 'eaten by worms', **bʌˈɦiṇ̥** 'sister', **ˈbɦaɪiɪ** 'brother'.

(*b*) Words of Three Syllables

lʌri'kaː 'boy', **ɟflɑ̃ː'pʌi** 'may cover', **ʌ'ʈflaːiː** 'two and a half', **kʌru'aːtɪ̥** 'tastes bitter', **kʌ'raːiɲɪ̥** 'they caused to do', **so'waːisɪ̥** 'put to sleep', **bflʌ'waːniː** 'goddess', **deː'kheũ** 'I saw', **pʌgʌ'flaː** 'rope', **sʌ'gaːiː** 'betrothal', **cʌ'maːriɲɪ̥** 'a Chamar's wife', **bhoːə'hẽː** 'in the morning', **tʌr'waːriː** 'swords', **kʌsi'baː** 'shall tighten', **bhʌ̃ʈi'jaː** 'earthen pot', **kʌ'buːliː** 'admitted', **ʌr'daːwʌnɪ̥** 'the string of the cot', **u'ʈhaːi** 'having taken up'.

(*c*) Words of Four Syllables

kʌri'flɑ̃ːu 'loin', **siːʌflʌ'neː** 'towards the head of the bed', **kʌceflə'riː** 'court', **ɖeflʌri'jaː** 'a big earthen granary'.

Note.—Words which have two short vowels together treat them as diphthongs—see Note under § 127 (*a*), *e.g.*, **'deutaː** 'god', **lʌg'wʌibaː** 'shall cause to stick', **bʌflu'rʌ̃ĩ** 'may come back'.

CHAPTER VI

Assimilation

§ 139. The word has no phonetic definition; it is only a morphological identity. If an illiterate person were asked to divide his sentence into words, he would probably make mistakes astounding to the literate person particularly to the grammarian. However, some idea of a word appears to be present in the sub-conscious mind of the speaker, or else a child would not be able to make up forms from analogy.

The main existence of a word, thus, is with reference to its use in speech, *i.e.*, in sentences. Here we find that one word considerably affects the form of another. The enclitic is tacked on to the preceding word and loses its strength in certain cases, modifying to some extent its predecessor (*vide* § 135).

Besides, a considerable number of cases of the assimilation of the final sound of a word with the initial of the following have been found. This is particularly noticeable in swift speech. Assimilation in Awadhi is always regressive. It appears that when a speaker reaches the end of a word, his attention comes to rest on the next one, the initial sound of which modifies the final sound of the first word.

Note.—For the purposes of Assimilation, dentals, alvolars, palatals and retroflex palatals fall in one class.

§ 140. A whispered vowel or ə which occurs at the end of a word and stands between two consonants having the same place of articulation, is elided (see Insc. No. 41 **-pə + par > prar**) *e.g.*—

bfiaɪgi̯ gʌwaɪ > bfiaɪg gʌwaɪ 'ran away', **kaɪfiekẹ khaɪtir > kaɪfiekkhaɪtir** 'for what', **khʌʈijʌkə kirəwaɪ > khʌʈijʌkkirəwaɪ** 'the bug of the cot', **saɪgu̯ khaɪisi̯ > saɪk khaɪisi̯** 'ate the vegetable-leaves';

bfiaɪɟi̯ cʌlaɪ > bfiaɪccʌlaɪ 'started running away', **cʌli̯ difiaɪ > cʌldifiaɪ** 'started', **tiɪni̯ dãɪi > tiɪn dãɪi** 'thrice', **kaɪfiesẹ saɪnini̯ > kaɪfiessaɪnini̯** 'with what did they mix?' **bfiaɪtu̯ daɪri̯ > bfiaɪd daɪri̯** 'rice and pulse'; **pʌfiiri̯ rʌfiaɪ > pʌfiirrʌfiaɪ** 'putting on', **tiɪni̯ ɟʌneɪ > tiɪnɟʌneɪ** 'three men', **kʌfiini̯ cʌlʌu > kʌfiin cʌlʌu** '(they) said : let us go', **kʌfiʌti̯ cʌlaɪ gaɪ > kʌfiʌccalaɪ gaɪ** 'went on saying',

pʌfiiri̯ lifiisi̯ > pʌfiir lifiisi̯ 'he put on.'

kʌfiini̯ cʌlʌu > kʌfiiɲcʌlʌu '(they) said : let (us) go'.

bʌtaɪini̯ ɟaɪi > bʌtaɪin ɟaɪi '(they) went and told'.

cʌli̯ difiaɪ > cʌldifiaɪ 'started'.

dfiʌri̯ difiisi̯ > dfiʌrdifiisi̯ '(he) put down'.

pʌfiini̯ lifiisi̯ > pafiinlifiisi̯ '(he) put on'.

§ 141. A voiced plosive at the end of a word becomes breathed before a breathed plosive of the same class in the next word, *e.g.*, **ʌlʌg kʌi dezu > ʌlʌkkʌi dezu** 'turn out', **bfiaɪɟi̯ cʌlaɪ > bfiaɪccʌlaɪ** 'started running', **laɪdi̯ tʌu leɪiɪ > laɪttʌu leɪiɪ** 'let me first put the burden', **ɟʌb paɪniɪ piɪ bfieɪ > ɟʌppaɪniɪ piɪ bfieɪ** 'when he finished drinking water', **roɪɟu̯ tʌu aɪwʌti̯ > roɪttʌu aɪwʌti̯** 'comes daily'.

§ 142. A breathed plosive occurring at the end of a word (or immediately before a whispered vowel or **ə**) is assimilated with the voiced plosive of the same class in the following word (the whispered vowel or **ə** being elided), *e.g.*,

saɪt dãɪi > saɪddãɪi 'seven times',

maɪʈiki̯ gfiʌrijaɪ > maɪʈiggfiʌrijaɪ 'a small pot of clay',

baɪp bfiaɪiɪ > **baɪbbfiaɪiɪ** 'father and brothers',
saɪt ɟʌneɪ > **saɪɟɟʌneɪ** 'seven persons'.
bfiaɪtụ ɖaɪɾisị > **bfiaɪɖɖaɪɾisị** 'threw the rice'.

§ 143. A breathed plosive coming at the end of a word becomes voiced when followed by a voiced plosive of another class, *e.g.*, **dijʌkẹ dʌɾwʌɟɟeɪ** 'on the door of the lamp (-'s house)', > **diyʌgdʌɾwʌɟɟeɪ, paɪkụ bʌniɪ hʌi** > **paɪgbʌniɪ hʌi** 'is all right', **koɪikẹ ɟuɪtaɪ** > **koɪigɟuɪtaɪ** 'somebody's shoes'; **khʌʈijʌ po dfiʌɾiɪ** > **khʌʈijʌbdfiʌɾiɪ** 'placed on the cot', **baɪp difiisị** > **baɪbdifiisị** 'the father gave'.

§ 144. A nasalisation with the following consonant becomes nasal before a consonant of the same class (place of articulation), *e.g.*, **pʌfiũcị ɟaɪũ** > **pʌfiuɲɟaɪũ** 'I may reach', **pãɪc chaɪ** > **paɪɲchaɪ** 'five or six', **pãɪc saɪt paɪnsaɪt** 'five or seven'.

If the consonant following the nasalisation is aspirated the aspiration is lost, *e.g.*, **bãɪdfiị deɪu** > **baɪndeɪu** 'tie (it)'.

§ 145. A plosive occurring at the end of a word (with, or without a whispered vowel or **o** following) is assimilated to the nasal of the same class in the following word, *e.g.*, **dekhaɪtị naɪiɪ** > **dekhaɪnnaɪiɪ** 'is not seen',

baɪdị nʌuwʌ kẹ > **baɪnnʌuwʌkẹ** 'excepting the barber',

baɪp mʌfiətaɪɾiɪ > **baɪmmʌfiətaɪɾiɪ** 'father and mother',

tʌb mʌfiəɾaɪɟ > **tʌmmʌfiəɾaɪɟ** 'then the Maharaja',

roɪɟụ naɪcʌi > **roɪnnaɪcʌi** 'may dance everyday'.

But **mʌukepo nʌuwʌu** 'even the barber at the opportunity' remains as it is, because **p** is followed by a nasal of another class.

This assimilation is possible only in the case of labials and dentals as the nasals of other classes do not begin a word.

§ 146. The final consonant is in swift speech united to the initial vowel of the following word, *e.g.*, **tʌb ezk din razʃaz > ta/bezk din razʃaz** 'then one day the king'.

This affects only the division of syllables, the most common variety of syllable—consonant plus a vowel—being effected.

§ 147. A plosive or nasal coming at the end of a word loses its explosion if followed by a word beginning with the same plosive or nasal, *e.g.*,

khezt tizr > khezt:izr 'near the field',

mazri̯ kə khisijazi gez > mazrikːhisijazi gez 'became very much ashamed',

kazfiemə mazʈeu > kazfiemːazʈeu 'in what (vessel) did you mix it?'.

§ 148. Final **b** has a tendency to become devoiced before a breathed consonant, *e.g.*,

sʌb+kaz > sapkaz 'to all', **ʃʌb sez > ʃʌpsez** 'since'. (See Note to § 15.)

§ 149. Final **-t** or **-th** has a tendency to be assimilated to the following **c-**, **ʃ-**, **r-**, **l-**, and **s-**; the aspiration of **-th** is then lost. The whispered vowel is, of course, elided. For instance:

bfiazgʌti̯ + cʌlaz > bfiazgʌccʌlaz 'went running', **sazth + cʌlʌu > sazccʌlʌu** 'come with (me)', **khazti̯ + ʃazti̯ rʌfiʌi > khazʃːazti̯ rʌfiʌi** 'was going eating (on the way)', **ɖfiũzʈʌti̯ + rʌfiaz > ɖfiũzʈʌrrʌfiaz** 'remained searching', **sʌĩti̯ lifiisi̯ > sʌĩllifiisi̯** 'he brushed', **bʌfiut + sãzp > bʌfiussãzp** 'many snakes'.

§ 150. Final **-s** has a tendency to be assimilated to the following **c-**, **ʃ-**, **d-**, **ʈ-** and **ɖ-**, *e.g.*,

uz kʌfiisi̯ cʌlʌu > uzkʌfiiccʌlʌu 'he said:—come', **dʌs ʃʌnez > dʌʃːʌnez** 'ten persons', **kʌfiisi̯ dʌs birəwaz > kʌfiiddʌs birəwaz** 'he said: ten trees', **pʌcazs ʈhʌĩʈhaz > pʌcazʈːʈhʌĩʈhaz** 'fifty points of quarrel', **pʌcizs ɖerazi gez > pʌcizɖːerazi gez** 'twenty-five got frightened'.

§ 151. Final **r** is assimilated to the initial **l** or **ɖ** of the following word, *e.g.*,

coɪr lʌi gaɪ > coɪllʌigaɪ 'the thief took away', **caɪrị lʌrikaɪ > caɪllʌrikaɪ** 'four sons', **saɪr ɖeraɪi gaɪ > saɪɖɖeraɪi gaɪ** 'the fool got frightened', **maɪrị ɖʌribaɪ > maɪɖɖʌribaɪ** 'I shall kill'.

§ 152. Final **c, ch, ɟ** are assimilated to initial **ɖ** of the following word, the whispered vowel or **ə** coming between them is elided, *e.g.*,

pãɪc ɖfieɪr > paɪn̥ɖfieɪr 'five heaps', **kuchụ ɖaɪrị deɪu > kuɖɪaɪrị deɪu** 'do put a little', **bfiaɪɟị ʈhaɪʈfi bfieɪ > bfiaɪʈɪhaɪʈfi bfieɪ** 'at once ran away'.

§ 153. **h** coming after a plosive or affricate is combined with that plosive or affricate so that an aspirated results. The previous consonant is then pronounced a little longer, *e.g.*,

dʌroɪgʌkə + hukum > dʌroɪgʌkɪhukum 'the order of the police officer', **kaɪfiepə hÃseu > kaɪfiepɪhÃseu** 'what made you laugh ?'.

(*a*) If a whispered vowel or **ə** comes between **h** and the consonant, it is elided if **h** is followed by a similar (back or front) vowel, or becomes **j** or **w** if followed by a dissimilar vowel, *e.g.*,

ɟaɪtị hʌi > ɟaɪtɪhjʌi 'goes', but **raɪɟʌkẹ hiãɪ > raɪjʌkɪhiãɪ** 'at the king's', **pãɪcə + hʌm > pãɪcɪhʌm** 'five to us', but **sãɪcụ hisaɪb > sãɪcɪhwisaɪb** 'the true account'.

§ 154. If **-i** or **-u** comes between two vowels similar in quality, it becomes **-j** or **-w** respectively, *e.g.*,

lʌi + aɪoɪ > lʌjaɪoɪ 'bring', **gãɪu + ʌi > gãɪwʌi** 'to the village'.

§ 155. The forms of the auxiliary 'to be' (present tense only) have a tendency to shorten their syllables when they come after participles. Only their last syllable (with the nasalisation, if one is there) is heard, and there appears

to be a slight pause—a silence—in place of the last syllable. For instance :

kʌfiʌtị̊ fiʌi > **kʌfiʌti i** 'he says', **dfiʌrez hʌ̃** > **dfiʌrez ɪ̃** or even **dfiʌrez** ~ 'they are there', **khazti̥ hʌu** > **khazti u** ' you eat', **dezkhʌti̥ nazi hʌu** > **dzkhʌnnazi u** ' aren't you seeing?'.

§ 156. The following cases of doubling (*lit.* lengthening) a consonant and shortening the previous vowel have been noticed:—

kiz tʌnaz > **kittʌnaz** 'in which manner', **ʒiz tʌnaz** > **ʒittʌnaz** ' in whatever manner '.

Instances of doubling are also noticed in names, *e.g.*, **bʌbbu** (ordinary **bazbuz**), **kʌlluz** (ordinary **kʌriaz** 'black') and in appellations of relatives, *e.g.*,

dʌdduz ' elder' brother', **kʌkkuz** ' uncle', **bʌppaz** ' father', **kʌkkaz** ' uncle'.

This doubling seems to be due to emphasis.

CHAPTER VII

The Sentence

§ 157. A sentence in Awadhi is generally small, containing from one to four or five words. In narrative speech these sentences are joined up by conjunctions such as **ʌu** 'and', **tʌu** 'then', **tʌb** 'then', **tʌfikʌi** 'then' or **ki** 'that' as necessary according to sense. In such conditions, the sentence itself generally forms a breath-group. For instance, the first sentence of **gulgulʌrwʌrliː kʌthʌr** (Texts No. I) will be read as :

eːk rʌrɟʌr rʌfiʌ̃ || ʌu mʌfiətʌrriː ṙʌfiʌi || ʌu dulfiin rʌfiʌi or the last would be read as :

ɟʌisʌr unkʌr din bʌfiurʌr || tʌisʌr sʌbkʌr bʌfiurʌ̃.

Long sentences are broken up. In such cases wherever the breath stops it must be the end of a word. A postposition always goes with the preceding word, the two are never separated for breath. The correlative adverb and conjunctions have a stop of breath after them. The subject and the verb when they come one after the other go together and so also the adjective and the substantive. When the adjective, substantive, and the verb come together and a pause is to be made, the breath stops after the adjective. The following are some of the instances :—

eːk | rʌrɟʌr rʌfiʌ̃ || ʌu | mʌfiətʌrriː rʌfiʌi || ʌu dulfiin rʌfiʌi. mʌfiətʌrriː roːɟʊ̯ | chʌpːʌn pʌrkʌrlkẹ̊ | bfioːɟʌn bʌnʌrwʌi || ʌu | ʌpənʌr khʌri || ʌu ʌpənʌr lʌrikʌk | khʌwʌrwʌi. dulfiin khʌrtir | eːk beɟfiʌrikị̊ | roːʈiː sẽːrkʌi || ʌrdfiiː roːʈiː | ʌu loːrnʊ̯ sʌbeːrʌr deːri || ʌu ʌrdfiiː | sʌɲɟfiʌk. ui | mʌrrʌr gusːʌkẹ̊ | roːʈiː ɖefiʌriʌm | ɖʌrrị̊ deːrʌ̃ || ʌu loːrnʊ̯ | gʌgʌrim | nʌri ʌrwʌʌ̃. ʌisʌi | kʌrti kʌrti | bʌrrʌr | bʌrsʌi | gudʌrị̊ gʌʌ̃ːr.

§ 158. As noted in § 137, the word-stress in Awadhi is very weak. But in a narrative sentence we have a strong stress on the word which we want to emphasise according to the idea that we want to convey. This falls on the syllable which ordinarily would have the word-stress. For instance, the sentence:

tʌb ui hʌmsez ˈbolez 'then he said to me' would have word-accent only in **ˈboɪlez** which is a dissyllabic word, the others being only mono-syllabic But in a sentence even the mono-syllabic words can have stress in order to emphasise a particular word. This sentence may have the following stresses:

ˈtʌb ui hʌmsez ˈboɪlez '*then* he said to me',
tʌb ˈui hʌmsez ˈboɪle 'then *he* said to me',
tʌb ui ˈhʌmsez ˈboɪlez 'then he said to *me*',
tʌb ui hʌmsez ˌˈboɪlez 'then he *said* to me'.

The stressed syllable then becomes a little longer in quantity.

CHAPTER VIII

The Intonation

§ 159. Intonation does not play a part in Awadhi to show a difference in meaning of particular words. In normal speech the pitch does not rise or fall considerably. For instance, in the two sentences **ɛrkə bʌɽɛr raɪɟaɪ rʌ̃ɳʌtị̊ hʌ̃ĩ** 'A great king is residing', and **tum khaɪi aɪeu** 'you have taken your meal', which are mere statements of fact the difference between the frequency of one sound-wave and that of another is not considerable (*vide* Charts 1 and 2). In the former the highest frequency is 160 and the lowest 99, in the latter 133 and 97 respectively.

§ 160. It is in emphatic speech that tone plays a definite part. For the purposes of investigation a sentence was selected which gives four different senses merely by the difference in tone :

1. Statement : **tum khaɪi aɪeu** 'you came after having eaten (your meal)'.
2. Imperative : **tum khaɪi aɪeu** 'come after having eaten (your meal)'
3. Question : **tum khaɪi aɪeu** 'have you come after having eaten (your meal)?'
4. Wonder : **tum khaɪi aɪeu** 'really! you have come after having eaten (your meal)?'

Charts 2, 3, 4 and 5 depict the rise and fall of tone of these sentences. Chart 2 (statement) shows that the pitch is more or less level. Chart 3 (Imperative) depicts that the sentence begins with a very high pitch (the highest in the sentence), there is an immediate fall, then the tone is more or less level for a considerable length of the sentence. It is

only at the end that there is a sudden fall followed by a rise. The highest frequency in this sentence is 181 and the lowest 91.

Chart 4 (question) begins with a high pitch which suddenly falls, then there is a level pitch followed by a gradual rise to the height at which the sentence began; then there is again a fall followed by a level pitch. At the end there is again a gradual rise and a gradual fall. It is thus rise : fall : level : rise : fall : level : rise : fall. The highest frequency in this sentence is 181 and the lowest 87.

Chart 5 (wonder) begins with a very low pitch, there is gradual rise and then a fall almost to the point at which the sentence began. After it, there is a level pitch and then a gradual rise to a very high pitch. The highest frequency in this sentence is 253 and the lowest 85.

§ 161. In individual words, the only scope for the play of tone is when a person is called from far off or when a word expresses acquiescence or prohibition. In the former case the last syllable of the word rises high in pitch besides being elongated, *e.g.*, **bfiʌija** ɤ ɤ ɤ ɤ 'brother'.

In the latter case, only the interjections like **hɑ̃ɤ** are used. Like 'yes' of English, **hɑ̃ɤ** is capable of giving different senses by a difference in tone. The following are generally used :

1. **hɑ̃ɤ** 'yes' — agreement or acquiescence
2. **hɑ̃ɤ** 'no' — prohibition or disagreement

CHAPTER IX

Other Characteristics

§ 162. As compared with the speech of grown-up people, the speech of children shows the following features:

1. **r** is pronounced as **l**, *e.g.*, **gflʌr** as **gflʌl**.

2. **ɽ** is pronounced as **l**, *e.g.*, **gflʌɽix** as **gflʌlix**.

Note.—Sometimes a child substitutes **n** for **l**, *e.g.*, **gflʌr** as **gflʌn**, **cʌlʌu** as **cʌnʌu**.

3. retroflex mutes are pronounced as dentals, *e.g.*, **kaɽten** as **kaɽten**, **thaɽkur** as **thaɽkul**, **dʌɳdaɽ** as **dʌndaɽ**, **dflɔɽlʌk** as **dflɔɽlʌk**.

4. aspiration in aspirated sounds is very feeble so that they sound as unaspirated, *e.g.*, **gflʌr** approximates **gʌl**.

5. **s** is pronounced as **ch**, *e.g.*, **sunʌu** as **chunʌu**, **bʌtaɽsaɽ** as **bʌtaɽchaɽ**.

It has been observed that when the child begins to pronounce **s**, he does so in the case of initial **s** first—the medial **s** continues to be pronounced **ch** a little longer.

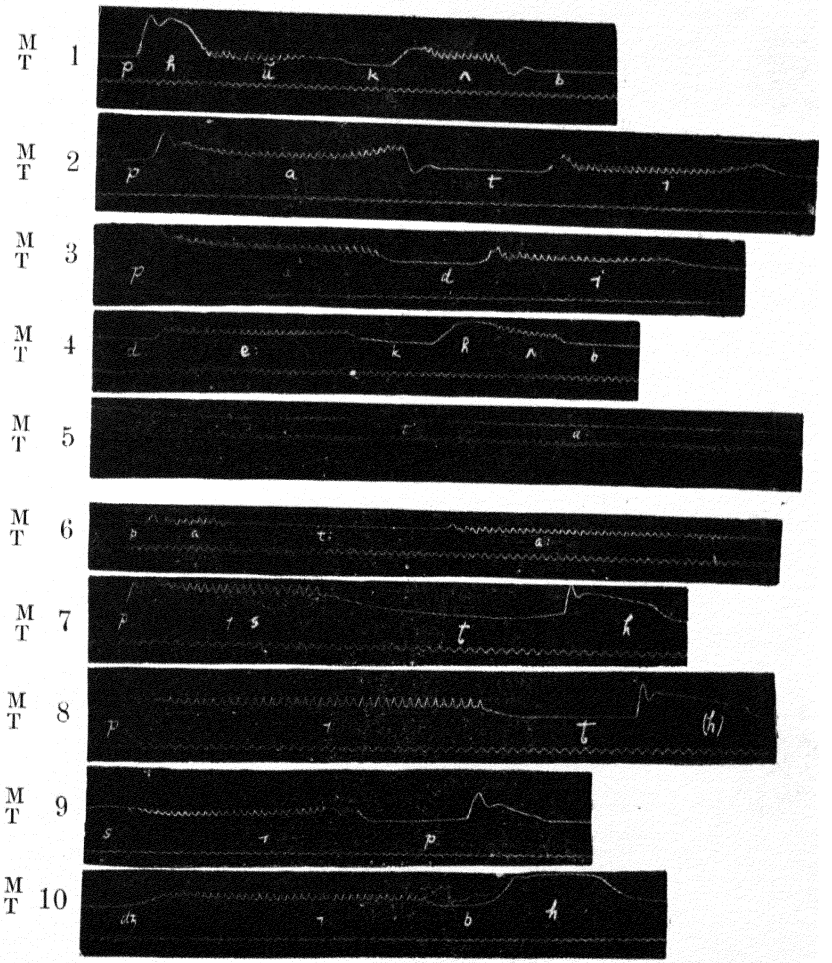
§ 163. The speech of women does not show any phonetic divergence from that of men. The speech of literate classes sometimes retains foreign sounds in loan-words, *e.g.*, **ʃ**, **f**, **z**. Otherwise there is no phonetic divergence between the speech of one class and that of another. The difference lies only in the adoption of vocabulary (see § 9).

§ 164. Gestures play a part in emotional speech. In ordinary talk men generally do not move their hands. The head rises a little when a question is put and falls when acquiescence is to be indicated. In quarrels, particularly of women, hands play a very expressive part. Challenges and

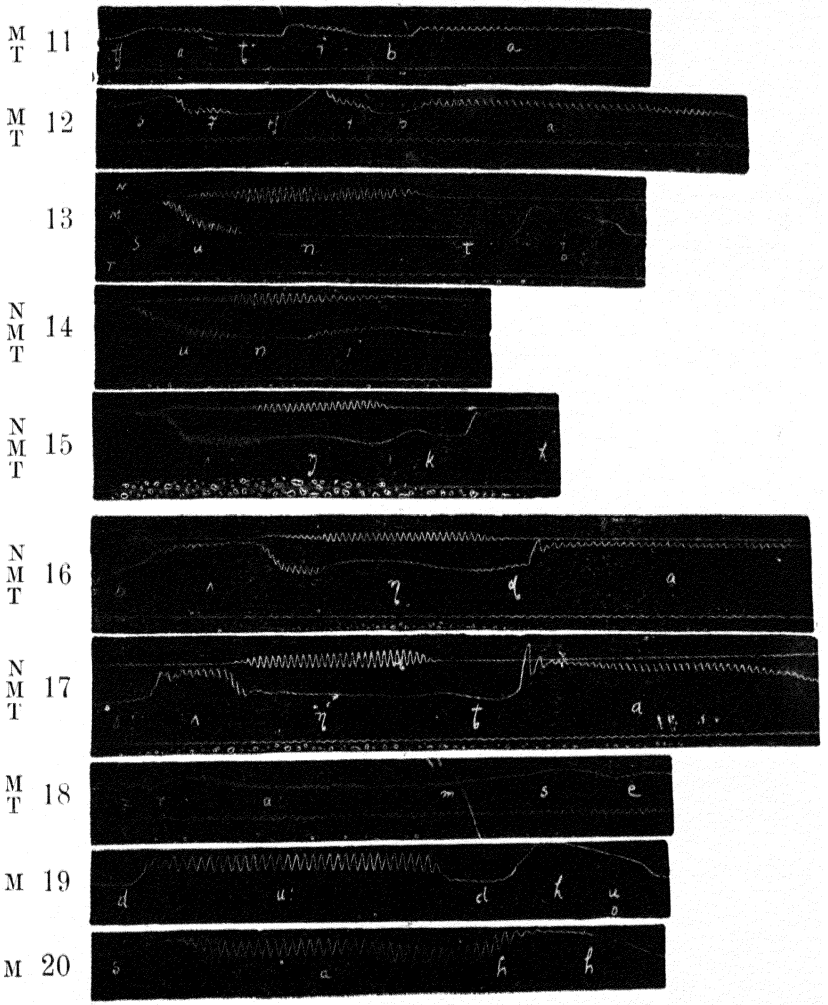
counter-challenges are made by the hand, the persons quarrelling advance towards each other and then retrace the steps. As soon as another telling point is told they again advance and again retrace. The fists are clenched, the teeth are pressed, one set on the other, with spreading of lips and the head moves forward. These gestures, however, are not particular to Awadhi only.

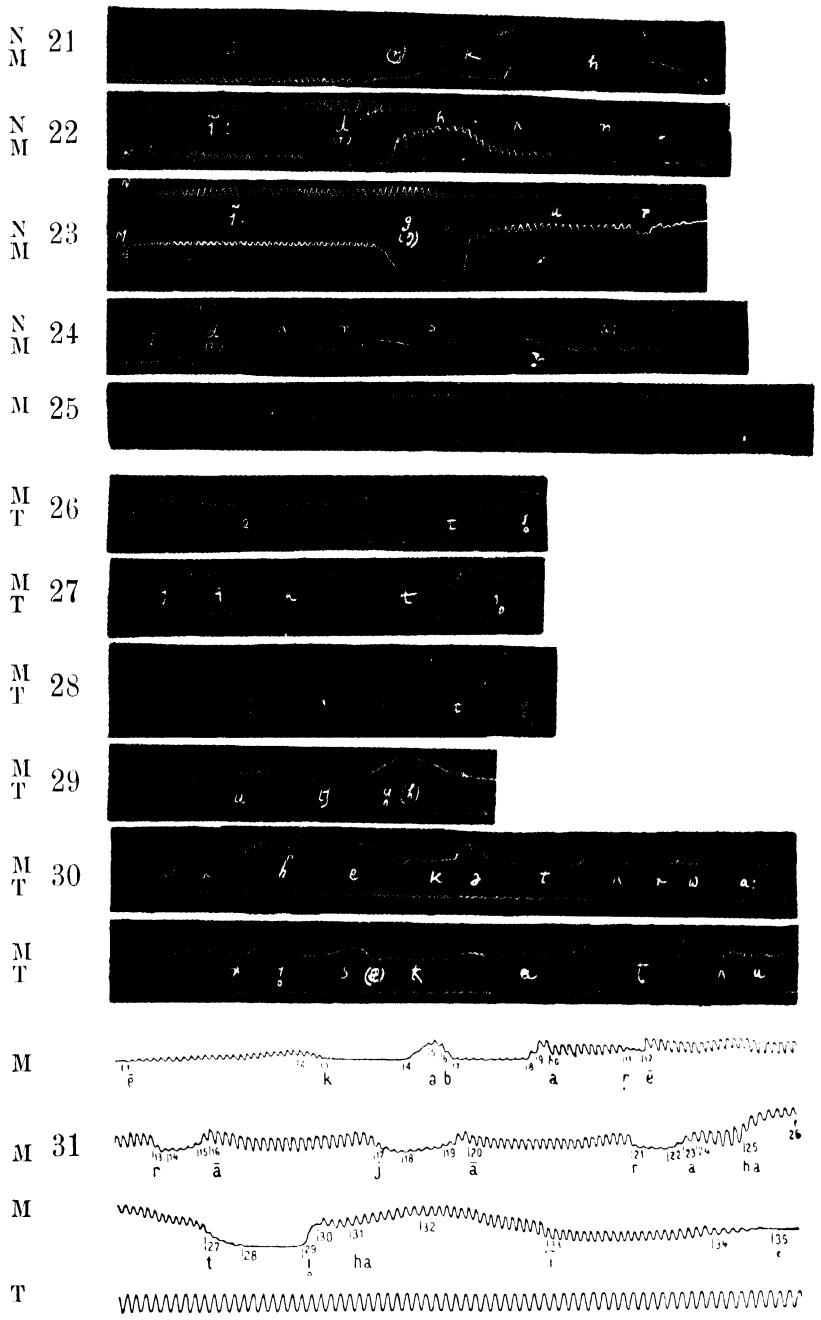
Inscriptions 1—10

M = Mouth
T = Time
N = Nose

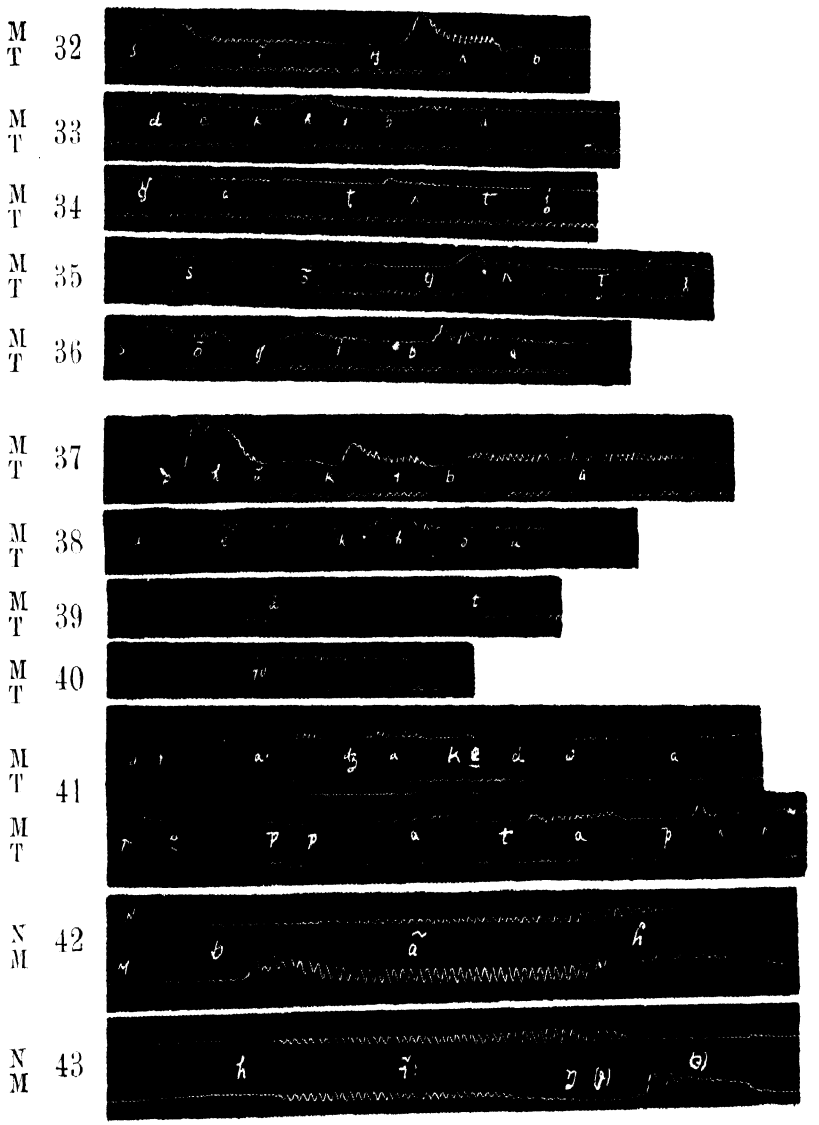


INSCRIPTIONS 11—20




N M 21
N M 22
N M 23
N M 24
M 25
M T 26
M T 27
M T 28
M T 29
M T 30
M T
M
M 31
M
T
ë k a b a r ë
r ā j ā r a ha
t ha

INSCRIPTIONS 32--43



PART II

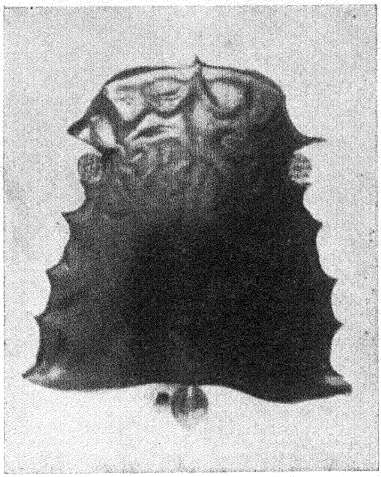
HISTORICAL GRAMMAR OF AWADHI

PALATOGRAMS

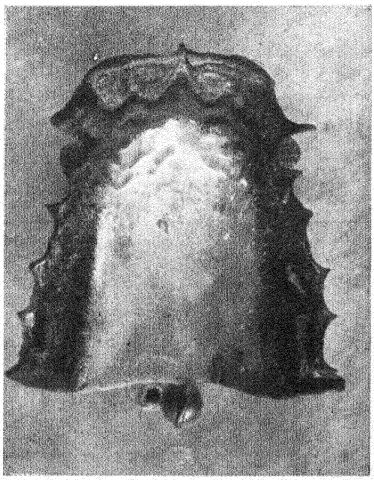
NOTE.—For the convenience of the study, it is proper to divide the palate into parts :—

1. the teeth (dental region)
2. the gums (alveolar region)
3. the rough back above the gums (palate)
4. the smooth back above the rough back (palate where retroflexion is made)
5. the highest portion of the smooth palate (almost where it meets the soft palate—where the so-called velars make a contact).

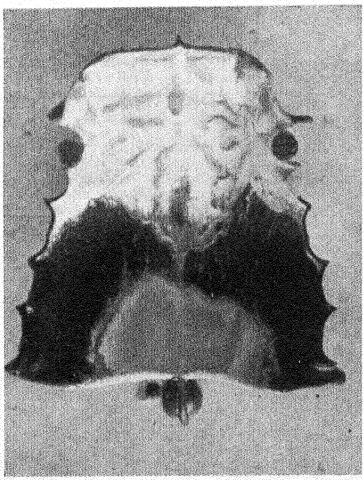
PALATOGRAMS 1—3



1

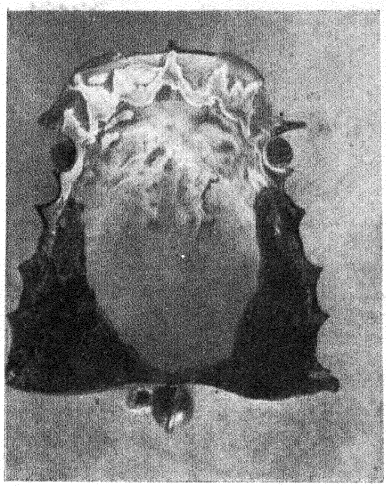


2 t

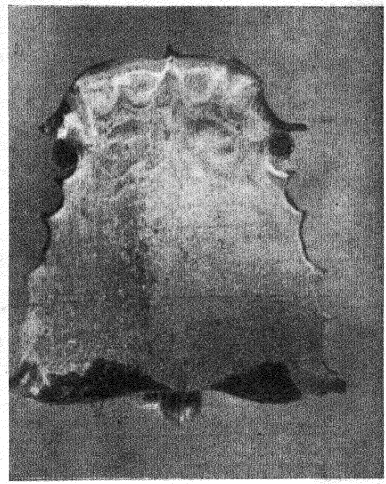


t

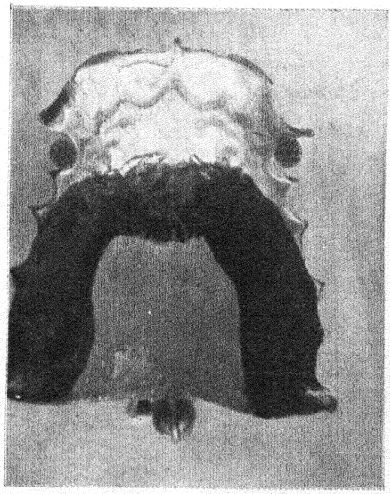
PALATOGRAMS 4—7.



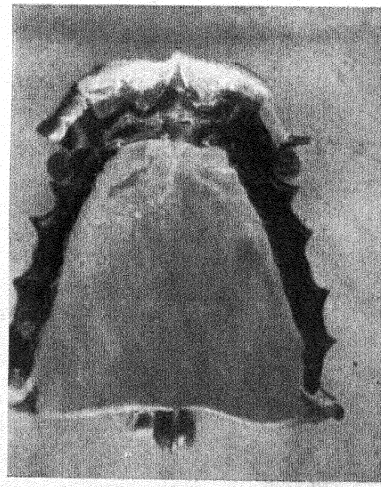
4 **ki**



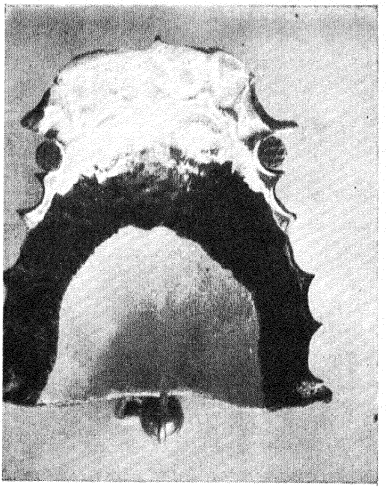
ku 5



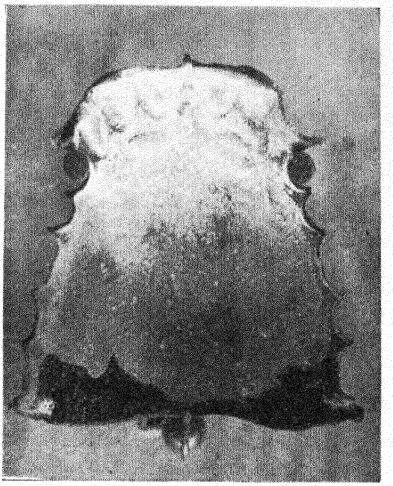
6 **c**



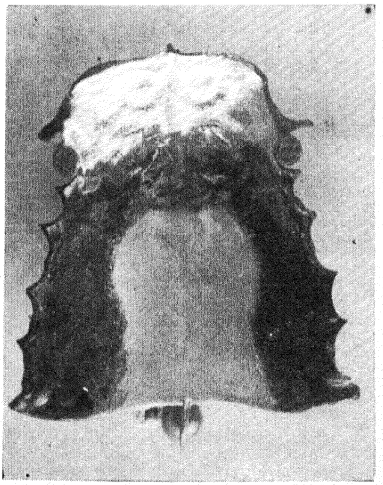
nə 7



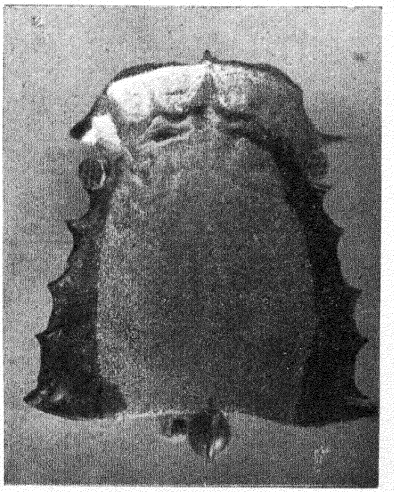
8 ʌɳɖaː



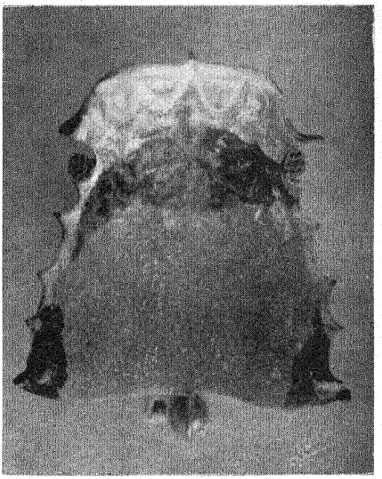
ʌŋgaː 9



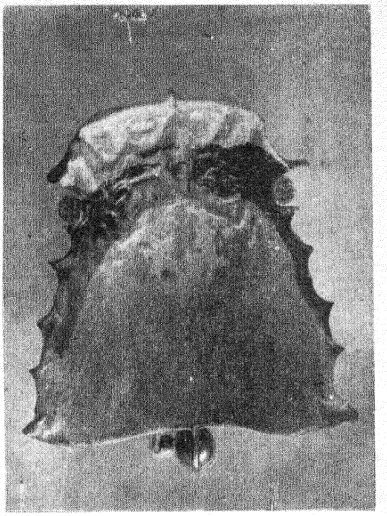
10 ʌɲcaː



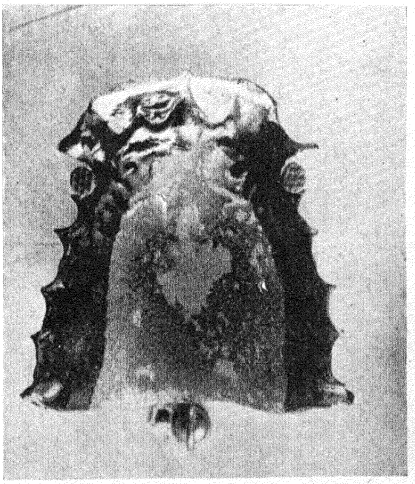
r 11



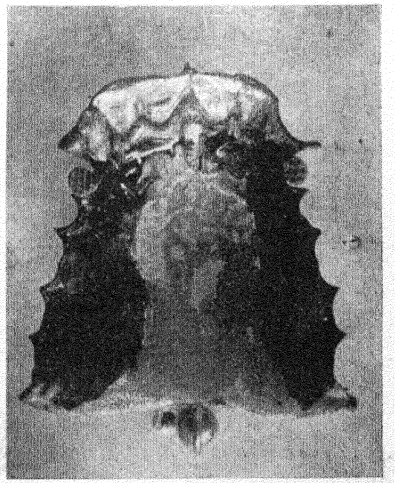
12 r



l 13



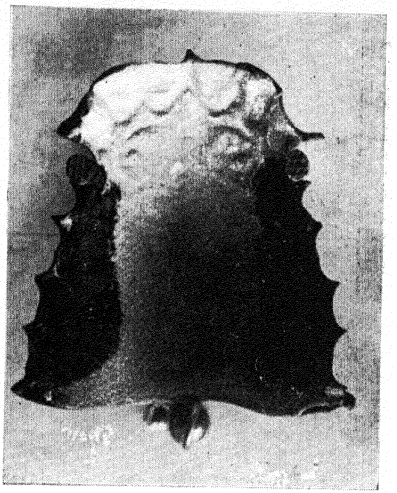
14 s



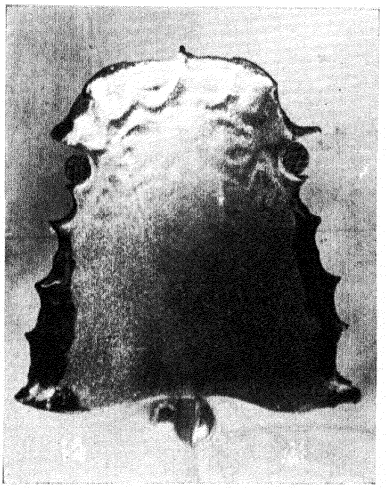
j 15



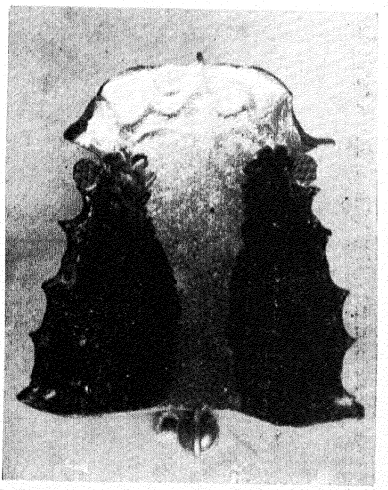
16 iː



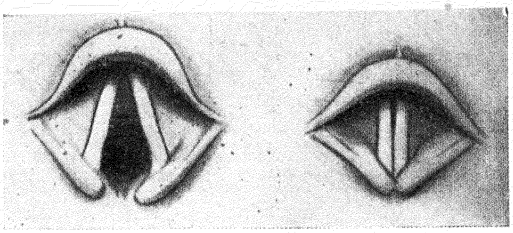
i 17



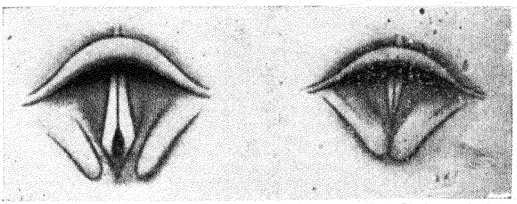
18 eː



ĩː 19

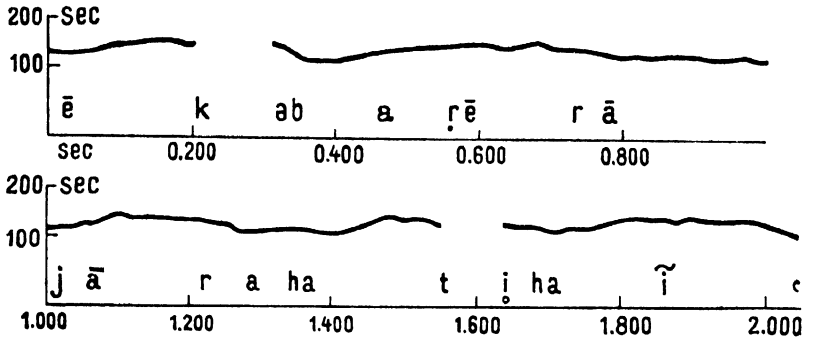


(*a*) breath (*b*) voice

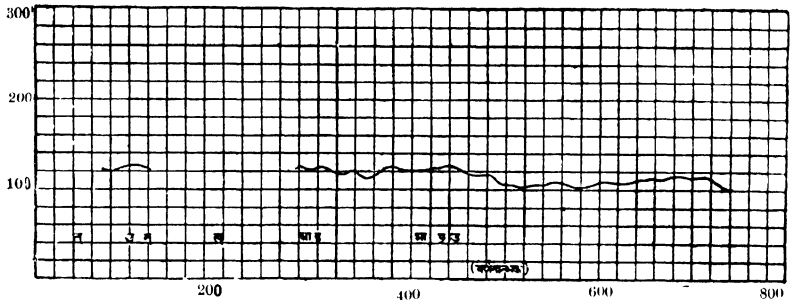


(*c*) whisper (*d*) closed glottis

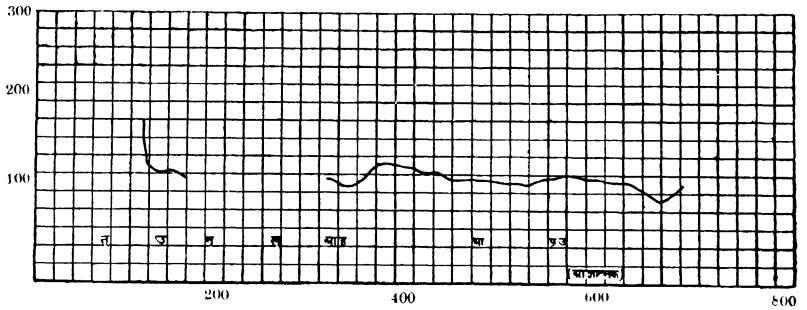
CHART 1


200
sec
100
ē k əb a r̤ē r ā
sec 0.200 0.400 0.600 0.800
200
sec
100
j ā r a ha t i̤ ha ĩ
1.000 1.200 1.400 1.600 1.800 2.000

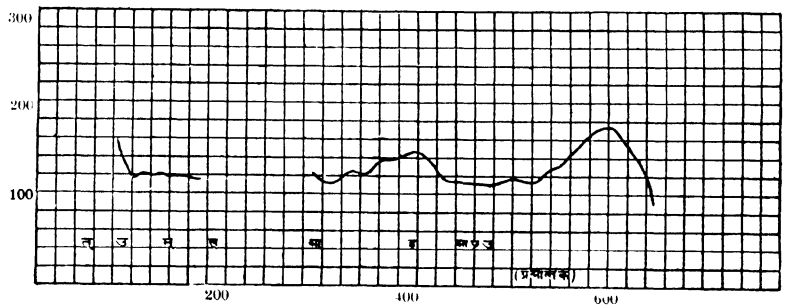
1


300
200
100
200
400
600
800

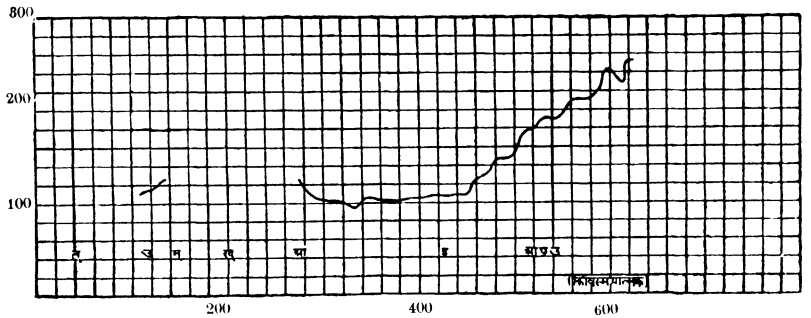
2


300
200
100
200
400
600
800

3


300
200
100
200
400
600

4


800
200
100
200
400
600

CHAPTER I

Nouns

Stem

A. Early Awadhi

§ 165. Nouns in Early Awadhi ended in *-a*, *ā*, *i*, *ī*, *u* or *ū*. For instance :

-a *ghōra* 'horse', *nakhata* 'star', *maccha* 'fish', *ārana* 'forest', *tāra* 'palm-tree', *sāuja* 'beasts'; *bhūkha* 'hunger', *ūkha* 'sugar-cane' . . . . Jāyasī.
ghara 'house', *mana* 'mind', *hiya* 'heart'; *avadha* 'Ayodhyā', *sikha* 'advice', *bājana* 'musical instruments', *kāja* 'work' . . . . Tulsī.
khambha 'pillar', *bakhāna* 'description', *acarja* 'wonder', *jībha* 'tongue'. *kharihāna* 'granary', *bhaũha* 'eyebrow', *gāṭha* 'knot', *jara* 'root', *rāta* 'night' . . . . . Nūr Muhd.

-ā *gilāvā*, 'clay', *lōbā* 'fox', *cāṭā* 'ant', *kũvā* 'well', *dhandhā* 'work', *tarunāpā* 'youth' . . Jāyasī.
badhāvā 'congratulatory concert', *batiyā* 'bud', *dōhā* 'couplet' . . . . . Tulsī.
cēlā 'disciple', *hiyā* 'heart', *citērā* 'painter', *paṭavā* 'braider' . . . . . Nūr Muhd.

-i *jari* 'root', *bhuī* 'earth', *sihiṭi* 'Nature', Universe', *raini* 'night', *mahari* 'milk-maid bird' . . . . . Jāyasī.
savati 'co-wife', *sudhi* 'recollection', *bhui* 'Earth', *gāi* 'cow' . . . . . Tulsī.
gāi (*gāya*), 'cow', *budhi* 'wisdom', *sudhi* 'recollection', *guli* 'ball' . . . . . Nūr Muhd.

-ī *dharatī* 'Earth', *daī* 'creator', *mākhī* 'fly', *cāṭī* 'ant', *bāvarī* 'big well', *mūṭhī* 'handful', *macharī* 'fish' . . . . . Jāyasī.

mahatārī 'mother', *athāī* 'meeting-place', *kahānī* 'tale' . . . . . Tulsī.
bārī 'garden', *bovāī* 'sowing', *darabānī* 'stewardship' . . . . . Nūr Muhd.

-u *sīu* 'coolness', *mīcu* 'death', *bīju* 'lightning', *kādau* 'mud' . . . . . Jāyasī.
rāu 'king', *gālu* 'cheek', *subhāu* 'nature', *paseu* 'sweat' . . . . . Tulsī.
gīu 'neck', *ṭhāū* 'place', *nāū* 'name', *pīu* 'husband' . . . . . Nūr Muhd.

-ū *nĭbū* 'lemon', *baṭāū* 'traveller' . . . Jāyasī.
nāū 'barber', *baṭāū* 'traveller'. . . . Tulsī.
pahārū 'watchmen', *ḍiṭhiyārū* 'one who has eyes' . . . . . Nūr Muhd.

NOTE—1. A few nouns in Tulsīdās and Nūr Muhammad end -in *ō* (*e.g. hiyō, cērō* in T.) but they are, to be sure, borrowings from Braj.

NOTE.—2. The quantity of final vowels is very unstable in these texts and it changes for the exigencies of metre. A noun which otherwise ends in a long vowel (*e.g., rānī, cērī*) becomes short (*rāni, cēri*) in the lines of metres and a final short vowel becomes long at the end of a line (*e.g. nāū* > *nāū̃, ṭhāū* > *ṭhāū̃, karatāru* > *kartārū*).

NOTE—3. Nouns ending in *-ā* are few and those in *-ū* still fewer. Long and longer forms of the stem (§ 167) are not found in Early Awadhi texts except rarely, *e.g., bhāī* : *bhaiyā* (T), *suā-* : *suaṭā* (J. 109), *bhikhiyā* (J. 486), *akhiāna* (N. 35), *sejiyā* (N. 38).

NOTE—4. The texts agree with respect to the use of number and gender with modern Awadhi (see below §§ 170—176).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 166. A noun (stem) may end either in a vowel or in a consonant, *e.g.*, **diaɪ** 'lamp', **nĭɪd** 'sleep'.

(*a*) The final vowels generally are **-aɪ, -i (ị), -iɪ -u, -uɪ.** For instance:

-aɪ **kuā̃ɪ** 'well', **khʌṭijaɪ** 'bedstead'.

-i(i̯) **seɪʈhi̯** 'banker', **gaɪi** 'cow', **raɪʝi̯** kingdom,' **ãɪkhi̯** 'eye', **ʝʌi** 'victory', **bʌjaɪri̯** 'wind'.

-iɪ **thʌbʌiɪ** 'mason', **dɦoɪbiɪ** 'washerman', **nʌdɪiɪ** 'river', **paɪniɪ** 'water'.

-u ũ **ghiu** 'clarified butter', **ʝiu** 'life', **gÃu** 'chance', **bɦaɪu** 'rate', **dʌɦiu** 'curds', **nãɪũ** 'name', **gãɪũ** 'village', **dãɪũ** 'chance', **ãɪũ** 'mucus', **naɪu** 'boat'.

-uɪ **naɪuɪ** 'barber', **nʌinuɪ** 'butter', **baɪruɪ** 'sand', **guɪ** 'excreta'.

NOTE.—Rarely -**eɪ**, **pãɪʈeɪ** 'a class of Brahmins'.

(*b*) The Final consonant may be one of those which can appear finally in a word (see Part I, Chapter I). For instance :

-k **sãɪk** 'breath', **noɪk** 'point'

-kh **bɦuɪkh** 'hunger', **saɪkh** 'credit'

-g **sĩɪg** 'horn', **mũɪg** 'a kind of pulse'

-gɦ **gɦaɪgɦ** 'very clever'

-c **kãɪc** 'glass', **ãɪc** 'flame'

-ch **kõɪch** 'the skirt on the lap'.

-ʝ **laɪʝ** 'shame' **seɪʝ** 'bed'

-ʝɦ **ʝɦãɪʝɦ** 'cymbal', **sãɪʝɦ** 'evening'

-ʈ **peɪʈ** 'belly', **bɦaɪʈ** 'bard'

-ʈh **ʈhaɪʈh** 'pomp', **hõɪʈh** 'lip'

-ɖ **lʌɳɖ** 'penis'

-ɖɦ **thʌɳɖɦ** 'cold'

-ɽ- **hãɪɽ** 'bone', **sãɪɽ** 'bull'

-ɽɦ **baɪɽɦ** 'flood'

-t **kheɪt** 'field', **bɦaɪt** 'cooked rice'

-th **hãɪth** 'hand', **naɪth** 'the noose put in the nostrils of bullocks'

-d **nĩɪd** 'sleep', **tõɪd** 'protruding belly'

-dɦ **kãɪdɦ** 'shoulder', **baɪdɦ** 'string'

-n **kaɪn** 'ear', **soɪn** 'gold'

-p	**naɪp** 'measurement', **sə̃ɪp** 'snake'
-ph	**baɪph** 'vapour'
-b	**bʌib** 'a kind of grass', **raɪb** 'wet molasses'
-bɦ	**jiɪbɦ** 'tongue'
-m	**kaɪm** 'work', **moɪm** 'wax'
-r	**saɪr** 'wife's brother', **haɪr** 'defeat'
-rɦ	**riɪrɦ** 'spinal cord'
-l	**meɪl** 'union', **caɪl** 'trick'
-lɦ	**maɪlɦ** 'a string connecting the spindle with the spinning wheel'
-s	**bə̃ɪs** 'bamboo', **sə̃ɪs** 'breath'
-ɦ	**bə̃ɪɦ** 'arm', **raɪɦ** 'way', **nʌɦ** 'nail'

Forms of the Stem

§ 167. In Awadhi, nouns generally have two forms: one short and the other long, *e.g.*, **nʌdɪiɪ : nʌdijaɪ, gɦoɪɽaɪ: gɦoɪɽʌwaɪ, naɪuɪ : nʌuaɪ, naɪuni̯ : nʌunijaɪ, kʌɦaɪr : kʌɦʌrʌwaɪ.** Some nouns have only what seems to be the long form, *e.g.*, **bilʌijaɪ** Cf. Hin. **bilɪiɪ, ɖebijaɪ** Cf. Hin. **ɖibɪiɪ.**

(*a*) Of the dialects, Lmp., S., L., U., F., and Br.[1] generally use the short forms. The long is used only familiarly and sometimes has a tinge of inferiority or contempt. It is never used of superiors but only of inferiors and the younger.

(*b*) Fy. and Sl., the two most eastern dialects, have a third form—longer (also called redundant)—of the stem, *e.g.*,

[1] Lakhimpur (Lmp.), Sitapur (S.), Lucknow (L.), Unao (U.), Fatehpur (F.), Bahraich (B.), Barabanki (Br.), Rae Bareli (R.), Gonda (G.), Fyzabad (Fy.), Sultanpur (Sl.), Partabgarh (P.), Allahabad (A.), Baghēlī (Bgh.)

Of these Lmp., S., L., U., and F. are western dialects, B., Br., and R. are Central dialects and G., Fy., Sl., P. and A. are Eastern dialects (see the map).

kutɪaɪ (short) : **kutʌwaɪ** (long), **kutʌunaɪ** (longer). They do not use the short form (except when a noun is used to denote a class, *e.g.*, **gflozɽʌkẹ̊ kɜ̃ɪdflɛɪpʌi baɪr hoɪt** Fy. 'the horse has mane on his neck'), but use the long very generally and occasionally employ the longer.

§ 168. To form the corresponding long, **-waɪ** is added to the masculine short stem if it ends in **-aɪ** (*e.g.*, **kutɪaɪ** : **kutʌwaɪ**), **-ũ** (*e.g.*, **nɜ̃ɪũ** : **nʌ̃ũwaɪ**) or **-uɪ** (*e.g.*, **naɪuɪ** : **nʌuwaɪ**) the vowel (together with the preceding consonant) being shortened before the termination and **-ʌwaɪ** if it ends in **-iɪ** or a consonant (*e.g.*, **dflozbiɪ** : **dflobiʌwaɪ**, **pɛɪɽ**, **peɽʌwaɪ**). To a feminine short stem **-iaɪ** is added if it ends in a consonant (*e.g.*, **sɜ̃ɪk** : **sʌ̃kiaɪ**), or **aɪ** if it ends in **-i** (**i̥**) or **iɪ** (**gaɪi** : **gʌiaɪ**, **raɪɟi̥** : **rʌɟiaɪ**, **nʌdɪiɪ** : **nʌdiaɪ**) the whispered vowel becoming full and **-iɪ** being shortened before the termination. If it ends in **-aɪ**, **-iaɪ** is substituted for the final vowel (*e.g.*, **buɪɽflaɪ** : **buɽfliaɪ**).

(*a*) The Eastern dialects add **-naɪ** after masculine short stem ending in **-aɪ** or in **-u** (*e.g.*, **kũɜ̃ɪ** ; **kũʌnaɪ**, **suaɪ** : **suʌnaɪ**, **sukhdeɪu** : **sukhdeunaɪ**). These do not have the 'longer' form.

(*b*) The longer form is arrived at by adding **-waɪ** to feminine long forms (*e.g.*, **kutijaɪ** : **kutijʌwaɪ**) and substituting **-unaɪ** for **-waɪ** of masculine long forms (*e.g.*, **ghoɽʌwaɪ** : **gfloɽʌunaɪ**).

§ 169. Modern Awadhi possesses a respectful long or longer form also, *e.g.*, **seɾʌwaɪ** : **seɾʌuɪ**, **kutʌunaɪ** : **kutʌunuɪ**, **kutiaɪ** : **kutiʌuɪ**, **gfloɽiʌwaɪ** : **gfloɽiʌuɪ**, This is made by substituting **-uɪ** for the **-aɪ** and **-waɪ** of the masculine long and masc. and fem. longer forms and by adding **-uɪ** to the feminine long forms (shortening **-aɪ** to **-ʌ** before the terminations).

That this form is respectful is shown by the plural verb

e.g., **serʌwaɪ aɪwaɪ, serʌuɪ aɪjeɪ ; gflo˞iʌwaɪ gʌi, gflo˞iʌuɪ gʌ̃ĩɪ.**

NOTE.—The respectful form of long stems is sometimes found in tales and is particularly applied to powerful and big animals like lions and camels. Otherwise its use is rare.

Gender

§ 170. A noun in Awadhi is either masculine or feminine irrespective of the fact whether it denotes an animate or inanimate object. Bases ending in **-i** (**i̯**) are generally of feminine gender (**seɪ˞thi̯** 'banker' m.) while those ending in **-u** and **-eɪ** are of masculine gender. Those which end in **-aɪ** are generally masculine (**buɪ˞flaɪ** 'old woman' fem.), but most of such as end in **-iaɪ** are feminine. Similarly **-uɪ** bases are generally masculine while those in **-iɪ** are feminine. But such **-iɪ** bases as denote an agent are masculine, *e.g.*, **maɪliɪ, dfloɪbiɪ.** Consonantal bases are found under either gender.

(*a*) The gender of nouns is indicated by the masculine or feminine form of the verb that they take *e.g.*, **gflʌrṵ ɟʌri̯ gaɪ** 'the house got burnt', **kitaɪb ɟʌri̯ gʌi** 'the book was burnt', the first is masculine while the second feminine. It is also indicated by the agreement of the adjective: *e.g.*, **bʌ˞raɪ ʌdəmiɪ** 'a tall man', **bʌ˞riɪ mefiʌruaɪ** 'a tall woman'.

§ 171. Nouns which denote animate beings take their gender according to the sex that they denote, males being denoted by the masculine gender and the females by the feminine gender. For instance: **mʌnʌiɪ** 'man', **hʌnɪaɪ** 'deer', **bʌrdfiu** 'bullock', **kʌbutɪʌr** 'pigeon', are masculine, while **mefiruaɪ** 'woman', **hʌnɪiɪ** 'deer (she)', **gaɪi** 'cow', **kʌbutʌriɪ** 'pigeon (she)' are feminine.

(*a*) Some nouns, however, are either masculine only or feminine only irrespective of the sex that they denote

e.g., **suaɪ** 'parrot', **sə̃ɪp** 'serpent', **neuraɪ** 'mungoose', are always used in the masculine gender while **mʌinaɪ** 'magpie', **cirʌijaɪ** 'bird', **chʌpkijaɪ** 'lizard' are always feminine. These are cases where the speaker is either unable to observe the sex or does not care to do so.

(*b*) Nouns denoting a collection of living beings may be either feminine or masculine, *e.g.*, **bʃiɪr** 'rush of men' (fem.), **ɟʌmaɪu** 'collection' (masc.), **sʌwaɪriɪ** 'passenger' (fem.)

(*c*) Where living beings of either sex are to be described together, the masculine noun is used *e.g.*, **lʌrikaɪ khɛɪlʌtɨ̥ hʌ̃ĩ** 'the boys (for boys and girls) are playing', **hʌnɪaɪ bʃiaɪgɪe** 'the deer fled away', **mɛɪlʌm bʌʃlut ʌdɔmiɪ rʌʃiʌ̃ĩ** 'there were many men (for men and women) in the fair'.

§ 172. Masculine nouns which denote living beings generally form the corresponding feminine by adding terminations.

(A) Nouns ending in **-aɪ** substitute:

(*a*) **-iɪ** for **-aɪ** *e.g.*, **bʌkɔraɪ** 'he-goat', **bʌkɔriɪ** 'she-goat'

(*b*) **-inɨ̥** for **-aɪ**, *e.g.*, **bʌnijaɪ** 'grocer', **bʌninɨ̥** 'grocer's wife'

(*c*) **-iniɪ** for **-aɪ**, *e.g.*, **lʌrikaɪ** 'boy', **lʌrikiniɪ** 'girl'

(*d*) **-ijaɪ** for **-ʌwaɪ**, *e.g.*, **bʌchʌwaɪ** 'cow's male calf', **bʌchijaɪ** 'female calf', **buɽʃiʌwaɪ** 'old man', **buɽʃiijaɪ** 'old woman', or add (*e*)**-inɨ̥** *e.g.*, **laɪlaɪ** 'a term of respect for a Kayasth', **lʌlaɪinɨ̥** 'his wife'.

(B) Nouns ending in **-iɪ** substitute **-inɨ̥** for **-iɪ** *e.g.*, **maɪliɪ** 'gardener', **maɪlinɨ̥** 'gardener's wife', or **-iniɪ** *e.g.*, **hə̃ɪthiɪ** 'elephant', **hʌthiniɪ** 'she-elephant'.

Nouns ending in **-uɪ** either substitute **-unɨ̥** for **uɪ**, *e.g.*, **naɪuɪ** 'barber', **naɪunɨ̥** or **-inɨ̥** 'barber's wife', **saɪdʃiuɪ** 'saint', **saɪdʃiinɨ̥** 'female saint', or add **-aɪinɨ̥** *e.g.*, **guruɪ** 'preceptor', **guruaɪinɨ̥** 'preceptor's wife'.

The feminine of nouns ending in **-ɛɪ** is formed by substituting **-ɑɪzinị̊** for **ɛɪ**, **pɑ̃ɪɽɛɪ**, **pʌɽɑɪzinị̊**.[1]

(C) Nouns ending in consonants add:

(*a*) **-i**, *e.g.*, **suʌr** 'hog (male)', **soɪrir** < **suʌrir**

(*b*) **-ɑɪnir**, *e.g.*, **ɟeɽh** 'elder to husband', **ɟeɽhɑɪnir** 'his wife'

(*c*) **-ɑɪzinị̊**, *e.g.*, **pʌɳɖit** : **pʌɳɖitɑɪzinị̊**

(*d*) **-inị̊**, *e.g.*, **sonɑɪr** 'goldsmith', **sonɑɪrinị̊**

(D) Some feminine nouns form the corresponding masculine by adding terminations, *e.g.*, **mʌusir** 'mother's sister', **mʌusiɑɪ** 'mother's sister's husband'.

§ 173. Some nouns which denote inanimate objects form the feminine by adding terminations. The feminine in such cases always indicates a smaller thing, *e.g.*, **rʌsɪɑɪ** 'a big rope' : **rʌsɪir** 'a smaller rope', **guɽʌwʌɪ** 'a doll' : **guɽijɑɪ** 'a smaller doll', **gʌgʌrɑɪ** 'a jar', **gʌgʌrir** 'a small jar'.

§ 174. The dialects of other districts closely agree with Lakhimpuri in forming feminine bases. The terminations are the same. Fy. and R., however, substitute **-i** for **-ir** termination added to consonantal bases, *e.g.*, **suʌr : suʌri, kukur : kukuri.** The final **-ị̊** of feminine forms is sometimes audible and sometimes not. For instance: Fy. records **lʌlɑɪzin** and **koβɑɪrinị̊** both.

(*a*) Sl. gives an example of a new masculine formed from the feminine : **bhʌɽhijɑɪrinị̊** 'landlady, innkeeper' thence **bβʌɽhijɑɪren** 'landlady's husband'. The corresponding Hindustani word is **bβʌɽhijɑɪrɑɪ.**

(*b*) Some nouns are used in one gender in one dialect and in another in the other, *e.g.*, **ɑɪlur** is masculine in Lmp. while it is feminine in P., **bʌrs (bʌrʌs)** and **gə̃ɪd** are masculine in Lmp. while feminine in R., **buɪtɑɪ** 'strength' masculine in Fy. while **buɪt** 'strength' feminine in Lmp.

---

[1] For shortening of the first syllable see Part I § 133.

Number

§ 175. There are two numbers: Singular and Plural. The singular is employed to denote one and the plural to denote more than one.

The plural is generally used to denote one also when respect is to be shown, *e.g.*, **raɪjaɪ aɪjeɪ** 'the king has come'; the verb shows that the noun is plural, **eɪk jʌneɪ aɪeɪ hɑ̃ĩ** 'one person has arrived' is respectful as compared to **eɪkụ jʌnaɪ aɪwaɪ hʌi.**

§ 176. Words indicating classes of people add **pʌɲc** (after pronouns generally) and **loɪg** (after nouns) to form periphrastic plurals, *e.g.*, **hʌm pʌɲc** 'we people', **wʌkiɪl loɪg** 'the vakils'.

The terminations to form the various cases are added to **pʌɲc** and **loɪg** and not to the preceding substantive, *e.g.*, **kʌfiaɪr loɪgʌn mə, hʌm pʌɲcʌn mə.**

The Eastern dialects which possess a plural form in **-ʌi** do not generally use the periphrastic plurals. The central dialects use them.

NOTE.—The form of **pʌɲc** is **pə̃ɪc** in the East.

C. ORIGIN: STEM, GENDER AND NUMBER

§ 177. (*a*) Masc. nouns in **-aɪ** (Early Aw. *ā*) generally go back to Skt. *-akaḥ* M. I. *-ō* type, *e.g.*, **kūpakaḥ* > **kūao* > **kũaɪ.** The fem. nouns in **-iaɪ** are derived from Skt.; *-ikā* > M. I. *-iā* > Mod. I. *-ī.* Thence Awadhi has a further elongation in **-aɪ.** For instance: **khaṭvikā* > **khaṭṭiā* > *khāṭī*: **khʌʈijaɪ.**

(*b*) Masc. nouns in **-i** (**ị**) should be connected with the Nom. sg. of *-in* stems in Skt., *e.g.*, *śreṣṭhī* > *sēṭhi* > **seɪʈhị.** The fem. nouns

(1) either go back to Skt. stems in *-i*, elongated to *ī* in the Pkts. (*agniḥ* > *aggī*) *e.g.*, *aggī*, > **aɪgị,** *vātāvaliḥ*, > *vāāvalī* > *vāyāalī* > *bayāli* > **bʌjaɪrị**

(2) or are modern substitutes for **j** stems of Hindustani, *e.g.*, *jayō* > *jayu* > **jʌj** > **jɪi**

(3) or are modern forms, *e.g.*, *jari* (N) < *jaṭā* which became *jar* and then *-i* was added as a distinctive feminine ending. Cf. Ar. *khabar* : Aw. **khʌbʌrị**, Early Braj. *khabariyā*.

(*c*) Masc. nouns in *-ī* go back to Skt. *-in* stems elongated to *-ika-* Pkt. *-ia-* whence *-ī*, *e.g.*, *mālin* replaced by **māliō* : *mālia* > **mʌɪlɪɪ**, **pʌɪnɪɪ** < *pānīyaṃ*. Feminine nouns in *-ī* come from elongated *-ikā* stems.

(*d*) Masc. nouns in *-u* in Modern Awadhi go back to Nom. sg. of masc. and neuter bases in *-a* (*grāma*, *dēva*) preceded by a single consonant. The Pkts. would give *-ō*, Ap *-u*. This *-u* has survived (*grāmaḥ* > *gāmō* > **gɑ̃ɪu**), the vocalisation remaining because of the previous vowel. Feminine nouns go back to *-vā* forms **nʌɪu** < *nāvā*.

(*e*) Nouns in **-uɪ** go back to *-ūkō*, *iaō*, *-īaō* (*nāiaō* < *nāpitakaḥ*, *nayanīaō* < *navanītakō*) types if they are masculine and to *-uā* if feminine (**bʌɪruɪ** < *vālukā*).

NOTE.—The one stem in **-eɪ** (only **pɑ̃ɪɽeɪ**) is possibly from a dialect where *-iaō* > **eɪ** ? Or is it connected with *pāṇḍeya* ?

(*f*) Consonantal bases, if masculine, go back to *-a* bases of Skt. which had a consonant before them in M.I. (*e.g.*, *sarpaḥ* > *sappō*. Early Aw. *sāpu* and *sāpa*). The fem. bases are derived from Skt. *-ā* bases (*lajjā* > Early Aw. *lāja* > **lʌɪj**)

NOTE.—Nouns borrowed from other languages such as Persian, English, etc. all come under this scheme.

§ 178. Modern Awadhi is very fond of elongating its noun-stem. Only traces of it can be found in Early Awadhi. This elongation is practically restricted to the old Ardhamāgadhī area, *i.e.*, to the tracts (Kāsī and Kosala) where Ardhamāgadhī was spoken. It is found in proper names only in Bengali, *e.g.*, Hari—Hariyā > **hore** in

standard coll., **ɔoirɛ** in East Bengali; Rāma—*Rāmuā* > **remo**; *Rasika—Rasikiyā* > **roʃke**; *Gopāla—Gopāliyā* > **gopale**, E.B. **gopʌilɛ**, etc., contempt is implied. Cf. also Western Hindi **kʌnɦiʌijaː** 'Krishṇa'.

What can be the reason of this elongation? We find that there was a suffix *-ko* in I. E., we find the suffix *-ka* working to an extent in Sanskrit and to a larger extent in Iranian. In Skt. it indicated the idea of the diminutive generally either in affection or in contempt. This diminutive form was more generally used in M.I. as is evident from the declension. It was probably to give a body to the form of the noun. A similar idea seems to be at the root of elongation in Modern Awadhi.

§ 179. The three genders of OIA have been reduced to two in all NIA except in Gujrātī and Marāṭhī. In OIA inanimate objects also had an animate gender (masculine or feminine) when they were conceived of as animate *e.g.*, *apaḥ* 'waters' as opposed to *vāri* 'water'. Also some animate objects were neuter when conceived of as inanimate, *e.g.*, *kalatram* 'women folk'. The tendency to conceive inanimate objects as animate seems to be at the basis of the loss of neuter in Awadhi and in other Mod. I.A. languages. The influence of the substratum also may be responsible. Meillet suggests that the loss of gender in Armenian may be due to Caucasian substratum. In India, we find that the languages which are nearest Tibeto-Burman (where there is no grammatical gender) have practically lost the distinction of gender.[1] Pischel[2] notes that the passage of neuter to masculine is common in Māgadhī but rare in other Prakrits.

§ 180. As has been noted, nouns denoting male beings in Awadhi are masculine and female ones feminine. So, as

[1] J. Bloch § 180, Chatterji § 483.

[2] § 357.

far as living beings go, the grammatical gender corresponds to the sexes. It is only in cases where the sex is not noted that the gender depends on the form of the noun. For instance:

suaɪ 'parrot', and **mʌinaɪ** 'magpie', are masculine, because most of the nouns ending in **-aɪ** are masculine, while **chʌpkijaɪ** 'lizard' is feminine as nouns endings in **-iaɪ** are generally feminine.

§ 181. The gender of nouns denoting inanimate objects is generally masculine or feminine according as they were masculine or feminine in Sanskrit and M. I. For instance: **baɪt** is fem. < *vārtā* fem., **hãɪth** is masc. < *hastaḥ* masc. But the gender of the predecessor language is retained only if it fits in with the form of the word, otherwise it changes. For instance: **aɪgi̯** (< *agniḥ* masc.) is feminine as it ends in **-i̯** which is a characteristic fem. ending. Similarly **ɟʌi** 'victory' (< *jayaḥ*) is fem. The word for *jambū* is masc. or fem. according to its form (**ɟʌmunaɪ** masc., **ɟʌmuniɪ** fem., **phʌrẽɪdaɪ** masc.).

§ 182. Sanskrit neuter nouns were already passing to masculine in Māgadhī Prakrit and we find in Apabhraṁśa forms such as *phalu, ghiu, dahiu*. These are masculine in Awadhi also. Where the form of a noun is in conflict with the inherited gender, we find a difference in dialects. For instance: **moɪtiɪ** 'pearl' < *mauktikam*—**mottiō* is masculine in Lakhīmpurī and feminine in Fyzābādī. The fem. gender of **ãɪc** 'flame' shows that it became feminine at a stage when it had *-i* with it.

§ 183. The following words are feminine in spite of their form: **naɪu** 'boat', **baɪsu** 'smell', **maɪru** 'beating', **haɪru** 'defeat'. **naɪu** retains its gender (Skt. *nauḥ*, Pāli *nāvā*), **baɪsu** appears to have its gender owing to contamination with **gʌndhi** which is feminine. Contamination with **ɟʌi** 'victory' (fm.), may be responsible for the gender of **haɪru** and **maɪru**.

It may be noted that Hindi abstract nouns are generally feminine, *e.g.*, **kaɾʈ** 'cutting', **ɟiɾt** 'victory'.[1]

§ 184. Loan-words from languages which have a neuter gender for inanimate objects (for instance, English) or have a masculine or feminine gender for them (*e.g.*, Arabic) are generally treated of as masculine or feminine according as the nearest corresponding word in Awadhi is masculine or feminine respectively. For instance: **reɾl** (rail) is feminine, the general word for a vehicle in Awadhi being **laɾɦijaɾ** or **gaɾɽiɾ, kitaɾb** 'book' (Arabic *kitāb*—masculine) is feminine because of **poɾthiɾ** fem., the masc. word **poɾthaɾ** < *pustakam* being reserved for a longish book. Where Awadhi does not possess a corresponding word, the borrowed noun takes its gender according to its form, *e.g.*, **kumeɾʈiɾ** (Eng. Committee) is feminine as nouns in *-ī* are mostly feminine. If Awadhi does not possess a corresponding word, the borrowed word from a language distinguishing neuters as masculine or feminine retains its gender, *e.g.*, **mʌut** 'death' (Ar. *maut* fem.).

§ 185. The formation of feminine nouns from masculine ones retains traces of Sanskrit feminine affixes. Fem. **-iɾ** or **-ijaɾ** for masc. **-aɾ** represents *-ikā* : *akaḥ* type in such pairs as **bʌkəraɾ : bʌkəriɾ , bʌchʌwaɾ : bʌchijaɾ** and *-ikā* : *-aḥ* type in such pairs as **suʌr : soɾriɾ.** For the rest **-nị̄** or **-niɾ** forms the distinctive feminine suffix. For instance: **maɾliɾ : maɾlinị̄** represent *mālikaḥ* : *mālinikā* type. In some feminine forms the final **-iɾ** has been preserved (which shows that they are probably later formations) while in others it has survived as **-ị̄**. This **-ị̄** already is losing ground in some dialects (See § 174).

§ 186. The device of indicating the plural by periphrastic use of the words '**loɾg**' and '**pʌɲc**' is modern and has been brought about by necessity. The noun in the direct generally has no distinction in form for number, but a

[1] I owe this suggestion to Prof. Bloch.

distinction becomes necessary, particularly when a class of beings is to be denoted. Thus we find that the periphrastic plural noun is most used in Western dialects of Awadhi where the noun does not keep any distinction of number. All the dialects use the periphrastic plural for pronouns of the 1st person and 2nd person where **hʌm** and **tum** (or **tũɪ**) are used for both numbers.

loɪg (Skt. *lōka*) 'people', **pʌɲc pãɪc** (Skt. *pañca*) 'people' is generally used for a number of people. It is not used to denote objects. This is an instance of the distinction between animate and inanimate and of the influence of substratum languages.

Case

A. Early Awadhi

§ 187. Like Modern Awadhi, Early Awadhi has two cases of the noun—direct and oblique.

The direct is used generally as

(*a*) the subject, *e.g.*,

rānī utara māna saũ dīnhā 'the queen answered proudly' (J. 140).

cāri mīta kabi Muhamada pāyẽ 'the poet Muhammad found four friends' (J. 31).

kāha na pāvaku ɟāri saku 'what cannot fire burn' (T. 176).

laṣanu ki rahihahī dhāma 'will Lakshmana stay at home?' (T. 176).

sōvai kũara lihaī dhanakōrā 'the prince slept with the beloved' (N. 9).

sugãdha suraṅga puhupa tahã phūlaī 'flowers of good smell and colour were blooming there' (N. 9).

(*b*) the inanimate direct object, *e.g.*,

katahũ pakhaṇḍī kāṭha nacāvā 'at some places the hypocrite (juggler) was putting some wood in circular motion' (J. 59).

pahilai tehi kara nāū lei 'at first having remembered His name' (J. 2).

jaū na rāmu bana jāhī 'If Rāma does not go to the forest' (T. 170).

lāgi dēna sikha 'began to offer advice' (T. 176). *baranaū rājakuāra kī bānī* 'I describe the nature of the Prince' (N. 9).

rūpa kanaka kahū gaṛhaī sonārā 'in some places the goldsmiths were making ornaments of gold and silver' (N. 14).

(*c*) the vocative, *e.g.*,

ē rānī' 'o queen!' (J.)

taba jāyehu bhaiyā! 'O son! then you may go' (T. 178).

mātu 'mother', *hō bhāī* 'O brother!' (N.)

NOTE.—Sometimes the direct is used to indicate the animate object *e.g.*, *savāraū karatārū* 'I bear in mind the Creator' (J. 2), and it comes also as the first member of genitive compounds *e.g.*, *āgamanu-sūcaka ahahī* 'are the indicators of the arrival' (T. 160), *nagaru-banāvā* 'the decoration of the city' (T. 162), or as genitive (*e.g.*, *sarisa kapāsu* 'like the cotton-plant' (T. 3.) or dative, *e.g.*, *nṛpa jubarāju rāma kahū dēhū* 'O king give the viceroyalty to Rāma (T. 158).

§ 188. The oblique is used with or without post-positions. For instance:

(*a*) with post-positions:

Singular—

jaga kahā 'to the world' (J. 17), *uparōhita kahū hari* 'having kidnapped the priest' (T. 74), *sūraja kahā* 'to the sun' (N. 3); *kēli saū* 'with play' (J. 49), *ratana tē* 'with jewel' (T. 15), *hiē tē* 'with heart' (T. 24), *gāya sō* 'with the cow' (N. 9); *gosāī kēra* 'of the lord' (J. 27), *gāḍhē kai sāthī* 'friend in difficulty' (J. 24), *daī kara nāū* 'the name of the Creator' (J. 41.), *bharata kaṛa sammata* 'the approval

of Bharata' (T. 176), *savati kai kathā* 'the tales of co-wives' (T. 164), *cēri kaikei kēri* 'the maid of Kaikēī' (T. 162), *tapī kara ajñā* 'the order of the hermit' (N. 5), *bārī kī nāī* 'in the manner of a garden' (N. 6); *purāna mahã* 'in the Purāṇa' (J. 11), *bhōga mahũ* 'in the enjoyment' (T. 12), *phulavārī mahũ* 'in the garden' (N. 6).

Plural ——

paṅkhinha kahã 'to the birds' (J. 126), *pãḍitanha (kabitanha) saũ bhajā* 'spoke to the Pandits' (J. 33), *pakhurinha kai chātē* 'bands of petals' (J. 48), *purukhanha kai ḍīṭhī* 'glance of men' (J. 254), *lōganha pahī* 'in the nearness of the people' (T.), *sakhina sõ* 'from the friends' (N. 93), *raghubaṁsinha mãha* 'among those of the family of Raghu' (T. 108), *kandaranhi mahu* 'in the caves' (T. 40), *bipranha para* 'on the Brahmins' (T. 92), *adharana para* 'on the lower lips' (N. 49).

(*b*) without postpositions:

Singular—

ãkusa gaja nāvai 'he tames the elephant with the goad' (J. 39), *bhāya nāma japata* 'utters the name with feeling' (T. 16), *hērahī cakhu nārī* 'the women look with the eye' (J. 49), *ārana rahaī* '(they) live in the forest' (J. 4), *baiṭha ahaũ baṭachāhī* 'I am sitting in the shade of the banyan tree' (T. 27), *pūniũ karā* 'digit of the full moon night' (J. 25), *cāṭahī karai* '(He) makes the ant' (J. 9), *uparohitahī dēkha jaba rājā* 'when the king saw the priest' (T. 75), *piyahī rijhāi* 'having pleased the beloved' (N. 9), *maī carita sañchēpahi kahā* 'I described the deeds briefly' (T. 49), *sōnai sājā* 'decked with gold' (J. 67), *purukhahi cāhia ũca hiāũ* 'lofty heart (courage) is necessary for man' (J. 363), *cōrahī rāti na bhāvā* 'the night is not in the liking of the thief' (T. 162), *samudahī pārā* 'across the ocean' (J. 23), *mōtihi jō malīna hō karā* 'if the glow of the pearl becomes dim' (J. 90), *rāmahī ṭīkā* 'the corona-

tion of Rāma' (T. 159), *ãbahi ḍābha na hōi* '(if) there is no blossom in mango' (J. 29), *kuãhi khãḍa bahu mēli* 'having put a great deal of sugar in the well' (J. 52), *mãthai mōrē* 'on my forehead' (J. 89), *gunahi manu rātā* 'the mind was absorbed in merit' (T. 6), *babūrahī phala lāgahī* 'the fruits come on the *babūl* tree' (N.).

Plural—

saṭhanhi rāma-sanmmukha kō karata 'who would have turned the wicked towards Rāma' (T. 284), *nayanahī ḍharahī mōti* 'pearls fall from the eyes' (J. 127), *mukhani kahī nija hōnī* 'narrated their birth with mouths' (T. 4), *adharana hãsī* 'smiled with lips' (N.), *muni bhāinha asīsa dīnhī* 'the sage gave blessing to the brothers' (T. 102), *paṭavana gharabārā* 'in the houses of the braiders' (J. 56), *sacētanha karanī* 'the deeds of the sensible' (T. 40), *sakhinha lāja* 'modesty of friends' (J. 510), *na nayananha ãsū* 'nor a tear in eyes' (J. 242), *jūhī bakucanha lāvā* 'the jasmine flower was planted in plenties' (J. 53), *jhalakā pāyanha jhalakata* 'the blisters shine on the feet' (T. 237), *janaka pīḍhana baiṭhārē* 'Janaka seated them on wooden seats' (T. 142), *mērē hāthana* 'in my hands' (N.).

§ 189. The oblique is also used as the agent of past participle verbs in all the texts. For instance:

rājai sunā 'the king heard' (J. 84)

rājaī putra biāhā 'the king married the son' (N. 7)

pāvā sakhinha 'the friends obtained' (J. 104)

sakhinha kahā 'the friends said' (J. 103)

rājanha sunī 'the kings heard' (J. 83)

siddhanha baḍa mānā 'the great considered (him) to be big' (J. 31)

surana astuti kīnhā 'the gods prayed' (T. 39)

muninha kīrati gāī 'the sages sang the fame' (T. 10)

lōgana jānā 'the people thought' (N.)

sakhina pũchā 'the friends asked' (N.)

sakhiyana pahicānā 'the friends recognised' (N.).

NOTE.—The oblique singular in *-hi*, *-i* is used to indicate the inanimate direct object also in a few instances.

bāsuki jāi patārahī cāpā 'Vāsukī went and got hold of the nether-world' (J. 19), *lajarahi māri uḍāī* 'he turns to pieces the thunderbolt' (J. 9), *banahī sidhāē* 'went to forest' (T. 222).

§ 190. Terminations of Cases

(*a*) *Direct Singular*—The bases ending in *-a* form their direct singular either by substituting *-u* for *-a* or like bases ending in other vowels use the base itself as this case.

(*b*) *Direct Plural*—Bases ending in *-a* have a direct plural case in *-ē* (*e.g.*, *tārā* : *tārē*, *chātā* : *chātē* *sapanā* : *sapanē*) and the feminine bases ending in *-a* have a plural in *-ī* (*asīsa* : *asīsaī*, *bhaũha* : *bhaũhaī* (J. 86), *bāṭa* : *bāṭaī* (J. 110), *mūrata* : *mūrataī* (N.). Otherwise the base itself is used as this case.

Traces of *-i* ending for *-a* bases [corresponding to Eastern Awadhi *-ai* 'see § 197 (*b*)] are found in J. *saba rupavantai mukha jōhahī* 'all those who have forms look up to the face', (p. 29), *sapata dīpa kē barai onāhī* 'the birdegrooms of all the seven Dvīpas come up' (J. 83), *āgai saguna saguniai tākā* 'those who knew the omens saw the omens in front' (J. 265).

(*c*) *Oblique singular*—the most common form of this is the base. There are two other forms:

1. ending in *-hi*, *-hī*, *-i* *-ī* (shortening the preceding vowel if it is long) for all bases,
2. ending in *-ē* for bases in *-a* and *-ā*.

(*d*) *Oblique plural*—this ends in *-nha*, *-nhā*, *-na*, *-nhi*, *-nhī*, *-ni*. The termination *-nha*, *-nhā* is common in Jāyasī and Tulsī, while *-na* in Nūr Muhammad.

Those in *-nhi*, *-nhɪ̃*, *-ni* are rare and are found in Tulsī only.

§ 191. I have taken statistics of the forms of the oblique case in the first five hundred lines of each of the three texts. The results are shown below.

(*a*) Jāyasī

Obl. sg.—there are 30 cases of obl. sg. (excepting the base form used as such) of which 22 end in *-hi*, 4 in *-hɪ̃*, 3 in *-i* and 1 in *-hã*. The last case (*ēkai nayanāhã* 'by one eye only' p. 29) has *-ã* for *-i* or *ɪ̃* (which is expected) probably for the sake of rhyme in the second half of the line (*māhã*).

obl. pl.—there are 18 cases of obl. pl. of which 13 end in *-nha*, 4 in *-na* and 1 in *-nhi*. The last case is :

janaũ sabhā deotanhi kai jũrī, p. 55 'as if an assembly of the gods had assembled'. Here it appears that the feminine gender of the word *sabhā* has affected the form of *deotanhi* (expected *deotanha*).

(*b*) Tulsī

Obl. sg.—there are 20 cases of obl. sg. (excepting the base form used as such) of which 9 end in *-hi* and 11 in *-hɪ̃*.

Obl. pl.—of the 6 cases 4 end in *-nha* and 2 in *-ni*.

The latter are the cases where the connected feminine words appear to have influenced the form of the oblique, *e.g.*, *nija nija mukhani kahī nija hōnī*, p. 4 'have described their birth by their own mouths'—here *hōnī* is feminine ; *sabarī gīdha susēvakani sugati dīnhi raghunātha*, p. 15 'the Lord of the Raghus gave bliss to his good servants the S'abara woman and the vulture'—here *sugati* is feminine.

But in one case *muninha prathama harikīrati gāī*, p. 10 'the hermits first sang the fame of Hari' the feminine gender of *kīrati* has not affected the form of the oblique.

Also in the following cases of *-i* forms no contamination of any feminine noun is present :

karakamalani 'lotus-hands' p. 202, *sīsani* 'on the heads' p. 202, *nija āsramani* 'in their hermitages' p. 210,

sabanhi 'all', p. 210, *sēvakani* 'to the servants' p. 230, *nayanani* 'with eyes', p. 239, *kōlanhi* 'the *kōls*', p. 245, *-sīkani* 'with drops', p. 247 and *saṭhanhi* 'the rogues', p. 284.

(*c*) Nūr Muhammad—

obl. sg.—There are 30 cases of obl. sg. (excepting the base form used as such) of which 5 end in *-hi*, 4 in *-hɪ̄*, 1 in *-i*, 7 in *-ɪ̄*, 1 in *-ẽ* and 12 in *-ɛ̃*.

obl. pl.—There are 12 cases all of which end in *-na*. We thus see that Nūr Muhammad comes very near the practice of Modern Awadhi in dispensing with the *-h-* of the termination.

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 192. There are two cases : direct and oblique.

The direct is used to denote (*a*) the subject (*b*) the inanimate direct object and (*c*) the vocative. For instance :

(*a*) **kutʌwaɪ mʌrị gaɪ** 'the dog died', **kutʌwaɪ mʌri geɪ** 'the dogs died', **gaɪi ʄaɪtị hʌi** 'the cow is going', **gaɪiɪ ʄaɪtiɪ haĩ** 'the cows are going'

(*b*) **gɦʌrɳ no baɪrʌu** 'do not burn the house', **gɦʌr no ʄaɪrʌu** 'do not burn the houses'; **ãɪkhị dɦoɪi ɖaɪrau** 'wash the eye', **ãɪkhiɪ dɦoɪi ɖaɪrau** 'wash the eyes'

(*c*) **lʌrikʌwaɪ reɪ** 'O boy'.

§ 193. The direct is used to denote an animate object in the case of the following verbs :

1. 'to milk'—*e.g.*, **gaɪi** (or) **gaɪiɪ dugʌu** 'milk the cow (or) cows'.
2. 'to beg for'—*e.g.*, **raɪʄʌ sę bɦʌĩsị** (or) **bɦʌĩsiɪ mãɪgeu** 'did you beg for the buffalo (or) buffaloes from the king?'
3. 'to take'—*e.g.*, **tum gʌiaɪ leɪu mʌĩ bɦʌĩsiɪ** 'you take the cow, and I the buffaloes'.
4. 'to bring'—*e.g.*, **mʌʄuɪr laɪeu?** 'did you bring the labourers?'
5. 'to give'—*e.g.*, **hʌm kaɪ caɪrị ʌdəmiɪ deɪu** 'give me four men'.

6. 'to steal'—*e.g.*, **ux chʌgoriz corazwʌtį̊ rʌfiʌi** 'he was stealing some goats'.
7. 'to stake, to win or to lose a wager'—*e.g.*, **ux ʌpʌnį̊ moſiʌruaz dɛ̃zupo dſiʌrti hʌi** 'he stakes his wife' **jo hʌm bſiʌĩsiz hazriz** 'if I lose the buffaloes', **tʌu tum gaziz jizʈʌu** 'then you win the cows'.
8. 'to capture'—*e.g.*, **gſiozʈaz pʌkʌrti hʌi** 'he catches the horses', **ux ghoʈʌwaz dſiʌe liſiesį̊** 'he caught hold of the horse'.
9. 'to kill as game'—*e.g.*, **ux mʌchoriz mazrti hʌi** 'he catches the fish'.
10. 'to eat as meat'—*e.g.*, **ux bʌkoraz khazt̪į̊ hʌi** 'he eats goat.'

§ 194. The oblique is used with the various post-positions. For instance:

(*a*) the singular
with **ko** (accusative)
tum ʌponez larikʌ ko mazreu 'you beat your son',
with **se** (instrumental)
mʌĩ ɖʌɳɖʌ sę̊ mazreũ 'I beat *with* the stick',
with **ko** (dative)
ux mãgʌtʌ ko khazi ko diſiſį̊ 'he gave *to* the beggar something to eat',
with **se** (ablative)
birʌwʌ sę̊ paztaz girez 'the leaves fell *from* the tree',
with **ki** (genitive)
razm ki lʌũʈiaz marį̊ gʌi 'Rām's daughter died'.
with **mo** (locative)
ʌmkhorʌwʌ mo duzdſiu̯ naziz hʌi 'there is no milk *in* the cup'.

(*b*) the plural
with **ko** (accusative)

ui ʌpənɛr lʌrikʌn kə khɛrdi̯ difiini̯ fiʌi 'he has turned out his sons'.
with **sɛ** (instrumental)
phurlʌn sɛ̯ bʌgiar mʌfiʌkʌti̯ fiʌi 'the garden is fragrant *with* the flowers',
with **sɛ** (ablative)
birʌwʌn sɛ̯ pʌrtar ʤfiʌrer 'the leaves fell *off* the trees'.
with **kə** (genitive)
kutʌwʌn kɛ nʌfi pʌin horti̯ hʌ̃ĩ 'the nails *of* dogs are very sharp'.
with **pʌr** (locative)
cirʌijʌn pʌr chʌrrar nə cʌlaror 'do not fire shot *at* the birds'.

§ 195. The oblique is used without a post-position in the following instances:

1. When a word meaning 'for the sake of' or 'near, with' follows, *e.g.*, **tʌnikʌi bart khartir** 'for the sake of a little thing', **lʌrikʌn khartir** 'for the sake of boys', **mefiʌruar tirr** 'near a woman', **argir tirr** 'near the fire.'

2. When a word meaning 'through (the way of)' follows, *e.g.*, **dfiũarrar ɖʌgʌr** 'through the ventilator', **pʌnarrʌn ɖʌgʌr** 'through the pipes'.

3. When the noun is repeated and gives a locative sense, *e.g.*, **gfiʌr gfiʌr lʌɽarir bfiʌi** 'there was a quarrel in every home', **gə̃rwʌn gə̃rwʌn gfiurmen** 'we roamed in all villages'.

4. When the noun means 'force' and gives an instrumental sense, *e.g.*, **ʤʌbʌrʤʌstir uʈhari larwar** 'he brought away by force', **mʌi kar ʤurtʌn pirʈisi̯** 'he beat me with shoes'.

(*a*) The oblique plural is optionally employed as the subject of such transitive verbs as are based on the participle, *e.g.*, **bʌmfiʌnʌn** (or **barmfiʌn**)

sʌb kaɪrmṳ̈ bigaɪrṛ̥ difiniṛ̥ 'the Brahmins spoiled the whole business'.

§ 196. The dialects of other districts agree with Lakhimpuri in the use of the direct and oblique cases.

In the Eastern dialects the obl. pl. case is regularly employed as the subject, *e.g.*, **gʌijʌn khʌifiʌ̃** 'the cows will eat', **bfiʌuʃʌijʌn̄ kʌfiaɪ** 'the sisters-in-law said'.

Terminations of Cases

§ 197. (*a*) *Direct singular*—The simple noun-stem, without any terminations, forms this case, excepting masculine stems ending in consonants to which **-ṳ̈** is added, *e.g.*, **sã̈ɪrp : sã̈ɪrpṳ̈.**

(*b*) *Direct plural*—All the dialects use the simple noun-stem for this case, except that the feminine stems ending in **-i (ṛ̥)** substitute **-iɪ** for **-i (ṛ̥)** and the feminine stems ending in consonants add **-ʌi.** For instance **gaɪri : gaɪriɪ, ã̈ɪrkhṛ̥ : ã̈ɪrkhiɪ ; bʌʃaɪr : bʌʃaɪrʌi; bʌrʌs : bʌrəsʌi; kitaɪb : kitaɪbʌi.**

The dialects of Bahraich (B.), Gonda (G.), Fyzabad (Fy.), Sultanpur (Sl.) and Partabgarh (P.) have a general direct plural case ending in **-ʌi** which is more often used than the simple noun-stem. For instance : **ʈhʌkurəwaɪ : ʈhʌkurwʌi; corəwaɪ : corəwʌi; lʌrikʌi niɪkə ʌfiʌ̃** 'the boys are good' (Sl.), **lʌrikiʌi niɪkə ʌfiʌ̃** 'the girls are good' **kutʌunʌi mʌrṛ̥ geɪ** 'the dogs died'.

§ 198. (*a*) *Oblique singular*—All the dialects use the simple noun-stem as this case except that the final **-ṛ̥** is pronounced as **i.** The bases in **u,** however, substitute **-i** for **-u**, *e.g.*, **pã̈ɪu** dir. sg., **pã̈ɪi** obl. sg., except **gã̈ɪu** which remains so in both the cases.

NOTE.—The obl. sg. of consonantal bases ends in the consonant but in slack pronunciation a final **-ə** is audible. It is impossible to know if like dir. sg. **-ṳ̈**, this **-ə** is whispered (see § 115).

(*b*) *Oblique plural*—In all the dialects this is formed by adding (1) **-ʌn** to stems ending in a consonant (*e.g.*, **sə̃ɪp** : **sə̃ɪpʌn; sĩɪg** : **sĩɪgʌn**) or in **-u** (the **-u-** then changes to **-w̃**[1]) (*e.g.* **gə̃ɪũ** : **gə̃ɪw̃ʌn; naɪũ** : **nə̃ɪw̃ʌn**) and (2) **-n** to stems ending in other vowels; the whispered vowel becomes full and the long becomes short (*e.g.*, **kũə̃ɪ** : **kũʌ̃n; ə̃ɪkhi̥** : **ə̃ɪkhin; nʌdɪiɪ** : **nʌdɪin; naɪuɪ** : **nə̃ɪun; pə̃ɪɽeɪ** : **pə̃ɪɽen**).

NOTE.—The dialects Fy., Sl. and P. appear to add **-ʌn** (instead of **-n**) to **-uɪ** stems also (*e.g.*, **ɖaɪkuɪ** : **ɖʌkuʌn**). This, however, is a case of changing the stem to its lengthened form in **-aɪ** and not of any difference in formation (**ɖaɪkuɪ** > **ɖʌkuaɪ** and then the termination **-n** is added).

Other Cases

§ 199. The dialects possess a vocative plural case which is used to call more than one person. It is formed by adding **-ʌu** to a stem ending in a consonant or **-u**, and **-u** to a noun ending in any other vowel. Before the termination, the vowel undergoes the modification as mentioned above § 198 (*b*). For instance :

kʌflaɪr : **kʌflaɪrʌn.** The enclitics **reɪ** (masc.) and **riɪ** (fem.) are often added after this case, or **oreɪ** (masc.) **oriɪ** (fem.) before it (*e.g.*, **oreɪ kʌflaɪrʌu paɪlkiɪ uʈhaɪoɪ** 'O! *kahars* lift up the palanquin' **oriɪ moflʌruʌu gʌunʌiɪ gaɪoɪ** 'O! women sing the songs'.

(*a*) All the dialects possess this case but such of them as have a direct plural case in **-ʌi** § 197 (*b*) use it oftener as the vocative plural. For instance : **kʌflaɪrʌu** or **kʌflaroɯʌi pʌlkijaɪ uʈhaɪoɪ mofloɾʌruʌi gʌunʌiɪ gaɪoɪ.** These dialects differ also in the use of the vocative enclitic inasmuch as they use **reɪ** or **oreɪ** irrespective of the gender of the noun being masculine or feminine. G. and B. avoid using the enclitic altogether.

[1] Part I § 154.

§ 200. The nouns **ʝʌnaɪ** 'person' and **lʌrikaɪ baɪraɪ** 'issue' have the direct plural case as **ʝʌneɪ** and **lʌrikaɪ baɪreɪ** in all the dialects. Similarly the nouns **sʌu** 'hundred', **paɪu** 'a quarter', **nãɪũ** 'name' **dãɪũ** 'chance' have **sʌi, paɪi, nãɪi, dãɪi** respectively as their direct plural case. The simple stem does not serve as this case for **ʝʌnaɪ** and **lʌrikaɪbaɪra,** but it does optionally in case of **sʌu, paɪu, nãɪũ, dãɪũ.**

§ 201. An instrumental case ending in **-en** is found in such adverbial expressions as **pijaɪsen** 'out of thirst', **bfluɪkhen** 'out of hunger', **ɖʌren** 'out of fear', used with or without the enclitic **maɪreɪ** 'on account of' after them, *e.g.*, **hʌm pijaɪsen mʌrị̊ gen** or **hʌm pijaɪsen maɪreɪ mʌrị̊ gen** 'I died out of thirst'.

The Eastern dialects do not possess this case and use the oblique plural for it (Lmp. **pijaɪsen** Fy. **pijaɪsʌn,** Lmp. **bfluɪkhen,** P. **bfluɪkhʌn.**)

§ 202. A case expressing motion towards a thing is found ending in **-ʌi** (after nouns ending in a consonant or **u**) or **-i** (after those ending in any other vowel) in such usages as **ui gfiʌrʌi geɪ** 'he went home', **lʌrikaɪ mʌdaɪsʌi aɪeɪ** 'the boys came to the school', **tum iɪ gãɪwʌi aɪjeu** 'you came to this village'. This is used without the postposition.

The Eastern dialects do not possess this case and use the locative in **-eɪ** (mentioned below) instead. For instance: Sl. records **gfiʌreɪ gaɪ,** while a specimen of 17 miles West of it records **gfiʌrʌi**. G. has **ʝʌun kuchụ mũfleɪ aɪwaɪ** 'whatever came *to* the mouth'.

(*a*) The consonantal bases indicating inanimate objects have a locative case (by adding **-e**) in all the dialects. This form is mostly used for the locative (generally without postpositions) but sometimes to indicate other case-relations also. For instance: **ui duaɪreɪ baiţh hʌ̃** 'he is sitting outside (*on* the door)' **ɖãɪţụ hʌmoreɪ maɪtheɪ paɪraɪ** 'the fine

fell to my lot (*on* my forehead)' **wʌr hʌmərer sʌmʌfier nikʌrị̊ ʌrir** 'she came out *in* my presence', **gfiʌrmem na nikʌrʌu** 'do not come out *in* the sun', **hʌm tum kʌr sʌpənem derkhen** 'I saw you *in* a dream', **rʌrɟʌkę̊ kʌrnem bʌrt kʌfii dərʊ** 'Speak the word *in* the king's ear', **ui kʌunər kʌrme kə gər** '*for* what business has he gone?' **duʌrre kə gər**, 'he has gone outside', **bʌrʌrt ɟʌnwʌrsek ʌrir** 'the bridegroom's party came *to* the reception-house', **bijʌrfiek sʌrʌnɟʌrmụ̊ kʌrʌu** 'make the arrangements *for* the marriage'.

C. Origin

§ 203. The direct case is the result of the old Nominative-accusative, the direct singular of the singular and the plural of the plural. Thus :

sə̃rpụ̊ represents Skt. *sarpaḥ* : *sarpaṃ*, Pkt. *sappō* : *sappaṁ*, Ap. and E. Aw. *sãpu*, while

sə̃rp represents Skt. *sarpāḥ* ; *sarpān*, Pkt. *sappā* : *sappē*, Ap. *sãpā*, E. Aw. *sãpa*.

ə̃rkhị̊ represents Skt. *akṣi*, Pkt. *akkhī*, Ap. *ãkhi*, E. Aw. *ãkhi*.

ə̃rkhir represents Skt. *akṣīṇi*, Pkt, *akkhīiṃ*, Ap. *akkhīr*, E. Aw. *ãkhī*.

§ 204. The direct plural of feminine consonantal bases in Western Awadhi and of all bases in Eastern Awadhi should be derived from the ancient neuter plural ending in *-āni*. The adoption of this neuter ending for nouns of animate gender is attested by some Skt. texts and by Bhāsa's Prakrit[1]. Western Awadhi stands between Eastern Awadhi and Western Hindi in this respect. Eastern Awadhi has it for all nouns, Western Awadhi for consonantal feminine bases only while Western Hindi for all feminine bases, *e.g.*, Hindustānī **lʌɽkir** : **lʌɽkijə̃r; ərrʌt** : **ərrətʌ̃**.

[1] Printz : Bhāsa's Prakrit, pp. 26-27.

§ 205. The direct plural of *-ā* bases (*citērā* : *citērē*) in *ē* goes back to the Pkt. accusative ending in *-ē*[1], and pronominal Nominative ending *-ē*. It represents the type *citrakarakaḥ* : *citrakarakāḥ* : *citrakarakān, cittayarao* : *cittayaraē*. Such forms, however, are very rare in Awadhi and might be loan words from Western dialects. Chatterji derives these from the ancient instrumental plural forms.

§ 206. In Modern Awadhi the traces of distinction between the direct sg. and dir. pl. are found in the case of fem. bases ending in **-i̯** (**i**), *e.g.* **ãɪkhi̯** 'eye' **ãɪkhiɪ** 'eyes' and masc. consonantal bases (**sãɪpu̯** 'snake' : **sãɪp** 'snakes'). This is explained by the difference in the origin of the two forms : **ãɪkhi̯** < M.I. *akkhī* and **ãɪkhiɪ** < M.I. *akkhīiṃ* or in the case of ancient masculine and fem. forms <*-īō*, *e.g.*, *aggīō*—modern **aɪgiɪ** 'fires', **sãɪpu̯** < M.I. *sappō* and **sãɪp** < M.I. *sappā*.

Distinction between the direct sg. and the obl. sg. is found only in the case of masc. consonantal bases (*e.g.*, **sãɪpu̯** : **sãɪp**) and the fem. bases in **-i̯** (**i**). This is also explained by a difference in their origin, the direct being the original nom.-acc.-voc. and the oblique the ancient genitive or dative.

Though other nouns have lost the distinctions to-day, the traces which we find above clearly point to distinctions in the origin.

§ 207. What is the origin of Early Awadhi obl. sg. *-hi* ? Chatterji (§499) explains the *-hi* by a supposed I.E. **-dhi* (> Greek *-θi*), Pāli *-dhi*, a suggestion put forward originally by Hoernle and accepted by Grierson. But this case is not operative in Pāli (the only available form is *sabbadhi* quoted by Wackernagel). It is, therefore, unlikely that such a common case as *-hi* which we find in abundance in Early Awadhi should come from *-dhi*. I have, therefore,

---

[1] Pischel · Gram. Prakrit, sec. 367a.

preferred to derive it from the pronominal locative in *-smin* > *mhi* > *hɪ̃*, *hi*.

I suggested elsewhere[1] that the Early Awadhi *-hɪ̃*, *-hi* might have come from the ancient plural instrumental ending *-bhis*. That, however, does not explain the nasalisation. Besides the transfer of a plural termination to singular remains unexplained[2].

§ 208. The derivation of the Modern Aw. obl. sg. may be had from the ancient genitive or the dative. The distinction between these two cases is not found in nouns other than *-a* bases in MIA. It would, however, be preferable to derive it from the genitive which was in more common use, *gharassa* > *gharasa* > *gharaha* > Early Aw. *ghara* > Modern Awadhi **gɦʌr**.

The passage of M.I. *-ss-* to late M.I. *-h-* and then its disappearance has a parallel in the forms of the Simple Future : *karissai* > *karihai* > Early Aw. *karihi* and Mod. Aw. **kʌrɪ̃**.

As Turner has shown[3], a sound in terminations is likely to have a more rapid (and possibly different) change than the corresponding sound in the body of words.

NOTE.—The nouns in *-u* (**gə̃ɪ̃** etc.) are all in the dir. case, and the dir. is used with postpositions also. But the use of the dir. thus in place of the obl. appears to be quite a recent development. Even to-day we find some traces of the obl. sg. here: **hʌmaɪr ɟiu** dir. but **hʌmʌreɪ jiɪ maɪ, naɪə̃** : **naɪ̃, daɪə̃** : **daɪ̃**.

§ 209. The oblique plural in Modern Awadhi in **-n**, Early Awadhī *-nha*, *-nhā*, *-nhi*, *-nhɪ̃*, *-ni* is based on the ancient genitive plural, Skt. *-nām* : Pkt. *-ṇaṃ*. The *-i* is possibly due to contamination with feminine forms (see §191).

---

[1] Noun-declension in the Rāmāyan of Tulsīdās (Ind. Ant. LII, 1923, p. 5.).

[2] Prof. Bloch sees the possibility of a secondary affix in—*hɪ̃*.

[3] R. L. Turner : J. R. A. S., 1927, p. 227 and ff., also see J. Bloch : B. S. L. 1928, p. 4.

An objection to this derivation of the oblique plural is that the *-n* of terminations survives in most modern languages only as a simple nasalisation (Marāṭhī *dēvāṃ*, Hindustānī **ghoɾɽõɪ**, Rājasthānī **ghoɾɽãɪ**). But we find the full *n* surviving in the oblique of some Indo-Aryan languages, *viz.*, in Kāshmīrī (L.S.I., VIII, part II, page 271), Sindhī (L.S.I., VIII, part I, p. 25), Singhalese and Gypsy and to some extent in Bengali (Chatterji, sec. 486).

The *n* of neuter plural ending in *-āni*, *-īni* has been lost, but there is a difference between the treatment of *-āni*, *-īni* on the one hand and of *-ānām*, etc., on the other, noticeable in the Pkts. The former became *-āiṃ*, *-iiṃ*, etc., while the latter are found as *āṇaṃ*, *īṇaṃ*, etc. This differentiation has been kept up by Modern Awadhi **-ʌi** < *-āni* and **-n** < *-nām*.

The Early Awadhi *-h* and *-hi* can be explained only as addition to *-na*, owing to the influence of the general oblique singular in *-hi*. Aw. *-nh* could come from *-nn-* also (cf. Marāṭhī *dinhala* : Pkt. *diṇṇa*, Braj **dɪnɦ**) but no ancient case form in *-nn-* is available.

§ 210. The vocative plural case of Modern Awadhi in **-ʌu** (corresponding with Western Hindi **-oɪ**) is derived from ancient Nominative-vocative plus the enclitic *-hō*. This enclitic was used in the Prakrit and Apabhraṃśa and by constant use came to form a part of the substantive. The loss of *-h-* and the reduction of *-ō* to **-u** are normal features.

§ 211. The plurals **ʝʌneɪ** (sg. **ʝʌnaɪ**) < *janaē* and **baɪɾeɪ** (sg. **baɪɾaɪ**) < *bālaē* are loan-words from a dialect where *-ā* bases form the plural in *-ē* (Cf. §200). A larger use of these plurals is found in Tulsīdās.

§ 212. The plurals **sʌi** (< *śatāni*), **naɪĩ** (< *namani*), **daɪĩ** (< *dāmāni*), **paɪĩ** (< *pādāni*) are survivals of ancient neuter plurals.

§ 213. The instrumental in *-en* goes back to *-ēna* with elongated forms **ɖaraēṇa* > **ɖʌren** 'out of fear.' The

survival of nasal after a front vowel *-ē-* has a parallel in Kāshmīrī also[1].

§ 214. The Modern Awadhi case in **-ai** expressing motion towards a thing, represented by Early Awadhi *-hĭ*, *-hi*, *-i* goes back to Skt.. ending *-smin* which is found in Prakrits variously as *-mmi* and *-mhĭ* added to nouns alternately with *-ē* (*puttē* or *puttamhi*, *puttammi*). Nouns with this termination indicate other senses, besides locative, in Early Awadhi—chiefly Objective-dative. Modern Western Awadhi has retained this case for expressing motion only. Eastern Awadhi uses the locative in **-ex** to denote this sense.

This case is represented by the dative of Sanskrit (*gṛhāya gataḥ*); but *-āya* would phonetically become *-ā*, and not *-ahi* or *-ai*.

§ 215. The locative case in **-ex** of Modern Awadhi, a few cases of which are found in early Awadhi as well, goes back to the ancient locative singular in *-ē* of elongated forms (*dvārakē*: **duaxrex**). The final *-ē* of *dvārē*, *gṛhē*, etc., would phonetically become *-i*[2] in modern IA, but *-aē* of middle-Indian would survive as *-ē*. The predominantly locative use of this case in Modern Awadhi warrants the derivation from an ancient Locative.

[1] J. Bloch : B. S. L. 1928 p. 5.

[2] as attested by old Rājasthānī texts.

CHAPTER II

Adjectives

§ 216. In Awadhi, the adjectives are very seldom employed and so we find a very small vocabulary of qualitative adjectives. The pronominal adjectives of possession and of quantity are generally in use; they will be treated of under Pronouns. The numerals also have been dealt with separately.

In *Gulgulāwālī kathā* (Texts No. 1) in the first paragraph we find 36 nouns but only three adjectives—all pronominal, and eight numerals. Similarly whenever specimens of Awadhi have been searched through it is very seldom that the adjectives have been found.

Gender and Number

A. Early Awadhi.

§ 217. (*a*) J. has two genders of the adjective and generally the feminine adjective is used with the feminine noun, *e.g.*, *ghani ṙbilī* 'dense *Imlī*', *ghana tāra* 'dense palm' (p. 42), *hariara akāsa* 'green sky' (p. 40), *bipati bahu ghanī* 'very dense (great) calamity' (p. 5), *karui bēli* 'bitter creeper' (p. 6), *āgari karā* 'best digit' (p. 22), *khiranī mīṭhī* 'sweet *khirnī*' (p. 41); but *navaũ pauri para* 'on the 9th gatepost' (p. 64), *kinhesi ũkha mīṭha rasa-bharī* 'he created sugarcane, sweet and juicy' (p. 6), where a masculine adjective has been used with a feminine noun.

The *-ā* adjective changes to *-ē* in plural direct and obl. and sg. obl., *e.g.*, *jei pāḍhata sikhē* 'those who are well-read and learned' (p. 15), *dui dīpaka ũjiārē* 'two bright lamps' (p. 25), *apanē apanē ghara* 'in one's own house' (p. 67); *kaunąu harē dhūma au kārē* 'some of them were green,

dusky and black' (p. 69), *dēkhi tinha ṭhāḍhē* 'seeing them standing' (p. 63).

(*b*) T. has two genders and the distinction is rigorously maintained. For instance :

āgila kāju 'coming business' (p. 162), *āgili bāta* 'coming thing' (p. 164), *dukhu baṛa* 'heavy misery' (p. 165), *sapatha baṛi* 'a heavy curse' (p. 168), *bidhi ati dāhina* 'the Creator is very favourable' (p. 163), *dāhini ãkhi* 'right eye' (p. 165), *manabhāvati bātā* 'a pleasant thing' (p. 167), *manabhāvata (ĩ kā)* 'a pleasant (boon)' (p. 168), *avadha ujāri* 'desolate Ayodhyā' (p. 169).

The *-ā* adjective changes to *-ē* for plural direct and obl. and for singular obl. For instance : *rāma-abhiṣēka suhāvā* 'beautiful coronation of Rāma' (p. 160), *bacana suhāē* 'beautiful words' (p. 159), *pachilē pahara* 'in the last watch (of night)' (p 172).

The adjective has the case-ending like Mod. Awadhi (vide § 221) when the noun is understood, *e.g.*, *baṛehi abhiṣēkū* 'coronation to the elder' (p. 161).

The plural noun when indicating a single individual or thing (vide § 175) has a plural adjective, *e.g.*, *bharata bhōrē* 'the simple Bharata' (p. 171).

(*c*) N. observes the distinction of gender only in *-ā* and *-i* adjectives. For instance : *piyārā* : *piyārī, gāḍhī gãṭha* 'a difficult knot' (p. 4), *bhalī kīrata* 'good fame' (p. 8). In other cases the masculine form is used for the fem. noun also, *e.g.*, *cintā āna* 'other anxiety' (p. 11), *nā ati lãba* 'not very tall (princess)' (p. 19), *mīṭha hōi likhanī* 'the pen (fem.) may become sweet' (p. 13).

The *-ā* adjective changes to *-ē* for the plural, *e.g.*, *(tārē) ũjiārē* 'bright stars'.

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 218. In Lakhīmpurī, adjectives as a rule have two genders : masculine and feminine, *e.g.*, **nizk : nizkẹ** 'good',

nɪzk lʌrikaz 'good boy', **nɪzkɨ̣ lʌũɽijaz** 'good girl'.

The feminine is formed by

(*a*) adding **-ɨ̣** to the masculine ending in a consonant, *e.g.*, **gizl** : **gizlɨ̣** 'wet', **buzɽɦ** : **buzɽɦɨ̣** 'old', **paztʌr** : **paztʌrɨ̣** 'thin'.

(*b*) changing **-az** to **-iz** in case of a masculine ending in **-az**, *e.g.*, **thozraz** : **thozriz** 'little', **bʌɽaz** : **bʌɽiz** 'big', **lʌmbaz** : **lʌmbiz** 'tall'.

Other adjectives (in **-ɨ̣ bazdɨ̣** 'useless', in **-iz bɦazriz** 'heavy', in **-uz kʌruz** 'bitter') do not change for gender.

NOTE.—The change for gender in adjectives in **-uz** (**kʌruz** : **kʌruiz**) sometimes noticed in the speech of the literate, is due to the influence of the literary speech Hindustānī (Hin. **kʌɽuaz** : **kʌɽuiz**).

Adjectives of Persian origin, *e.g.*, **kharazb** < *kharāb* **lazjʌk** < *lāyaq*, **lazl** < *lāl*, **sʌpezt** < *safaid* do not change for gender. The following also do not change for gender:

uʃʌzr 'desolate', **kʌriaz** 'black'.

§ 219. The distinction of gender is lost progressively as we proceed to the East. The Western dialects (Lmp. S., L., U. and F.) observe it as detailed above. For instance:

L. has **chozt bɦazɪz** 'younger brother' (masc.), **chozt̪ɨ̣ razʃɨ̣** 'small kingdom' (fem.); **thozriz bʌɦut cizʃ bʌsto** 'a few things' (fem.), **thozraz khazi lezɪz** 'I should eat a little' (masc.). U. has **tʌb sʌroɦʌʃʌi risʌɦi hozi lazgɪ̃z** 'then the sisters-in-law began to be angry' (fem.), **buzɽɦ kʌɦʌi lazg** 'the old people began to say' (masc.), **uz ɽhazɽɦ bɦaz** 'he stood (lit. became standing)' (Masc.).

F. has **buzɽɦiz azdmiz rʌɦʌɪ̃** 'there were old people' (masc.), **buzɽɦiz meɦorazruz rʌɦʌɪ̃** 'there were old women' (fem.).

The Central dialects (B., Br. and R.) are less particular about gender than the Western dialects. For instance:

B. a specimen of 12 miles West to Bahraich records a change for feminine in **hʌm miʈhaɪɪ ʌb sʌigʌrị̈ chọɪʈị̈ dɪɪn kʌrʌb** 'I shall now leave more (a larger quantity of) sweetmeats' and no change in **pʌfiil mefiaɪɪuɪ** 'the first wife'. While a specimen of 20 miles East to Bahraich records change for feminine in **-aɪ** adjectives (*e.g.*, **bfiʌtoraɪ kaɪʈiɪ**, **kʌlɟugofiiɪ** 'the killer of the husband, belonging to *Kaliyuga* (feminine)', it does not record any change in consonantal adjectives (*e.g.*, **hʌmaɪɪ ʌuɪʌt** 'my wife', **hʌmaɪɪ ɟindʌgiɪ** 'my life' (both feminine).

Br. and R. have no change in the singular of consonantal adjectives (*e.g.*, **paɪtʌr swãɪʈaɪ** 'a thin stick' (masculine), **paɪtʌr chʌʈiɪ** 'a thin stick' (feminine), **ciɪkʌn loɪʈaɪ** 'a smooth jug' (masculine), **ciɪkʌn bʌʈuiɪ** 'a smooth pot' (feminine), but do have it in the plural (*e.g.*, **gʌgoriɪ ɟuɪʈ hʌi** 'the jar is cool' (sg. feminine), **gʌgoriɪ ɟuɪʈiɪ hʌ̃ĩ** 'the jars are cool' (pl. feminine). The distinction of gender is, however, observed in the case of **-aɪ** adjectives, *e.g.*, **lʌmbaɪ** (masculine) **lʌmbiɪ** (feminine) 'tall'.

The Eastern dialects (G., Fy., Sl., P. and A.) do not observe clearly any distinction of gender in adjective. For instance :

G. a specimen of Balrampur records **rʌɳḍiɪ cʌlaɪ gʌi**, 'the prostitute went away', where **cʌlaɪ** (masculine) qualifies (feminine) **rʌɳḍiɪ** without any change.

Fy. **niɪk lʌrikaɪ** 'good boy' (masculine), **niɪk lʌrikiniɪ** 'good girl' (feminine), **giɪl maɪʈiɪ** 'wet clay' (feminine).

Sl. **iɪ paɪniɪ ʈhʌɳḍfi ʌfiʌi** 'this water is cold' (feminine), **iɪ pisaɪn giɪl ʌfiʌi** 'this flour is wet' (masculine), **iɪ saɪniɪ giɪl ʌfiʌi** 'this fodder is wet' (feminine).

P. **hʌmaɪɪ sʌmʌi rʌfiiɪ** 'my time was' (feminine).

The Eastern dialects avoid the use of **-aɪ** (masculine), **-iɪ** (feminine) (**baʈaɪ** : **baʈiɪ**) adjectives by substituting

consonantal adjectives for them, *e.g.*, **nizk** for **Aczhiz**; **lãzb** for **lAmbaz, lAmbiz** and **jezʈh** for **bAʈaz, bAʈiz**).

NOTE—1. In none of the dialects, is the distinction of gender based on the animate or inanimate nature of the object qualified. For instance the adjective **paztAr** 'thin' is applied to masculine nouns (animate or inanimate) in Lakhīmpurī and **paztAri̯** 'thin' to feminine nouns——**paztAr mAnAiz** 'a thin man', **paztAr bãzs** 'a thin bamboo', **paztAri̯ meflAruaz** 'a thin woman', **paztAri̯ lazʈhiz** 'a thin stick'.

NOTE—2. When a plural noun is used to show respect for an individual, the adjective qualifying it is plural (*e.g.*, **iz thaznerdazr bAʈez hAĩ ui chozʈ** 'this police-officer is high, that is low'; here the adjectives qualifying the police-officer are in the plural).

§ 220. The dialectal differences regarding the case and number are generally similar to those of gender—as we proceed towards the East the distinction no longer exists. B., for instance, does not modify the adjective: **razm Aczhaz** (expected **Aczhez**) **razjaz** rAflez, **khAʈzaz** (expected **khAʈzez**) **azme ko bAflazi dezu, kũazri̯** (expected **kũazriz**) **biʈijAn ko no mazrAu.** Of the Central dialects R. and Br. modify the adjective: Br. **juzʈ : juzʈez, gozr : gozrez,** R. **suzkh : suzkhe : suzkhiz**). The modification of **-az** adjectives (to **-ez**) is noticed in P. and Fy. here and there, otherwise it is absent in all Eastern dialects.

§ 221. The adjective may be used as a noun when the noun used previously is understood in subsequent uses, *e.g.*, **kAun lArikaz azwaz** 'which son has come?', **bAʈaz azwaz hAi** 'the big (one) has come'.

In such cases the adjective has the necessary case modifications like nouns, *e.g.*, **Aczhez lArikaz azi gAjez, khArazb azwAti̯ hoifiAĩ** 'good boys have arrived, the bad (ones) must be coming'. **Aczhen ko azwAi difieu khAraz-**

bʌn ko durijaɪ difieu 'let the good (ones) come in, turn the bad (ones) out'.

NOTE.—Here the plural obl. terminations **-n** and **-ʌn** have been added to the adjectives. It should be noticed that the plural termination is added to the modified form where it exists, *e.g.*, **ʌcɪhe** : **ʌcɪhen** in Lakhīmpurī but **ʌcɪhaɪ** : **ʌcɪhʌn** in Fy.

Stem

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 222. In all the texts the short forms of *-ā* and *-ī* adjectives (*-a* and *-i*) are frequently found, particularly in Tulsīdās in whom the long (*-ā* and *-ī*) are comparatively rare. For instance :

(*a*) J. *ũcī pavārī ũca abāsū* 'high was the gate and high the residence' (p. 55), *koi bhikhāri* 'some beggar' (p. 5), *rājā bhaē bhikhārī* 'the king became a beggar' (p. 60), *saba ṭhāḍha pahārā* 'all the hills standing' (p. 69).

(*b*) T. *sayāni* 'clever', *ujāri* 'desolate', *lagana bhali* 'auspicious time' (p. 161), *phuri bānī* 'true speech' (p. 164), *lāgi madhu* 'the honey which was present' (p. 162), *candini rāti* 'moon-lit night' (p. 162), *nīci karatūtī* 'lowly action' (p. 162), *anamani hasi* 'thou art dejected (p. 162), *kāri janu sāpini*, 'as if a black serpent' (p. 162), *jhūṭhi phuri bātā* 'false and true words' (p. 163), *karui mai māī* 'I am bitter, O mother!' (p. 163), *baṛi cūka* 'great mistake' (p. 164), *rāni risāni* 'the angry queen' (p. 167), *sūdha subhāvā* 'a straightforward nature' (p. 165), *bhōra subhāū* 'a simple nature' (p. 168), *baṛa chōṭa* 'big and small' (p. 170), *ṭhāṛhī ṭhāṛhi* 'standing'.

(*c*) N. *ahai ṭhāṛha* 'is standing' (p. 4), *kou ṭhāṛhā hai* 'somebody is standing' (p. 16), *prēma gāṛhā* and *gāṛha* 'great (lit. thick) affection' (p. 13), *rāja rahā mīṭhā* 'sweet was the kingship' (p. 20) and *mīṭha hōi likhanī* 'the pen may become sweet' (p. 20).

When the feminine adjective in **-ĩ** is shortened in N. it takes the same form as the masculine, *e.g.*, *pahilĩ rāta* 'first night' (p. 10) and *pahila rāta* 'first night' (p. 12).

B. MODERN AWADHI.

§ 223. The **-ax** (feminine **-ix**) adjectives have sometimes long forms and longer forms, like the noun, *e.g.*, **bʌɽax** : **bʌɽʌkax, bʌɽʌkʌwax, bʌɽix** : **bʌɽʌkix** : **bʌɽʌkijax.** The Eastern dialects use these long and longer forms oftener than the Western dialects. The **-k-** of these long forms is pronounced long whenever particular emphasis is to be put on the attribute, *e.g.*, **bʌɽʌkax** or **bʌɽʌkxax, bʌɽʌkix** : **bʌɽʌkxix.**

NOTE.—Sometimes, particularly in Bgh., an elongation in **-ßax** is found, *e.g.*, **purʌnißax, rogißax.**

§ 224. In Lakhīmpurī, masculine adjectives ending in a consonant (*e.g.*, **kũaxr** 'unmarried') and in **-ax** (*e.g.*, **bʌɽax** 'big') and feminine adjectives in **-i̯** (*e.g.*, **kũaxri̯** 'unmarried') have modified forms to express the direct plural and oblique singular and plural cases.

The modified forms are obtained by adding **-ex** to consonantal adjectives (**kũaxrex**) and by substituting **-ex** for **-ax** in the case of **-ax** adjectives (**bʌɽex**) and **-ix** for **-i̯** in the case of **-i̯** adjectives (**kũaxrix**).

The following instances illustrate the use of the modified forms attributively:

Direct singular—

kũaxrex lʌrikax axjex 'the unmarried boys came', **bʌɽex birowax giri̯ gex** 'the big trees have fallen down', **kũaxrix lʌũɽijax axĩx** 'the unmarried girls came.'

Oblique singular—

kũaxrex lʌrikʌ ko bolaxox 'call the unmarried boy',
bʌɽex lʌrikʌ ko bolaxox 'call the older boy',
kũaxrix lʌũɽijʌ ko bolaxox 'call the unmarried girl'.

Oblique plural—

kũaɪrez lʌrikʌn ko bolaɪoɪ 'call the unmarried boys',

bʌɽez lʌrikʌn ko bolaɪoɪ 'call the older boys',

kũaɪriɪ lʌũɽijʌn ko bolaɪoɪ 'call the unmarried girls'.

NOTE.—The unmodified form of masculine consonantal adjectives **(kũaɪr)** is also used to qualify a direct plural case of the noun, *e.g.*, **kũaɪr lʌrikaɪ aɪez** 'the unmarried boys came'.

The modified form is less in use predicatively; it comes with feminine always **(ui lʌũɽijaɪ kũaɪriɪ hʌ̃** 'those girls are unmarried', **ui lʌũɽijʌn ko kũaɪriɪ bʌtaɪwʌtị hʌ̃** 'they say those girls are unmarried') and with the masculine Nom. plural when the adjective is an **-aɪ** base **(ui lʌrikaɪ ʌcɪhez hʌ̃** 'those boys are good'). Everywhere else the unmodified adjective is used.

Degrees of Comparison

§ 225. Awadhi has no separate forms for the degrees of comparison in adjective.

The sense of the comparative is expressed by (*a*) putting the compared (standard) thing in the ablative (obl. plur. **se**) (*e.g.*, **iu lʌrikaɪ ui sez goɪr hʌi** 'this boy is fairer than that', **uɪ lʌrikaɪ iɪ sez kʌriaɪ hʌi** 'that boy is darker than this') or by (*b*) using some such word as **ʝaɪdaɪ**, **bʌfiut**, **sʌigʌr** meaning 'more' and **kʌm** meaning 'less' (*e.g.*, **iu lʌrikaɪ ui sez ʝaɪdaɪ goɪr hʌi** 'this boy is fairer than that', **uɪ lʌrika iɪ sez kʌm goɪr hʌi** 'that boy is less fair than this').

The comparison may be made with the rest of the class, *e.g.*, **iu lʌrikaɪ sʌb sez goɪr hʌi** 'this boy is fairer than all the rest.

The sense of the superlative is expressed by the simple adjective preceded by such expressions as **sʌb maɪ** 'amongst all', **sʌb ʌdmin mo** 'amongst all men', **sʌb lʌrikʌn mo**

'amongst all boys', *e.g.*, **iu lʌrikaɪ sʌb maɪ nizk hʌi** 'this boy is the best of all boys', Fy. **iɪ lʌrikaɪ sʌbʌn maɪ goɪr hʌi** 'this boy is fairest of all', B. and G. **iɪ lʌrikaɪ sʌb maɪ gorəfiʌr hʌi** 'this boy is the fairest of all'—**gorəfiʌr** means 'fair'.

C. Origin.

§ 226. The origin of Awadhi adjectives is closely allied to that of the nouns. In OIA and MIA the adjective, unless compounded with the substantive, had the modifications of gender, number and case of the noun qualified. In Modern Awadhi we have traces only of that. It is only the *-ā* adjective which keeps up the modifications to some extent in all Awadhi dialects, in others the base form is generally used.

The masculine oblique singular in **-eɪ** goes back to *-akē* ending like the noun (vide § 215) and the masculine plural in **-eɪ** to the Nom. Acc. plural in *-ē* (Cf. **ʤʌneɪ** and pronominal forms). The obl. singular feminine *-ī* and feminine plural in **iɪ** have the same explanation as the corresponding forms of the noun (vide § 203).

The retention of distinction of gender in *-ā*, *-ī* forms in Eastern Awadhi is intelligible from the fact that a large number of these are ancient participles (past passive) in *-aka* elongated forms. We shall find that the distinction of gender in the Verb is maintained only in Participial forms.

We should note that the direct singular and direct plural of consonantal adjectives have different origins, like the noun, **kũaɪr** < *kumāraḥ*, **kũaɪr** < *kumārāḥ*.

The practice of elongating the adjective-stem accords with the general practice of elongating the noun (vide § 177). The long consonant in these forms is used for emphasis.

CHAPTER III

NUMERALS

Cardinals

§ 227. The following are the cardinal numbers :—

Number.	Hindustānī.	Lakhīmpurī.	Other dialects.	Early Awadhi.
1	**ɐɪk**	**ɐɪk**	U. **yaɪk**	J., T., N. *ēka.*
2	**doɪ**	**dui**		J., T., N. *dui.*
3	**tiɪn**	**tiɪn̥i**		T. tīni, N. *tīna.*
4	**caɪr**	**caɪr̥i**	Br. **caɪr**	J., T. *cāri*, N. *cāra* (but *cāriu*).
5	**pãɪc**	**pãɪc**	Br. **paɪn**	J., T., N. *pãca.*
6	**cheß, cheɪ**	**chaɪ**	...	T. *cha.*
7	**saɪt**	**saɪt**	...	J. *sāta*, N. *sāta.*
8	**aɪʈh**	**aɪʈh**	...	N. *āṭha.*
9	**nɔ**	**nʌu**	...	J., N. *nau.*
10	**dʌs**	**dʌs**	...	J., T., N. *dasa.*
11	**gjaɪrʌß**	**geɪraɪ**	Fy. **gjaɪraɪ** Br. **egjaɪraɪ** P **egɪjaɪraɪ**	N. *egayāraha.*

12	baɪrʌfi	baɪraɪ	...	J., N. *bāraha.*
13	teɪrʌfi	teɪraɪ	R. tjaɪraɪ	N. *tēraha.*
14	cɔdʌfi	cʌudaɪ	...	J., T. *caudaha*, T. *cāridasa.*
15	pʌndrʌfi	pʌndʌraɪ	...	
16	sɔɪlʌfi	sɔɪraɪ	R. swaɪraɪ Fy. sɔɪrʌs ...	J., T. *sōraha.*
17	sʌtɪrʌfi	sʌtɪʌraɪ	R. sʌtʌraɪ	N. *satraha.*
18	ʌʈhaɪrʌfi	ʌʈhaɪraɪ	...	J., N. *aṭhāraha.*
19	unɪɪs	onʌis ...	B., P. onɪʌis	
20	biɪs	biɪs	...	J. *bīsa.*
21	ikɪiɪs	ekʌis ...	B. ekɪʌis. G. ʌkɪʌis.	
22	baɪiɪs	baɪis	...	N. *bāisa.*
23	teɪiɪs	teɪis		
24	cɔbiɪs	cʌubis	R. cʌuɪbis	J. *caubisa.*
25	pʌcɪiɪs	pʌciɪs	...	T. *pacīsa* (*-ā*).
26	chʌbɪiɪs	chʌbɪis		
27	sʌtɪaɪiɪs	sʌtɪaɪis		
28	ʌʈɪhaɪiɪs	ʌʈɪhaɪis		
29	untiɪs	ontis	Fy. onʌtɪis G. wʌntis ...	N. *vontisa.*

Number.	Hindustānī.	Lakhīmpurī.	Other dialects of Modern Awadhi.	Early Awadhi.
30	**tiːs**	**tiːs**	...	N. *tīsa*.
31	**ikʌtiːs**	**ekətis**	...	T. *ikatīsa* (*-ā*).
32	**bʌtiːs**	**bʌtɪs**	...	J. *batīsa*.
33	**tẽːtiːs**	**tẽːtis**	...	J. *tɪ̄tisa*.
34	**cɔ̃tiːs**	**cʌ̃ũtis**		
35	**pæ̃tiːs**	**pʌ̃ĩtis**		
36	**chʌtiːs**	**chʌtɪs**	...	N. *chatīsa*.
37	**sæ̃tiːs**	**sʌĩtis**		
38	**ʌɽtiːs**	**ʌɽtis**		
39	**untaːliːs**	**ontʌːlis**		
40	**caːliːs**	**caːlis**	...	N. *cālisa*.
41	**iktaːliːs**	**ekətaːlis**		
42	**bʌjaːliːs**	**bʌjaːlis**		
43	**tẽːtaːliːs**	**tẽtaːlis**	R. **tirtaːlis**	
44	**cɔwaːliːs**	**cʌuaːlis**		
45	**pæ̃taːliːs**	**pʌ̃itaːlis**		
46	**chijaːliːs**	**chijaːlis**	Br. **chijãːlis**	
47	**sæ̃taːliːs**	**sʌ̃ĩtaːlis**	...	J. *saɽtālisa*.
48	**ʌɽtaːliːs**	**ʌɽtaːlis**	...	N. *aṛhatālisa*
49	**uncaːs**	**oncaːs**	R. **ekːʌmpʌcaːs**	

50	pʌcaːs	pʌcaːs	...	T. *pacāsa.*
51	ikɾjaːwʌn	ekɾjaːwʌn	R. ekɾaːwʌn	
52	baːwʌn	baːwʌn		
53	tireːpʌn	tirpʌn		
54	cɔwʌn	cʌuʌn		
55	pʌchpʌn	pʌchpʌn	G. pʌŋcaːwʌn	
56	chʌpːʌn	chʌpːʌn	...	J. *chappana, chapana.*
57	sʌtːaːwʌn	sʌtːaːwʌn	...	N. *sattāvana.*
58	ʌʈːhaːwʌn	ʌʈːhaːwʌn		
59	unsʌʈh	onsʌʈhi̯	P. onsʌʈh	
60	saːʈh	saːʈhi̯	...	N. *sāṭha.*
61	iksʌʈh	ekɔsʌʈhi̯		
62	baːsʌʈh	baːsʌʈhi̯		
63	tireːsʌʈh	tirsʌʈhi̯	...	N. *trīsaṭha.*
64	cɔ̃sʌʈh	cɔ̃ũsʌʈhi̯		
65	pæ̃sʌʈh	pɔ̃ĩsʌʈhi̯		
66	chijaːsʌʈh	chɔ̃ːchʌʈhi̯	B. chaːsʌʈhi̯	
67	sʌrsʌʈh	sʌrsʌʈhi̯		
68	ʌɾsʌʈh	ʌrsʌʈhi̯		
69	unßʌtːʌr	onßʌtːʌri̯		
70	sʌtːʌr	sʌtːʌri̯	...	N. *sattara.*
71	ikhʌtːʌr	ekhʌtːʌri̯		
72	bʌßʌtːʌr	bʌßʌtːʌri̯		
73	tißʌtːʌr	tißʌtːʌri̯		
74	cɔßʌtːʌr	cʌußʌtːʌri̯		

Number.	Hindustānī.	Lakhīmpurī.	Other dialects of Mod. Awadhi.	Early Awadhī.
75	pichʌtɪʌr	pʌchʌtɪʌrị̊		
76	chiñʌtɪʌr	chiʌtɪʌrị̊	Br. cheñʌtɪʌrị̊. P. cheñʌtɪʌr.	
77	sʌtɔñʌtɪʌr	sʌthʌtɪʌrị̊		
78	ʌʈhʌtɪʌr	ʌʈhʌtɪʌrị̊		
79	unɪʌrsiɪ	onɪʌrsiɪ	Fy. onʌrsiɪ	
80	ʌsɪiɪ	ʌsɪiɪ		
81	ikɪjʌrsiɪ	ekɪjʌrsiɪ...	Br. ekɪʌrsiɪ Fy. ekʌrsiɪ	
82	bʌjʌrsiɪ	bʌjʌrsiɪ		
83	tirʌrsiɪ	tirʌrsiɪ		
84	cɔrʌrsiɪ	cʌurʌrsiɪ	...	J. *caurāsī.*
85	picɪjʌrsiɪ	pʌcʌrsiɪ		
86	chijʌrsiɪ	chiʌrsiɪ		
87	sʌtɪʌrsiɪ	sʌtɪʌrsi	Fy. sʌtʌrsi	
88	ʌʈhʌrsiɪ	ʌʈɪhʌrsiɪ	Fy. ʌʈhʌrsiɪ	
89	nʌwʌrsiɪ	nʌwʌrsiɪ		
90	nʌvɪeɪ	nʌbɪeɪ		

91	ikɪjaɪnvex	ekɪjaɪnbex ...	Fy. ekaɪnbex Br. ekɪaɪnbex G. ekkʌnɪʌjex	
92	baɪnvex	baɪnbex ...	Br. baɪnɪʌbex Fy. baɪnʌbex G. baɪnɪʌjex	
93	tiraɪnvex	tiraɪnbex ...		
94	cɔraɪnvex	cʌuraɪnbex		
95	picɪjaɪnvex	pʌɲcaɪnbex	Fy. pʌcaɪnʌbex	
96	chijaɪnvex	chaɪnbex		J. *chãnabai.*
97	sʌtɪaɪnvex	sʌtɪaɪnbex	P. sʌntaɪnbex	
98	ʌʈɪhaɪnvex	ʌʈɪhaɪnbex		
99	ninɪjaɪnvex	ninɪaɪnbex	G. ninɪaɪnʌjex	
100	sɔ ...	sg. sʌu pl. sʌi	...	T. *saya,* N. *sau, sai,*
1000	hʌzaɪr	hʌʄaɪr	...	J. *sahasa.*
100000	laɪkh	laɪkh	...	J., T. *lākha.*
10000000	kʌrɔɪr̥	kʌrɔɪrɪ̥	...	J. *krōḍa,* J. *karōri,* T. *karōrī.*

NOTE.—(1) The Eastern dialects have lost final -ɪ̥ of the numerals.
(2) From 91 to 99 G. has numerals ending in -ʌjex.

§ 228. As the cardinal numbers as taught at the schools have a tendency to influence and even replace the dialectal forms, I have given the standard (Hindustānī) forms side by side with Awadhi forms.

The people generally count only upto 20, onwards they count by twenties, *e.g.*, **dui bizsiz ʌu cazrị̊** '44 *i.e.*, two twenties and four', Fy., **cazr bizsiz rupʌijaz rʌfiz hʌi** 'there were eighty rupees'. Even within twenty, numbers near twenty are expressed by the help of twenty, *e.g.*, R. **ezk kʌm bizs** 'nineteen'.

There is generally the practice of adding **ʈhʌĩ, ʈhʌur** or **ʈhiz** as help-words after numbers, *e.g.*, R. **cazr ʈhʌĩz lʌrikaz** 'four boys', **pazɲʈhʌur rupʌijaz** 'fives rupees', P. **ezk ʈhiz dʌrkhazs** 'one petition'. A parallel usage in Bengali and Bihari may be noted.

Ordinals

A. Early Awadhi

§ 229. The following cases of the use of ordinal numbers are found in the early Awadhi texts :

(*a*) Jāyasī—

pahila 'first', *dōsara* 'second' (p. 1), with which compare *akasara* 'alone' (p. 401), *dōsari disa* 'on the second side' (p. 561), *tisarai āi caḍhāī pūjā* 'the third came and offered the worship' (p. 427), *tēsari hatiā* 'third murder' (p. 470), *chaṭhi rāti* 'sixth night' (p. 80), *navaũ pauri* 'the ninth threshold', *dasaũ duārā* 'the tenth gate' (p. 64), *dūija* '2nd date' (p. 21), *caudasi* '14th date' (p. 21).

(*b*) Tulsī—

ihai saguna phala dūsara nāhī 'this is just the result of the omen, none else' (p. 160), *dūsara bara* 'the second boon' (p. 168), *dharamu nahī dūjā* 'not a second Dharma' (p. 181), *tiya dūjī* 'second (another) woman' (p. 244), *anubhaeu na dūjẽ* 'no one else has experienced' (p. 158), *tisarẽ pahara* 'in the third watch' p. (237), *cauthẽ pana* 'in

the fourth period of age' (p. 174); similarly Greaves[1] cites *dūsari*, *tīsara*, *tīsari*, *tījai*, *cauthi*, *chaṭha*, *chaṭhẽ*, *sātava*, *āṭhava*.

(*c*) Nūr Muhammad

pahila khaṇḍa 'first part' (p. 15), *pahilī rāta ki mūrata* 'the image of the first night' (p. 10), *dūsara rāta* 'second night' (p. 10), *dūsara sakhī* 'another friend' (p. 116), *dūsara*, *tīsara*, *cauthā* 'second, third, fourth' (p. 71), *dusarẽ tisarẽ cauthẽ bana* 'in the second, third, fourth forest' (p. 27), *cauthẽ khaṇḍa* 'in the fourth part' (p. 15), *pācaẽ*, *chaṭaẽ*, *sataẽ bana* 'in the fifth, sixth, seventh forest' (p. 28), *dasaĩ dvāra na khōlata kōī* 'no one opens the tenth door' (p. 46), *akasara* 'alone' (p. 51), *dūjẽ* 'a second time' (p. 59), *duija kai candū* 'the moon of the second date' (p. 38).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 230. The ordinal numbers in Lakhīmpurī, have two genders, masculine and feminine, like the adjective. Cardinal numbers five and onwards from seven form their ordinals by adding **-ʌwãɪ** (masculine) or **-ʌĩɪ** (**-wãɪ** and **-ĩɪ** if the number ends in **-aɪ**), *e.g.*, **pãɪc** : **pÃcʌwãɪ** : **pÃcʌĩɪ, baɪis** : **bʌisʌwãɪ** : **bʌisʌĩɪ.**

Note.—11th to 18th, however, insert a short **-ɦ-** in the termination, *e.g.*, **gɛɪraɪ** : **gerʌɦwãɪ** : **gerʌɦĩɪ**

All the other dialects form the ordinals like Lakhīmpurī. Fy., however, does not add **-ɦ-** in 11th and 12th, and B. and G. add **-ɦʌ** before **-wãɪ** (**gerʌɦʌwãɪ**).

(*a*) Lakhīmpurī forms other ordinals as below :

1st **pʌɦil,** 2nd **dɔɪsʌr,** 3rd **tiɪsʌr**, 4th **cʌuth**, 6th **chʌʈɪhaɪ** and their feminines like ordinary adjectives (§ 218).

Fy. has an ordinary form for the 1st (**ekʌwaɪ** : **ekʌiɪ**) and the 6th also (**chʌʈhʌwãɪ** : **chʌʈhʌĩɪ**). For 2nd

[1] E. Greaves : Grammar of the Ramayan, p. 17.

and 3rd it has **dusʌrkaɪ** and **tisʌrkaɪ** (**dusʌrkiɪ** and **tisʌrkiɪ**). Similarly R., Br., P. and Sl.

(*b*) The dates of the Saṃvat era have the semi-tatsama forms (**duiɟ, tiɪɟ, cʌuthi, pʌɲcimiɪ chʌʈhi, sʌtɪimiɪ, ʌʈɪimiɪ, nʌumiɪ, dʌsmiɪ** etc.) as contrasted with those of the Muslim and Christian eras where the ordinary forms are used, *e.g.*, **satʌ̃ɪ** '7th day of Muharram'.

(*c*) The order of sons and daughters (1st son, 2nd son etc.) is generally expressed by the following words:

eldest	**bʌɽaɪ**	:	**bʌɽiɪ**
2nd	**mãɪɟfiil**	:	**mʌ̃ɟfiilʌkiɪ**
3rd	**sʌɲɟfiil**	:	**sʌ̃ɟfiilʌkiɪ**
youngest	**choɪʈ**	:	**choʈəkiɪ**

Multiplicatives Etc.

§ 231. Awadhi does not possess special numerals of the type of twice or thrice etc. The sense is, however, given by some word expressive of time usually, for instance, **daɪĩ** or **daɪũ** in Lakhīmpurī and R., **phɛɪraɪ, baɪr, baɪɟiɪ, daɪĩ, daɪũ, berijaɪ** in Fy., **bɛɪr, dɛ̃ɪũ** in B. and **baɪɟiɪ, dʌwʌr, dʌphɛɪ** in G. Twice is thus resolved to 'two times' **dui daɪĩ**; thrice to 'three times' **tiɪni̯ daɪĩ**. For example:

hʌm sʌb ɟʌnɛɪ din bʃʌre mə ɛɪkʌi dui daɪĩ khaɪiti̯ hʌi, saɪfieb loɪg tʌu pɛ̃ɪc pɛ̃ɪc chʌcɪhaɪ daɪũ ʈipʌn uʈaɪwʌti̯ hʌĩ 'we eat our food only once or twice a day while the Sahebs eat tiffin five or six times'.

(*a*) The following words are used for the multiplication tables, in Lakhīmpurī:—

ekɪʌn 'once', **duɪniɪ** 'twice', **tijãɪ** 'thrice', **cʌkɪuɪ** 'four times', **pʌɲcɛɪ** 'five times', **chʌkaɪ** 'six times', **sʌtɛɪ** 'seven times', **ʌʈhe** 'eight times', **nʌwãɪ** 'nine times', **dʌsaɪwʌn** 'ten times'.

Other dialects use similar words. For instance, Fy. has: **duɪniɪ, tijaɪĩɪ** or **tiɪʌkɪaɪ, cʌuk, pʌɲɟɛɪ pʌcɛɪ, chaɪk, nʌwãɪĩɪ, dʌfiaɪĩɪ.**

(*b*) For expressing the idea of 'double', 'treble', etc., the word **-gunaɪ** is added to two, three etc., *e.g.*, **dugunaɪ** 'double', **tigunaɪ** 'treble', **cʌugunaɪ** 'four times'. R. adds **-gun**, *e.g.*, **dugun.**

Tulsī—*cauguna cāu* 'four-fold enthusiasm' (p. 177).

(*c*) The following are the most common fractional numerals :—

¼ **pʌuwaɪ**	or **paɪu**	¾	**pʌun**
½ **ʌdɪfiaɪ**	or **aɪdfiaɪ**	1¼	**sʌwaɪu** or **sʌwʌijaɪ**
1½ **ɖeɪʈfi**	or **ɖeuʈfi**	2½	**ʌʈfiaɪiɪ** or **ʌʈfiʌijaɪ**

Tulsī—*pahara arhāī* 'for 2½ watches of the day' (p. 266).

C. Origin

§ 232. The history of IA numerals has been fully discussed by Bloch (Langue Marathe §§ 211-226) and Chatterji (§§ 511-536). Awadhi numerals do not present any special peculiarities. The following points, however, may be noted :—

(*a*) Cardinals—11 (Br. **egjaɪraɪ**, P. **egɪjaɪraɪ**) in some dialects preserves the original initial *e* while in others it has been lost (Lmp. **geɪraɪ**) leaving only an influence on the vowel of the second syllable (*ekā—*).

16 (Fy. **soɪrʌs**) is queer on account of the final **-s** which appears to be a recent influence of Sanskrit.

19 (Lmp. **onʌis**) while **-k-** is preserved in 21, 31 etc., it has been softened to **-g-** in 11, but entirely lost in 19, 29, 39 etc. It appears in some Rājasthānī dialects (*e.g.*, Mālvī) where the forms are **gunɪiɪs guntiɪs** and **guncaɪliɪs.** 43 R. **tirtaɪlis** is curious and is recent.

91—99 **-ʌjeɪ** forms are recent.

The help-words **ʈhʌĩ, ʈhʌur** and **ʈhi** (< *sthā*—?) are modern devices to give additional force to the number expressed. I have noticed no form in Early Awadhi.

(*b*) Ordinals—the terminations **-wãɪ** and **-ĩɪ** are corresponding to *-ma*, *-mī* of Sanskrit in the ordinary ordinals.

pʌfiil < *paḍhilla prath-illa*, **cʌuth** < *caturtha*, **chʌʈɪhaɪ** < *saṣṭhaka*, while **doɪsʌr** and **tiɪsʌr** have an affix *-sar* (Chatterji, p. 700)—Cf. **ekəsʌr** 'all alone'.

mɑ̃ɪɟfiil < M I *majjha* plus *-illa* and **sʌɲɟfiil**[1] appears to be on its analogy.

[1] This has had the contamination with Persian *seh* 'three' also, most probably. Professor S.K. Chatterji communicates a derivation (suggested by Mr. B. C. Mazumdar) on the analogy of Oriya which is said to have a form *sāna mājha* 'third' —Bengali *sājhuā* > *sejo* where *sāna* < *saṇha* < *ślakṣṇa* 'small' + *mājha* < *madhya* 'middle'. **sʌɳɟfiil** would then be a contracted form from *sāna*+*mājh*—.

CHAPTER IV

PRONOUNS

Introductory

§ 233. As shown below (§ 269) the postpositions are employed oftener with pronouns than with nouns, because the pronouns being used very often and, generally speaking, occupying a comparatively unimportant and meaningless part in speech, become weak both phonetically and semantically. There is thus a quicker disintegration of pronouns than that of nouns and there is consequently a rebuilding and a great variety of forms. Even at the Prakrit stage we find a large number of forms of the various pronouns (see Pischel § 415 for instances of the pronoun of the first person, Bloch § 207). Some of these, doubtless, existed from OIA times.

In the case of all the pronouns we find that the initial sound has subsisted in spite of disintegration and remodelling. Similarly pronouns which have only one syllable (*kō* etc.) have subsisted. This is quite in accordance with the principle of frequent use, *viz.*, that the important element of words of frequent occurrence survives because it is fixed up in the mind.

First Person Pronoun

A. Early Awadhi

§ 234. The texts have the following forms :—

	sg.	pl.
direct	*maï* (also *haũ*)	*hama*

	sg.	pl.
oblique	*mō*, *mohẽ* (*mohi*)	*ham*, *hamahẽ* (*hamaĩ*)
genitive adjective	*mōra*	*hamāra*

(*a*) The direct case is employed as the subject. In Jāyasī *haũ* is as frequently found in use as *maĩ*, *e.g.*, *haũ jāũ* 'I go' (p. 90), *haũ mānusa* 'I am a man' (p. 92), *haũ lōni* 'I am charming' (p. 134), *haũ āwā* 'I came'. *maĩ* is generally used as the subject of past-participle or future-participle verbs, *e.g.*, *maĩ pāī* 'I got' (p. 26), *maĩ sukha dēkhā* 'I experienced happiness' (p. 90), *maĩ p̃aiṭhaba* 'I shall enter', *maĩ jāba* 'I shall go'. But there are a few cases where it stands as the subject of other verbs also, *e.g.*, *maĩ ravaũ* 'I live in enjoyment' (p. 131), *jaũ lagi maĩ phiri āũ* 'until I come back' (p. 88). In Tulsī *maĩ* is the usual form and is used as the subject, *e.g.*, *maĩ kari prīti parīchā dēkhī* 'I have tested his affection' (p. 163), *karui maĩ māī* 'O mother! bitter am I' (p. 163), *maĩ ḍerāũ* 'I am afraid' (p. 164), *maĩ lēbā* 'I shall take' (p. 197). In two instances (*hō-hũ kahāwata* 'I also allow to be said' (p. 17), *nātha haũ tyāgī* 'my lord has abandoned me' (p. 354), however, *haũ* has been used. In an emphatic form (*mahẽ sakala anaratha kara mūlā* 'I alone am the root-cause of all evil', p. 259) the form *maĩ* has become *ma-*. In Nūr Muhammad *maĩ* is used always, *e.g.*, *likhanī maĩ līnhā* 'I have taken up the pen' (p. 4), *haũ maĩ* 'I am' (p. 4), *maĩ hōũ* 'I become' (p. 21), *maĩ bōlaũ* 'I speak' (p. 110).

In all the three texts *hama* is used as the subject of the verb in plural number, *e.g.*, Jāyasī: *hama tau buddhi gavāī* 'we lost our power of thinking' (p. 113), *hama nicinta* 'I was care-free' (p. 116), *hama gavanaba kālī* 'we shall go to-morrow' (p. 96), *kita hama* 'where shall we be' (p. 96); Tulsī: *sēvaka hama* 'we the servants' (p. 167), *nātha sanātha bhaē hama āju* 'Lord! we have to-day been endowed with a protector' (p. 209); Nūr Muhammad: *hama nā rahē karabalā*

ṭhāī 'I was not in Karbalā' (p. 3), *hama kehi kārana karaba sīgārā* 'why shall we decorate ourselves?' (p. 25), *ōṣada milana kahā hama jāhī* 'I go to seek for the remedy' (p. 72).

(*b*) The oblique stands for all case-relations except the Nominative. In Jāyasī *mō* is used with postpositions (*e.g.*, *mō kahā* 'to me', p. 137, *kō sari mō saũ pāvaī* 'who can gain an equality with me', p. 83) and *mohī* without postpositions (*e.g.*, *tei mohī pantha dīnha ūjiārā*, 'He gave to me a well-lighted path', p. 24, *dēsa dēsa kē bara mohi āvahī* 'suitors of every country come for me', p. 87, *hīrāmani mohī nāũ* 'Hīrāmani is my name', p. 131, *taba guna mōhī ahā* 'then there was merit in me', p. 124).

In Tulsī *mō* is used with postpositions (*e.g.*, *mō para* 'on me', p. 163, *mō kahā* 'to me', p. 183) and *mohī* with or without postpositions (*e.g.*, *mohi sana* 'from me', p. 164, *mohi pāhī* 'to me', p. 166, *jehi bidhi mōhī* 'as to me', p. 158, *pramudita mōhi kaheu guru* 'the preceptor gladly told me', p. 158, *mōhi achata* 'while I live', p. 159). In one instance *mohi* appears as *muhi*.

In Nūr Muhammad *mō* is generally used with postpositions (*e.g.*, *mõ kã̄* 'to me', *mō mahā* 'in me', p. 11, *mō kahā* 'to me', p. 21, *mō sẽ* 'from me', p. 107, *mō kaī* 'of me', p. 57) but in two cases without postpositions (*mō mana basā* 'has resided in my mind,' p. 24, *bhāvara na mō tana ḍaṃka lagāvai* 'the bee does not sting my body' p. 56); *mohi* is used without postpositions (*e.g.*, *mohi bibēka kuchu nāhī* 'no discrimination is in me', p. 4, *būjhi mohī parā* 'was realised by me' p. 5, *sūjhi parā mohī* 'was visible to me', p. 3, *mohi pāra utārō* 'take me across', p. 2, *mohi karanī kō* 'with me the sailor', p. 2, *dayā dṛiṣṭi mohi ūpara ḍārō* 'cast the glance of mercy on me', p. 2). In one instance (*mahi ghāyala kahā* 'to me the wounded person', p. 108) the form of *mohī* appears as *mahi*.

hama as an oblique case is used in Jāyasī both with or without postpositions, *e.g.*, *hama kā* 'to us' (p. 261), *hama*

taṟ kōi na āgari rūpā 'no one is superior to me in beauty' (p. 254); *dēha dēha hama lāgu anaṅgā* 'Cupid is sticking to every limb of mine' (p. 87), *gaī hama āū* 'our life has been spent' (p. 112). It is used with postpositions in Tulsī, *e.g.*, *hama para rōṣū* 'anger on me' (p. 120). Only one example is found without postposition: *tajī rāma hama* 'Rāma has abandoned us' (p. 191). Nūr Muhammad employs it with postpositions, *e.g.*, *hama kahā* 'to me' (p. 2), *hama tẽ* 'from me' (p. 38), *hama sõ* 'with me' (p. 64).

hamahṟ (*hamaṟ* in N.) is used without postpositions in all the texts, *e.g.*, Jāyasī: *hamahṟ lōbha* 'owing to our greed' (p. 116), *hamahṟ garaba* 'owing to our pride' (p. 116), *aba kō hamahṟ karī bhōginī* 'who will make me an enjoyer (of objects), (p. 254); Tulsī: *hamahi kā hānī* 'what harm to me' (p. 163), *dēihi hamahṟ sajāī* 'will give me punishment' (p. 165), *dēu yaha hamahṟ* 'give this to us' (p. 166); Nūr Muhammad: *deihai bahuta hamaṟ asa cērī* 'will give many maids like us' (p. 57), *hamaṟ tuma cīnhā* 'you recognised (took) me' (p. 83).

(*c*) The genitive adjectives *mōra* 'my' and *hamāra* 'our' are used in all the three texts and modify their forms for case and gender. For instance:

mōra Jāyasī: *jōbana mōra* 'my youth' (p. 87), *hṟchā bhai mōrī* 'I had a wish' (p. 396), *hṟchā pūjai mōri* 'my wish may be fulfilled' (p. 370), *puravahu mōri darasa kai āsā* 'you satisfy my hope for sight' (p. 370), *pitā ki āyasu māthaṟ mōrē* 'father's order is on my forehead' (p. 89), *sēvā mōra* 'my service' (p. 614).

Tulsī: *mōra mana chōbhā* 'my mind became dejected' (p. 163), *mōrē biraha* 'owing to my separation' (p. 189), *mōrē jāna* 'in my knowledge' (p. 258); *āyasu mōri* 'my order' (p. 181), *dahini ākhi nita pharakai mōrī* 'my right eye always throbs' (p. 165).

Nūr Muhammad: *prabhu āhai mōrā* 'is my master' (p. 24), *kanaka sohāga mōra hari līnhā* 'has robbed me of my

golden prosperity' (p. 25), *pańkha pāya saba mōrē* 'I have wings and feet' (p. 85), *mōrī bairina (gāvahī)* 'my enemies sing' (p. 35).

NOTE 1. In Tulsī and Nūr Muhammad we come across stray forms of the *mērā* adjective which are surely borrowings from another dialect, *e.g.*, Tulsī: *pūrahu sakala manōratha mērē* 'satisfy all my wishes' (p. 10); Nūr Muhammad: *sāthī mērē* 'my companions' (p. 96), *hai thōrī budhi pũjiya mērī* 'I possess very little capital in the shape of wisdom' (p. 4) *iochā mērō* 'my wish' (p. 79).

hamāra Jāyasī: *jiana hamāra* 'life is ours' (p. 50), *pitā hamāra na ākhi lagāvahī* 'my father does not see (p. 87), *kā pũchahu aba jāti hamārī* 'why do you ask (me) about my caste now' (p. 575), *hamarē kahata rahai nahī mānū* 'if you do not believe by my word' (p. 610).

Tulsī: *bacanu hamāra māni* 'having complied with my words' (p. 181), *jē hamāra ari mitra udāsī* 'who are my enemies, friends or are indifferent towards me' (p. 158), *jānati hau basa nāhu hamārē* 'you think the husband is under my control' (p. 163), *bipati hamāri bilōki baṛi* 'having seen our great distress' (p. 162), *baṛi cūka hamārī* 'great is my mistake' (p. 164), *hamārē bayara* 'owing to my enmity' (p. 31), *hamārē bhāyē* 'according to my thinking' (p. 31).

Nūr Muhammad: *jō hamāra dou hātha banāwā* 'who made both my hands' (p. 56), *jānata paragaṭa guputa hamārā* 'he knows our open and secret acts' (p. 1), *hōtai mukuta hamāra* 'I would have my liberation' (p. 16), *tohi dāyā sō mukuta hamārī* 'I shall have my liberation by your favour' (p. 2), *thākī nāva hamāra* 'my boat is done up' (p. 35), *bhīkha hamāra* 'my alms' (p. 79), *baṛī hamārī bhāga* 'great is my luck' (p. 156).

NOTE 2. Like *mōra*, *hamāra* also, in Nūr Muhammad, does not generally change for gender.

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 235. Lakhīmpurī has the following forms :

	sg.	pl.
	mʌi (mʌfii)	**hʌm**
Genitive Adj.	**moɪr**	**hʌmaɪr**

(*a*) There are no separate forms for the dir. and obl. —the same form serves for both, only **mʌfii** is not used as a subject. For instance: **mʌi gʌjeũ** 'I went', **mʌi kaɪ deɪu** or **mʌfii kaɪ deɪu** 'give to me', **hʌm gʌjen** 'we went', **hʌm kaɪ deɪu** 'give to us'.

(*b*) The genitive adjective changes for gender and case like the ordinary adjective, *e.g.*, **moɪr kuɪkur mʌrị̊ gaɪ** 'my dog has died', **moɪrer kuɪkur kə maɪrin** '(they) beat my dog', **moɪrị̊ kutijaɪ mʌrị̊ gʌi** 'my bitch has died', **moɪriɪ kutijʌ kə maɪrin** 'they beat my bitch'. Similarly we have **hʌmaɪr** : **hʌmʌrer, hʌmaɪrị̊** : **hʌmʌriɪ**

(*c*) The forms in other dialects of Modern Awadhi are the same as in Lakhīmpurī. B. and G. specimens give an additional form **hʌmʌi** (emphatic **hʌmɪʌi**) which is used as accusative-dative, *e.g.*, **uɪ hʌmʌi maɪrisị̊** 'he beat me', **uɪ hʌmʌi difiisị̊** 'he gave to me'. Bgh. has **mÃj** and **hʌmfi** and **hʌmfiaɪr.**

(*d*) The singular form of this pronoun is used less frequently than the plural. The latter replaces the former. The Eastern dialects have entirely lost the singular of this pronoun, the plural '**hʌm**' is invariably used as such, *e.g.*, Fy. **hʌm deɪkhʌb** may mean 'I shall see' or 'we shall see' according to the context. When a particularisation is to be made, the plural is indicated by adding **sʌb** or **sʌb keuɪ**, *e.g.*, **hʌm sʌb deɪkhʌb** 'we shall see'.

(*e*) The dialectal difference about the change of gender of adjectives exists in the case of the genitive adjective (see § 219).

(*f*) The pronunciation of **mʌfi** and **moɪr** is generally **mofi (mwʌfi)** and **mwɑɪr** in R., Br., U., part of S. and F. and in Bgh.

C. Origin

§ 237 (*a*) *haũ* is not found in Modern Awadhi but was used in Early Awadhi as is attested by its frequent use in Jāyasī and by sporadic instances in Tulsī. It goes back to the extended form *ahakaṃ* (Chatterji § 538). This pronoun fell in disuse in Awadhi almost as early as Tulsī but is of frequent occurrence in Western Hindi.

(*b*) Modern Awadhi **mʌi**, E. Aw. *maĩ* goes back to Pkt. *maĕ* (Skt. *mayā*). This form is used in Jāyasī mostly in participial constructions which shows its origin from an oblique case. The nasalisation in the Early Awadhi form has been explained by Chatterji (§ 539) by an influence of the regular instrumental affix *-ēna*.

(*c*) Early Aw. *mō* goes back to *mama* (Chatterji § 541) and serves as a general oblique. *mohĩ* is super-imposed oblique form by the addition of *-hĩ*, oblique sg. termination of nouns. Modern Awadhi **mʌfi** should be connected with *mohĩ*, and **moɪr** with *mō* and the genitive postposition *kara*. The *mērā* form would go back to *mō kēra*.

(*d*) Modern Aw. **hʌm**, E. Aw. *hama* is connected with OIA *asmĕ* through Pkt. *amhĕ*, *amha* with the transfer of aspiration to the initial position. Modern **hʌmʌi**, E. Aw. *hamahĩ* is the general oblique form by the addition of *-hĩ*.

hʌmɑɪr, E. Aw. *hamāra* is *hama* plus the postposition *kara*, *kāra*.

Second Person Pronoun

A. Early Awadhi

§ 237.

direct	sg.	pl.
	J. *tũ, tuĩ*	*tumha*
	T. *tū* (*tũ*) *taĩ*	*tumha* (*tuma*)
	N. *taĩ* (*tui*)	*tuma*

oblique	sg.	pl.
	J. *tō*, *tohi*	*tumha*
	T. *tō*, *tohi*	*tumha* (*tuma*)
		tumhahr̃, *tumahr̃*
	N. *tō*, *tohr̃* (*tohi*)	*tumhai*, *tumahi*
genitive adjective		
	J. *tōra* (*tohāra*)	*tumhāra*
	T. *tōra*	*tumhāra*
	N. *tohāra* (*tōra*)	*tumhāra*

(*a*) The direct case comes as the subject. In Jāyasī both *tũ* and *tur̃* are used but the latter is generally the subject of past-participle verbs, *e.g.*, *hīrāmani tũ parāna parēvā* 'O Hīrāmani bird thou art my life-breath' (p. 91), *tũ paṅkhi piārā* 'thou art a dear bird' (p. 92), *ai gosār̃ tũ aisa bidhātā* 'O Master, Thou art such a creator' (p. 107), *dēhi tũ cārā* 'thou givest meal' (p. 107), *tũ suaṭā paṇḍita hatā* 'O parrot, thou wert wise' (p. 113), *tũ bidhi dēhi adhāra* 'O Creator, give (me) support' (p. 122); *tur̃ surańga mūrati vaha kahī* 'thou hast spoken of her, a picture of good colours' (p. 155), *jasa anūpa tur̃ dēkhī* 'as unique as you have seen (her)' (p. 160), *tur̃ rājā kā pahirasi kanthā* 'O king why do you put on rags' (p. 232), *tur̃ dayāla saba kē uparāhr̃* 'thou art compassionate over all' (p. 370). In one case Jāyasī has *tar̃* : *tar̃ hari laṅka harāī kēhari* 'by stealing the middle part of your body—as is shown by its being very thin—thou hast defeated the lion' (p. 551). In Tulsī both *tũ* and *tar̃* have been frequently used as the subject, *e.g.*, *jananī tū jananī bhaī* 'mother!, you have been my mother' (p. 220), *kō tū ahasi* 'who art thou?' (p. 220), *tū chala binaya karasi kara jōrē* 'you are practising false supplication with folded hands', (p. 120); *bhagata tar̃ mōrā* 'thou art my devotee' (p. 74), *tar̃ pālava sr̃cā* 'thou hast watered the twig' (p. 220). In Nūr Muhammad the most common form is *tar̃*, *e.g.*, *mitra tar̃ mērō* 'thou art my friend' (p. 84), *tar̃ jina rahu* 'thou shouldst not remain' (p. 104), *tar̃ na dukhī mana hō* 'do not

be distressed at heart' (p. 128), *taī dhana kalī samā paṭa māhī* 'good woman! thou art like a bud (covered) in cloth' (p. 49), *jā sō magu taī hērā* 'from whom thou hast sought the way' (p. 58), *taī marama na pāvā* 'thou hast not reached the secret' (p. 75). In one case (*lābha ki bāta kahī tui gyānī* 'wise man! thou hast uttered words for my benefit' p. 153) we find *tui*.

tumha is used with the plural verb, *e.g.*, Jāyasī: *pātisāha tumha jagata kē* 'you are the king of the world' (p. 17), *tumha rājā cāhahu sukha pāvā* 'you are a king and want to obtain happiness' (p. 229), *tumha abahī jēia ghara pōī* 'you eat finished (food) at home' (p. 229); Tulsī: *tumha kahahu* 'you should say' (p. 25), *tumha pūchahu* 'you are asking' (p. 164), *rāmapriya tāta tumha* 'dear child, you are dear to Rāma' (p. 223), *milehu rāma tumha* 'Rāma! you have met me' (p. 327), *jā para nātha karahu tumha dāyā* 'on whom, my lord, you are compassionate' (p. 354). In Nūr Muhammad the form of this pronoun is *tuma*, *e.g.*, *sumirehu tuma mōhī* 'you should think of me' (p. 4), *tuma gurū* 'you are the teacher' (p. 20), *tuma kāmini mati-hīnī* 'you are a loving woman, bereft of wisdom' (p. 21).

NOTE.—In Tulsī stray cases of *tuma* are found, *e.g.*, *dēkhahu tuma* 'you see' (p. 351).

(*b*) The oblique stands for all case-relations except the Nominative. In all the texts *tō* is used with post-positions and *tohi* (*tohī*) without them. For instance:

Jāyasī: *aihai bhavāra jo tō kahā jōrā* 'the bee who is the mate for thee will come' (p. 383), *au bidhi rūpa dīnha hai tō kā* 'and the Creator has given you beauty' (p. 466), *tō saū mana lāī* 'having attached his mind with you' (p. 522); *tohi lāyaka bara* 'a bridegroom befitting thee' (p. 87). *karata tohi sēvā* 'while rendering service to thee' (p. 91), *na tohi ḍaru āvā* 'fear did not come to thee' (p. 126).

Tulsī: *sapanehu tō para kōpu na mōhī* 'I have no anger on thee even in dream' (p. 163), *tō sana larata jo sōha* 'who

would like to fight with thee' (p. 380); *sikha dīnhiũ tōhī* 'I have given you advice' (p. 163), *bharata sapatha toh* 'Bharata's swearing by thee' (p. 163), *kahaũ na tōhi* 'I do not tell thee' (p. 165), *jaũ kachu kahaũ kapaṭa kari tōhī* 'if I tell thee anything deceitfully' (p. 167), *tohi sama hitu na mōra saṃsārā* 'nobody is such a well-wisher of mine in this world as thee' (p. 166), *pūchaũ tōhī* 'I ask thee' (p. 25) Nūr Muhammad : *tō sē kō patiyāra* 'what confidence with thee?' (p. 142), *gāṛhī gāṭha parai jahã tōhī* 'wherever you have a difficult point' (p. 4), *tohi dāyā sõ* 'by thy favour' (p. 2), *sunāvaũ tōhī* 'I tell thee' (p. 14), *sūjha būjha nahī tōhi* 'you do not possess insight or wisdom' (p. 21).

oblique *tumha* in Jāyasī is used with or without postpositions, *e.g.*, *ghaṭai tumha āū* 'your span of life becomes smaller' (p. 64), *mai tumha rāja bahuta sukha dēkhā* 'I have experienced great happiness in your rule' (p. 90); *tumha saũ kōi na jītā* 'nobody has won you' (p. 90), *tumha tai* 'from you' (p. 286).

In Tulsī *tumha* (obl.) is used with postpositions, *e.g.*, *dharma sujasa prabhu tuma kaũ* 'lord, virtue and good glory will accrue to you' (p. 90), *tumha kahã bipati bīja bidhi bayeū* 'the Creator would sow the seed of calamity for you' (p. 165), *tumha sana tāta bahuta kā kahaũ* 'why should I speak to (with) you more, dear sir' (p. 194), *rājahī tumha para prēma bisēkhī* 'the king has a great love for (on) you' (p. 164). In one instance (*tuma samāna tumha tāta* 'dear, you are like yourself', p. 276) *tuma* has been used without a postposition.

The accusative-dative form (*tumhahī*, *tumahī*) is used without postpositions, *e.g.*, *tumhahī bidita raghupati-prabhutāī* 'to you the greatness of the Lord of Raghus is well-known' (p. 25), *aba jau tumhahi sutā para nēhū* 'now, if you have affection for your daughter' (p. 35), *cāhata dēna tumhahī yuvarājū* 'wants to give you the title of the crown prince' (p. 161), *tumhahī lei sāthā* 'taking you with me'

(p. 185), *tumahī bolāī* 'having called thee' (p. 238), *tumahī avadhi bhari barī kaṭhināī* 'you have great difficulty throughout the period' (p. 276).

In Nūr Muhammad the oblique *tumhai*, *tumahi* is used without postpositions, *e.g.*, *tumhai...jōga na chājā* 'Yōga is not suitable for you' (p. 21), *jhūṭha kahānī tumahi sunāeu* 'told you a false story' (p. 23), *tumhaī merāihi pīya piyārā* 'will make thy dear beloved meet with thee' (p. 41), *tumhai sapana mõ dēkhaũ tahã* 'I see you there in a dream' (p. 72), *pitā tumhai kārana dukha sahā* 'your father bore unhappiness on your account' (p. 144); with postposition in *tumhai nita* 'for your sake' (p. 72).

(*c*) The genitive adjective changes for gender and case in Jāyasī and Tulsī regularly while only sometimes in Nūr Muhammad.

Jāyasī : *tōra* is the common form (there being only one instance of *tohāra* : *tahã tohāra maī kīnha bakhānū* 'there I gave thy description,' p. 396), *e.g.*, *kā tora purukha* 'what is thy man?' (p. 140), *tōrai gharahi mājha dasa panthā* 'there are ten ways in thy own house' (p. 232), *jehi bidhi asatuti tōri* 'in which way thy praise (should be done)' (p. 370).

Tulsī : *tōra kahā jehi dina phura hōī* 'the day on which thy word will turn out to be true' (p. 163), *karagata vēda tatva saba tōrē* 'all the principles of the Vedas are under your control' (p. 25), *pūjihi nātha anugraha tōrē* 'it will be fulfilled, my lord, by thy favour' (p. 158), *taba dhari jībha kaṛhāvaũ tōrī* 'then I shall get hold of you and will get your tongue cast out' (p. 163).

Nūr Muhammad : *tohāra* (*tehāra*, *tihāra*) form is more common, *e.g.*, *āvana bhaeu tohāra* 'came your arrival' (p. 14), *piya toharā* 'thy husband' (p. 41), *līnhā sarana* (fm.) *tohāra* 'took thy refuge' (p. 32), *prīta* (fm.) *tohāra* 'thy love' (p. 136), *sundara sīla tehārō* 'thy conduct is good' (p. 92), *tehārō binatī* (fm.) *māneũ* 'agreed to your supplication'

(p. 104), *nāma tihārō* 'thy name' (p. 48); *tōra bakhāna* 'thy description' (p. 49), *mukh tōra* 'thy face' (p. 62).

NOTE.—Stray cases of *tērā* forms are also found, *e.g.*, *caracā tērō* 'thy talk' (p. 49), *nihōrā tērō* 'thy kind act' (p. 84), *sēvā tērī* 'thy service' (p. 57), *cēri hōtiũ tērī* 'I would become thy maid' (p. 79).

tumhāra is found in all the three texts.

Jāyasī: *kanta tumhāra marama maī līnhā* 'my beloved, I came to know your reality' (p. 147), *karai tumhārā khōja* 'searches you' (p. 147), *pai tumhāra nahī rōā pasījā* 'but your hair did not become wet' (p. 503), *tumharē darasana lāgi* 'for your sight' (p. 501), *tumharei mā̃ḷapha* 'in your own bower' (p. 460), *mati hīna tumhārī* 'your thought is low' (p. 490), *tumharī jōti* 'by thy light' (p. 551).

Tulsī: *jehi bidhi hōihi parama hita nārada sunahu tumhāra* 'O Narada, the way in which there would be your best good' (p. 60), *bhayeu tumhāra tanaya soi* 'the same has become your son' (p. 159), *sātha tumhārē* 'in your company' (p. 183), *tumharē hṛḍaya* 'in your mind' (p. 179), *tumharehi bhāga* 'by your luck only' (p. 186), *tumhāri mātu baidēhī* 'Sita is your mother' (p. 186), *jari tumhāri caha savati ukhārī* 'your co-wife wants to dig up your root' (p. 164), *haī tumharī sēvā basa rāū* 'the king is under the control of your service' (p. 165).

Nūr Muhammad: *hai sadana tumhārā* 'is your house' (p. 22), *jīu tumhārā* 'your life' (p. 21), *naina tumhārē tasa karaī* 'your eyes may do thus' (p. 62), *jiu sõ niara tumhārē* 'am near you by my life-breath' (p. 76), *prīta tumhārī (hai)* 'your love is', *pai tumharī ā̃khiyā̃ matavārī* 'but your eyes are bewitching' (p. 176), *dōṣa tumhārī ā̃khina kērā* 'the fault is of your eyes' (p. 62), but *bhajana* (masc.) *tumhārī* 'your prayer (p. 72). In one instance the spelling is *tomhārā* (*gulāba tomhārā* 'your rose', p. 37).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 238. Lakhīmpurī has the following forms:

	sg.	pl.
	tui (tuſi)	**tum**
Genitive adj.	**toɪr**	**tumaɪr (tumſiaɪr)**

(*a*) There are no separate forms for the dir. and obl., the same form serves for both, only, **tuſi** is not used as a subject. For example: **tui gʌwaɪ** 'thou went', **tui kaɪ diſieũ** or **tuſi kaɪ diſieũ** '(I) gave to you'; **tum gʌjeu** 'you went', **tum kaɪ diſieũ** 'I gave to you.'

(*b*) The genitive adjective changes for gender and case like the ordinary adjective, *e.g.*, **toɪr kuɪkur mʌrị̊ gaɪ** 'thy dog died', **toɪrɛɪ kuɪkur kə khaɪi kə diſien** '(we) gave (something) to eat to your dog', **toɪrị̊ kutijaɪ mʌrị̊ gʌi** 'thy bitch died', **toɪriɪ kutijʌ kə khaɪi kə diſien** '(we) gave (something) to eat to your bitch'. Similarly, we have **tumaɪr**, obl. **tumʌrɛɪ, tumaɪrị̊** : **tumʌriɪ.**

Sometimes a short aspiration is heard after **-m-** in the case of this adjective.

(*c*) In Lakhīmpurī the singular **(tui)** is used only for the younger, chiefly children and the servants. It expresses either deep affection or contempt. Parents would always address their grown up sons and daughters as **tum** 'you'.

(*d*) The forms of this pronoun in S., L., U., Br. and R. are the same as in Lakhīmpurī, only in U., R., part of S. and L. **toɪr** is pronounced as **twaɪr** and **tui** as **toi.** F. and Bgh. have **tʌ̃j** for Lmp. **tui** and **twaɪr** for **toɪr.** B. for the singular direct has **twʌi** or **tui** and **tuɪ** for the singular oblique while for the plural it has **tum** like Lmp. Bgh. has **tumſi.** G. has **twʌ̃** for the singular but generally uses **tuɪ** for both the numbers and **toſiaɪr** as the genitive adjective. Fy., Sl., P. and A. have only one form **tuɪ** (sometimes **tũɪ** in Fy.) and **toſiaɪr** for both the numbers. For the accusative-dative they have an additional form **toſiʌ̃ (toſiʌ̃j)** which alternates

with **toɪ kaɪ** or **tõñ kaɪ** In these dialects when a specification is necessary **sʌb** is added after this pronoun to indicate the plural, *e.g.*, **tuɪ sʌb, tõñ sʌb kaɪ, toñʌĩ sʌb kaɪ**

(*e*) The dialectal difference about the change of gender of adjectives (see § 219) exists in the case of this genitive adjective also. Only the 1st and 2nd person pronouns have separate adjectival forms in the genitive.

C. Origin

§ 239. (*a*) Modern **tuɪ, tũɪ,** Early *tũ* all go back to forms of *tvam* in Pkt. *tumaṃ* etc. (Pischel § 420).

(*b*) Modern **tui, tʌĩ,** Early *tuĩ*, *taĩ* have parallels in Prakrit and are connected with *tvayā*.

(*c*) Modern **toɪ,** Early *tō* represents OIA *tava* (Chatterji § 549), and Modern **twʌi twʌĩ,** Early *tohi* are oblique forms with *-hĩ*. **toɪr,** *tōra* was *tō* + *kara*, while *tērā* was *tō* + *kēraka*, **toñaɪr** was *tō* + *kāra* with an emphatic *-h-*.

(*d*) *tum*, *tumha* goes back to Pkt. *tumhē*; *tumhahĩ* is the oblique with *-hĩ* and **tumaɪr,** *tumhāra* simply *tumha* + *kāra*.

Third Person, Remote Demonstrative and Correlative Pronoun.

A. Early Awadhi

§ 240.

	sg.	pl.
direct		
J.	*vaha*, *sō*	*vei*, *unha*, *tei*, *tinha*
T.	*sō*	*tē*, *tinha*, *una*, *unha*, *ō*, (*sē*).
N.	*sō*, *vaha*	*sō*, *vai*, *una*
oblique		
J.	*ohi*, *ō*, *tehi*, *tāhi*,*tā*, *tāsu*	*unha*, *tinha*,
T.	*ohi*, *tā*, *tehi*, *tāhi*, *tāsu*	*tinahĩ*, *tinha*, *tinhahĩ*, *unha*, *unhahĩ*
N.	*vā*, *tā*, *vohi* (*vahi*), *tehi*, *tāhi*, *tāsu*	*una*, *tina*, (*tena*), *unhaĩ*, *tinhai*
adjective		
	tauna	

The forms of these three pronouns are so confused together that it is impossible to distinguish one from another.

(*a*) The direct is used as the Nominative or inanimate object.

In Jāyasī *vaha* is generally used as the personal pronoun and as demonstrative while *sō* as the correlative. For instance: *jabahī gharī pūjai vaha mārā* 'as soon as the hour was completed, he would strike' (p. 64), *calā vaha āvā* 'he came near' (p. 112), *nā vaha milā na bēharā* 'neither is he united nor separate' (p. 11), *vaha binauba āgai hoi* 'he will come forward and supplicate' (p. 15). In one instance (*siṅghala-dīpa jāi vaha pāvai* 'by going to the island of Singhala he will obtain her' (p. 118) *vaha* has been used as the direct object; *sō pāvai vaha sīpa* 'he will get that mother of pearl' (p. 50), *sō rahai* 'he will remain' (p. 10), *dūri so niara niara sō dūrī* 'what is far becomes near, what is near becomes far off' (p. 35), *jō vei cahā so kīnhesi* 'what He wanted, He did' (p. 10).

NOTE.—*vaha* is found as *uha* in one case (*dhanapati uhai* 'he alone is rich', p. 7).

In Tulsī *sō* is the form for the direct singular and *tei* as the subject of trans. past. part. verb, *e.g.*, *sō suni tiya risa gayeu sukhāī* 'on hearing of the woman's anger, he became extremely unhappy (lit. dry)' (p. 167), *sō* is also used as the direct inanimate object, *e.g.*, *sō janaba satasaṅga prabhāū* 'take that to be due to the company of the good' (p. 4), *āyasu hōi so karaũ gosāī* 'I should do that which my lord advises' (p. 161), *pīra tei gōī* 'she concealed the pain' (p. 168), *teī kachu kāna na kīnha* 'she did not listen to anything' (p. 177), *gavana tei kīnha* 'he went' (p. 201).

In Nūr Muhammad *vaha* is generally used as the third person or demonstrative pronoun and *sō* as correlative, *e.g.*, *pitā rāja para bhā vaha rājā* 'he became king over the father's kingdom' (p. 7), *sapanē mõ sō hōta hai jau sautukai*

na hōi 'that happens in dream which may never happen in direct perception' (p. 11), *jā mana āi basai jō kōi, tā kahā prāna piyārā sōi* 'he who comes and stays in one's heart, is as dear to one as life-breath' (p. 13).

In Jāyasī, the plural form of this pronoun is used, with plural verb generally and with participial singular transitive verb, *e.g.*, *vei hērahī* 'they see' (p. 49), *vei tō phirē utaru asa pāvā* 'they obtained such an answer and returned' (p. 90), *vei tau uḍē auru bana tākā* 'they flew away and aimed at another forest' (p. 112), *niṭhura tēi jō para māsa khāvā* 'they are cruel who eat others' flesh' (p. 126), *hajarata khvāja khiḍira tei pāē* 'he (respectful plural) met Hazrat Khvājā Khizra' (p. 26), *tei mohī pantha dīnha ūjiārā* 'he (respectful plural) showed me the well-lighted path' (p. 24); *niramara pantha kīnha tinha jinha re diā kichu hātha* 'they have paved a clear way who have given something by (their own) hand' (p. 300); *janu unha jōga tanta aba khēlā* 'it appears that they have played a trick of Yōga now' (p. 431), *nāgaphāsa unha mēlī gīā* 'they have put a serpent-noose on their necks' (p. 538).

In Tulsīdās *tē* and *ō* are the regular direct plural forms while *tinha* and *unha* are used as subjects of transitive participle verbs, *e.g.*, *tē ki sadā saba dina milahī* 'they are found always' (p. 181), *aba tē dina bītē* 'now those days are past' (p. 164), *tē priya tumhahī* 'those are dear to you' (p. 163), *sundara suta janamata bhaī ōū* 'they also brought forth beautiful sons' (p. 85), *rēkha tinha khāīcī* 'they drew a line' (p. 165), *sīsa tinha nāē* 'they bowed their heads' (p. 159), *tinha nija ōra na lāuba bhōrā* 'they will not have any consideration' (p. 5), *citrakētu kara ghara una ghālā* 'he (respectful) destroyed the family of Citrakētu' (p. 38), *chana mahā sakala kaṭaka unha mārā* 'in a moment they destroyed the whole army' (p. 305).

NOTE — In one case *sē* has been used (*sē karata mitāī* 'they befriend', p. 326).

In Nūr Muhammad *sō*, *vai* and *una* are used in the plural without any difference, *e.g.*, *sō rahē āṭha jasa cērē* 'they were like the eight disciples' (p. 11), *āgẽ vai pagu rākhahr* 'they put forward the footstep' (p. 97), *mirtaka rahē jīva una pāē* 'they were dead, they got life' (p. 168).

(*b*) Of the forms of the oblique singular in Jāyasī *ō* and *tā* are always used with postpositions, *e.g.*, *jō dukha sahai hōi sukha ō kā* 'he who bears misery, to him happiness would come' (p. 476), *dēo pūji puni ō pahã āī* 'having worshipped the deity (she) came to him' (p. 501), *rahā na ō saũ dōsari kādhī* 'there was no one with him to give a shoulder' (p. 590), *sō rājā vaha tā kara dēsū* 'he was the king and that was his country' (p. 39), *tā kahã āna hāṭa kita lāhā* 'how can he have a gain in another market' (p. 56), *rōã rōã tanu tā saũ ōdhā* 'every hair of his body was closely connected with her' (p. 577), *baḍahara sō anūpa ati tākē* 'its *baṛahal* fruits were unrivalled' (p. 41). *ohi* and *t hi* are mostly used with postpositions, *e.g.*, *ohi saũ maī pāī jaba karanī* 'when I obtained competence from him' (p. 26), *ohi huta dēkhai pāeũ* 'through him I was able to see' (p. 27), *nā koi hoihai ohi kē rūpā* 'there shall be no one like him' (p. 11), *kīnhesi tehi kahã bahuta birāsū* 'for him he created many objects of enjoyment' (p. 5), *tehi taī adhika* 'more than that' (p. 195), *prathama jōti bidhi tehi kai sājī* 'the creator first created his light' (p. 14), *tehi kara gurū* 'his preceptor' (p. 26), *bīju tehi māhā* 'lightning in that' (p. 2), *tehi para* 'on that' (p. 64). They are used sometimes without postpositions, *e.g.*, *ohi na kāhu kai āsa nirāsā* 'to him there is no hope or despair from anybody' (p. 7), *nā ohi kuṭũba* 'there is no family of his' (p. 10), *tehi sājū* 'his trappings' (p. 5), *tehi prīti* 'owing to his love' (p. 14). *tāhi* is used without a postposition, *e.g.*, *dōsa tāhi jehi sūjha na āgū* 'the defect is his who cannot see before himself' (p. 138), *bāta na pūchī tāhi* 'did not ask him anything'

(p. 507). *tāsu* is used as genitive only, *e.g.*, *janama bhā tāsū* 'his birth came' (p. 81).

NOTE. – At one place *tāū* is used meaning 'her' (*nāgamatī nāgini mati tāū* 'Nāgamatī—her intellect was that of a she-serpent', p. 138).

Tulsīdās uses *tā* always with postpositions and *tehi* mostly with postpositions while *ohi* and *tāhi* without postpositions, for instance:

tā sanu āi kīnha chalu '(he) came and practised deception on (with) him' (p. 286), *tā tẽ* 'owing to that' (p. 164), *tā kahū bibudha nadī baitaranī* 'for him (there is) Baitaranī, the river of the gods' (p. 286), *cāri padāratha karatala tākẽ* 'the four achievements are under his palm' (p. 175), *tehi para* 'above that', *tehi tẽ* 'owing to that' (p. 170), *tehi avasara* 'at that time' (p. 161); *āna bhāti nahī pāvõ ōhī* 'I shall not get her otherwise' (p. 60), *dēu daiu phiri sō phalu ōhī* 'may fate give him that fruit again' (p. 164), *kāhū baiṭhana kahā na ōhī* 'no one asked him to sit down' (p. 286); *ajasa peṭārī tāhi kari* 'having made her an object (box) of infamy' (p. 162), *bhēṭata bharata tāhi ati prītī* 'Bharata embraces him with great affection' (p. 232), *dharama nīti upadēsia tāhī* 'to him should virtue and polity be advised' (p. 185), *bacana bāna sama lāgahī tāhī* 'to her the words struck as arrows' (p. 176). *tāsu* is the genitive, *e.g.*, *bānī savinaya tāsu sohātī* 'humble words of her liking' (p. 169), *tāsu nirādara* 'his disrespect' (p. 174).

In Nūr Muhammad *vā* and *tā* are always used with postpositions, *e.g.*, *sabada bacana amrita rasa vā kẽ* 'the words of his speech are like nectar' (p. 153), *ēkahu bāra na vā kai tākō* 'nobody aims at him even once' (p. 56); *buddhasēna rahu tā kō nāū̃* 'his name was Buddhasēna' (p. 12), *tā mahã lākha bastu kī ḍhērī* 'in that there were heaps of lakhs of things' (p. 9), *rījhā tā para nirpa sarēkhā* 'the handsome king became enamoured of her' (p. 13), *pūcheū tā sõ* 'I asked her' (p. 3). *vohi* (*vahi*) is used with or without postpositions,

e.g., *jāū vohī kē dēsa kahā* 'I am going to her country' (p. 21), *basai mana vōhī* 'the mind takes an abode in her' (p. 43), *vohi ḍōlaṯ saba ḍōlaṯ* 'on her motion every one moves' (p. 46), *vahi darasana kā haū maṯ bhukhā* 'I am hungry for her sight' (p. 28). *tehi* is generally used with postpositions, *e.g.*, *adhara tehi ka jō likhai citērā* 'if the painter paints her lower lip' (p. 13), *tehi nita sādhai jōga* 'for her he will practise Yōga' (p. 7), *tehi māhī̃* 'in that' (p. 8), but *rājakūara tehi rākhā nāū̃* 'his name was fixed up as *Rājakūara*' (p. 7), *puni ānata tehi apanē niyarē* 'then brings him near herself' (p. 10), *rāja doū jaga kō tehi chājā* 'the kingship of both the worlds fits him' (p. 1). *tāhi* is generally used without postpositions and expresses an accusative-dative sense, *e.g.*, *dīnhā rasanā tāhi bakhānō* 'He gave me the tongue that I should praise Him' (p. 1), *raṃcika tāhi na bhāvai* 'not even little appealed to him' (p. 13), but *hōta dharama nita tāhi majhārā* 'virtuous deeds are always done in that' (p. 14). Only a few cases of *tāsu* (genitive) are found, *e.g.*, *tāsu badana* 'her face' (p. 10), *tāsu bakhāna* 'her description' (p. 69).

The plural oblique form *unha* (*una*) has been used with postpositions in all the three texts, *e.g.*, Jāyasī: *taisa cahia puni unha kahā* 'again, to them such (a treatment) should be meted out' (p. 528), *unha kē raṃgā* 'their colours' (p. 70), *nā unha kai vaha rūpa sohāī* 'neither was there her (respectful) beauty' (p. 445), *unha mahā ēka gurū jo kahāvā* 'amongst them there was one, called their teacher' (p. 431); Tulsī: *maṯ unha kara dāsā* 'I am his (respectful) slave' (p. 300), *samujhi parī mohi unha kai karanī* 'I was able to understand his deed' (p. 304); Nūr Muhammad: *una nita māgu saraga sukha bāsū* 'for them always beg for a happy residence in Heaven' (p. 136). The form *tinha*, *tina* (*tena*) is found in Jāyasī both with and without postpositions, *e.g.*, *disiṭa pāpa saba tinha kē bhāgē* 'all their sins were gone by the sight' (p. 425), *tinha mahā* 'in them' (p. 75), *ḍarapahṯ*

rāi dēkhi tinha ṭhāḍhē 'on seeing them standing, kings got frightened' (p. 63), *paduma gandha tinha aṅga basāhī* 'their bodies gave out a fragrance of lotus' (p. 49). In Tulsī and Nūr Muhammad, however, they are seen always with postpositions, for instance, Tulsī: *tinha kē mana mandira basahu* 'reside in their mind-temples' (p. 208), *jē tinha mahũ baya biridha sayānē* 'those amongst them who were older in age and wise' (p. 200), Nūr Muhammad: *pūcheũ tina kara tā sõ nāũ* 'I asked their name' (p. 3), *sō karihai tina kara bistārā* 'he will have their amplification' (p. 69), *lōha phāda tina kē gala hīrē* 'iron-snares will be diamonds on their necks' (p. 141), *cahũ disa tina para bhāvara bhavāhī* 'on all sides the bees hovered on them' (p. 8). The accusative-dative forms *unhahī*, *unhaī* and *tinhahī*, *tinhai* have been used without postpositions by Tulsī and Nūr Muhammad both, *e.g.*, Tulsī: *tasa phalu unhahī dēũ* 'I shall give her (respectful) a similar recompense' (p. 170), *tinhahī suhāi na nagara-banāvā* 'to them the city-decorations did not appeal' (p. 162), *tinhahī bilōki bilōkati dharanī* 'having seen them looks towards the ground' (p. 203), *tinhahī ko mārai binu bhagavantā* 'excepting the Lord, who can kill them' (p. 305); Nūr Muhammad: *aura na kījai unhaī nirāsū* 'and do not make them helpless' (p. 136), *jīu tinhai hai prīta tumhārī* 'your affection is life to them' (p. 51), *tinhai lai āvā* 'brought them' (p. 68).

(*c*) These forms are also used as Remote demonstrative pronouns. For instance:

Direct singular—Jāyasī: *asa vaha suā amōla* 'that parrot is so priceless' (p. 127), *sō pāvai vaha sīpa* 'he will get that mother of pearl' (p. 50), *āi so nārī* 'that woman came' (p. 134), *sō rājā* 'that king' (p. 39); Tulsī: *sō baidēhī sōvati mahī* 'that Sita sleeps on the ground' (p. 193), *soi bharōsa mōrē mana āvā* 'that very assurance came to my mind' (p. 8), *voha sukha* 'that happiness' (p. 85); Nūr Muhammad: *sō dina gayeu* 'that day has passed' (p. 52),

darapana bīca rahī vaha rānī 'that queen was in the mirror' (p. 12), *vō prēmī kahaī* 'that lover says' (p. 6).

Direct plural—Jāyasī: *tehi sira phūla caḍhahṫ vei* 'those flowers are put on that head' (p. 53), *dahū haū lōni ki vei padumanī* 'whether I am handsome or the rival is Padminī' (p. 134); Tulsī: *tē dina bītē* 'those days have passed' (p. 164); Nūr Muhammad: *gavanata haṫ vei lōi* 'those people go' (p. 54).

NOTE.—sg. *vei* and pl. *unha* (*una*), *tinha* are not used as demonstrative pronouns.

Oblique singular—Jāyasī: *ohi jaga bichurahṫ kittu* 'how will they be separated in that world' (p. 31), *ōhī chāha raini hoi āvai* 'by that very shade, night comes up' (p. 40), *tehi nāca* 'in that dance' (p. 60); *jaga kahā jiana dīnha tehi mūṭhī* 'with that hand he gave life to the world' (p. 17), *tā dina byādha bhaeu jiu-lēvā* 'on that day the fowler became the murderer' (p. 116); Tulsī: *tehi avasara āē laṣana* 'at that time Lakshmaṇa came' (p. 161); Nūr Muhammad: *tā mukha kērā* 'of that face' (p. 11), *tā pagu raja kē ūpara* 'on the dust of her feet' (p. 99), *cētā vōhi samai cali āī* 'Cētā came at that time' (p. 69), *jō vahi mukha kō paragaṭa dēkhā* 'he who saw that face clearly' (p. 18), *bhā tehi bacana hutē saṃsārā* 'the Universe was created by that word' (p. 5), *tehi ṭhāṫ* 'in that place' (p. 6).

Oblique plural—Jāyasī: *unha bānahṫ* 'by those arrows' (p. 177), *tinha tālahṫ* 'in those ponds' (p. 50), *tinha purukhanha kahā* 'to those men' (p. 308); Nūr Muhammad: *sapata ahai una ākhina kērī* 'oath of those eyes' (p. 71), *tena sarīra kō cīnhā* 'who recognises those bodies' (p. 59).

NOTE.—*unhahī*, *unhaṫ*, *tinhahṫ*, *tinhaī* are not used as demonstrative pronouns.

(*d*) Instances of the correlative adjective *tauna* 'that' are found in Nūr Muhammad, *e.g.*, *kehi hita āni dharāyeu tauna sunāvahū mōhṫ* 'why did you allow yourself to be

caught tell me that' (p. 88), *siddha hōi apanē gana, sunai anāhada tauna* 'he who hears that Anāhada sound becomes an accomplished being' (p. 121).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 241. Lakhīmpurī has the following forms :

	sg.	pl.
dir. masc.	**uɪ, wʌfiu**	**ui**
,, fem.	**waɪ, wʌfi**	
obl.	**ui, wʌfii**	**un (unfi)**

For instance : **uɪ** or **wʌfiu kʌfiisi̯** 'he said', **waɪ** or **wʌfi kʌfiisi̯** 'she said', **ui kʌfiin** 'they (men or women) said', **ui kaɪ dexkhen** or **wʌfii kaɪ dexkhen** '(we) saw him (her)', **un kaɪ** or **unfi kaɪ dexkhen** '(we) saw them (men or women).'

(*a*) All these forms (excepting obl. pl.) are used as pronominal adjectives also, *e.g.*, **uɪ lʌrikaɪ** or **wʌfiu lʌrikaɪ** 'that boy', **waɪ gaɪi** or **wʌfi gaɪi** 'that cow', **ui** or **wʌfii lʌrikʌ ko** 'to that boy', **ui** or **wʌfii gaɪi ko** 'to that cow', **ui lʌrikaɪ** 'those boys', **ui gaɪiɪ** 'those cows'. The pronominal adjective for obl. pl. also is **ui** (and not **un, unfi**), *e.g.*, **ui lʌrikʌn ko** 'to those boys', **ui gaɪin ko** 'to those cows'.

(*b*) There is considerable dialectal difference with regard to the forms of this pronoun. S., L., Br., R. and U. agree with Lmp. except that in Br., dir. pl. is **wofii** besides **ui**, in R., obl. sg. **wʌi** besides **wʌfii** and **ui** and in U. (as well as in south L.) **wʌfii** is pronounced as **wofii** and there is one more obl. sg. form **ufii**. The dir. sg. masc. is sometimes **woɪ**. In F. masc. and fm. forms coincide in the sg. **wʌfi** or **waɪ** and the obl. sg. is **wʌfii** or **wʌi**. In B. the sg. differs from Lmp. in having no difference of gender or case, **uɪ** being the common form with **ufi** in the obl. sometimes. For instance : **uɪ kʌi** or **ufi kʌi** 'his or her'. G., Fy., Sl., P. and A. do not observe any distinction of gender.

The masc. dir. sg. in all these is **uɪ** (P. has **oɪ** also) and the obl. sg. is **oſi** (G.), **wʌſi**, **oɪ** (Fy.), **wʌſi wʌi** (Sl.), **oſie** (P. and A.). The dir. pl. in G. is **wʌi**, in Fy. **wʌſi**, in Sl. **wʌi**. In P. and A. **pɑ̃ɪc** or **sʌb** is added to the sing. to specify the plural. The obl. pl. is **un** in all the Eastern dialects; only Fy. has **wʌn** and P. (also A.) **on**, **onſi** besides **un**. Besides there is an accusative-dative form **unſiʌi**. Bgh. in the singular has **waɪ** dir. and **woɪ** (**wʌſi**) obl.—and in the plural **ui** dir. and **un**, **unſi** obl.

(*c*) As in Lakhīmpurī, the forms of this pronoun are used as adjectives also in all the dialects. In U. and parts of F. and R. the obl. is used as the subject also of past participle tenses.

(*d*) Remote Demonstrative Pronoun

The third person pronoun is also used as the remote demonstrative pronoun, there being no separate forms for the latter. The forms of this pronoun are used also as the correlative pronoun besides the forms of the correlative pronoun (see § 247).

C. Origin

§ 242. Like other Mod. IA languages we have three varieties of forms, *viz.* (1) *s-* , (2) *t-* and (3) *u-*, *w-* or *o-*. Possibly nowhere else do we find a variety so abundant as here. In Sanskrit there were forms of the Third person pronoun *saḥ*, *tat* etc. (which appear to have combined two pronouns: note *sasmin* in Vedic, Pischel p. 300) and of the Demonstrative pronoun *asau*, *amū* etc. (where also a combination of two pronouns is shown). A distinction of gender was maintained. We find that the distinction of gender is losing ground in the Prakrits. Early Awadhi has already entirely lost it. Of the three varieties of forms

(1) those with initial *s-* are connected with *saḥ* and *sā*, and E. Aw. *sō* (modern **soɪ**) *exactly* represents *saḥ* of

Sanskrit[1]. On account of frequency of use and being a monosyllable it has maintained itself. Its use for the plural is modern (post-Middle-Indian) on the analogy of nouns. *sē*, used as plural only, is on the model of *tē*, *kē*, *yē*.

(2) *t-* pronouns are attested by the variety of forms in the Prakrits. Nominative **taun** goes back to *taṃ* + *uṇa* (< *tat punaḥ*) of the Prakrits, Nom. sg. **tez** in Eastern Awadhī dialects is Māg. Nom. *-ē*, *tehi* is its oblique. *tā* with post-positions was another oblique derived from *tasya*, a later and fresh form of the same is *tāsu*[2] and *tāhi* is the superimposed oblique. Nominative plural *tē* (**tez**) is in line with other pronouns while **tiz** is a new formation. *tei* appears to be the emphatic of *tē*. *tinha*, *tenha*, *tinh*, *tin* are the oblique forms based on the ancient genitive plural *-nām* like nouns.

(3) It is difficult to find the derivation of the pronouns in *u-*, *w-* or *o-*. We have no forms in old Indo-Aryan (except *avōḥ* in R. V., *vide* Chatterji § 572) or in Middle Indo-Aryan which might be called the ancestors of our modern forms. Chatterji observes that the *ava* base, though not attested by literary dialects, must have been current dialectically. It was current in Iranian and Dardic. But it seems a little strange that none of its forms should have been shown by the Prakrits which have such a variety of pronominal forms. Their first use is found in the Apabhraṃśa (Chatterji, p. 837). I should offer another explanation as an alternative. The proximate demonstrative has initially *i-* *e-*; on its analogy the remote demonstrative came to be indicated by forms with *u-* *o-* as the initial sound. Once *this way* of expression is taken into a language, the

[1] Prof. Chatterji, however, thinks that Hin. **soz** < *sau* < *saŏ* < **sa-ka-ḥ*, while Skt. *saḥ* > *sŏ* > *su*.

[2] Prof. Chatterji thinks that *tāsu* and other *-s-* forms are loan-words from literary Apabhraṃśa.

variety of forms would result from an analogy with the forms of the Proximate demonstrative pronoun :

Proximate	Remote
ī	*ū*
ē	*ō*, *vē*
yehu	*wahu*, *ohu*
yā	*wā* (*vā*)
ehi	*ohi*, *wahi*
inha	*unha*

In Modern Awadhi the western dialects observe the distinction of gender just as in adjectives. In Early Awadhi no distinction of gender in pronouns is attested by the texts which all belong to the Eastern Hindi area. The same applies to the Proximate Demonstrative.

Proximate Demonstrative Pronoun

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 243. The forms of this pronoun are generally found in all the three texts as adjectives and seldom as pronouns except in Tulsīdās. The orthography transcribes *ya* and *e* and *ye* separately, but like modern Awadhi, there does not appear to have been any difference in pronunciation in Early Awadhi as well.

		sg.	pl.
direct	J.	*yaha*, *yahu*	
	T.	*yaha*, *yahu*, *eha*, *ehu*	*ē*, *yē*
	N.	*yaha*	*yei*, *yaha*
oblique	J.	*ehi*	
	T.	*ehi*	*inhahī*, *inahī* *inha*
	N.	*ehi*, *yā*	*ina*

(*a*) Direct—Jāyasī : *yaha pachitāu calaũ binu sēvā* ' this is the regret that I am going without having served you ' (p. 90), *kō yaha bāta pitā saũ cālai* ' who can start this talk with father ' (p. 399), *ratanasēna yahu tahã narēsū* ' this

Ratnasēna is a king there' (p. 616). In one instance the form *iha* is found (*tā kara ihai jo khānā pianā* 'this only is his meat and drink', p. 7). *Tulsī*: singular—*yaha suni* 'having heard this' (p. 168), *yaha bicāri* 'having considered this' (p. 179), *yaha bicāru ura āni nṛpa* 'the king having put this thought in his mind' (p. 158), *ēka kahahī yaha bāta alīhā* 'some say that this (thing) is untrue' (p. 176), *mohi sama yahu anubhayeu na dūjē* 'no one else has experienced this as much as I have' (p. 158), *bimala baṃsa yahu anucita ēkū* 'in the untarnished family, this one is improper' (p. 161), *bhayeu punīta āju yahu gēhū* 'this house has become sanctified to-day' (p. 161), *yahu kucāli kachu jāna na kōī* 'this evil machination nobody knew' (p. 166), *eha sudhi pāi prayāga nivāsī* 'inhabitants of Prayāg, on getting this news' (p. 199), *satya kahehu giribhava tanu ēhā* 'you have truly said that this body was born from a mountain' (p. 38), *jadyapi eha samujhata haū nīkē* 'although I understand this well' (p. 226), *bharata bhuāla hōhī ehu sāci* 'Bharata will become a king, this is true' (p. 165), *sakhā parama paramāratha ēhū* 'my friend, this is the best objective' (p. 193); plural—*ēka kahahī ē sahaja suhāē* 'some said: these are naturally beautiful' (p. 204), *ē dōū dasaratha kē ḍhōṭā* 'both of these are the fondled children of Daśaratha' (p. 96), *yē priya sabahī jahā lagi prānī* 'these are dear to all living beings' (p. 94). Nūr Muhammad: *ēka kahā yaha bhā matavārā* 'one said: he has become mad' (p. 62), *gurujana sō yaha binatiya mōrī* 'this is my prayer before the elders' (p. 4), *yei dasa kāmini saṃgī, hai jōgī tohi jōga* 'O yogin, these ten loving women are thy fit companion' (p. 83), *hai hatyāre nayana yaha tērē* 'these, thy eyes, are murderous' (p. 62). In one case the form is *iha* (*ihai agama kō pantha* 'this is the path to the unreached', p. 26).

(*b*) Oblique—Jāyasī: *jei na hāṭa ehi līnha besāhā* 'whoever did not purchase anything in this market' (p. 56), *ehi misa laharai dēi* 'for this reason, sets up waves'

(p. 98), *ehi bana rahata gaī hama āū* 'our life-span has finished up in this forest' (p. 112).

NOTE.—The oblique has been used as inanimate object in several cases, *e.g.*, *ghara paiṭhata pūchaba ehi hārū* 'when I enter the house, they will ask about this necklace' (p. 103), *āvahu ehi bana chāḍi parāhī* 'come let us leave this forest and run away' (p. 112). In an emphatic (inclusive) form we find direct : *ēhū kahā asa mayā karēhū* 'do show favour on this also' (p. 470) and in one case the form is *ei* : *ei bikha-cārai saba budhi ṭhagī* 'this food-poison robbed me of all wisdom' (p. 113).

Tulsīdās : singular—*ehi tẽ adhika dharamu nahī dūjā* 'there is no better virtue than this' (p. 181), *pālava baiṭhi pēḍu ehi kāṭā* 'the tree has been cut by this (her) sitting at the top' (p. 175), *ehi tau rāma lāi ura linhā* 'Rāma himself has embraced this one' (p. 233), *ehi avasara* 'at this time' (p. 160), *ehi pāpinihi sūjhi kā pareū* 'what did this sinner think?' (p. 175). In one case the form is *yehi* (*rāma-pēma-bhājana bharata baṛē na yehi karatūti* 'Bharata was loved by Rāma and was great not on account of this accomplishment' p. 283). In another case the direct *yahu* has been used as oblique (*yahu kula ucita rāma kahā ṭīkā* 'in this family, it is proper to give coronation to Rāma', p. 164); plural—*inha kai dasā na kaheū bakhānī* 'I have not given details of their state' (p. 40), *jani sapanehu inha kē basa hōhū* 'do not be under their control even in dream' (p. 186), *ehu saba bhā inha ākhina āgē* 'all this has occurred before these very eyes' (p. 222), *taru-bara bāsa inhahī bidhi dinhā* 'the Creator gave these, residence under a (good) tree' (p. 204), *inahī haraṣaprada baraṣā ēkā* 'to these the rainy season gives great joy' (p. 320).

Nūr Muhammad: *ehi kārana maī līnheū* 'for this reason, I have taken' (p. 43), *ēhi samujha ḍara mānata jīū* 'understanding this he is afraid at heart' (p. 58). In one case the form is *yēhi* (*rahiyē yēhi nagara bairāgi* 'O yogin, live in this town', p. 3) and in another *ihi* (*ihi kājā* 'for this reason', p. 30), *yā tẽ bhalō na aura* 'nothing is better

than this' (p. 43), *yā tẽ tehi kachu hātha na āvā* 'owing to this he obtained nothing' (p. 60), *yāhī sõ* 'by this very (thing)' (p. 56), *yāhū para* 'even on this' (p. 45), *ina kẽ bīca* 'between these' (p. 3).

NOTE—In a few cases direct *yaha* is found used with an oblique substantive, *e.g.*, *yaha sapanā kī bāta para* 'on this mention of the dream' (p. 11), *yaha jaga mõ* 'in this world' (p. 171).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 244. Lakhīmpurī has the following forms:

	sg.	pl.
dir. masc.	**iu, jʌfiu**	**iz**
„ fem.	**jaz, jʌfi**	
obl.	**iz, efii**	**in, infi.**

For instance: **iu** or **jʌfiu gʌwaz** 'this (man) went', **yaz** or **yʌfi gʌi** 'this (woman) went', **iz hʌ̃** 'these (men or women) are'; **iz kaz** or **efii kaz khʌwazoz** 'feed this (man or woman)', **in** or **infi kaz khʌwazoz** 'feed these (men or women)'.

(*a*) Of the dialects S., L., U. and F. agree with Lmp. Br. and R. have **efiu** masc. dir. sg. and **jaz** fem. dir. sg. and the other cases are the same as in Lmp. Br. has dir. sg. masc. **iu** and dir. pl. as **iz** or **jʌi**, everywhere else it has **iz**. G., Fy., Sl., P. and A. do not observe distinction of gender, the dir. sg. being **iz** everywhere and the obl. sg. **iz** or **jaz** (*e.g.*, Fy. **jʌ kʌre**) **efii** and **ez**. The dir. pl. is **jʌi** (G., Fy., Sl.) and **ez** (P. and A). The obl. pl. is **iz** in G., Fy. and Sl. and **en** in P. and A. Bgh. has **jaz** dir., **jʌfii** or **jaz** obl. sg., **ez, enfi** dir. pl., **jʌn, janfi** obl. pl.

(*b*) In all the dialects the forms of this pronoun are used as adjectives also except that in Lakhīmpurī the dir. pl. is used as the obl. pl. also in adjectival uses. For instance: **iz lʌrikaz ʌzjez** 'these boys came', **iz lʌrikaʌ̃ ko maxrʌu** 'beat these boys'. In U. the obl. pl. is used as

the subject of past participial verbs, *e.g.*, **inſi maɪraɪ** 'these beat (me)', **inſi laɪikʌn hʌm kaɪ maɪraɪ** 'these boys beat us'.

C. ORIGIN

§ 245. Sanskrit had two bases *idam* and *etad*. In Awadhi we do not find any descendants of the former. *yahu*, *ehu* both go back to *ēṣaḥ* and *iu* is further decay of the same form. The existence of *iu* and *ehu* side by side in modern Awadhi can be explained by the difference in time at which their ancestors came into the language—*eso* and *ehu* must have been used side by side. In *yaha*, *eha* and *yā* there is the history of *ēṣā*. *ē* goes back to *ētē*; *yē*, *yei* and **yʌi** also are closely connected with it.

iɪ appears to be a fresh formation. The oblique *inha* (*ina*, *in*) is a regular form from *ī* and *inhaɪ̃* is a superimposed oblique.

Relative and Correlative Pronouns

A. EARLY AWADHI[1]

§ 246.

	sg.	pl.
direct		
	J. *jō*, *jei*	*jei*, *jō*, *jinha*
	T. *jō*, *jehi*	*jē*, *jinha*
	N. *jō*, *jeɪ̃*	*jina* (*jena*)
oblique		
	J. *jā*, *jehi*, *jāsu*	*jinha*
	T. *jā*, *jehi*, *jāhi*, *jāsu*	*jina*, *jinha*, *jinhaɪ̃*, *jinaɪ̃*;
	N. *jā*, *jehi*	*jina*
adjective	*jauna* (*javana*)	

(*a*) Direct singular—In all the three texts *jō* is found as the subject or as inanimate direct object while *jei* (*jehi*) as

[1] The forms of the correlative have been shown above under § 240.

the subject of transitive participle verbs only. For instance:

Jāyasī: *dōsara nāhī jo sarabari pāvā* 'there is no one else who has obtained equality' (p. 8), *marai jo calai gaṅga gati lēī, tehi dina kahã ghaḍī kō dēī* 'he who is going to die and to take the shelter of the Ganges, to him who is it that appoints the auspicious day and the hour?' (p. 242), *jō ḍolāu sō ḍōlā* 'what he moves, moves' (p. 11), *sasi caudasi jō daī savārā, tēhū cāhi rūpa ūjiārā* 'the moon of the 14th date which the Creator has made beautiful—his beauty was brighter than its' (p. 21); *jei mukha dēkhā tei hasā* 'whoever saw the face, laughed' (p. 33), *duhū jaga tarā nāū jei līnhā* 'whoever took (remembered) the name, crossed both the worlds' (p. 15), *jei jiu dīnha* 'who gave life' (p. 2).

Tulsīdās: *baranaū raghubara-bimala-jasu, jō dāyaku phala cāri* 'I describe the untarnished glory of the best of Raghus, which gives the four fruits' (p. 157), *munirāja kara joi joi āyasu hōi . . . bēgi karahu soi sōi* 'whatever be the order of the great sage, quickly obey that' (p. 159), *anna so joi joi bhōjana karaī, soi soi tava āyasu anusaraī* 'whoever eats that food, he will obey your orders' (p. 74), *jō jehi bhāva nīka tehi sōī* 'whatever appears good to one, for him that is good' (p. 5), *baia so lunia lahia jō dīnhā* 'whatever is sown is reaped, whatever is given is obtained' (p. 163), *jehi rāura ati anabhala tākā, soi pāihi ehu phalu paripākā* 'he will obtain the fruit of this who has aimed at your evil' (p. 165), *dīnha hamahī jei lōcana-lāhū* 'who gave to us a gain for our eyes' (p. 205).

Nūr Muhammad: *jō asa bhāria bhāra uṭhāī* 'who lifts such a heavy load' (p. 22), *jō nabha au mahi kō bala harā* 'who robbed the earth and the sky of their strength' (p. 22), *jō baca bhākhai adhara tumhārā* 'which words your lip speaks' (p. 14), *kāḍhai sōī bara jō hōī* 'he who will draw up will be the bridegroom' (p. 17), *jeī nidrā rasanā para līnhā, bandhu mãsa teī bhōjana kīnhā* 'he eats the flesh of his relatives who remains quiet (lit. who takes sleep on his

tongue)' (p. 143), *paṭa bāhara jeṭ pāva pasārā* 'who stretches the feet beyond the cloth' (p. 43).

Direct plural—

Jāyasī : *bhā jaga adala dīna jō āyē* 'on whose accepting the religion, justice was established in the world' (p. 16), *bhae dharamī jei pāḍhata sikhē* 'those who were well-read, became virtuous' (p. 15).

Tulsīdās : *jē* is used with all verbs while *jinha* only with past participle verbs, *e.g.*, *jē nija bhagata nātha tava ahahī* 'O Lord, those who are your own devotees' (p. 67), *jē pura gāva basahṭ maga māhī, tinhahṭ nāga-sura-nagara sihāhī* 'the cities of the *Nāgas* and the gods praise those cities and villages which lay on their way' (p. 201), *jē priya parama kaikaī kērī* 'who were very dear to Kaikēi' (p. 176), *jinha paṭhaē bana bālaka aisē* 'who sent such boys to the forest' (p. 192), *prathama jāi jinha bacana sunāē, bhūṣana basana bhūri tinha pāē* 'Those who first gave the news, they got many ornaments and clothes' (p. 160).

Nūr Muhammad : *jina bina khambha akāsa sāvārā* 'who (respectful) has arranged the sky without pillars' (p. 1), *jena pahirā añjana pahirāvā* 'those (eyes) which have put on the collyrium-clothes' (p. 71).

(*b*) Oblique singular—In all the three texts *jā* has been used always with postpositions. For intance :

Jāyasī : *kīnha sabai asa jā kara* 'whose creation all this is' (p. 2), *jā kahā hōi aisa kanahārā* 'for whom there is such a leader' (p. 24), *jā saū vei hērahṭ cakhu nārī* 'towards whom those women look with their eyes' (p. 49).

Tulsī : *jā tẽ avadha anātha na hōī* 'by which Avadha may not be without a Lord' (p. 194), *sādhu samāja na jā kara lēkhā* 'who is not counted in the assembly of the good' (p. 231).

Nūr Muhammad : *jā kahā karatā darasa dekhāeu* 'to whom, O Lord, you showed yourself' (p. 2), *kīnhā dina kāraja hai jā sō* 'He has created day, by which action is

possible' (p. 1), *jā kẽ hiẽ larika budhi hōī* 'who has childish thoughts in his mind' (p. 4).

jehi in Jāyasī is found both with and without postpositions while in Tulsī and Nūr Muhammad it is generally found with postpositions, *e.g.*, Jāyasī: *kīnhesi amī jiai jehi pāī* 'He created nectar by obtaining which one is enlivened' (p. 6), *kīnhesi daraba garaba jehi hōī* 'he created wealth by which one has pride' (p. 5), *ādihu anta rāja jehi chājā* 'whose rule is grand from beginning to end' (p. 8), *sō pai marama jānu jehi nāhī* 'he only knows the value (secret) who has not (got them)' (p. 12), *calai utāila jehi kara khēvā* 'whose paddling (of the oars) is very rapid' (p. 26). *jehi kai asa panihārī sō rānī kehi rūpa* 'what beauty must that queen have, whose water-carriers are such' (p. 49), *dīnhesi kaṇṭha bōli jehi māhā* 'He has given a throat in which there is speech' (p. 12); Tulsīdas: *soi saba bhāti mōra hitakārī jehi tẽ rahai bhuāla sukhārī* 'he is in every way my benefactor with whom the king remains happy' (p. 188), *jehī na hōhī dukha dīna* 'by which (my mothers) are not distressed by misery' (p. 189); Nūr Muhammad: *jehi ka prēma mahā hiyā* 'whose heart is in love' (p. 6), *jehi dēkheū nisa māha* 'whom I saw at night' (p. 12).

NOTE.—Both in Tulsīdās and in Nūr Muhammad *jā* and *jehi* are found used as adjectives, *e.g.*, *jā mana jāmā prēma rasa* 'in which mind love-sentiment has taken a root' (N. p. 6), *jā dina prēma hākārai āvā* 'on which day, love comes to call' (N. p. 24), *jehi jehi jōni karama basa bhramahī* 'in whichever birth we have to roam according to our *karma*, (T. p. 166), *tōra kahā phura jā dina hōī* 'your word will turn out to be true on which day' (T. p. 163), *jehi ṭhāū* 'at which place' (N. p. 2). *jehi rānī kara'* of which queen' (N. p. 20).

jāhi and *jāsu* are used without postpositions, the former in the sense of accusative-dative and the latter of genitive, *e.g.*, *aribasa daiva jiāvai jāhī*, 'whom fate keeps alive under the enemy' (T. p. 165), *jāhi dīna para nēha* 'who has affection

for the poor' (T. p. 3), *jāhi dharahī muni dhyāna* 'whom the sages keep in mind' (T. p. 55); *barābhā ḍarai catura-mukha jāsū* 'Brahmā who has four faces is afraid' (J. p. 587), *jāsu bhajana binu jarani na jāī* 'without the prayer of whom, the fire (anguish) is not removed' (T. p. 159).

NOTE.—In one case the form is *jisu*: (*saba sidhi sulabha japata jisu nāmū*, 'by meditating upon his (whose) name all the accomplishments become easy' (T. p. 52).

Oblique plural—*jinha* (*jina*) is used with postpositions while accusative-dative *jinhahī* (*jinahī*) without postpositions, *e.g.*, *dara nisāna saba jinha kē bājā* 'at whose doors the military music always played' (J. p. 72), *para hita-hāni lābha jinha kērē* 'for whom gain consists in others' loss' (T. p. 4), *para hita ghṛta jinha kē mana mākhī* 'whose minds are like flies in the butter in the shape of others' good' (T. p. 4), *kahā bahuta jena kī mati phērī* 'turned their thoughts by saying a great deal' (N. p. 100); *rāma carana-paṅkaja priya jinhahī* 'to whom the lotus-feet of Rāma are dear' (T. p. 190), *sumirata jinahī rāma mana māhī* 'whom Rāma remembers in his mind' (T. p. 242).

(c) The relative adjective *jauna* (*javana*) 'which' is found in the texts and changes for gender, *e.g.*, *jaunahi bhāti* 'in whichever way' (J. p. 297), *bañcchu mōhi javani dhari dēhā, soi tanu dharahu* 'take that body having put on which you have deceived me' (T. p. 62).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 247. Lakhīmpurī has the following forms:

	sg.	pl.
Relative.		
dir.	**jo1, jAun**	**jo1, jAun, ji1**
obl.	**ji1, jefi**	**jin, jinfi**
Correlative		
dir.	**so1, tAun**	**so1, tAun, ti1**
obl.	**ti1, tefi**	**tin, tinfi**

For instance : **ɟoɪ** or **ɟʌun ɟʌis kʌriɪ soɪ** or **tʌun tʌis paɪiɪ** 'as one will do so one will get', **ɟoɪ** or **ɟʌun** or **ɟiɪ ɟʌiflʌ̃ soɪ** or **tʌun** or **tiɪ maɪrụ khʌiflʌ̃** 'those who will go will be beaten'; **ɟiɪ kaɪ** or **ɟefli kaɪ bolaɪoɪ tiɪ kaɪ** or **tefli kaɪ khaɪi ko deɪu** 'give (something) to eat to him (or her) whom you call', **ɟin kaɪ** or **ɟinfl kaɪ bolaɪoɪ tin kaɪ** or **tinfl kaɪ khaɪi ko deɪu** 'give them (something) to eat whom you invite'.

(*a*) Of the dialects S., L., U. and F. agree with Lmp.; in B., R. and Br. **ɟefli** only is used as obl. sg. and **ɟeɪ** instead of **ɟiɪ** in the dir. pl.; similarly in the correlative **tefli** and **teɪ**. Of the Eastern dialects G. has commonly **ɟʌun : tʌun** and **ɟeɪ : teɪ** for both the numbers in the direct and **ɟeɪ, ɟefli, teɪ, tefli** sg. and **ɟenfl, tenfl** in the obl. Similarly, Fy. and Sl. have **ɟeɪ, seɪ** very commonly and **ɟʌun, tʌun** rarely. P. has

	sg.	pl.
dir.	**ɟoɪ, ɟʌwʌn**	**ɟoɪ, ɟʌwʌn, ɟeɪ**
obl.	**ɟeɪ, ɟefli**	**ɟen**
dir.	**tʌwʌn**	**tʌwʌn**
obl.	**teɪ, tʌwʌneɪ**	**tʌwʌnen**

Similarly, A. Br., R. and Fy. have an accusative-dative case in the plural **ɟinflʌi, tinflʌi**. Bgh. has **ɟʌun tʌun** dir. and **ɟjʌfli tjʌfli** obl. sg. and **ɟjʌnfl** for dir. and obl. plural.

(*b*) The forms of the Third Person pronoun are freely used in place of those of the Correlative, *e.g.*, **ɟʌun, uɪ**.

(*c*) In all the dialects the forms of this pronoun are used as pronominal adjective also. Such dialects as have a change in adjectives for gender (see § 219) change this adjective also, *e.g.*, Lakhīmpurī **ɟʌuni̯ lʌũɽijaɪ : ɟʌuniɪ lʌũɽijaɪ** etc. In Lmp. **ɟiɪ : tiɪ** are commoner than **ɟin ɟinfl : tin tinfl** while in R. the latter are commoner than the former.

Of the Eastern dialects G. and P. report change of gender in the case of this adjective, G. **ɟʌuniɪ : tʌuniɪ**, P. **ɟʌwniɪ : tʌwniɪ**.

C. ORIGIN

§ 248. The initial sound of this pronoun is *j*-Skt. *y*- of ancient relative. **जो** (*jō*) represents Skt. *yaḥ*, Pkt. *jō* while **जे** (sing.) is the Māg. Nominative sg. **जउन** (*jauna*) represents *yaḥ punaḥ* (Chatterji, p. 842) which was regarded in Middle Indian as one group. *yaḥ* maintains itself as *jō* being a monosyllable while *yaḥ punaḥ* has disintegration first into *ja uṇa* and then into *jauna*, **जउन**. The interchange of the vocable *-u-* with *va* through *vu* is a regular feature.

Early Awadhi *jei*, *jehi*, *jeṫ* shown under the direct case are really oblique forms (being used as subject in participial construction) derived as Māg. *jē*+*hi* the regular oblique termination. The other oblique *jā* is *yasya* through *jassu*, *jāsu*, *jāhu*, *jāh*, *jā*. We find *jāsu* used side by side with *jā* —the latter has lost its oblique sense and requires a postposition. *jāhi* should be taken as a superimposed oblique. Modern oblique **जिइ** and pl. dir. **जिइ** are modern formations; the use of *jō* for plural in the texts is modern, on the analogy of nouns; *jē* (dir. pl.) represents Skt. *yē* and *jei* is its emphatic form. *jina*, *jinha*, *jen*, *jenha* are oblique forms of the plural, on the analogy of nouns, based on *-nāṃ* and *jinhahṫ* is a superimposed oblique.

Interrogative Pronoun

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 249.

		sg.	pl.
direct			
	J., T., N.	*kō*, *kei*	*kē*
oblique			
	J., T., N.	*kā*, *kehi*, *kāhi*, (*kāsu*)	
inanimate			
	J., T., N.	*kā*, *kāha*	
adjective			
	J., T., N.	*kavana* (*kauna*)	

(*a*) Direct—*kō* is used with all verbs while *kei* (*kehi*) with past participle verbs only, *e.g.*, *kō pũchai* 'who asks?' (J. p. 123), *kō sari mō saũ pāvaī* 'who can obtain equality

with me?' (J. p. 83), *bharata sarisa priya kō jaga māhi̇̃* 'who is so dear as Bharata in this world?' (T. p. 160), *kō na kusaṅgati pāi nasāī* 'who is it that does not perish when fallen in bad company?' (T. p. 167), *tā kō mūrata kō likhi pārai* 'who can paint her picture?' (N. p. 13), *kō piya tērā* 'who is thy beloved?' (N. p. 58), *kei yaha basata basanta ujārā* 'who has made this flourishing spring desolate?' (J. p. 445), *kei tava nāsā kāna nipātā* 'who has cut your nose and ears?' (T. p. 304), *kei ḍārā* 'who has put?' (N. p. 123).

(*b*) Oblique—*kā* is always used with postpositions, *e.g.*, *kā saũ karaũ barōka* 'with whom shall I perform the engagement ceremony?' (J. p. 83), *asa nārāga dahũ kā kahā rākhē* 'no one knows for whom such oranges have been kept?' (J. p. 201), *kahe na dhyāna dhana kā para dīnhē* 'the lady does not say on whom she has fixed her attention?' (N. p. 36), *mana sō kā kahā sumirai kōū* 'who may remember whom in his mind?' (N. p. 107); *kehi* and *kāhi* are used with or without postpositions, *e.g.*, *dahũ kei jōga daī asi gaḍhī* 'for whom, has the Creator created her fit?' (J. p. 83), *kehi kahā kavāla bigāsā* 'for whom has the lotus bloomed?' (J. p. 183), *gāla karabu kehi kara balu pāī* 'whose support shall I get, to be able to be proud?' (T. p. 163), *nahī jānahũ bāura kehi nēī̃* 'I do not know for whom he is mad?' (N. p. 55); *kahau so pīra kāhi binu khāgā* 'tell us your trouble, without whom are you miserable?' (J. p. 223), *vyaratha kāhi para kījia rōṣū* 'on whom should anger be shown uselessly?' (T. p. 224).

kāsu is genitive, *e.g.*, *kahia hōi bhala kāsu bhalāī* please say, whose good can come about?' (T. p. 261).

(*c*) The inanimate interrogative pronoun is used to denote 'what?'. It is used in the direct, the oblique of the animate serves for the oblique of the inanimate also. For instance: *kā baranaũ* 'what shall I describe?' (J. p. 61), *karaũ kā bhāī* 'hullo! what shall I do?' (T. p. 28), *kā jānai sukha bhōga bhulānā* 'what shall a man who forgets

himself in the enjoyment of happiness, know?' (N. p. 11), *na janaũ kāha hoihi kabilāsā* 'I do not know what shall happen in Kailāsa?' (J. p. 468), *aba dhaũ bidhihi kāha karanīyā* 'what will the Creator do now?' (T. p. 214)

(*d*) The pronouns given above are also used as adjectives, *e.g.*, *kahu kehi rańkahi karaũ narēsū* 'tell me which poor person I shall make a king?' (T. p. 167), *kehi dēsa* 'in which country?' (N. p. 40).

The adjective *kavana* (*kauna*) is very generally used in all the texts. It changes forms for gender in Jāyasī generally and in Tulsīdās always while never in Nūr Muhammad. It changes for case in all the texts. For instance:

Jāyasī: *kaunu utara pāubi* 'what answer shall we have?' (p. 97), *na janaũ kaunu pavana lei āvā* 'God knows which wind has brought (it)?' (p. 104), *kauni mati matī* 'what opinion has been held?' (p. 223), but *kavana bhāti* 'in which way?' (p. 11).

Tulsī: *kāranu kavanu* 'what is the reason?' (p. 172), *kavani bipati baṛi bhārī* 'what great calamity?' (p. 312), *kavani āsā* 'what hope?' (p. 177), *kavanē avasara* 'on what occasion?' (p. 169).

Nūr Muhammad: *kavana pantha taī līnhā* 'what path hast thou taken?' (p. 58), *kavana jāta hai* 'what is thy caste?' (p. 45), *kauna bhalāī* 'what goodness?' (p. 29), *rākhai kaunē māna* 'in which way will (he) keep?' (p. 92).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 250. Lakhīmpurī has the following forms:—

animate

	sg.	pl.
dir.	**koɪ, kʌun**	**koɪ, kʌun**
obl.	**kiɪ, kefi**	**kin, kinfi**

inanimate

dir.	**kaɪ**
obl.	**kaɪfieɪ, kefi**

For instance: **koɪ** or **kʌun aɪwaɪ hʌi** 'who has come?', **huə̃ɪ koɪ** or **kʌun rʌfiʌĩ** 'who were there?', **kiɪ kaɪ** or **kefii kaɪ bolaɪeu** 'whom (sg.) did you call?', **kin kaɪ** or **kinfi kaɪ bolaɪeu** whom (pl.) did you call?'.

(*a*) Of the dialects, S., L. and U. agree with Lmp., F. has obl. sg. as **kʌfii.** B. has obl. sg. as **kefi** and obl. pl. as **kʌun.** Br. dir. is like Lmp., only **kʌun** is pronounced as **kʌuɪn;** obl. sg. is **kefii, kofii** and obl. pl. does not differ from Lmp. In R. obl. sg. is **kʌfii.** All the Eastern dialects have only one form for the dir. sg. and pl. *viz.*, **keɪ;** this is also sometimes used as obl. otherwise **kefii** or **kefi** is used in the sg. and **ken** in the pl. **kʌun** is rarely used in the Eastern dialects, the form in P. being **kʌwʌn.** Bgh. has **kʌun** dir., **kjʌfii** obl. sg. and **kjʌn, kjʌnfi** as both dir. and obl. plural. Inanimate dir. is **kaɪfi,** obl. **kʌiɪ.** In G. the obl. forms **kʌuneɪ, kʌuniɪ** are used.

(*b*) In all the dialects the inanimate dir. 'what?' is **kaɪ.** The obl. differs. Lmp., S., L., U., F., B., Br. have **kaɪfieɪ,** R. **kaɪfieɪ, kʌfii,** G., Fy., Sl., P. and A. have **kefii, kaɪfieɪ, kethuaɪ** and **kethaɪ, kaɪfieɪ** or **kefiaɪ,** *e.g.*, **kethaɪ se bə̃dʌrowʌn ko hə̃ɪkiɪ** 'with what shall I drive the monkeys?'.

(*c*) All the dialects use **kʌun** as the pronominal adjective and modify it according to case and gender (§ 219) as they do in the case of ordinary adjectives. For instance:

Lmp. **kʌuni̯ lʌũɽijaɪ** 'which girl?', **kʌuniɪ lʌũɽijʌ ko** 'to which girl?', **kʌuneɪ lʌrikʌwʌ kə** 'to which boy?', S.E. Sultānpurī: **kʌuneɪ tʌraɪ** 'in which manner?', **kʌuneɪ saɪmaɪn se** 'with what preparation?'.

C. Origin

§ 251. The history of the Interrogative pronoun is closely allied with that of the Relative pronoun, *e.g.*, **koɪ** represents *kaḥ*, **keɪ** < Skt. *kē*; *kei*, *kehi*, are oblique forms, *kā*

is based on *kasya*; *kauna* < Pkt. *ka*+*uṇa*; Mod. **kʌfi** < Early Aw. *kāhi*; **kofi** is absolutely modern.

Here, however, we find that the distinction between animate and inanimate is observed in Modern Awadhi and is attested by Early Awadhi. This is very clear for the direct—animate *kō*, inanimate *kā*. What is the derivation of this *kā*? Skt. had *kiṃ* for the neuter, but that has survived only as *ki* indeclinable. Besides *kā*, Early Aw. has *kāha*. Is this *ha* merely emphatic? The forms **kethaː, kethuaː** and **kaːfleː** also are untraced historically.

Reflexive Pronoun

A. Early Awadhi

§ 252.

direct

J., T. *āpu* (*āpuna*), N. *āpa*

oblique

J., T. *āpu*, *āpuhi*, N. *āpa*, *āpuhī*

adjective

masc. dir. J., T. *āpana*, *āpuna*, *apāna*, N. *āpana*, *apanō*, *āpanō*, *āpunu* (*āpa*), fm. J., T. *āpani*, fm. obl. T., N. *apanī*, *āpanī* masc. obl. J., T. *apanē*, N. *apanē*, *āpanē*, *apānē*,

(*a*) Direct—*e.g.*, *guru hoi āpu kīnha jaga cēlā* 'himself becoming the preceptor, he made the world his pupil' (J. p. 132), *sabahi khiāvai āpu na khāī* 'he feeds all but himself does not eat' (J. p. 7), *rāma jāsu jasa āpu bakhānā* 'whose glory Rāma himself has sung' (T. p. 12), *āpu lasana para baiṭheu jāī* 'himself he went and sat near Lakshmaṇa' (T. p. 192), *līnha vidhavapana apajasu āpū* '(she) herself obtained widowhood and infamy' (T. p. 227), *āpa dharama dēhī hai rājā* 'the king himself is incarnation of Dharma' (N. p. 15), *rājā rahai āpa tehi māhī* 'the king himself lives in that' (N. p. 8).

NOTE 1. Besides being used as a subject, *āpu* is found used as (animate) object also in the following instances: *guni na kōī āpu sarāhā* 'no skilful person praises himself' (J. p. 130), *nindahi āpu sarāhi nisādahī* 'having admired Niṣāda, they censure themselves' (T. p. 236).

NOTE 2. In Tulsī there is one instance of *āpuna* (*āpuna caleu* 'himself went' p. 79).

(*b*) Oblique—*āpu* or *āpa* is used with postpositions while *āpuhi* (*-ī*) without them, *e.g.*, *āpu āpu kahā hōihi* 'every one will be (busy) for one's own self' (J. p. 97), *āpu āpu mahā rōdana karahī* 'weep amongst themselves' (J. p. 113); *jāni āpu para nēhu* 'having known (their) affection for himself (Lakshmaṇa)' (T. p. 211), *bōlē bacana āpa mahā mīṭhē* '(they) spoke sweet words amongst themselves' (N. p. 101), *ēka pāva dē āpa para* 'putting one foot on thyself' (N. p. 51); *risa āpuhi budhi aurahi khāī* 'anger harms self while wisdom another' (J. p. 145), *jō jānai sata āpuhi jārā* 'he who knows the truth, burns himself (his self)' (J. p. 323), *baṛabhāgini āpuhi anumānī* 'having considered themselves very lucky' (T. p. 240), *jaga au āpuhi kasa pahicānō* 'how do I take myself and the world?' (N. p. 3), *cēlā āpuhī jāni* 'having considered myself to be a disciple' (N. p. 21), *āpuhī paragaṭa karai nidānā* 'ultimately (beauty) reveals itself' (N. p. 6).

(*c*) The adjective is frequently used. For instance: Jāyasī: *jō piu āpana kahai so jhūṭhā* 'he who says 'the beloved is mine' is a liar' (p. 144), *āpuna nāhī kayā* 'the body is not one's own' (p. 307), *dōsa apānā* 'the fault is ours' (p. 116), *pahara pahara sō āpani bārī* 'after every watch, every one on one's turn' (p. 64), *kita āuna puni apanē hāthā* 'whence would the coming back be in our hand (control)' (p. 96), *au apanē apanē ghara rājā* 'and (they are) kings in their own houses' (p. 67).

Tulsī: *āpana mōra nīka jō cahahū* 'if you want your own good and mine' (p. 181), *taha puni sambhu samujhi*

pana āpana 'there Śiva considering his vow' (p. 30), *sabahi apana sudhi bhōrī bhaī* 'everyone lost an idea about oneself' (p. 136),. . . *saba āpani karanī* . . . *baranī* 'she described her own action' (p. 220), *jō pāvāru apanī jaṛatāī, tumhahī sugāi* 'the wretched man who suspects you owing to his own ignorance' (p. 229), *kṛpā bhalāī āpanī, nātha kīnha bhala mōra* 'my lord has acted well towards me by his own kindness and goodness' (p. 273), *phirata sanēha magana sukha apanē* '(they) move about imbued with affection and in their own happiness' (p. 15), *apanē calata* 'as far as lay in my power' (p. 165).

Nūr Muhammad : *jaba maī āpana nāma bhulāvaũ* 'when I lose memory of my own name' (p. 25), *kaṭa cāhai apa mahimā, laṭa āpana marajāda* 'the loin wished its greatness while the lock of hair its own respect' (p. 138), *apanō citra citērā dēkhi* ... 'the painter seeing his picture' (p. 71), *dhana jō mitra āpanō cīnhā* 'blessed is he who recognises his friend' (p. 54), *bāta samēṭahu āpunū* 'finish your talk' (p. 24), *apanī apanī āṭa tē* 'with one's own money (in the folds of his cloth)' (p. 9), *āneu apanē gēha* 'brought (her) to his house' (p. 17), *gaī āpanē grēha* 'went to her house' (p. 52), *tohi lai calahũ apānē gāũ* 'shall take you to my village' (p. 102).

NOTE 1. The Sanskrit forms *sva* and *nija* have also been occasionally used.

NOTE 2. *āpusa* (*sakhina matā āpusa mō kīnhā* 'the friends settled amongst themselves', p. 100).

(*d*) Honorific pronouns are not found in Jāyasī or Nūr Muhammad. But we find in Tulsīdās both *āpu*[1] as the honorific pronoun and *rāura* (*rāvara*) as honorific genitive

[1] Greaves (Grammar of the Rāmāyan, p. 15) denies the existence of *āpa* as honorific and rightly criticises Growse's translation of the 2nd Caupāī after Dohā No. 177 on p. 67 of the Rāmāyan, but the instances quoted here do prove the use of *āpu* as honorific.

adjective. For instance: *saba samēta pura dhāria pāū, āpu ihã amarāvati rāū* 'Please step into (enter) the city with all; you are here and the king is in Amarāvatī' (p. 254), *prabhu priya pūjya pitā sama āpū* 'you are just like my father—my master, adorable and dear' (p. 271), *gyāna aṇbu nidhi āpuna ājū* 'you yourself are the ocean of knowledge' (p. 271); *rājana rāura nāma jasa* 'O King, your name and glory' (p. 159), *rāuri māyā* 'your *māyā*' (p. 170), *sarāhana rāvarī* 'your praise' (p. 236), *hita sabahī kara raurē hāthā* 'every one's good is in your hands' (p. 270).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 253.

Apənaɪ

This pronoun expresses a reflexive sense for emphasis and is used with all personal pronouns and with nouns without any change in form, *e.g.*, **raɪm Apənaɪ tʌu bʌn kaɪ cʌleɪ gʌjeɪ dʌsʌrʌth kə roɪwʌi kə gfiʌr chãɪɽi̯ geɪ** 'Rām himself went away to the forest but left Daśaratha at home to lament', **Apənaɪ tʌu khaɪini̯ piini̯** '(he) himself ate and drank', **Apənaɪ tum coraɪeu ʌu hʌm kaɪ coɪriɪ lʌgaɪeu** 'you yourself stole (the money) and attributed the theft to me' **mʌi ʌpənaɪ mʌrʌũ cʌfiʌi ji̯ʌũ tum seɪ kaɪ mʌtlʌbu̯** 'whether I myself die or live what have you to do with me', **ui ʌpənʌ kə bʌfiut bfiʌlaɪ buraɪ kʌfiini̯** 'he rebuked himself very much'.

(*a*) This pronoun also expresses the combined sense of 'you and I' sometimes, *e.g.*, **bfiaɪiɪ ʌpʌnʌ se kaɪ mʌtlʌbu̯** 'my friend, what have we to do with it?'.

(*b*) The form of this pronoun in all the dialects is the same. When the sense of 'all alone by one's self' is to be expressed we have **aɪpui aɪpu̯** in Lmp. and other Western and Central dialects while **ʌpunʌi** in the Eastern dialects.

(*c*) This pronoun is also used as an adjective, *e.g.*, Lmp. **ʌpʌn, ʌpʌni̯, ʌpʌneɪ, ʌpʌniɪ.** In the Eastern dialects

the form is **ɑrpʌn,** *e.g.*, Fy. **ɑrpʌn kitɑrb, ɑrpʌn lʌrikɑr** 'one's book, one's son'.

(*d*) There are no honorific pronouns in Modern Awadhi like Hindustani **ɑrp** or Bihari **rʌuwɑ̃r.** When honour or respect is shown, special care is taken to use the plural pronoun and verb. Sometimes the Hindustani form **ɑrp** is borrowed as **ɑrpṳ.** With this the verb used is that for the second person plural instead of the third person verb or the passive verb of Hindustani. For instance: Lmp. **ɑrpṳ ɑrɛu**, Hindustani **ɑrp ɑrijɛrgɑr** 'please do come', Lmp. **ɑrpṳ ɟɑru,** Hin. **ɑrp ɟɑrijɛr** 'please go'.

In Bgh. owing to the influence of Bhōjpurī **ʌpənɑr** dir. and **ʌpənɛr** obl. are used as honorific pronoun, *e.g.*, **ʌpənɑr mwʌfiĩ bwʌkərʌu bfiʌr nʌfiĩr dirn** 'your honour never gave even a goat to me', **ʌpənɑr kɛrr** 'your honour's'.

C. Origin

§ 254. The forms with *a-* (ʌ-) and *ā-* are all based on Skt. *ātman* which in Mid. Indian came to have two developments *appa* and *atta* (Chatterji § 591). The *-p-* form is found in Awadhi, Early Aw. *āpu* < *appo*. The modern form **ʌpənɑr** is based on the genitive pl. *appāṇaṃ* which is used as an adjective in a variety of forms, but the presence of old Nominative is attested by modern emphatic forms such as **ɑrpui ɑrpu.** The use of *ātman* is also verified by a noun in Awadhi **ʌpɑr** 'selfness'; *āpusa* < *appassa*.

The honorific use of this word is not Awadhi properly. That it was used honorifically in Mid. Indian is shown by the word *attā* 'mother-in-law, a respected lady'. In Early Awadhi we find the honorific adjective *rāura*, *rāvari* etc. This is a borrowing from Bhōjpurī where the pronoun **rʌuɑ̃r** is freely in use. *rāura* is based on *rājan* and has the *-ra* of the postposition *kara*. These forms are distinct from Hin. *rāwal* < *rājakula*.

Indefinite Pronouns

A. Early Awadhi

§ 255. *aura* and its equivalents

direct

aura, *auru* (*aurana* pl. only); *āna*

obl.

aurahi (*aurana* pl. only); *ānahi*

adjective *parā-*

Forms of *aura* 'other' are found in all the three texts. For instance:

Jāyasī: *aura jo hōi so bāura andhā* 'anybody else who be, is mad and blind' (p. 10), *aura jo dīnha jagata mahā* 'whatever else has been given in this world' (p. 8), *aura jo bhūlē āutahi* 'others who have lost (the way) while coming' (p. 16), *budhi aurahi khāī* 'wisdom eats (destroys) another' (p. 145), *kō aura narēsā* 'which other king?' (p. 162), *vei tau uḍē auru bana tākā* 'they flew and aimed at another forest' (p. 112).

Tulsī: *auru karai aparādha kou aura pāu phala bhōgu* 'somebody else commits a fault and another obtains the enjoyment of the fruit (punishment)' (p. 187), *aura karahi kō bharata baṛāī* 'who can give more praise to Bharata', (p. 257), *auraṅ jē hari bhagata sujānā* 'others also who are wise and are devoted to Hari' (p. 18).

Nūr Muhammad: *darasa dēkhi jō jiya tajaũ yātẽ bhalō na aura* 'if having seen (her) I give up life, nothing else will be better than this' (p. 43), *tohi taji aurahi dhyāna na lāvai* 'he will not fix his attention on any one else except you' (p. 62), *aurana kahā calahu vahi vōrā* 'the others said: let us go to that side' (p. 56), *aurana sõ mānuṣa niyarānā* 'the man approached the others' (p. 34).

(*a*) Besides *aura*, forms of *āna* and *parā-* are found in Tulsīdās and Nūr Muhammad, *e.g.*, *āna upāya banihi nahī bātā* 'in any other way, nothing fruitful will result'

(T. p. 190), *sapatha tumhāra bharata kai ānā* '(I take) your oath and another of Bharata' (T. p. 174), *mohi taji ānahi barihi na bhōrẽ* 'she will surely not choose anybody other than me' (T. p. 61), *suni dui bāta āna sõ rānī* 'O queen, after having heard two words from another' (N. p. 62), *daraba jo āna kō* 'another's money' (N. p. 109); *pisuna parāya pāpa kahi dēhĩ* 'backbiters who give out other's sin' (T. p. 222), *munihi mōha mana hātha parāẽ* 'owing to his infatuation, the sage's heart was in other's hands' (T. p. 61), *dēkhi na sakahĩ parāi bibhūtī* 'cannot look at another's prosperity' (T. p. 162), *jaba bhayeu parāvā* 'when it became another's' (N. p. 104).

§ 256. *kōī*

direct animate

kōī, kāhu, kou

oblique

kāhu, kāhi, kehu, kāhuhi

direct inanimate

J. *kichu*, T. *kachu, kichu*, N. *kachu, kichu, kucha*

(*a*) direct animate—In Jāyasī the most common forms are *kōī* and *kāhū*; I have found only two instances of *kōū*. For instance: *na kōī rahā* 'nobody survived' (p. 5), *nā koi hoihai ohi kẽ rūpā* 'nobody will be like him' (p. 11), *asa jaga dāna na kāhū dīnhā* 'no one in the world has given such a gift' (p. 23), *sērasāhi sari pūja na kōū* 'no one has reached the equality of Sher Shah' (p. 23), *nayana bāka sari pūja na kōū* 'the eyes are charming, nothing equals (them)' (p. 174).

In Tulsīdās *kou* is frequently used while *kōī* and *kāhū* are less in use, *e.g.*, *kou nṛpa hōu* 'anybody may become king' (p. 163), *dāru bicāru ki karai kou* 'does any one pay an attention to the wood?' (p. 8), *jasa karai na kōī* 'as nobody does' (p. 177), *kāhu na mohĩ kahi prathama janāvā* 'no one gave me an indication of it before' (p. 175).

In Nūr Muhammad *kou* and *kōī* both are frequently used while *kāhu* is less in use, *e.g.*, *tehi sama kōu na āhi* 'there

is no one like him' (p. 1), *kou ṭhāṛhā hai dhyāna lagāẽ* 'some one is standing with fixed attention' (p. 16), *na kōpehu kōī* 'please do not, any one of you, be angry' (p. 4), *mōtī kāṛha na pārai kōī* 'no one can draw the pearl out' (p. 17), *rasa sugandha kahā chāṛā kāhū* 'some one gave up taste (tasteful meal) and good smell' (p. 12).

(*b*) oblique—In Jāyasī the most general form is *kāhū* which is used with postpositions, *e.g.*, *ohi na kāhu kai āsa nirāsā* 'he has neither hope nor despair from (of) any person' (p. 7), *kōī karai besāhanā kāhū kēra bikāi* 'some one was making a purchase while another's article was selling' (p. 56), *rini kāhū kara līnhesi kāḍhī* 'he borrowed money of some one' (p. 120). *kāhuhi* is used without postpositions, *e.g.*, *kāhuhi bhōga bhuguti sukha sārā* 'to some one enjoyment of objects of pleasure and the best of happiness' (p. 7); there is only one instance of *kāhi* (*bāura karihai kāhi* '(he) will make some one mad' p. 132), and two instances of *kehu*, viz., *koi kehu pāsa āsa kai gavānā* 'some one has gone to some one with hope' (p. 130), *jaū na hōta asa bairī, kehu kāhū kai āsa* 'if there were not such an enemy, would any one have dependence on another?' (p. 129).

In Tulsīdās, only two forms *kāhu* and *kāhuhi* are found, the latter is always found without postpositions while the former is with postpositions except when it comes as accusative, *e.g.*, *kāhuhi dōsa dēhu jani tātā* 'dear (son) do not blame any one' (p. 221), *sanamukha bimukha na kāhuhi kāū* '(it) is not against any one who comes before it' (p. 261), *apanē calata na āju lagi anabhala kāhu ka kīnha* 'as far as I could, I have never done harm to (of) any one till now' (p. 165), *tehi nisi nīda parī nahī kāhū* 'that night, no one had sleep' (p. 172).

In Nūr Muhammad, only *kāhū* is found and it is used with postpositions, *e.g.*, *hai kāhū kō prēma biyōgī* '(he) is lovelorn of somebody' (p. 55), *jaga mõ kāhū sātha* 'with anyone in this world' (p. 81).

(*c*) direct inanimate—For instance, Jāyasī: *katahũ kathā kahai kichu kōī* 'somewhere, some one was reciting a story' (p. 59), *tasa jaga kichũ na pāeũ upama dēũ ohi jōga* 'I have obtained nothing such in this world as could be compared with her' (p. 217);

Tulsī: *kou kichu kahai na kou kichu pūchā* 'no one said anything, nor did anyone ask anything' (p. 252), *kachu jāna na kōī* 'nobody knew anything' (p. 166), *kachu kahaũ* 'I say something' (p. 167);

Nūr Muhammad: *jō kōũ kachu lēvai cāhai* 'if any one wanted to take anything' (p. 9), *kachu na sunāeu bāta* 'did not say a word' (p. 26), *kichu upāya nahi āvai* 'no means have I' (p. 51), *kichu hamāra cintā hai tōhī* 'have you any anxiety for me?' (p. 84), *tapiya kahā rājā kachu sūjhā* 'the hermit said: O king, have you seen anything?' (p. 21).

§ 257. *saba*

direct

saba

oblique

saba, sabahi

(*a*) direct—*maṅgala kalasa sajana saba lāgī* 'all began to arrange the auspicious *kalaśas* (jars)' (T. p. 160), *nṛpa saba rahahī kṛpā abhilāṣē* 'all the kings remain desirous of his favour' (T. p. 158), *saba sumirata hai tāhi* 'all that remembers him' (N. p. 1), *rasanā hōi rōma saba mōhī* 'if all my hair becomes tongue' (N. p. 2), *sabu pāyeũ* 'obtained all' (T. p. 158), *karateũ jiu tana mana saba vārana* 'I would have sacrificed all—life, body and mind' (N. p. 3).

(*b*) oblique—in Jāyasī the oblique is found used with postpositions except *sabahi* used as accusative-dative, *e.g.*, *saba kaha bhuguti rāti dina bāṭā* 'he gives enjoyment to every one, day and night' (p. 7), *vaha saba saũ saba ohi saũ baratā* 'all are knitted with him and he with all' (p. 10), *mādira mādira saba kē caupārī* 'there are sitting-halls in the houses of all' (p. 57), *jāvata jiu saba kara bhakha-dātā*

'you are the giver of meals of all beings that are' (p. 107), *tā kara disiṭi sabahi uparāhī* 'his glance is on every one' (p. 7), *sabahi khiāvai āpu na khāī* 'he feeds all, but himself he does not eat' (p. 7).

In Tulsīdās and Nūr Muhammad *saba* is used with postpositions and *sabahi* (accusative-dative) without them, *e.g.*, *saba kē ura abhilāṣu asa* 'such was the desire in everyone's heart' (T. p. 158), *sabahi rāmu priya* 'Rāma is dear to every one' (T. p. 158), *sabahi suhāi* 'if it is pleasant to all' (T. p. 164), *saba kahā sūdhī bāṭa calāvai* 'he puts everyone on the right path' (N. p. 9), *tehi sumirana mõ sabahi anandā* 'by remembering Him, delight (comes) to everyone' (N. p. 56).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 258. **Aur**

This pronoun expresses the sense of 'more', 'other', 'another (else)' and is constant in form in all the dialects, *e.g.*, Lmp. **Aur kaɪ cAhiɪ** 'what more is wanted?', **thoɪreɪ mAnAiɪ hiãɪ hAĩ Aur huãɪ** 'a few men are here, others are there', **Aur aɪiɪ hAĩ** 'other (women) have come'.

(*a*) When used as an adjective it changes for gender and case as indicated in § 219. For instance: Lmp. **Aur, Auri, Aureɪ, Auriɪ**.

(*b*) There are two other adjectives **pAraɪr** and **aɪn** used in the same sense of 'other'. For instance, Lmp. **pAraɪriɪ meheAruA kə nə deɪkhAi kə cAhiɪ** 'one should not look at another's wife', **pAraɪreɪ dhAn seɪ kAuni pAroɪjAni** 'what business (have we) with another's property?', **hAm aɪneɪ gãɪu kə gAjeɪ rAhAn** 'I had been to another village'.

§ 259. Lmp. **koɪiɪ**

It means 'some one', 'any one' and is constant in form, *e.g.*, **koɪiɪ aɪwaɪ hAi, koɪiɪ aɪiɪ hAi** 'some one (male or

female) has come', **koɪi kə nə maɪrʌu** 'do not beat any one', **koɪiɪ naɪiɪ rʌfiʌɪ̃** 'there were no people'.

(*a*) This does not change even as an adjective, *e.g.*, **koɪiɪ ʌdmiɪ** 'some man', **koɪiɪ mefiʌruaɪ** 'some woman'.

(*b*) B.,S. and L. have **koɪiɪ**, U.,F., Br., R. **koɪuɪ (koɪfiuɪ)**, G., Fy., Sl., P. and A. have **keɪuɪ (keɪfiuɪ)**.

(*c*) Like interrogative inanimate **kaɪ** 'which thing?', indefinite inanimate **kuchu̱** direct and **kaɪfieu** oblique mean 'something, anything'; the form for this in Eastern dialects is **kuchuɪ** dir. For instance: Lmp. **hʌm kuchu̱ naɪiɪ kifien** 'I did not do anything', **hʌm kaɪfieu se peɪtu̱ bfiʌɾi̱ lifien** 'I filled my stomach with something.'

§ 260. **sʌb**

It means 'all' and has one constant form for both the genders and cases, *e.g.*, **sʌb kifiini̱** 'all did it', **sʌb kaɪ khʌwaɪoɪ** 'feed all'. It does not change as an adjective also, *e.g.*, **sʌb mefiʌruʌn se gʌunaiɪ gʌwaɪoɪ** 'cause all the women to sing', **sʌb ʌdmin se hʌm seɪ koɪiɪ mʌtlʌb naɪiɪ** 'I have nothing to do with all men'.

(*a*) All the dialects have the same form **sʌb**. The Eastern dialects have an accusative-dative form **sʌbʌi** (emphatic **sʌbɪʌi** or **sʌbɪʌj**).

C. Origin.

§ 261. (*a*) The forms of **ʌur, aɪn, pʌraɪr,** mostly adjectives, are attested by Early Awadhi and go back to Skt. *apara*, *anya* and *para* (*-kāra*) respectively.

(*b*) The forms **koɪiɪ** (*kōi*), **koɪuɪ** (*kou*) and **keɪuɪ** all go back to OIA *kō'pi*. We find that instead of being elided the last vowel has been strengthened; this might be due to emphasis. This pronoun is always used emphatically corresponding to English 'anyone', 'not one' etc. **-uɪ** from *-pi*. *-vi* is not regular. It is decidedly on the analogy of Nom. sg. of the nouns. **keɪuɪ** is based on Mag. Nom. sg. *kē*.

(*c*) A distinction between animate and inanimate is maintained in this pronoun. **kichu** keeps the *-i* of *kiṃ* while *kachu* and *kuchu* do not have it. The forms should be traced to some form of the pronoun *kiṃ cid*, Probably it is *kaścid*; cf. Aśoka *kici* and *kicchi*. Final *-u* is perhaps a particle (Chatterji, p. 845). See also Turner: Nep. Dic. under **kuchu.**

(*d*) **sʌb** (E. Aw. *saba*) goes back to *sarva* and **sʌbʌi** (E. Aw. *sabahi*) is the oblique form. The *-b* becomes long in emphasis and in other languages (*e.g.*, Nepali) it becomes aspirated. The expected form is ***sʌrb**, however.

Compound Pronouns

A. Early Awadhi

§ 262. The relative pronoun is combined with forms of *kōī*, *saba* with *kōī* and *aura* with *kōī*, *e.g.*,

Jāyasī: *saba kōū* 'everyone' (p. 123), *saba kichu* 'everything' (p. 11).

Tulsī: *jehi kēhī* 'to whomsoever' (p. 270), *jō kachu* 'whatsoever' (p. 158), *saba kou* 'everyone' (p. 170), *saba kāhū* 'to every one' (p. 176), *saba kēhī* 'to all' (p. 241), *aura kou* 'anyone else' (p. 187).

Nūr Muhammad: *jō kōi* 'whoever' (p. 15), *jō kou* 'whoever' (p. 74), *jō kucha* 'whatever' (p. 1), *jō kichu* 'whatever' (p. 56), *saba kāhū para* 'on everybody' (p. 8), *saba kōū* 'everyone' (p. 44).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 263. The relative pronoun is combined with **koɪɪ** and **sʌb** and **sʌb** with **koɪɪ**, *e.g.*, Lmp. **sʌb koɪɪ** 'everyone', **jɔɪ koɪɪ** 'whoever', **jɪɪ sʌb ɑɪjeɪ** 'all who came'. **sʌb** is also added to personal pronouns, *e.g.*, **hʌm sʌb** 'we all', **tum sʌb** 'you all', **ui sʌb** 'they all'. **ʌur** also is combined with **koɪɪ** or **sʌb**, *e.g.*, **ʌur koɪɪ** 'anybody else', **ʌur sʌb** 'all else'.

(*a*) The dialects have corresponding forms. For instance: Fy. **ȷɛr keur khirsar ȷarnʌt hori ter kʌflʌi** 'whoever may be knowing a tale should relate (it)', P. **ȷʌwʌn kuchẓ**, Br. **ȷor kour**, R. **sʌb kuchʌu**.

Pronominal Adjectives

A. Early Awadhi

§ 264. The texts have pronominal adjectives of manner, quantity and number based on the demonstrative, relative-correlative and interrogative pronouns. For instance:

(*a*) of manner

Jāyasī: *asa diyā* 'such a lamp' (p. 78), *asi kathā* 'such a tale' (p. 78), *asi jā kari dasā* 'whose condition is such' (p. 55), *jasa aṁcala jhīnai mahã diyā*, *tasa ũjiāra dekhāvai hiyā* 'as the lamp under a thin linen, similarly shines the light in the heart' (p. 78), *jasa cãda* 'as the moon' (p. 24), (*vaha*) *aisa rahā* 'he was such' (p. 11), *aisī bithā raini saba jāgai* 'she wakes for the whole night owing to such a disease' (p. 378).

Tulsī: *abhilāṣu asa* 'such a desire' (p. 158), *asi nīti* 'such a polity' (p. 161), *tasi mati jasi bhābī* 'as the fate, so the thoughts' (p. 164), *kasi kubēsatā phābī* 'what manner of bad appearance came up' (p. 167), *aisehu kājā* 'even in such a cause' (p. 173), *aiseu bacana kaṭhōra suni* 'even on hearing such harsh words' (p. 183), *tulasī*, *jasi bhavitavyatā taisī milai sahāya* 'O Tulsī, one gets such help as the ordination is' (p. 71), *chabi jaisī . . . sōha na taisī* 'as the beauty is . . . so it does not shine' (p. 8).

Nūr Muhammad: *asa sapanā maī dēkheũ* 'I saw such a dream' (p. 5), *jasa pũjia hōī* 'as the capital be' (p. 30), *acaraja aisa* 'such a marvellous thing' (p. 5), *hērahu aisiya rānī* 'find out such a queen' (p. 117), *jaisō rahai tayasa*

puni hōī 'as (it) was so it will become' (p. 33), *nahɪ jānahɪ sira parihai kaisō, khēlahu hōi khēlanā jaisō* 'it is not known what manner (of fate) will befall us, let us have (such) a play as (we want)' (p. 53).

(*b*) of quantity

Jāyasī: *etanā bōla* 'so much speech' (p. 555), *etanī bōli* 'in this much speech' (p. 289), *duijahɪ jōti kahā jaga ōtī* 'where in the world, is there that much light on the second date?' (p. 168), *dukha tētā* 'that much of misery' (p. 158), *itē rūpa bhai kaniā* 'that girl was of so much beauty' (p. 80).

Tulsī: *etanā kahata* 'while he said so much' (p. 232), *janu etania biraṅci karatūtī* 'as if this much was the whole capacity of the creator' (p. 158), *etanai kaheu bharata sana jāī* 'say only this much to Bharata' (p. 218), *ētehu dukha* 'even on so much misery' (p. 221), *kahi jāta na jētā* 'as much (love) as cannot be described' (p. 253), *kētika bātā* 'what amount of regard' (p. 256), *kētika bārā* 'what delay' (p. 161).

Nūr Muhammad: *hai ētō upakāra* 'there is so much of good deed' (p. 61), *ētō sugharāī para* 'on this much of good finish' (p. 92), *dukha jētō pāvā* 'as much misery as (it) got' (p. 67), *jētō . . . tētō* 'so much . . . as' (p. 52), *ketikō prīta* 'how so much affection' (p. 51), *jata . . . jōgū, tata . . . bhōgū* 'as much *yōga*, so much of enjoyment' (p. 169).

(*c*) of number

Jāyasī: *rakata ka būda kayā jata ahahī* 'as many drops of blood as are in the body' (p. 577), *jāvata kēsa rōva pakhi pākhā* 'as many hair (on the head and on the body), birds and feathers as (there are in this world)' (p. 13), *ehi dharatī asa kētana līlē* 'this Earth has swallowed how many such (parrots)' (p. 110).

Tulsī: *raghupati-carana-upāsaka jētē* 'as many devotees of the feet of the Lord of Raghus (as there are)'

(p. 12), *saila himācala ādika jētē, citrakūṭa jasu gāvahi tētē* 'as many mountains, Himalayas, etc., as there are, all of them sing the glory of Citrakūṭa' (p. 211), *dēkhē jitē, hatē hama kētē* 'how many did we see, conquer and kill?' (p. 301).

Nūr Muhammad: *sundaratā kō lacchana jētē, pyārī cērē tērē tētē* 'as many characteristics of beauty as there are, all those are thy servants, my dear' (p. 91), *jētika ahai kāya ruda aṅgū, vētika karahū tāla miradaṅgū* 'as many noises as there are in the limbs of the body, I shall make them offer tempo to the drum' (p. 34), *jaita phūla phala patriya cāhī, tāvata āgama pura mō āhī* 'as many flowers, fruits and leaves as are required, all those are in Āgamapura' (p. 14), *jāvata jōgī rahā samājā, tāvata kīnhā prēmiya rājā* 'as many Yogis as were in the assembly, the king made all of them lovers' (p. 22).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 265. Awadhi has pronominal adjectives based on the demonstrative, relative, correlative, and interrogative pronouns. These are of manner (quality), of quantity and of number.

(*a*) Adjective of manner

Lmp. **Ais** 'of this sort', **wAis** 'of that sort', **JAis** ... **tAis** 'such as', **kAis** 'of which sort?'.

S., L., U., F., Br. and R. agree with Lmp. B. has **As** 'of this sort', **wAs, tAs** 'of that sort', **JAs** 'as', **kAs** 'of which sort?'. Similarly G., Sl. and Fy. agree with Lmp.

(*b*) Adjective of quantity

Lmp. **etɪaɪ** or **Atɪaɪ** 'so much', **otɪaɪ** 'that much', **jetɪaɪ tetɪaɪ** 'as much as', **ketɪaɪ** 'how much?'.

S., L., U., F., Br., Fy. and Sl. agree with Lmp. The latter two with B. and G. have **etAnaɪ** 'so much', **otAnaɪ** or **tetAnaɪ** 'that much', **jetAnaɪ** 'as much', and **ketAnaɪ** 'how much' (besides **kAtik**).

R. has, besides the Lmp. set, **etʌraɪ** 'so much', **wotʌraɪ** 'that much', **ɟetʌraɪ tetʌraɪ** 'as much as', **ketʌraɪ** 'how much?'.

(*c*) Adjective of number

Lmp. **etɪeɪ** 'so many', **otɪeɪ** 'so many', **ɟetɪeɪ tetɪeɪ** 'as many as', **ketɪeɪ** 'how many?'.

S., L., U., F., Br. agree with Lmp.; B., G., Fy. and Sl. have **etʌnaɪ, otʌnaɪ, ɟetʌnaɪ tetʌnaɪ** and **ketʌnaɪ.** R. has, besides the Lmp. set, **etʌreɪ wotʌreɪ, ɟetʌreɪ tetʌreɪ, ketʌreɪ.** (All the dialects have **ɟʌi** 'as many', **tʌi** 'so many', **kʌi** 'how many' which do not change for gender or case).

The above adjectives change for case and gender as shown in § 219. For instance:

Lmp. **ʌiseɪ din maɪ gfiʌr baiʈhʌu** 'sit at home on such a day', **wʌisi̯ kitaɪb phiri̯ naɪiɪ dexkhi̯ pʌriɪ** 'never was a book of that sort seen again', **etɪeɪ ɑ̃ɪʈʌ se̯ hʌmaɪri̯ bfiuɪkh naɪiɪ ɟaɪiɪ** 'my hunger will not be satisfied with so much flour', **hʌm otɪiɪ roɪʈiɪ khaɪjen** 'I ate that much bread', **tum ketɪaɪ kaɪmu̯ kifieu** 'how much work did you do?', **tumfiʌreɪ ketɪeɪ lʌrikaɪ ʌu ketɪiɪ lʌũɪijaɪ hʌĩ** 'how many sons and daughters have you got?', **ɟetɪeɪ lʌrikaɪ tumfiʌreɪ hʌĩ tetɪeɪ hʌmʌreɪ** 'I have as many sons as you have', **ɟetɪiɪ lʌũɪija hʌmʌ̣reɪ hʌĩ tetɪiɪ koɪi ke̯ naɪiɪ** 'no one has so many daughters as I have'.

C. Origin

§ 266. (*a*) of manner—we have two varieties of forms (1) in **-ʌs** (*asa*) and (2) in **ʌis** (*aisa*). The latter go back to *-dɽśa* forms of OIA, *e.g.*, *yādɽśa* > *jāisa* > *jaisa* > **ɟʌis.** The former are later and simpler formations.

(*b*) of quantity—there are three varieties of forms (1) in **-tɪaɪ** (E. Aw. *-eta*), (2) **-tʌnaɪ** and (3) **-tʌraɪ.**

In Sanskrit there were *-yat* adjectives which in the Prakrits became *-anta*. All these adjectives go back to those, the (1) forms directly while (2) and (3) by later additions of **-nax** and **-rax.**

(*c*) of number—the plural form of *-yat* adjectives was used in Sanskrit also for denoting number. We find the *Ardha-tatsama* forms of the same in *jāvata*, *tāvata* of Early Awadhi. **jʌi, kʌi**, etc., represent Sanskrit *yati, kati*, etc.

CHAPTER V

POSTPOSITIONS[1]

Introductory

§ 267. The decay of old case-forms and the growth of postpositions goes side by side in a language. The history of postpositions in IA is complicated because of the fact that as these are used very often and in a variety of senses, as Bloch pointed out (Bloch: *Langue Marathe* § 197), they become semantically weak and undergo greater phonetic modification than ordinary words. There is another factor to be taken into consideration; as soon as the old auxiliary words seem to fail to indicate the required meaning, fresh words are borrowed from the literary dialects. This is

[1] What is a postposition? Any morphemic word which is generally put after other words and gives a meaning with those words only, it has no independent meaning of its own without reference to those words. It is different from terminations in as much as it does not undergo changes of form by incorporation with the previous words. If we adopt this as a characteristic of a postposition, we should not regard such words as have an independent meaning still, as postpositions.

I prefer to retain the word postposition in spite of a suggestion from Dr. Grahame-Bailey (B.S.O.S., V page 515) to use 'preposition' because the words in question are most generally post- and not pre-, as also because of the fact that I believe that the word 'postposition' has come to have a settled meaning, and too frequent a change in scientific terminology and symbols is apt to injure the science. For the same reason, I retain the terms 'direct' and 'oblique' in preference to 'prepositional' or postpositional'.

clear from the fact that we have in modern Bengali a number of modern loan-words for this purpose (*vide* Chatterji § 509). It is also clear from such words as **khaɪtir** and **bidfli** in Modern Awadhi. This brings about two results :

(1) It is possible that a fresh loan-word and its ordinary form may both be employed at one time in the sense exactly the same and thence-forward may undergo common phonetic changes. We find in Tulsīdās *mahā* (possibly from *semi-tatsama* **madha*—cf. Av. *maḍa*) and *mājha* (< *madhya-*) and to-day we have their successors **maɪ** and **mʌfliaɪ.**

(2) A loan-word has a certain hesitation about it in phonetic adaptation in the language and may have different developments in different dialects. For instance Lmp. **khaɪtir** (Per. *khāṭir*) is found in North Gonda as **khʌrtir.** The change from *-t-* to *-rt-* is explained only by the theory of hesitation.

This accounts for the variety of the forms of the same postpositions.

§ 268. Jāyasī and Tulsī do not generally employ postpositions. The noun or pronoun in its base form or in the case form expresses the required sense of case-relationship. There has been a gradual development of the use of postpositions as is shown by the following statistics.

In Jāyasī in the first two hundred lines there are 91 such nouns as would require postpositions according to the practice in Modern Awadhi, but we find postpositions employed only after 24 nouns, *i.e.*, after about 26 p. c. of the nouns. In Tulsī who follows closely in time, there are 184 nouns (in the first three hundred lines) which would require postpositions according to modern usage, but only 45 are followed by postpositions, or about the same percentage as in Jāyasī. But when we come to Nūr Muhammad who composed his work after about two hundred years (1157 A.H.) from Jāyasī (947 A.H., 1540 A.D.), we find that in the first two hundred lines of his work, there are 175 such

words as would require postpositions after them according to the practice of Modern Awadhi and we find postpositions employed after 137 nouns, *i.e.*, a little over 78 p. c.; with this compare the percentage of Jāyasī and Tulsī (26 p. c.). Nūr Muhammad thus comes very near Modern Awadhi (compare also § 270).

A postposition in Modern Awadhi is used generally to denote all case-relationships except the Nominative. It is found after the oblique case, if one exists, otherwise after the direct, *e.g.*, **raɪjʌ sę, raɪjʌn sę, sʌb maɪ, ʌcche sę, khaɪi mo.**

§ 269. In the old texts we find postpositions employed oftener with pronouns than with nouns. For instance in Jāyasī in the first three hundred lines there are 96 pronouns which would require postpositions and these are employed after 33 pronouns. The percentage of the use of postpositions with pronouns is thus 34 as against 26 of nouns. Similarly the percentage of the first three hundred lines of Tulsī (61 : 27) is 44 after pronouns as against 24 of nouns. Not only this. Further we find that there is no case of *-hi* form of the noun (in any of the three texts) with a postposition but there are 16 (in Jāyasī), 7 (in Tulsī) and 9 (in Nūr Muhammad) cases of *-hi* form of the pronoun with a postposition. Thus even such cases as appear distinctly significant (without postposition) as regards noun have lost their case-significance as regards pronouns.

This practice is intelligible. The pronouns on account of their more frequent use become weak semantically sooner than the nouns and thus require auxiliary words. Even in the Prakrit stage we find many alternative forms of pronouns and a greater confusion in case-endings than in the case of nouns. A frequent use of pronouns can be examplified by usages of Modern Hindi. The pronoun comes first at the speaker's tongue. For instance: one generally asks **ʌreɪ woh leɪ ʌɪjeɪ** 'Hullo, have you brought that?', and only

when the person spoken to asks 'what?' that the article is named.

The earlier and more frequent use of postpositions after pronouns explains the incorporation of the postposition in pronouns earlier than in nouns.

Modern Awadhi has **mɔr** 'mine', **tɔr** 'thine', **hAmɑr** 'ours', **tumɑr** 'yours', **pArɑr** 'another's', where the genitive postposition (*kara*) has been inextricably incorporated in the pronoun, but there is no case of a noun incorporating it.

§ 270. As we see above, some of the postpositions have undergone so much phonetic change that they are hardly recognisable as derivatives of particular words, *e.g.*, **mɔ** < *madhya*, **pɔ** < *pakṣē*. But if we remember the fact that they are put in a very frequent use, we can see the possibility of such a violent sound-change. With some of the postpositions, it is not possible to find the evidence of literary documents for their predecessor-forms. But it may be noted that the auxiliary words being a popular device would be recognized only later in literary works.

Accusative-Dative[1]

A. Early Awadhi

§ 271. J. and T. generally use the oblique case in *-hi*, *-hĭ* (or *-i*) to express this sense, but sometimes they employ postpositions. These are never found after the oblique in *-hi*, *-hĭ*, *-i*.

(*a*) J. *kahā*, *e.g.*, *saba kahā* 'to all' (p. 6), *jaga kahā* 'to the world' (p. 17), *sunai kahā* 'for hearing' (p. 12).

(*b*) T. generally has *kahā* (*e.g.*, *tinha kahā* 'to them', p. 19), *kahũ* (*tinha kahũ* 'to them', p. 7), *kāhu* (*e.g.*, *saba kāhu* 'to all', p. 19), but sometimes *kaũ* (*tuma kaũ* 'to you',

[1] The postpositions for these two cases have the same forms in Awadhi.

p. 90), *kō* (*sabahī kō nikō* 'good to all people', p. 17) and even *ka* (*tulsī ka* 'to Tulsī', p. 17).

NOTE:—*kahā* and *kahũ* sometimes appear without nasalisation. An example of direct object—*prabhu kahā cīnhā* 'recognised the master.'

(*c*) N. generally has *kahā* (*e.g. sūraja kahā* 'to the sun', p. 3) and rarely *kō* or *kõ* (*dvāra kō* 'to the door,' p. 5, *nibala kõ* 'to the weak', p. 8).

NOTE:—This *kō* or *kõ* is, I believe, *kau* or *kaũ* and has been wrongly transcribed in the Dēvanāgarī version of the manuscript which is in Persian characters where ﮐ can be read as either *ko* or *kau*.

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 272. Lakhīmpurī has **kə** and **kaɪ**. For instance:

raɪmuɪ gopaɪl kə maɪrisi̯ 'Rāmū beat Gopāl'—Accusative, **gopaɪl kə kuchu̯ khaɪi kə deɪu** 'give something to Gopal to eat'—Dative. The postposition is not employed after inanimate object.

§ 273. Of the two the long form (**kaɪ**) is used after

(1) monosyllables containing

(*a*) a final long vowel, *e.g.*, **ji̯ɪ kaɪ**

(*b*) a short vowel, followed or not by a consonant, *e.g.*, **gʃʌr kaɪ**

(2) dis-syllables containing two short syllables each ending in a vowel, *e.g.* **kefii kaɪ.**

The short form (**kə**) is used after all other words, **coɪr kə, mʌrd kə, ʌʃiir kə**[1], **aɪgi kə, nʌuwʌ kə.**

NOTE 1. If the last vowel of a word preceding the short form of the postposition is long, it is pronounced short (*e.g.*, **gʃioɪʈaɪ se̯ > gʃioɪʈʌ se̯, aɪgiɪ se̯ > aɪgi se̯**).

[1] Professor Bloch suggests that the differentiation probably happened at a time when final short vowel, *-a*, *-i*, etc., was actually spoken in **mʌrd** (*-a*), **ʌʃiir** (*-a*), **gʃʌr** (*-a*).

NOTE 2. If the word after which a long postposition is used, is lengthened by adding a suffix or otherwise, the long postposition can no longer be used (*e.g.*, **gʃʌr kaɪ** 'to the house', but **gʃʌrʌʃɛ̃ ko**, 'to the house only', **iɪ kaɪ** 'to this', but **iɪmʌ ko**, 'of this').

These rules apply to all sets of long and short postpositions in such dialects as possess them.

§ 274. S. and Western L. have **ko** and **kaɪ**, U. and F. only **kaɪ**, B. and Bgh. have **ko**, **kaɪ** and **kʌiʃɛ̃ɪ** and partly use **kʌi** in the East; G. has **ko**, **kaɪ** but **kʌiʃɛ̃ɪ** is found in specimens of the North and **keɪ** in the specimens of the East—**kaɪ** or **kɛ̃ɪ** is, however, the most common. Fy. and Sl. have **kaɪ** but Fy. specimens show **kʌi** also (**sʌb wʌʃi kʌi gʌrijaɪwʌi lʌgeɪ** 'all began to abuse him) and S. E. Sl. **keɪ** (**raɪt keɪ** 'at night'); Br. and R. have **kaɪ** and **kʌiʃɛ̃ɪ** while P. and A. have **kaɪ** generally but **keɪ** in the Eastern parts.

NOTE:—The dative-sense 'for' is expressed by such words as **khaɪtir** etc. (See below § 286).

Genitive[1]

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 275. The oblique in *-hi*, etc., is seldom used to denote this case; the noun-stem generally with postpositions and sometimes without it is used.

(*a*) J. has *kara* (fem. *kari*), *kēra* (fem. *kērī*) elongated sometimes to *kērā* (*kērī*) and *ka* (*kā*), *kē* and *kai*.

Of these *kara* (*kari*) is the usual one and generally does change for the gender of the following noun, *e.g.*, *haũ saba kabitanha kara pachalagā* 'I am the follower of all poets' (p. 33), *sōnai kara saba puhumi akāsū* 'the floor and the roof both (were) of gold' (p. 73), *dharama pantha kara*

[1] The postpositions for this case agree with the following noun, pronoun, etc., in gender and case and not with the preceding noun etc.

karahī bakhānū 'are making the elucidation of the path of virtue' (p. 59), *tā kari disiṭi* 'his glance' (p. 7). *kēra* is used sometimes, *e.g.*, *dirisa gosāī kēra* 'the sight of the Lord' (p. 27), *sulēmā kēri āgūṭhī* 'the ring of Suleman' (p. 17).

ka (*kā*) singular direct and *kē* singular oblique or plural is also frequently used. For instance:

nisi ka bichōhā 'separation of (at) night' (p. 50), *sabhā ka rūpa* 'the appearance of the assembly' (p. 72), *ūca gaḍha tākā* 'his fort was high' (p. 61), *mādira mādira saba kē caupāṛī* 'everyone had sitting-halls in every house' (p. 67), *duhū kē bhāra* 'by the burden of both' (p. 25), *pāna phūla kē rahahī adhārī* 'subsist only on leaves and fruits' (p. 75).

kai is generally used with feminine nouns as in Tulsīdās. For instance:

kēlā kai ghaurī 'clusters of bananas' (p. 52), *gharī rahāṭa kai* 'wheel of the water-mill' (p. 52), *siṃghala kai hāṭā* 'market of Singhala' (p. 56), *bāsuki kai pīṭhī* 'the back of Vāsuki' (p. 61), *gāḍhē kai sāthī* 'friend in need', *paurī navau bajara kai sājī* 'all the nine thresholds are made of cement' (p. 63), *laṅka dīpa kai silā* 'the stone of Laṅkadīpa' (p. 47).

(*b*) T. has *kara* (fem. *kari*) *kēra* (elongated to *kērā* particularly at the end of lines), fem. *kēri* (*kērī*), obl. singular and plural dir. and obl. *kērē*; *ka* (elongated to *kā* at times) as masculine dir. and *kĕ* (*kĕ*) masculine sing. obl. and plural dir. and obl., *kī* (*ki*) fem., rarely *kō* (masculine singular) and *kai* generally feminine. The distinction of gender is generally maintained but sometimes in the *kara* set masculine postposition is used before feminine nouns. For instance:

santanha kara sātha 'the company of the good' (p. 22), *jā kari tat dāsī* 'whose slave thou art' (p. 81), but also *jama kara dhāri* 'the stream of Yama' (p. 45), *saba kara bidā* 'the departure of all' (p. 49), *tehi kara punya* 'the merit of his' (p. 45).

In the *kēra* set the distinction of gender is maintained throughout. For instance:

mitra tāpasa nṛpa kērā 'friend of the hermit-king' (p. 75,) *bhṛgupati kēri garaba-garuāi* 'the height of the pride of the lord of Bhṛgūs' (p. 111), *carana kamala bandaũ tinha kērē* 'their lotus-feet I bow down to' (p. 10).

In the set *ka*, *kī*, *kē*, the gender is distinguished. For instance:

jō jehi khāni ka 'whosoever was of whichever source' (p. 3), *ati hita saba hī kā* 'very beneficial to all' (p. 97), *kathā raghubara kī* 'the story of Raghubara' (p. 7), *ugharahṛ bimala bilōcana hī kē* 'the clear eyes of the heart open up' (p. 3), *mana jā kẽ* 'in whose mind' (p. 59), *rāma kō nāma* 'the name of Rāma' (p. 15).

kai is generally followed by a feminine noun but sometimes by masculine also, *e.g.*, *dasā sambhu kai* 'Śambhu's condition' (p. 27), *bhagavanta kai bhagati* 'the devotion to (of) the Lord' (p. 25), *nārada kai upadēsa* 'the advice of Nārada' (p. 43), *dui kai cāri māgi maku lēhū* 'you may beg for four (boons) instead of two' (p. 168), *rāma janama kai hētu anēkā* 'various causes of the birth of Rāma' (p. 56). With the last may be compared *rāma janama kara hētu* 'the cause of Rāma's birth' (p. 68), where the same word is preceded by a masculine postposition. In *praśna umā kai* 'Uma's question' (p. 52), the feminine *kai* is all right as *praśna* (masculine in Sanskrit) is treated of as feminine by Tulsīdās throughout his work[1].

(*c*) N. has *kō* masculine sg. (sometimes *ka* and *kā* also), *kē* masculine singular and plural dir. and obl., *kī* (*ki*), *kai* feminine, *kara* masculine sg. dir., *kērā* masculine singular dir., *kērī* feminine, and *kērē* masculine sg. obl. and plural

[1] T. has once *kṛta* used as a postposition, *viz.*, *jinha kṛta mahā mōha mada pānā* 'those who are under the influence of infatuation' (p. 54).

dir. and obl. The distinction of genders is maintained generally. For instance:

jaga kō rājā 'the king of the world' (p. 1), *phulavārī kā dvārā* 'the door of the flower-garden' (p. 6), *jehi ka bakhāna* 'whose description' (p. 2), *sapanē kī bāta* 'the talk of the dream' (p. 11), *pahilī rāta kī mūrata* 'the image of the first night' (p. 10), *indrāvati kai gīu* 'the neck of Indrāvatī' (p. 5), *tina kara nāũ* 'his name' (p. 3), *sāgara bhau kērā* 'the ocean of Bhava' (p. 2), *hāṭa mahīpati kērī* 'the market of the king' (p. 9), *jaga kērē cērē* 'the disciple of the world' (p. 2).

Sometimes, however, the distinction of gender is missed:

adharama kō jara mūla 'the root of absence of duty' (p. 9), *tapī kara bāha* 'the arm of the hermit' (p. 4), *tākō mūrata* 'her image' (p. 13), *tā kī mātha* 'on her forehead' (p. 18).

NOTE.—*kō* should be read as *kau* [see note to § 271 (*c*)].

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 276. Lakhīmpurī has **kə, kaɪ; kʌr, kerɪr**—masc. dir. sg., **kẹ, kez, kerez** masc. obl. sg. and pl. dir. and obl., **kị, kiɪ, kerɪiɪ** fm. dir. and obl. For instance:

gopaɪl kə (or **kerɪr**) **lʌrikaɪ mʌri gaɪ** 'Gopāl's son has died', **gopaɪl kẹ** (or **kerez**) **lʌrikʌ kə maɪrinị** 'they beat Gopāl's son', **gopaɪl kẹ caɪriu lʌrikaɪ jiʌtị hʌ̃** 'Gopāl's all the four sons are living', **gopaɪl kị lʌũɽijaɪ** 'Gopāl's daughter'.

S. and L. agree with Lmp.; U. and F. have no short forms **kə** and **kị** and **kẹ**. B. is like Lmp., but has **kʌj** in Eastern specimens; G. does not use **kerɪr** but **kʌr** is found in specimens; it uses **kʌj** very generally. Fy. possesses **kaɪ, kiɪ** but generally uses **kʌr** forms (**o kʌriɪ phiraɪk, ke kʌrez saɪthez, baɪsɪaɪfi kerɪri biɽijaɪ**). It also uses **kʌj** mostly before feminine nouns. Sl. uses **kʌr** and **kʌj** generally

irrespective of the gender (**un kʌr meɦʌruaɪ, okʌrer hiãɪ, un kʌj khopʌriɪ, un kʌj likhaɪ, un kʌj din**). Br. like Lmp. distinguishes gender and has the same postpositions. Similarly R. (**kjaɪr** for **kerr**, however) P. and A. generally use **kʌr, ker** and **kʌj**. Bgh. has **kerr**, masc. dir. **ke**, masc. obl. **ker**, fem. dir. **kiɪ**, obl. **kʌi**.

Accusative-Dative-Genitive

C. Origin

§ 277. The postpositions for these three cases are put together for derivation. We have:

Modern Awadhi **ko, kaɪ (kãɪ), kʌiɦãɪ, kʌi** and **kʌr, kerr**.

Early Awadhi *kahɑ, kahũ, kāhū, kaũ, kō* (*kõ*) and *kara, kēra, kā, kē, kai, kr̥ta*.

These go back (1) to some forms of *kr̥* and (2) to *kakṣa*.

(*a*) For **ko, kaɪ** and obl. **ker**, the best suggestion is to derive them from *kr̥ta*, (*kr̥taka*) which is once found in Tulsīdās in this sense [see footnote § 275 (*b*)]. **ker** dir. in the Eastern dialects of Modern Awadhi is the Māgadhī (Nom. sg.) form of the same word. **kiɪ** and **kʌi** are the feminine forms.

But *-r̥-* normally becomes *-i-* and here we have it as *-a-*. Is it because of a peculiar treatment in a loan-word?

(*b*) **kʌr** (fm. **kʌri**) is derived from *kāraka* and **kerr (kerri, kerriɪ)** from *kārya, kāryaka*. The later derivation requires an epenthesis which occurs already in Apabhraṃśa: *kārya* > *kāyara* > *kaira*. We have such a development in a number of words, however, and we should remember, that this was a loan-word.

(*c*) Modern Awadhi **kʌiɦãɪ** and Early Awadhi *kahɑ, kahũ, kāhū, kaũ, kō* go back to *kakṣa*. In **kʌiɦãɪ**, we see the transference of aspiration to the last syllable. We should suppose **kʌɦiãɪ** < *kakṣyaka* (cf. **pʌɦiãɪ** and **mʌɦiaɪ**) or we may derive it as Aw. *kahɑ* + *iyã*.

A possible derivation of these *-h-* forms of the postposition was from *kṛ* (*kṛta* etc.) by attributing inter-vocalic *-h-* to the device of avoiding hiatus (Bloch, pp. 31 and 182). But the long *ā* in *kāhū* and *-kh-* in Old Bengali *kakhu* (Chatterji, p. 760) are insuperable difficulties.[1]

Instrumental-Ablative[2]

A. Early Awadhi

§ 278. The oblique in *-hi*, *-hĩ*, *-i* is not generally used to denote this sense; the noun-stem with or without postpositions is used.

(*a*) J. has *sõ*, *saũ*, *bhai*, *tẽ*, *taĩ*, *sẽti*, *huta* (*huti*) and *cāhi*. Of these *saũ* is most common, *e.g.*, *aratha sõ* 'with meaning' (p. 127), *cāri basērē saũ caṛhai sata saũ caṛhai jo pāra* 'he who is allowed to truthfully take four days to get up to it' (p. 63), *saba sāu* 'from all' (p. 10), *bhai* (*āchahĩ sadā sugandha bhai* 'are always with good smell', p. 53). *taĩ* is generally used in comparison, *ēka ēka taĩ rūpa bakhānī* 'one famous for beauty more than another' (p. 75), *chārahĩ taĩ* 'from ashes' (p. 5), *pēma tẽ* 'with love' (p. 348), *rājā sẽti* '(talked) with the king' (p. 310), *naraka sitẽ* 'from hell' (p. 337). *cāhi* also shows comparison, *e.g. eka eka cāhi ēka eka balī* 'one even stronger than another' (p. 69), *laṅkā cāhi ũca gaḍha* 'the fort higher than Laṅkā even' (p. 61). *huta* denotes either 'from' (*uṭhē puhumi huti* 'rose from the Earth', p. 40), or 'through', *e.g.*, *ohi huta dēkhai pāeũ darasa gosāĩ kēra* 'through him I was able to have the sight of the Lord' (p. 27).

(*b*) T. has *sana* (sometimes *sanu* and *sõ*), *tẽ* (sometimes as *tē*, *taĩ*), *sẽ* and *sĩ*.

Of these *sana* is the most common and indicates both the instrumental and ablative meaning. For instance: *sō mō sana kahi jāta na* 'that cannot be said by me' (p. 4), *satī*

[1] Cf. also Sindhī *-khē*

[2] The postpositions for these two cases do not differ in form.

sana prītī 'love with Satī' (p. 29), *sivā sana bhākhā* 'spoke to Śivā' (p. 20), *gura sana kiē durāva* 'by keeping the secret from the teacher' (p. 25), *muni sana bidā māgi* 'having obtained permission (to depart) from the sage' (p. 26).

tẽ generally indicates the sense of 'from' and 'than', *e.g.*, *tehi tẽ kachu guna dōsa bakhānē* 'because of that I have described a few merits and demerits' (p. 5), *ēka tẽ ēkā* 'some more than the others' (p. 28).

sē (masc.) and *sī* (fem.) indicate likeness only, *e.g.*, *rāhu sē* 'like Rāhu' (p. 4), *ramā sī* 'like Ramā' (p. 18). Sometimes *sõ* is used in this sense, *e.g.*, *sītānātha sõ* 'like the husband of Sītā' (p. 17).

(*c*) N. has *sõ* (sometimes *saũ* or *sō*), *tẽ* (sometimes *tē*), *hutẽ* (sometimes *hutē*), *sētĩ* and *sē*.

Of these *sõ* is the most common and expresses both the instrumental and ablative senses, *e.g.*, *dāyā sō* 'with compassion' (p. 2), *jiya sõ* 'with heart' (p. 3), *nibarana sabarai saũ dukha pāvā* 'the weak obtained misery from (at the hands of) the strong' (p. 2).

tẽ is less common. For instance : *jibha tẽ* 'with the tongue' (p. 3), *cahũ disa tẽ* 'from all the four directions' (p. 3).

hutẽ means 'by reason of', 'through', *e.g.*, *bhā tehi bacana hutẽ saṁsārā* 'the Universe came to be through that Word', *bacana hutẽ yaha jagata mõ kīrati paragaṭa āhi* 'by reason of the Word, the fame is flashing in this world' (p. 5), *prēma hutē dōū kahā dīnhā alakha milāya* 'the Invisible united the two because of their love' (p. 3).

sētĩ is comparatively rare. For instance : *dāyā sētĩ* 'with compassion' (p. 4), *haũ hīnā vidyā budhi sētĩ* 'I am bereft of knowledge and wisdom' (p. 4).

sẽ is unusual, *e.g.*, *paragaṭa hōi tahã sẽ sōi* 'he comes out from there' (p. 10).

NOTE :—*sō* or *sõ* should be read as *sau* or *saũ* [see note to § 271 (*c*)].

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 279. Lakhīmpurī has **sę** and **sex**, *e.g.*, **ux hʌm kax ɖʌɳɖʌ sę maxrisi** 'he beat me with a stick', **baxdʌr sę bũxdix girĩx** 'drops (of rain) fell from the cloud'; sometimes **senex**, *e.g.*, **kaxfiex senex** 'with what?'. S. and L. have **tę, tex** besides **sę, sex** and also **senex, tenex.** U. and F. have **sex** and **tex** (sometimes **bex** and **bhex**). B. has **sę, sex** and **setix**, also **texnex.** G. has **sex** and **sextix** in specimens of the North. Fy. and Sl. have only **sex**, Br. has **sex** and **tex** and sometimes uses **kʌifiãx** also in an instrumental sense (**wʌfii kʌifiãx ʌnaxʝ lʌi axjex** 'with that (money) brought the corn'). R. has **tex, texnix**, P. **sex, sexnix** and **sexnex**, A. generally **sex**, Bgh. **sex, tex**.

P. expresses the sense of 'than' by **lʌgex** (see below § 286) also, *e.g.*, **tʌu hĩjãx lʌgex mʌʝex max rʌfiʌb** 'then I shall be better off (there) than here'.

Note:—The idea of 'with' indicating company is expressed by some such word as **sʌŋgh, saxthex** (see below § 286).

C. Origin

§ 280. Mod. Aw. **sę, sex, tę, tex, senex texnex, setix, sʌntix, senix, bex, bhex.**

E. Aw. *sõ, saũ, sana, sanu, sā* (*sī*), *sētĩ, tẽ* (*tē, taɪ*), *bhai, hūta, hutẽ* (*hutē*) and *cāhi. kari.*

Of these Mod. Aw. **sę, sex, sexnix** probably go back to *sahitēna* and **sextix**, E. Aw. *sētĩ* to *santakēna* (cf. Pāli *santakō, e.g., parasantakō* 'belonging to another') *anta* > *ē*, possibly influenced by *sē*; while E. Aw. *sõ, saũ, sana, sanu* to *samaḥ* and *samēna*; **bex bhex**, *bhai* are derivable from the absolutive of *bhū.* E. Aw. *sā, sī* in the sense of 'like' has a modern correspondent in Hindustani usage **muʝfi saɪ** 'like me' (**muʝfi six** feminine) etc. and should go back to *sama* 'equal'. Mod. Aw. **tę, tex, texnex** and E. Aw. *tẽ* (*tē, taɪ*) are probably connected with √*tan*—*tatēna.*

hūta, *hutẽ* (*hutē*) have correspondents in *huntō*, *huntē* in the Apabhraṁśa and are connected with √*bhū*—**hontō* Mg. *hontē*, or **hontēna*.

cāhi is connected with √*cāh*- 'to desire', 'to wish', and is the absolutive form of the root. Similarly *kari* is the absolutive of √*kar*- 'to do'.

Locative

A. Early Awadhi

§ 281. In Jāyasī and Tulsī the oblique *-ē* and *-hi* etc. is quite frequently used to express the locative sense. Otherwise the noun-stem with or without the postpositions is used.

(*a*) J. has *mahā* and *māhā* generally (sometimes *mājha*, *māha* and *majhiārā*) for 'in' and *para*, *ūpara*, *pāhā* and *pai* generally and *uparāhī* sometimes for 'on, over'. For instance :

bīju tehi māhā 'the lightning in that' (p. 2), *nakhatanha māhā* 'in the stars', *saba māha* 'in all' (p. 75), *tinha mahā* 'in them' (p. 75); *ghara majhiārā* 'in the house' (p. 232), *jaūnā mājha* 'in the Jamunā' (p. 164); *khāḍa khāḍa ūpara* 'above every part' (p. 74), *garha ūpara tāī* 'upto the above (of) the fort' (p. 63), *sīsa uparāhī* 'over the head' (p. 70).

(*b*) T. has *mahā* (*maha*), *mahũ* (*mahu*), *māhī* (*mahi*) generally and *mājha* (*mājhā*), *majhārī* and *madhya* sometimes for 'in' and *para* for 'on', and *tara* 'below.' For instance :

chanu mahā 'in a moment' (p. 47), *raghubaṁsinha maha* 'amongst the descendants of Raghu' (p. 108), *bhōga mahũ* 'in enjoyment' (p. 12), *trētā juga māhī* 'in the Trētā age' (p. 26), *jaga mājhā* 'in the world' (p. 221), *tinha tarubaranha madhya* 'in (amongst) those good trees' (p. 249), *muni-maṇḍalī madhya* 'in company of sages' (p. 250); *dīna para* 'on the poor' (p. 3), *aṭanha para* 'on the upper floors' (p. 149), *sindhu mājhārī* 'in the whole ocean' (p. 78), *milehī mājha* 'in the middle of the process of

obtaining' (p. 175); *surā-taru tara* 'under the tree of the gods' (p. 5).

(*c*) N. has *mahā* (*māha*, *māhā*, *mahĩ*, *māhũ*) usually and *mõ* quite frequently and *majhāra*, *mẽ*, and *ma* rarely for 'in', *para* usually, *ūpara* frequently and *uparāhā* (*uparāhĩ*) sometimes for 'on, above' and *tara*, *tarẽ* for 'under'. For instance:

gīu mahā 'in the neck' (p. 5), *bārī māha* 'in the garden' (p. 5), *dou hāthana māhā* 'in both the hands' (p. 5), *teĥi māhĩ* 'in that' (p. 8), *hāṭa mõ* 'in the market' (p. 9), *bhāṣā mō* 'in vernacular' (p. 4), *phāda majhārā* 'in the snare', *sabhā majhāra* 'in the assembly' (p. 115), *ādarasa majhāra* (p. 10), *sindhu mẽ* 'in the ocean' (p. 4), *artha ma* 'in meaning' (p. 102); *rāja para* 'over the kingdom' (p. 7), *para trīyā para* 'on another's woman' (p. 9), *mohi ūpara* 'over me' (p. 2), *pāṭa uparāhā* 'on the kingship' (p. 7), *mukha uparāhĩ* 'on the face' (p. 3)', *biricha tara* 'under the tree' (p. 3), *pāva tara* 'under the foot' (p. 8), *bircha tarẽ* 'under the tree' (p. 106).

NOTE.—*mõ* should be read as *maũ* [see note to § 271 (*o*)]. In one instance *viṣa mau* 'in poison' (p. 73), we find the correct form.

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 282. Lakhīmpurī has **mo, mar** and **mʌiñ̃ar** 'in' and **po, pʌr, pʌriñ̃ar** 'on'. For instance: **khext mo gari cʌrti hʌi** 'the cow is grazing in the field'; **birowar pʌr** 'on the tree', **kʌrñex mʌiñ̃ar** 'in what', **duʌre po** 'on the door'.

NOTE.—The long forms **mʌiñ̃ar, pʌr** and **pʌriñ̃ar** can be used after such words also as have the short postposition after them.

S. and L. agree with Lmp.; U. and F. have **mar, mʌiñ̃ar** and **pʌr, pʌriñ̃ar**, B. has all Lmp. forms except **po**. G. town does not possess **mʌiñ̃ar** but specimens of the North and South-Eastern portions of the district show it; it

has **pʌj** also for 'on' (**dukaɪn pʌj, dʌrwaɪje pe**). Fy. has **maɪ, mãɪ, mʌñã** and **pe**, Sl. **maɪ**, and **mãɪ** and **pʌj**, Br. **maɪ, mãɪ, mʌiñjãɪ** and **pʌi**, R. **maɪ, mʌiñjãɪ** and **pe**. P. and A. generally have **mãɪ, pe**; Bgh. has **maɪ**.

C. Origin

§ 283. Modern Awadhi **me maɪ (mãɪ), mʌiñãɪ (mʌñijẽɪ), pe, pʌi (pʌj)** and **pʌr, pʌriñãɪ.**

Early Awadhi *maha* (*mahã*), *māhã*, *māhĩ*, *mahũ*, *mājhu*, *madhya*, *mõ* etc.; *para*, *ūpara*, *pāhã*, *pai*, *uparāhĩ*, *uparāhã*, *uparāta*; *tara*, *tarẽ*.

Of these all *m-* forms go back to *madhya*, (*-ka* or *-ra* in some cases); the forms with *-r*, *-r-* to *upari*, *uparitra* and *upariṣṭha*, **pʌi (pʌj)** to *prati*; *pāhã* and **pe** as well as *pahi*, *pahũ* etc. of Early Awadhi in Tulsīdās to some forms of *pakṣa*, or *pārśva*. *tara* and *tarẽ* go back to *tala*, *talẽ* (*talakẽ*).

Other Postpositions

§ 284. These are used after the genitive forms of the personal pronouns, after the genitive postpositions in case of such nouns as can take the short postposition, and after the noun or pronoun directly in other cases.

A. Early Awadhi

§ 285. Besides the case-postpositions mentioned above, the texts have the following which are more or less used as postpositions.

(*a*) Jāyasī *saṅga* (*sãga*) in the sense of with (*e.g.*, *jehi sãga* 'with whom', p. 25.) *saũ* in the sense of 'before, in front of' (*e.g.*, *jā saũ* 'in front of whom', p. 49), *tāĩ* 'for' (*e.g.*, *jaga kai tāĩ* 'for the world', p. 25), *lāgi* (*lagi*) meaning 'upto' (*e.g.*, *lāgi akāsā* 'upto the sky', p. 40, *jab lagi tab lagi* 'until . . . then'), and *lei* or *lahi* in the same sense (*jau lahi* 'until', p. 58, *saraga lei lāvā* 'sown upto heavens', p. 73),

and *sari* 'like' (*e.g.*, *sērasāhi sari* 'like Sher Shāh' p. 23), *nāī* 'like' (*e g.*, *bīju kai nāī* 'like lightning' p. 49), *bhari* 'whole' (*e.g.*, *janama bhari* 'throughout life' p. 15).

(*b*) Tulsīdās has a large number. Frequently he uses *pahī* (*pahā*) and *pāhī* and sometimes *pāsa* to indicate 'nearness', the sense of **tizr** of Lakhīmpurī. For instance:

kuṁbhaja ṛṣi pāhī 'to (near) the sage born of the jar (Agastya)' (p. 26), *jasa bara mai baraneū tuma pāhī* 'the bride-groom such as I have described to you' (p. 34), *mahēsa pahī calī* 'went towards Śiva' (p. 28), *saṁbhu pahā* 'near Śambhu' (p. 41), *bibhīṣana pāsa* 'near Bibhīṣaṇa' (p. 77).

He uses *lāgi* (*lagi*), *liya* and *badi* in the sense of 'for', exactly in the sense in which Lakhīmpurī has **khaztir.** For instance: *barahī lāgi* 'for the bride-groom' (p. 46), *bhagatana hita lāgī* 'for the good of the devotees' (p. 10), *kachu kahana liya* 'for saying something' (p. 217), *rāura badi* 'for your sake' (p. 279). *lagi* (sometimes *lagē*) and *lai* are used to indicate the idea of 'upto' or 'even', *e.g.*, *baṛī bāra lagi* 'upto a great deal of time' (p. 60), *kahā lagi* 'upto where' (p. 16), *pāyā lai parahī* 'even do they fall at the feet' (p. 163).

saṅga (*sāga*) indicates 'with', 'in company of' (*e.g.*, *daccha kumārī saṅga* 'with the daughters of Dakṣa', *rāma kubhāti saciva sāga jāhī* 'Rāma was going in an untoward way with the minister', p. 172) and *bhari* 'throughout' (*e.g.*, *bhari māgha nahāhī* 'bathe throughout Māgha', p. 25), while *bīca* (*bica*) means 'in the middle of' (*e.g.*, *bīthinha bica* 'in the middle of the rows', p. 85).

(*c*) N. has *pāsa* 'near' (*e.g.*, *tina pāsa* 'near them' p. 9), *saṅga* (*sāga*) and *sātha* 'with' (*mohi saṅga* 'with me', p. 5, *rānī sātha* 'with the queen', p. 7), *lāga* 'for' (*e.g.*, *jōga lāga* 'for the *yōga*', p. 16), and *laga* and *tāī* for 'upto' (*e.g.*, *jau laga* 'until that', *jaba laga*, p. 21, *aba tāī* 'uptill now', p. 20), *bīca* 'in the middle' (*e.g.*, *sapana bīca* in the middle of the dream' p. 10), *nita* 'for' (*e.g.*, *tumhai nita* 'for you' p. 72).

All the texts use *nāī* (*nyāyī*) in the sense of 'like', 'as', *e.g.*, T. *raurihi nāī* 'like yourself' (p. 158).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 286. (1) To express the sense of 'for' Lakhīmpurī has **khaɪtir**, *e.g.*, **hʌmoriɪ khaɪtir duɪdfiụ lʌjaɪoɪ** 'bring milk for me', **wʌfli kiɪ khaɪtir** 'for him', **raɪm khaɪtir** 'for Rām'. When the idea of 'officiating' is to be denoted the word **bʌdi̯** is employed, *e.g.*, **hʌmoriɪ bʌdi̯** 'for me—officiating me'. S. and L. agree with Lmp., U. and F. use **bʌreɪ** and **mudɪeɪ** for **khaɪtir.** B. agrees with Lmp., G. uses **wʌfiʌtɪeɪ** and **khaɪtir** both, and reserves **bʌdi̯** for officiating. In the North, G. has **khʌrtir** for **khaɪtir.** Fy. and Sl. have **khaɪtir.** Br. has **tʌĩɪ, khaɪtir** and **bʌdeɪ** with no nuances in meaning; R. , P. and A. have **tʌĩɪ, bʌreɪ, sʌntiɪ** and **khaɪtir.**

(2) To express the sense of 'with' *i.e.*, 'in company of', the dialects generally use **sʌŋgfi** and **saɪth** (or **saɪtheɪ** in Eastern dialects, *e.g.*, Sl. **tofiɔreɪ saɪtheɪ** 'with you'). For instance:

Lmp. **hʌmɔreɪ sʌŋgfi, ui keɪ sʌŋgfi, raɪm sʌŋgfi.**

(3) To express the sense of 'near', the dialects use **tiɪr** or **lʌgeɪ.** For instance, Lmp. **hʌmɔreɪ tiɪr** 'with me', 'near me'; **dukaɪn lʌgeɪ** 'near the shop'. The postposition **lʌgeɪ** (sometimes **lʌg**) expresses the sense of 'upto' also, *e.g.*, **biɪɔwaɪ lʌgeɪ pʌfiũcʌu tʌu** 'first reach upto the tree'.

(*a*) **lʌi** also expresses the sense of 'upto' but is particularly used after adverbs, *e.g.*, **kʌfiãɪ lʌi** 'upto where?'

(4) To express the sense of 'owing to', 'on account of' **maɪreɪ** is used in all the dialects, *e.g.*, Lmp. **kaɪmeɪ maɪreɪ** 'owing to work', **ui keɪ maɪreɪ** 'because of him'. **tumfiɔreɪ maɪreɪ** 'on account of you'.

(5) To express the sense of 'through' **ɖʌgʌr** 'way' is used, *e.g.*, **mofiɔreɪ ɖʌgʌr nikʌri̯ aɪoɪ** 'come

along through the gate', **kʌunir ɖʌgʌr** 'through which way'.

(6) To express the sense of 'like' Lakhīmpurī uses **tʌnar**, central dialects generally have **tʌnar** or **tʌrar** and the Eastern ones use '**bidʃi**', *e.g.*, Lmp. **hʌmʌrir tʌnar** 'like me', **lʌrikʌwar tʌnar** 'like a boy'.

(7) To indicate the idea of 'entirety', the postposition **bʃʌrer** is placed after the noun and then the necessary case-postposition, for instance: **gãru bʃʌre ko** 'to the whole village'. After a noun in direct case **bʃʌrɨ** is placed irrespective of gender, *e.g.*, **gãru bʃʌrɨ arwar** 'the whole village came'; **lʌũɽijar bʃʌrɨ arĩr, ʌdomir rʌʃɨ ger** 'all the girls have come away, (only) the men have stayed back'.

(8) To express the sense of 'in front' or 'before' the dialects have **sʌmʌʃer** and **arger**, *e.g.*, **hʌmʌrer sʌmʌʃer** 'in front of me', **hʌmʌrer arger** 'before me'.

C. Origin

§ 287. Of the other postpositional words:

Mod. Aw. **khartir**, **khʌrtir** come from Ar. *khāṭir* and **wʌʃʌtrer** from *vāsṭē*.

bʌdi < √*vand-* 'praise, honour'? (*rāura badi* 'in honour of your worship, for you').

sʌntir < Pkt. *santē* 'being'. *nita* < *nimitta* 'cause'. **bʌrer** < some derivative of √*vṛ-*, **tʌĩr** < *sthānē*?

sʌŋgʃ < *saṅgha* 'a collection'. E. Aw. *saṅga* (*sãga*) is Skt. *saṅga* and if the Mod. Aw. **sʌŋgh** were connected with that, the aspiration would be inexplicable.

tirr < Skt. *tīra* 'bank'.

lʌger and E. Aw. *lāgi*, *lagi*, are derivatives of *lagna* (*lagnakē* and *lagia*).

lʌi, E. Aw. *lai* and *lahi* go back to the absolutive of √*lābh-*; **marrer** may be connected with *māritēna*. **ɖʌgʌr**

means ' way ' in Mod. Aw. = Skt. *mārga* and is possibly a Deśī word. We may compare the use of Marāṭhī *māgẽ*.

sarisa < *sadṛśa* ' like '.

tʌraɪ is Arabic *ṭaraḥ* ; is **tʌnaɪ** a corrupt form of it? In this connection the substitution of *r* by *n* in child's language may be noted (*vide* Part I § 161).

bidfi < Skt. *vidhi* ' way, means '.

bhʌreɪ and **bfiʌri̯**, E. Aw. *bhari* are derivatives of root *√bhṛ-*.

sahũ and *saũ* of E. Aw. are connected with Skt. *saṅmukha*. We have another derivative of the same word in Mod. Aw. **sʌmʌfieɪ** ' in front ' ; **ɑɪgeɪ** < *agra-kẽ*. *pāsa* comes from Skt. *pārśva* and *nāĩ*, *nyāyĩ* from *nyāyena*.

CHAPTER VI

VERBS

Root[1]

§ 288. (*a*) The roots are either active or passive in sense, *e.g.*, **lʌkʌɽiː kʌʈʌtį̈ hʌi** 'the wood gets cut' (passive), **uː lʌkʌɽiː kaːɽʈʌtį̈ hʌi** 'he cuts the wood' (active). The passive roots are all intransitive, the active roots are either transitive or intransitive. Roots have a simple (*e.g.*, **kaːɽʈʌb** 'to cut') and a causal form (*e.g.*, **kʌʈaːɽwʌb** 'to cause to be cut'). All denominative roots are intransitive, *e.g.*, **lonaːɽb** 'to taste saltish', **lʌɲaːɽb** 'to feel ashamed.'

(*b*) The root of a verb may be obtained by separating **-bų̈** (*e.g.*, **hoːɽbų̈** 'to be'); **-ʌbų̈** (*e.g.*, **kʌrʌbų̈** 'to do') or **-wʌbų̈** (*e.g.*, **bʌjaːɽwʌbų̈** 'to beat a musical instrument') as the case may be from the direct case of the verbal noun (see below § 335),

§ 289. Most of the roots used in Awadhi are already found in OIA and Mid. IA. There are a few roots borrowed from Persian-Arabic, *e.g.*, **newaːɽʃʌb** 'to be merciful' Pers. *nawāz*, **daːɽgʌb** 'to scorch' Pers. *dāg*, **gudʌrʌb** 'to pass' Pers. **guḏar, baldab** 'to change' A. *badal*. In some cases the ancient participle has been taken and used as a root', *e.g.*, *hataba* 'to kill' in the Rāmāyan, based on *hataḥ* 'killed', *bhāgab* 'to run away' on *bhagnaḥ* 'broken'. What appear as passive roots to-day are based on the ancient passive forms, *e.g.*, *chījai* 'to waste away' < *chidyatē* : *chijjai*, *bājai* 'strikes' : *vādyatē* > *bajjai*. If a root is both

[1] Early Awadhi does not differ from Modern Awadhi in the treatment of roots.

passive and active, *e.g.*, *bharab* 'to be filled' or 'to fill', it is derivable from two different forms (Pkt. *bharīai* and *bharai* respectively). The derivation from two different sources explains the alternation of consonants also, *e.g.*, *ṭūṭab* 'to break' (passive) and *tōrab* 'to break' (active) are derivable from *truṭyate* and *trōṭayati*, *-ṭy-* > *-ṭṭ-* > *ṭ-*, while *-ṭ-* intervocalic becomes *r* in Awadhi.

Auxiliary Verb

A. Early Awadhi

§ 290. The auxiliary verb is seldom employed; the participle by itself expresses the complete sense of the verb generally. The following are the forms, sometimes used as the auxiliary but generally as the substantive verb.

Present tense

Jāyasī, Tulsī and Nūr Muhammad all have *ah-*, *h-* forms, *e.g.*, Jāyasī: *haũ* (p. 528), *ahaũ* (p. 517), *ahau* (p. 435), *hai* (p. 10), *ahai* (p. 33), *ahahi* (p. 147), *āhi* (p. 348), *hahĩ* (p. 151); Tulsī: *ahaũ* (p. 379), *hahu* (p. 296), *hahĩ* (p. 144), *ahahĩ* (p. 456); Nūr Muhammad: *haũ* (p. 25), *hasi* (p. 55), *ahasi* (p. 43), *hahu* (p. 32), *hai* (p. 1), *ahai* (p. 2.), *āhi* (p. 5), *ãhai* (p. 45).

Jāyasī does not generally use *tatsama* forms, but still at one place he uses *nāsti* (p. 8).

We find three instances of *āch-* verb in Jāyasī: *āchahĩ* (p. 181, p. 585) and *ācha* (p. 245), and *achata* 'remaining' in Tulsīdās (*e.g.*, p. 158).

Past tense

All the three texts have *bha-* forms, Jāyasī in addition has *ah-* and *h-* forms and Tulsī *h-*, *rah-* forms, *e.g.*, Jāyasī: *ahā* (p. 225), *hatẽ* (p. 150), *hatā* (p. 113), *hata* (p. 120), *huta* (p. 171), *ahẽ* (p. 342), *ahĩ* (p. 35), *bhā* (p. 16), *bhaeu* (p. 78), *bhai* (p. 78), *bhaẽ* (p. 79); Tulsī: *bhaĩ* (p. 85), *bhayeu* (p. 324), *hĩ* (p. 379), *rahi*, *rahẽ* (p. 146); N. Muhammad: *bhaeũ*

(p. 63), *bhā* (p. 6), *bhaī* (p. 9), *bhaeu* (p. 8), *bhaila* (p. 67), *bhaē* (p. 11), *bhaena* (p. 59), *bhaĩ* (p. 19), *bhaĩna* (p. 59).

NOTE.—Jāyasī uses *āthī* once.

Future tense

All the texts have *hō-* forms, *e.g.*, Jāyasī: *hōeũ* (p. 21), *hoihai* (p. 249), *hōihi* (p. 312), *hōkai* (p. 416), *hōhihī* (p. 245); Tulsī: *hōihi* (p. 28); N. Muhammad: *hōihi* (p. 26), *hōba* (p. 55), *hōbai* (p. 58).

For the Imperative and Conjunctive *hō-* forms are used, *e.g.*, *hōai* (J. p. 573), *hōi* (J. p. 348), *hōhu*. (N. p. 32).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 291. The following are the forms of the auxiliary verb.

(a) Present Indicative

Lakhīmpurī

	sg.	pl.
1st person	**hʌũ**	**hʌn**
2nd person	**hʌi**	**hʌu**
3rd person	**hʌi**	**hʌĩ**

The dialects of Sitapur, Lucknow, Unao, Fatehpur, Bahraich, Barabanki, Gonda and Western Sultanpur all have **h-** forms. S., L., U. and F. agree entirely with Lmp.; B. and G. substitute **hoxix** for the 1st per. pl. and **hʌs** for 2nd pers. sg.; Br. has 1st pers. **hʌ̃w, hʌn,** 2nd pers. **hʌwʌi, hʌwʌo** and 3rd pers. **hʌwʌi, hʌwʌĩ.** R. has the forms of Lmp. except 2nd pers. sg. **hʌsi̯,** 3rd pers. sg. **axj,** 3rd pl. **ʌfiĩx** or **axfiĩx.** Fy. and Sl. have **ʌfi-** forms *viz.*, 1st pl. **ʌfiix, ʌfiʌn,** 2nd sg. or pl. **ʌfiʌu, ʌfiax,** 3rd sg. **ʌfiʌi** or **axj** and 3rd pl. generally **ʌfiʌ̃j, (ʌfiĩx, ʌfiin).** Bgh. has **h-** and **ʌh-** forms: 1st **ʌfieũ, hʌĩ**; 2nd **hʌi,** and **hʌu, ʌfiʌu,** 3rd **axj, ʌi** and **hʌĩ, ʌfiə̃x.** In P. we find **baxʈ-** forms: 1st. pl. **baxʈen,** 2nd sg. or pl. **baxʈʌi, bax,** 3rd sg. **baxʈʌi,** 3rd pl. **baxʈʌ̃j** but **ʌfi-** also (*e.g.*, **tʌĩ ʌfiʌsi** 'thou art', **ʌfiʌi**

3rd sg.). In A. both **ʌfi-** and **baɾʈ-** forms are found and in Mirzapur mostly the latter.

(b) Past Indicative

Lakhīmpurī

	sg.	pl.
1st pers.	**rʌfiʌũ**	**rʌfiʌn**
2nd pers.	**rʌfiʌi**	**rʌfiʌu**
3rd pers.	**rʌfiʌi**	**rʌfiʌɪ̃**

All the dialects have **rʌfi-** forms for this tense. Only in the Western portion of Unao and Fatehpur which border on Kanaujī and in Bgh., we find **hʌt-** forms (masc. pl. all persons **hʌtex**, **hʌtix** fm., sg., **hʌtax** masc., **hʌtix** fm.; the **hʌ-** of these forms is elided after participles). In Partabgarh the present tense **baɾʈen** (1st pl.) is used as an alternative with **rʌfiex**. There are dialectal differences in **rʌfi-** forms. S., L., U., F., Br. and R. agree with Lmp., only R. has **rʌfiisi̯** for 2nd sg. B. and G. have 1st pl. **rʌfiin,** 2nd sg. **rʌfiis**; G. Fy. and Sl. have 3rd sg. **rʌfiax** (masc.) and **rʌfiix** fm. while Sl. and A. as well as Mirzapur have 3rd pl. as **rʌfien** or **rʌfiin**. Sl. 1st pl. is **rʌfiʌwãx** and 2nd sg. or pl. **rʌfijax**. In Bgh. the **rʌfi-** forms are also used: **rʌfieũ rʌfien, rʌfiax rʌfieu, rʌfiax rʌfien.**

(c) Future Indicative

Lakhīmpurī

	sg.	pl.
1st pers.	**hoifiʌũ**	**hoibax, hoɾib**
2nd pers.	**hoɾix, hoifiʌi**	**hoifiʌu**
3rd pers.	**hoɾix**	**hoifiʌɪ̃**

All the dialects have **hoɾ-** forms, only in West U. we have **hoifiʌɪ̃**. But there is a difference with regard to the forms containing **-fi-** or **-b-**. In Lmp. and in S., L., U., F. and Bgh. we have **-b-** only in 1st pl., In B., Br., R. and G. also **-b-** form is found only in the 1st pers. pl.: B. **hoibʌi, hoɾb,** Br. **hoɾbʌi,** R. **hoɾb,** G. **hoɾb.** In Fy., Sl., P., A. and Mirzapur **-b-** forms replace **-fi-** forms in the 2nd person also: **Fy.**

1st **hoɪbʌi,** 2nd **hoɪbjaɪ,** P., A., M. 1st and 2nd **hoɪb, hoɪboɪ.** In 3rd pers. sg. R., Sl. and P. have **hoɪe.** Bgh. 1st. **hoɪeũ, hoɪbʌi;** 2nd **hoiſies, hoɪwaɪ;** 3rd **hoɪiɪ, hõiſiʌĩ.**

(d) Imperative (Present)

Lakhīmpurī

	sg.	pl.
2nd	**hoɪ**	**hoɪu**
2nd	**rʌſiu**	**rʌſiʌu**

All the dialects have the forms **ho-** and **rʌſi-,** the former emphasises the momentary character of action while the latter the continuity of the same. Such dialects as do not use a singular, *viz.*, Eastern, substitute **rʌſiaɪ** for **rʌſiʌu.**

(e) Future Imperative

Lakhīmpurī

	sg.	pl.
2nd	**hoɪeɪ**	**hoɪeu**
2nd	**rʌſieɪ**	**rʌſieu**

This future Imperative is used to denote distant future as compared with the ordinary Imperative. Of the two forms **hoɪ-** lays emphasis on the momentary character of the action and **rʌſi-** on the continuity of the same, *e.g.*, **tum khaɪtị rʌſieu** 'you continue eating' while **tum khaɪtị hoɪeu** 'you be eating'. All the dialects possess this mood. Some dialects modify their terminations as shown below :

G. 2nd per sg. **hoɪis, rʌſiis,** Sl. and P. pl. **hoɪjaɪ rʌſijaɪ,** Bgh. **hwaɪs** sg., **hwaɪu** pl.

(f) Past Conditional

Lakhīmpurī

	sg.	pl.
1st	**hoɪtiũ**	**hoɪten, hoɪitị**
2nd	**hoɪtị**	**hoɪtiu**
3rd	**hoɪtị**	**hoɪtĩɪ**

All the dialects have **hoɪ-** forms. S and L. agree with Lmp., U. and F. have 1st **hoɪteũ, hoɪteɪ,** 2nd **hoɪteɪ,**

hoxteu, 3rd **hoxt, hoxter ;** B. agrees with Lmp. while R. and Br. have 1st **hoxteũ**, **hoxit,** 2nd **hoxter, hoxtur,** 3rd **hoxt (hoxtʌi), hoxtẽr.** G. 1st **hoxit,** 2nd sg. **(tvʌĩ) hoxtis,** pl. **(tũr) hoxtiu,** 3rd **hoxt, hoxtĩr.** Fy. 1st **hoxit,** 2nd **hoxteu,** 3rd sg. **hoxt,** pl. **hoxtẽr.** Sl., P. and A. agree with Fy. except in 2nd per. where **hoxtjar** is found.

C. Origin

§ 292. The auxiliary verb of Awadhi is based on the forms of Skt. *√as-* 'to be', *√bhū-* 'to become', *√vṛt* 'to exist', *√rah*[1]- 'to depart, separate' and *√ā-kṣē*[2] 'to abide'.

The auxiliary, used generally as the copula in a sentence, has almost the same place in speech as a pronoun. It is in very common use but occupies an unimportant position semantically. So we find a great variety of forms. Most of the forms are based on *√as-*. There are two sorts of forms of this : (1) those which retain the initial *a-* as *a-* or *ā-* and (2) those which have lost it. The texts appear to have a preference for the retention of the initial vowel. Most of the forms of either variety are fresh forms, only a few cases go back to ancient forms, *e.g. āhi* < *asti*[3] through *atthi*, *āthi*, but *ahahi* is a fresh formation, taking *ah-* as the root, also *hate* with *hat-* as the root. Even in early Indo-Aryan *√as-* was substituted by *√bhū-* for the Future and the Conditional. We find the same in Awadhi. Besides, the past tense in Awadhi has recourse either to *√bhū-* or to *√rah-*. Both the *hō-* and *bh-* forms are attested by Early Awadhi : beside *huta* < *bhūta*, we find *bhā* which is decidedly a later formation. Modern Awadhi has discarded *√bhū-* for the past tense and has almost universally substituted *√rah-*. *√vṛt-* is not attested

[1] Turner : *Nepali Dictionary* (p. 531) under ***rahnu.***

[2] *Ibid* (p. 191) under *chanu*, also see B.S.O.S. Vol. V, Part I (p. 137).

[3] Chatterji derives it from ***asati.***

by Early Awadhi; its use in Modern Awadhi is restricted to one district. But it is found in Bhōjpurī quite regularly, cf. Awadhi **baɾʈʌi**, Bhōj. **baɾɽʌj**. *āch-* appears to have been infrequently used in Early Awadhi, but it is entirely absent in Modern Awadhi.

Tenses

§ 293. In Awadhi we find the Indicative mood, the Imperative mood and the Conditional. The Indicative merely expresses the action—past, present and future. The Imperative denotes order in the case of the second person and permission or approval in the case of others. This is with reference to the present (immediate future) or to the Future (distant future). The Conditional refers to the Past where the condition has not been satisfied. Thus there result six tenses in Awadhi; these are known as simple.

Besides the above, Awadhi makes periphrastic tenses by combining the Participles with the forms of the Auxiliary Verb—six with the Imperfect Participle and six with the Perfect Participle. In effect there are eighteen tenses, *viz.*:—

A. Simple Tenses

1. Present Indicative.
2. Past Indicative.
3. Future Indicative.
4. Imperative.
5. Future Imperative.
6. Conditional.

B. Periphrastic Tenses

(a) With the Imperfect Participle

7. Present Imperfect Indicative—Imp. Part. and Present Indicative of the Auxiliary Verb.

8. Past Imperfect Indicative—Imp. Part. and Past Ind. of the Auxiliary Verb.

9. Future Imperfect Indicative—Imp. Part. and Future Ind. of the Auxiliary Verb.

10. Imperfect Imperative—Imp. Part. and Imperative of the Auxiliary Verb.

11. Future Imperfect Imperative—Imp. Part. and Fut. Imperative of the Auxiliary Verb.

12. Imperfect Conditional—Imp. Part. and Conditional of the Auxiliary Verb.

(*b*) *With the Perfect Participle*

13. Present Perfect Indicative—Per. Part. and Pres. Ind. of the Auxiliary Verb.

14. Past Perfect Indicative—Per. Part. and Past Ind. of the Auxiliary Verb.

15. Future Perfect Indicative—Per. Part. and Future Ind. of the Auxiliary Verb.

16. Perfect Imperative—Per. Part. and Imperative of the Auxiliary Verb.

17. Future Perfect Imperative—Per. Part. and Fut. Imperative of the Auxiliary Verb.

18. Perfect Conditional—Per. Part. and Conditional of the Auxiliary Verb.

In Early Awadhi one does not find the same abundance of the use of periphrastic tenses as in Modern Awadhi. In Nūr Muhammad we find more instances of periphrastic tenses than in Jāyasī or Tulsīdās but even his practice is far from Modern Awadhi.

In Modern Awadhi the terminations of the various tenses are shown below and applied to **dɛɪkhʌb** 'to see' (root **dɛɪkh-**) for illustration. Where a distinction between the transitive and intransitive is made, forms of **mʌrʌb** 'to die' (root **mʌr-**) have been put in.

Participles

A. Early Awadhi

§ 294. (*a*) In the texts we find *-ata* as the most general form of the Imperfect Participle used with both the numbers and all the persons, *e.g.*,

J. *nimikha na lāga karata ohi* 'creating, He did not take a second' (p. 4), *satta kahata rājā jiu jāū* '(my) life may end, O king, (by) telling the truth' (p. 150);

T. *rāu avadhapura cahata sidhāē* 'the king wants to go to Ayōdhyā' (p. 145), *karata manōratha bahu mana māhī* 'entertaining many longings in his heart' (p. 359);

N. *citavata dṛṣṭi pāra hoi jāī* '(on) seeing, the vision goes across' (p. 8), *uṭhata karējā sō nita dhūā* 'smoke always arises from (my) heart (lit. liver)' (p. 155).

(*b*) J. and T. change *-ata* to *-ati* for the feminine, *e.g.*, *haū jānati haū* 'I know' (J. p. 508), *lāgati avadhi bhayāvani bhāri* 'Ayōdhyā appears extremely terrifying' (T. p. 189), *sirāti na rātī* 'the night does not end' (T. p. 217). In periphrastic passive formations, however, the distinction of gender is sometimes absent, *e.g.*, (*sādhumahimā*) *sō mō sana kahi jāta na kaisē* 'that (greatness of the good people) is not described by me, in a manner' (T. p. 4), *prīti na sō kahi jāta* 'that affection is not described' (T. p. 195).

(*c*) A few instances of the passive participle in *ita*, *-iata* have been noticed in Jāyasī and Tulsīdās: J. *jōga jōri vaha pāita bhōgū* 'that enjoyment is obtained by concentrating on *yōga*' (p. 229); T. *girā aratha jala bīci sama*, *kahiyata bhinna na bhinna* 'word and meaning, like waves of water, are said to be different but are not so' (p. 33), similarly *pūjiata* 'is worshipped' (p. 13), *sarāhiata* 'are admired' (p. 233), *dēkhiata* 'are seen' (p. 331, p. 409).

(*d*) This participle is freely used to denote the Present Indicative in the Rāmāyan and less frequently in the Indrāvatī without the help of any auxiliary. In the Rāmāyan and Padmāvat, its use with the forms of the auxiliary verb is very rare (see §§ 314 and 316). In the Indrāvatī the auxiliary is in greater use but still the Imperfect Participle without the auxiliary is found considerably. There does not appear to be any distinction of sense between the real Present

Indicative (based on the Ancient Present) and that indicated by this participle.

NOTE.—Note 2 under § 296 is applicable to Early Awadhi also, *e.g.*, *auru jo bhūlē āvatahi* 'others who have forgotten (the path) while coming (lit. during the coming)' (J. p 16).

§ 295. The following forms of the Perfect Participle are found in Early Awadhi texts :

(*a*) in *-ā*, (*b*) in *-ē*, (*c*) in *-ī*, (*d*) in *-eũ*, (*e*) in *-iũ*, (*f*) in *-inha*, (*g*) in *-esi*, *-isi*, (*h*) in *-ehu*, *-eu*, (*i*) in *-ihu*, (*j*) in *-enhi*, *-inhi*, *-ena*, *-eni*, *-ina*, (*k*) in *-ĩ*, (*l*) in *-eu*, (*m*) in *-ehi*, (*n*) in *-ala*, *-ila*.

Of these the first three forms (*a*), (*b*) and (*c*) are used both as adjective and as verb; as adjective (*a*) qualifies a masc. sg. noun, (*b*) a masculine pl. noun and (*c*) qualifies a fm. sg. or pl. As verb, these forms are used irrespective of person. If the root is transitive, the participle used agrees with the number and gender of the object, and if the root is intransitive, it generally agrees with the number and gender of the subject. For instance :

Jāyasī : *taba lagi rānī suā chapāvā* 'the queen concealed the parrot till . . .' (p. 89), *rānī sunā* 'the queen heard' (p. 109), *ehi jhūṭhī māyā mana bhūlā* 'in this false *māyā* (my) mind has wandered' (p. 113), *hama na dēkha* 'I did not see' (p. 431) ; *tehi ghara dui dīpaka ūjiārē, pantha dēi kahā daī sāvārē* 'in that house the Creator prepared the two bright lamps to show (lit. give) the Path' (p. 25), *bhā bihāna paṇḍita saba āē* 'it became morning and all the learned men came' (p. 81), *ohi saũ maī pāī jaba karanī, ugharī jībha kathā kabi baranī* 'when I obtained the capacity from him, my tongue became unsealed and the poet (I) narrated the story' (p. 26), *jīva tumha bhaī* 'you became life' (p. 568).

Tulsīdās : *satī marata hari sana baru māgā* 'Satī while dying asked for a boon from Hari' (p. 32), *sō phalu bhalī*

bhāti hama pāvā 'well have I obtained the fruit of that' (p. 51), *tadapi malina mana bōdhu na āvā* 'even then understanding did not come to my defiled mind' (p. 51), *gaē mātu pahi rāmu gosāī* 'Lord Rāma went to (his) mother' (p. 177), *dīnhi asīsa lāi ura līnhē, bhūsana basana nichāvari kīnhē* '(she) gave blessings, embraced him closely and showered ornaments and clothes (on the servants) as gifts' (p. 177), *maī puni nija guru sana sunī kathā so sūkara khēta* 'I, however, heard that story from my teacher at Sūkara-khēta' (p. 18), *dukhu dampatihi umā harasānī* 'Uma became pleased (but) the couple (her parents) got sorrow' (p. 33).

Nūr Muhammad : *ēka rāta sapanā maī dēkhā* 'one night I saw a dream' (p. 4), *jākō tuma sapanē mō dēkhā* 'whom you saw in dream' (p. 75), *uṭhā cahũ disa tẽ vāvailā* 'lamentation rose up from all the four quarters' (p. 3), *hama nā rahē karabalā ṭhāī* 'I was not in Karbalā' (p. 3), *eka disa bādhē turai birājaī* 'on one side the tied horses looked beautiful' (p. 9), *gaṛha para caṛhī kamānaī durajana dēkhi ḍērāya* 'the wicked on seeing the strung bows on the fort, got frightened' (p. 8), *jaga sō patijhārī ritu gaī* 'the autumn season went away from the world' (p. 52).

NOTE 1.—The final *-ā, -ē, -i* is sometimes found short, particularly for metre, *e.g.*, J. *dīnha, kīnha* (p. 2), *lāga* (p. 4), *bhai* (p 78), *gai* (p. 19); T. *baiṭha, kīnha līnha, bhae* (p. 63), *bhai, gai, līnhi*; N. *kīnha* (p. 1). Verbs of very general occurrence have shorter forms; *bhā, bhē, gā, gē* are found in all the three texts; cf. 297 (*z*). In Jāyasī on p. 583, *baiṭhu hai, baiṭhu* (sg.) has been used with a pl. auxiliary, it ought to have been *baiṭha*.

NOTE 2.—Transitive roots used intransitively are treated of as intransitive. In one case in Jāyasī (*padumāvati hāsā* 'Padmāvatī laughed', p. 429) the masc. form of the participle has been used with a feminine noun, possibly for rhyming or it might be an instance of *bhāve prayoga*. In Nūr Muhammad, however, there are many instances where the masculine form is found instead of the expected feminine.

NOTE 3.—In Jāyasī and Tulsīdās the use of the uninflected forms (*a*), (*b*), and (*c*) is found in abundance for indicating the past tense, but in Nūr Muhammad it is much less. He uses the inflected forms generally.

Forms (*d*) in *-eũ* and (*e*) in *-iũ* are used with a 1st person sg. subject, (*d*) with masculine nouns and (*e*) with feminine. Sometimes, however, even when the subject is masculine, the form of the participle is feminine in order to conform with an object in the feminine gender (*sō suni samujhi sahiũ saba sūlā* 'I (Bharata) heard and understood all that, and put up with the torture' (T. p. 259). For instance :

J. *āeũ ehi hāṭā* 'I (Brāhmaṇa) came to this market' (p. 121), *āiũ ehi sāthā* 'I (a female friend of Padmāvatī) came with her' (p. 103). In one instance (*jāgi uṭheũ*[1] 'I (Padmāvatī) got up from sleep', p. 439), form (*d*) is found with a feminine subject.

T. *anucita bacana kaheũ agyātā* 'Not knowing you, I (Parushurāma) have uttered improper words' (p. 121), *dēkhiũ khōja lōka tihũ nāhĩ* 'I (Śūrpaṇakhā) have searched throughout, but (a man suitable to me) does not exist in the three worlds' (p. 300).

In one instance (*aba ura rākhehu jō hama kaheũ* 'keep in your mind what we have said', p. 37), form (*d*)—the nasalisation being absent due to rhyme—is found with a subject in the plural number.

N. Here no instances of form (*e*) have been found; even with fem. subjects the masculine form (*d*) is used : *āhō yaha nita barajeũ jōgī* 'O Yogin, I have prohibited you on this account'—the female gardener speaking to the Prince, (p. 43) ; *sumireũ sirajanahārahĩ jaba dēkheũ asa rūpa* 'I

[1] We should, however, note that J. and N. were written originally in Persian characters which did not distinguish between *e* and *i* and hence these mistakes might be due to the scribes in Devanāgarī characters.

remembered the Creator when I saw such beauty'—the Yogin speaking (p. 19).

Form (*f*) in *-inha* is found only in Tulsīdās and has been used with fem. subject of the 1st person plural, *e.g.*, *hama saba.....bhainha dhanya* 'all of us (women) became blessed' (p. 244). From this a corresponding masculine form in *-enha* can be deduced which would correspond with Modern Awadhi *-en* (§ 297).

Form (*g*) in *-esi* is found in all the three texts in transitive verbs, while that in *-isi* is found only in Tulsīdās where it always goes with a feminine noun in the 3rd pers. singular. The *-esi* form in Jāyasī and Tulsīdās is found with 3rd sing. or 2nd sing., while in Nūr Muhammad only with the 3rd pers. For instance:

J. (*tū*) *abahū na sampuṭa khōlesi* '(thou Padmāvatī) has not yet opened the socket' (p. 551); (*suā*) *kahesi calaū jau lahi tana pākhā* '(the parrot) said: I should go away while I have wings in my body' (p. 107).

T. (*madana*) *marana ṭhāni mana racesi upāī* '(Cupid) made up his mind to die and contrived means' (p. 41), (*kaikēyī*) *māresi mōhī kuṭhāū* '(Kaikēyī) hit me at a bad point' (p. 169).

(*mantharā*) *kahesi kathā sata savati kai* '(Mantharā) narrated hundreds of stories of co-wives' (p. 164); *būṛha bhayasi* '(thou) hast grown old' (p. 393).

NOTE.—In Tulsīdās this form of the participle always implies a contempt for its subject.

N. *gagana ki sōbhā kīnhesi tārā* '(the Creator) made the stars, an ornament of the sky' (p. I).

Forms (*h*) in *-ehu* (*-eu*) and (*i*) in *-ihu* are used with the 2nd pers. plur., (*h*) in the masculine and (*i*) in the feminine. *-eu* is found very seldom in Jāyasī and Tulsīdās while it is frequently found in Nūr Muhammad. The fem. form is not found in Nūr Muhammad. For instance:

J. *hatiā dui jo caḍhāehu kāḍhai* 'the two murders that you have borne on your shoulder' (p. 470), *āeu milai calehu mili sūā* 'O parrot, you came to meet and have moved away after the meeting' (p. 404), *jo gaihu kālhi dēo kara bārī* 'that you went to the deity's garden yesterday' (p. 442), *pūji manāihu bahuta binātī* 'after having adored him, you coaxed him by many prayers' (p. 442).

T. *muni asa kṛpā na kīnhehu kāū* 'O sage, never did you show such a favour before' (p. 90), *ḍahāki ḍahāki paricehu saba kāhū* 'you have become hardened by overcoming every one' (p. 62), (*tumha*) *kīnhihu prasna jagata hita lāgī* '(you) have put the question for the sake of the world's good' (p 53), *rahihu baurānī* 'you were mad' (p. 64).

N. *hō dhana jā kō nāma sunāyehu* 'O lady, he whose name you have uttered (lit. made me hear)' (p. 49), *jō jōgī kahā samujheu ājū* 'if you understood the Yogin today' (p. 75).

NOTE.—On p. 25, in the Rāmāyan an instance occurs (*kīnhahu praśna* 'you have put the question') where the termination *-ahu* appears for *-ehu* and is obviously a misprint.

Forms (*j*) and (*k*) are used with a subject in the 3rd pers. plur.; of these (*k*) in *-ī* is used only with a feminine subject and generally when the verb is intransitive, while (*j*) is found with the masculine generally and with the feminine when the verb is transitive. *-enhi* is found in Jāyasī, *-enhi* and *-inhi* in Tulsīdās without any distinction and *-ena*, *-eni* and *-ina* (fm.) in Nūr Muhammad. There is only one instance in Tulsīdās where *-eni* is found (*raheni tahā* 'there they lived', p. 90 of the 1915 edition), but this reading has been discarded in the later edition. For instance:

J. *chāḍenhi lōga kuṭūba saba kōū* 'all left their people and family' (p. 263), *dharī tīra saba kaṁcuki sārī* 'on the bank (the women) put their *sāṛīs* and bodices (p. 99),

jāi pāli para ṭhāḍhī bhaṁ '(the women) went and stood on the bank' (p. 95).

T. *daccha-sutanha upadēsinhi jāī* '(he—respectful plural) went and advised the sons of Dakṣa' (p. 38), *jehi ripu chaya soi racenhi upāū* 'they contrived means by which the enemy might be destroyed' (p. 75), *bṛnda bṛnda mili calī̃ logāī̃* 'the women started in groups' (p. 85).

N. *sumirena indrāvati kara nāū̃* 'they remembered the name of Indrāvatī' (p. 26), *bahuta amī adharana para diheni sindhu mõ prāna* 'many men abandoned their lives for the sake of the nectar-lips' (p. 49), *samujhāina saba sakhī sayānī* 'all the wise friends advised (her)' (p. 75), *bhai na bilamba sakhī saba āī̃* 'there was no delay, all the friends came' (p. 52).

NOTE. *-ī̃* is sometimes shortened to *-ī* for the sake of metre, *e.g.*, J. *calī*, (p. 415), T. *calī* (p. 28).

Form (*l*) in *-eu* is found in all the three texts with the 3rd person singular subject, *e.g.*, Jāyasi: *jō gā tahã bhulāneu sōī* 'whoever went there lost (the way)' (p. 153), *naeu* 'became subdued' (p. 19); Tulsī: *nārada jāneu nāma pratāpū* 'Nārada came to realise the powerful effect of the Name' (p. 16), *ratha samēta rabi thākeu* 'the sun stayed with his chariot' (p. 86); Nūr Muhammad: *jā kahã karatā darasa dekhāeu* 'to whom the Creator showed the path' (p. 2), *jagata bhaeu ãdhiyāra* 'the universe became dark' (p. 3).

Form (*m*) in *-ehi* is found with the 2nd pers. sing. and only in Tulsīdās, *e.g.*, *rē saṭha sunehi subhāu na mōrā* 'O knave, thou hast not heard about my nature' (p. 116).

In one case *-ē* is found (*jānē nahī̃ marama saṭha mōrā* 'O knave thou did not know my secret' p. 344).

Only a few instances of form (*n*) are found in Nūr Muhammad and obviously they are borrowed from Bihārī, *e.g.*, *tāpala rahai* 'remains heated' (p. 58), *gaila sakhī tahã bahila bayārā* 'the friend went, there the breeze blew' (p. 161).

Similarly Braj forms and Bhōjapurī forms are found occasionally in Tulsīdās as loan-words.

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 296. The Imperfect Participle in Lakhīmpurī has three forms, (*a*) in **-ʌtị̊**, (*b*) in **-itị̊** and (*c*) in **-ʌtix**. Form (*b*) is used with the 1st pers. pl. in both the genders, *e.g.*, **hʌm dexkhitị̊ hʌi** 'we (masc. or fem.) are seeing' and (*c*) in **-ʌtix** with the fem. pl. of the 2nd and 3rd pers., *e.g.*, **tum dekhʌtix hʌu** 'you (females) are seeing', **ui dekhʌtix hʌ̃** 'they (females) are seeing'. For all other cases, *i.e.*, singular in both genders and plural masculine in the 2nd and 3rd pers. the form (*a*) in **-ʌtị̊** is used.

(*a*) The final **-ị̊** of forms (*a*) and (*b*) is found in Sitapur, Lucknow (western and southern) and in parts of Unao only, in other districts it is absent.

The use of the form (*c*) in **-ʌtix** is extended to 1st pers. pl. also in Unao and other places bordering on Kanaujī area, *e.g.*, **hʌm dexkhit hʌi** 'we (men) see', **hʌm dekhʌtix hʌn** 'we (women) see'. In parts of Kheri district bordering on Hardoi, (*b*) is found ending in **-iʌtị̊** (**ɟʌiʌtị̊, cʌfliʌtị̊, khʌiʌtị̊,** etc.). In Barabanki and parts of Sultanpur, form (*b*) in **-it** is not used, the (*a*) form has taken its place. The dialects of Bahraich and Sultanpur as well as parts of Fyzabad distinguish the gender in the Imperfect Participle in the 3rd person sg. and pl., *e.g.*, **dexkhʌt hʌi** (masc.), **dexkhʌtị̊ hʌi** (fem.), **dexkhʌt hʌ̃** (masc.), **dexkhʌtị̊ hʌ̃** (fem.).

Note 1.—Of the forms of the auxiliary, present tense **hʌi** and past tense **rʌfiʌi** (and their corresponding forms in the dialects) are used with **-itị̊** or **-iʌtị̊** forms of the 1st pers. plural.

Note 2.—The Imperfect Participle is sometimes used as a verbal noun also, *e.g.*, Lmp. **hʌmʌrex khʌxtị̊ mo dundu no mʌcʌxoi** 'do not make a noise while I am eating (lit. in my eating)'. It emphasises the imperfection of the act.

§ 297. The Perfect Participle in Lakhīmpurī has the following forms :—

(*a*) in **-ax**, *e.g.*, **dɛrkhax** 'seen,' **pʌɽʃax** 'read', **mʌrax** 'died', **gʌwax** 'went.'

(*b*) in **-ɛx**, *e.g.*, **dɛrkhɛx**, **pʌɽʃɛx**, **mʌrɛx**, **gʌɛx**

(*c*) in **-ix**, *e.g.*, **dɛrkhix**, **pʌɽʃhix**, **mʌrix**, **gʌix**

(*d*) in **-eũ**, *e.g.*, **dɛrkheũ**, **pʌɽʃeũ**, **mʌreũ**, **gʌeũ**

(*e*) in **-iũ**, *e.g.*, **mʌriũ**, **gʌiũ**

(*f*) in **-en**, *e.g.*, **dɛrkhen**, **pʌɽʃen**, **mʌren**, **gʌen**

(*g*) in **-isi̯**, *e.g.*, **dɛrkhisi̯**, **pʌɽʃisi̯**

(*h*) in **-eu**, *e.g.*, **dɛrkheu**, **pʌɽʃeu**, **mʌreu**, **gʌeu**

(*i*) in **-in**, *e.g.*, **mʌrin**, **gʌin**

(*j*) in **-ini̯**, *e.g.*, **dɛrkhini̯**, **pʌɽʃini̯**

(*k*) in **-ĩx**, *e.g.*, **mʌrĩx**, **gʌĩx**

As regards the use of these forms, the dialects show a difference between transitive and intransitive verbs. Forms (*a*) and (*c*) are used to qualify a subject in the singular number of masc. and fem. gender respectively, when the verb is either intransitive by itself or bears an intransitive or passive sense, *e.g.*, **mʌi gʌwax hʌũ** 'I have gone' (masc.), **mʌi gʌix hʌũ** 'I have gone' (fem.), but **mʌi dɛrkhax hʌũ** 'I am one who has been seen' (masc.), **mʌi dɛrkhix hʌũ** 'I am one who has been seen' (fem.), **mʌi pʌɽʃax** (or **pʌɽʃix**) **hʌũ** 'I am read—literate' (masc. or fem.). Similarly in the plural, forms (*b*) and (*c*) are used, *e.g.*, **hʌm gʌɛx hʌn** 'we have gone' (masc.), **hʌm gʌix hʌn** 'we have gone' (fem.), **hʌm dɛrkhɛx hʌn** 'we are those who have been seen' (masc.), **hʌm dɛrkhix hʌn** 'we are those who have been seen' (fem.). In the same manner they are used with the subjects in the 2nd and 3rd person.

In the case of transitive verbs form (*b*) in **-ɛx** is used with the subject of any number and person (except 3rd plur.) and gender, *e.g.*, **mʌi dɛrkhɛx hʌũ**, **tui dɛrkhɛx hʌi**, **ux** or **wax dɛrkhɛx hʌi**, **hʌm dɛrkhɛx hʌn**, **tum dɛrkhɛx hʌu**. Here it always bears an active sense. Forms (*d*) in

-eũ and (*e*) in **-iũ** are used with 1st pers. sg. **mʌi** only, (*d*) with both genders when the verb is transitive and with masculine when the verb is intransitive, *e.g.*, **mʌi dɛrkheũ** 'I (masc. or fem.) have seen', **mʌi gʌeũ** 'I went' (masc.) and (*e*) in fem. gender only when the verb is intransitive, *e.g.*, **mʌi gʌiũ** 'I went' (fem.). Form (*f*) in **-en** is used when the subject is in 1st pers. pl., irrespective of the gender, and the verb is either transitive or intransitive, *e.g.*, **hʌm dɛrkhen hʌi** 'we have seen', **hʌm gʌjen hʌi** 'we have gone'. Form (*g*) is used when the verb is transitive and the subject is either in 2nd pers. sg. or in 3rd pers. sg., *e.g.*, **tui dɛrkhisi̯ hʌi** 'thou hast seen', **uɪ** or **wɑɪ dɛrkhisi̯ hʌi** 'he or she has seen'.

Forms (*h*) in **-eu** and (*i*) in **-in** are used when the subject is in the 2nd person plural, (*h*) in both genders with a transitive verb and in masc. gender with an intransitive verb, *e.g.*, **tum dɛrkheu hʌi** 'you have seen' (masc. or fem.), **tum gʌeu hʌi** 'you have gone' (masc.) and (*i*) in fem. gender only when the verb is intransitive, *e.g.*, **tum gʌiu hʌi** 'you have gone' (fem.). Form (*j*) in **-ini̯** is used when the verb is transitive and the subject is in the 3rd pers. plur. irrespective of gender, *e.g.*, **ui dɛrkhini̯ hʌi** 'they have seen' (masc. or fem.). Form (*k*) is used with 3rd pers. plur. fem. only, when the verb is intransitive and is used independently without an auxiliary, *e.g.*, **ui gʌɪ̃ɪ** 'they went', but **ui gʌiɪ hʌɪ̃** 'they have gone'.

NOTE 1.—With forms (*d*) to (*j*), the auxiliary **hʌi** (present) and **rʌβʌi** (past)—and their corresponding forms in the district dialects (*e.g.*, **bɑɪ, bɑɪʈʌi**) are used and not other forms of the present or past, *e.g.*, **mʌi dɛrkheũ hʌi** and not **mʌi dɛrkheũ hʌũ.**

The dialects of the districts show considerable divergence with regard to the use of the forms of the perfect participle. Forms (*a*) and (*c*) are used, irrespective of the verb being transitive or intransitive, in all persons and

numbers, in all the dialects except Lmp. and S. In the Eastern dialects, sometimes, the distinction of gender also is not observed, *e.g.*, Fy. **hʌm dɛɾkhaɾ ɾʌfien** 'we had seen'. Sl. **hʌm dɛɾkhaɾ ʌfiiɾ** 'we have seen'. B. **hʌm dɛɾkhaɾ hʌi** 'we have seen', L. **hʌm khaɾwaɾ** 'we ate', U. **hʌm dekhaɾwaɾ ɾʌfiʌi** 'we had shown', Sl. **tũɾ dɛɾkhaɾ ɾʌfijaɾ** 'you keep seeing', U. **tum kaisɛɾ bʌtaɾwaɾ** 'how did you tell?', P. **ʌfiir kʌfiaɾ** 'the Ahīr said', G. **aɾdfiiɾ raɾt bhaɾ** 'midnight came', **mɛfiraɾɾuɾ cʌlaɾ gʌi** 'the woman went away', B. **raɾjaɾ balaɾwaɾ** 'the king called', U. **sãɾp kaɾʈ̣ khaɾwaɾ ɾʌfiʌi** 'the serpent had bitten', **waɾ dhʌriɾ ɾʌfiʌsi̯** 'she had put', Sl. **wʌj dɛɾkhaɾ ɾʌfiẽɾ** 'they had seen', U. **un khʌbʌɾi̯ paɾiɾ** 'they got the news', **caɾɾiu bfiaɾiɾ jaɾnɛɾ naɾiɾ paɾwaɾ** 'the four brothers could not know'. Form (*b*) is used with the plural when the verb is intransitive and with 1st sg. and 2nd sg. where they exist (western and central dialects), with 1st pl. and 2nd pl. in all the dialects and also with 3rd pl. even in the case of transitive verbs in the Eastern dialects, *e.g.*, Br. **mʌi dɛɾkhaɾ hoɾũ** 'if I may have seen', R. **tui dɛɾkhɛɾ hʌi** 'thou hast seen', Sl. **hʌm dɛɾkhɛɾ ʌfiiɾ** 'we have seen', Sl. **tũɾ dɛɾkhɛɾ hoɾteu** 'had you seen', Fy. **wʌj dɛɾkhɛɾ ɾʌfiʌ̃ĩ** 'they had seen'.

This form appears as nasalised in the extreme East, *e.g.*, A. **hʌmaɾɾ bfiaɾj aɾjẽɾ** 'our brothers have come'. Form (*d*) in **-eũ** (Br. **-ew̃**) and Form (*e*) in **-iũ** are used in Western and Central dialects like Lmp., in the Eastern dialects they are rare and do not maintain a distinction of transitive and intransitive, (*d*) being used as the masculine and (*e*) as feminine. Forms (*f*) in **-en** and (*j*) in **-inị̣** (**-in**) are used both with the 1st plural and the 3rd plural, the form in **-un** also is found on the Kanaujī borders of Sitapur and Unao, *e.g.*, B. **hʌm laɾin** 'we brought', **hʌm gʌin** 'we went' S. **hʌm jhothʌɾi̯ ɖaɾɾiniị̣** 'we thrashed him', F. **hʌm lʌuʈ̣i̯ aɾun** 'we came back', Sl. **wʌj dɛɾkhɛn** 'they saw', P.

wʌj dexkhen hʌi 'they have seen', U. **wʌi kʌʈaxuni̯** 'they got (it) cut', M. **ox axjen ʌu kʌfien** 'they came and said', **ox ɟaxi laxgen** 'they started to go', **dui beʈʌwax rʌfien** 'there were two sons'. Form (*g*) in **-isi̯** is found as **-esi̯ (es)** in parts of Lucknow, Unao, Fatehpur and in R., B. and P. On the borders of Kanaujī it is also found as **-osi.** In P. and other Eastern dialects it is found with intransitive verbs also, *e.g.*, G. **twʌ̃ mʌris** 'thou died', **twʌ̃ khaxj laxgisu̯** 'thou began to eat', P. **dexkhes rʌfiʌi** 'had seen', U. (Kanaujī border) **dixnfiosi̯** 'gave' **kixnfiosi̯** 'did'. Forms (*h*) in **-eu** and (*i*) in **-iu** are found used in all the dialects, with this difference that the Eastern dialects use (*h*) with masculine subject and (*i*) with feminine subjects, irrespective of the verbs being transitive or intransitive, *e.g.*, P. **tũx hoxteu** (masc.) and **tũx hoxtiu** (fem.) 'had you been'. Form (*k*) is used with 1st. pl. (fm.) and 2nd pl. (fm.) also in the case of intransitive verbs in U. and F., *e.g.*, **hʌm mʌrɪ̃x** 'we died', **hʌm gʌɪ̃x** 'we went'.

(*x*) Such intransitive roots as contain a long syllable (*e.g.*, **laxg** 'to appear', **bʌiʈh-** 'to sit', **sʌrmax-** 'to be ashamed'), generally elide the terminations **-ax** and **-ex** and substitute **-i̯** for **-i̯x** (fm. sg.). In the Eastern dialects this **-i̯** also does not appear sometimes, *e.g.*, **laxgax laxg, bʌiʈhex bʌiʈh, laxgix laxgi̯, bʌiʈhix bʌiʈhi̯.** A specimen from Unao gives **pʌiʈhi, laxgi** as masc. pl. where **-i** should represent **-e.**

(*y*) Roots in **-ax,** however, before accepting the above change have the augment **-n-** between the root and the terminations, *e.g.*, **sʌrmaxnax sʌrmaxn, sʌrmaxnix sʌrmaxni̯.**

Monosyllabic roots ending in **-ax** (*e.g.*, **ax-** 'to come', **lax** 'to bring') neither insert **-n-** nor have the shorter forms by eliding the terminations.

(*z*) **ɟax** 'to go', **hox** 'to become', **dex** 'to give', **lex** 'to take' and **kʌr** 'to do' have their perfect participle forms with **gʌ-, bfiʌ-, difi-, lifi-** and **kifi-** respectively. In the

case of **kʌr-** both are optionally used (*e.g.*, **kʌreũ** or **kiɦeũ**). **gʌ** and **bɦʌ** have shorter forms also, **gʌwar gar**, **gʌer ger**, **gʌir gʌi**, **bɦʌwar bɦar**, **bɦʌer bɦer**, **bɦʌir bɦʌi**.

NOTE 2.—For the insertion of **-w-** see below § 341 (*d*). In the Central dialects and in south L., U. and F., we find the **-n**, **-nɦ** forms of the Perfect Part. of **kʌr-**, **der-**, **ler-** (**kirn**, **kirnɦ**, **dirn**, **dirnɦ**, **lirn**, **lirnɦ**).

C. ORIGIN

§ 298. The Imperfect participle is based on the ancient present participle (*śatṛ*) in *-anta*. There are three forms in Modern Awadhi, **-ʌt**, **-ʌtị** and **-itị** (**iʌtị**). The Eastern form in **-ʌtị** and the Western in **-ʌtir** are mere feminine forms. The fm. form **-ʌtị** is attested by the Rāmāyan. What is the basis of the masc. **-ʌtị** form? It is found in some dialects of Western Hindi also. This goes back, most probably, to the Māgadhī and Ardha Māgadhī Nom. sg. in *-ē*, as opposed to *-ō* of the Western Prakrits. The *-ē* developes into **er**, **i**, **-ị** and then loses ground. It appears that the *i* (**ị**) had already disappeared in the dialects represented by Jāyasī, Tulsīdās and Nūr Muhammad. The final *-a* in the participle is merely orthographic and not of actual speech. Another possible derivation is from the loc. sg. (*e.g.*, *dēkhantē*) of the participle, but in view of the fact that the Nom. sg. form is at the basis of the Western Hindi participle, this derivation appears improbable.

(*a*) The **-itị** (**-iʌtị**) participle is based on the passive form of the ancient present participle (*paḍhīanta*).

§ 299. The Perfect participle is based on the ancient passive past participle (*kta*), sg. masc. in *-ā* on Nom. sg. *-ao*, sg. fm. in *-ī* on Nom. sg. fm. in *-ī-* and pl. or obl. on the ancient plural in *-aē* or on the obl. in *-aē*. The other forms are inflected according to person, gender and number. What are these affixes? Eastern Hindi shares this principle of affixation with the Eastern Mod. IA languages. Three suggestions have been made to derive these affixes, *viz.*,

(1) the pronominal forms, (2) the terminations of the present tense and (3) the forms of the auxiliary verb. As far as Awadhi is concerned the last suggestion suits it the best as shown below :—

The affix for the 1st pers. sg. is (*d*) *-eũ* and (*e*) *-iũ* (fm.) This can be either the pronoun *haũ* as the enclitic, or the termination *-aũ* of the present or the auxiliary *haũ, e.g.*, *dēkhē -aũ* or *haũ* may become *dēkheũ* and *dēkhī-aũ* or *haũ dēkhiũ*. The affix for the 1st pers. pl. is (*f*) *-en* ; the form in the eastern dialects is *-in*. This, however, cannot be derived either from the pronoun *ham* or from the termination of the present tense (which as shown below § 303 is a passive form), but only from the auxiliary *han* (*dēkhē -han dēkhen*, later *dēkhin*, by the interchange of *e* : *i*). The affix for the 2nd sg. is generally (*g*) **-iṣi, -esi** which can go back only to the auxiliary *hasi*.[1] This was later extended in use to the 3rd sg. as well. The affix for the 2nd pl. is (*h*) *-eu* -masc. or (*i*) *-iu* fm. which goes back to the auxiliary *hau*, *hahu*, but can as well be derived from the termination of the present *-ahu*, *au*. The 3rd pers. fm. form (*k*) in *-ĩ* has merely nasalisation, to distinguish it from the singular. It is not peculiar to the 3rd pers. but used with the 1st and 2nd pers. also. The 3rd pl. masc. affix (*i*) **-iṇi, en** (E. Aw. *-enhi*, *-inhi*, *-ena*, *-eni*, *-ina*) is derived by Hoernle (p. 346) from *nhi* (< *nti*) but the nasal in such a position does not survive; the *-nhi* is not attested at all. The Prakrit, Apabhraṁśa (see Pischel, p. 323 and *Bhavisayatta Kahā* G.O.S., p. 24) as well as E. Awadhi attest only *-hi*.

It is only in Sindhī, Ṣiṇā, Bengali and Gypsy that *-n-* is found in the 3rd pl. present. But is it a development of *-nt-*? Neither does the pronoun nor the auxiliary appear to be at the source. The obl. pl. of the nouns and

[1] Bloch (Survivance de Skr. *āsīt* en Indian Moderne—BSL. XXXIII Fas. I, pp. 55-65) derives this from the ancient auxiliary *āsīt* > *āsi* which is also a good explanation.

pronouns ends in *-an* (E. Aw. *-anha*, *-anhi* etc.). Can that have something to do with this form of the participle?[1] E. Awadhi affix (1) *-eu* has the direct case of the noun, while (*m*) *-ehi* can be derived from the participle plus *ahi*, *asi*. The (*n*) *-la* forms are loan-words from the neighbouring Bihārī dialects and go back to *-illa* suffix of Middle Indo-Aryan.[2]

§ 300. That the auxiliary is again being incorporated into the participles is fully corroborated by modern Awadhi. For instance: Lmp. **kʌfiə̃ɪ ɟaɪtị hʌu** appears in regular speech as **kʌfiə̃ɪ ɟaɪtiu** 'where are you going?', F. and Bgh. **kheɪltiɪ tĩɪ** 'were playing' for **kheɪltiɪ hʌtĩɪ**, **tum kʌhə̃ɪ geɪ tjoɪ** 'where had you been?' for **tum kʌhə̃ɪ geɪ hʌtjoɪ**, **biaɪfi ke khwaɪɟ kaɪ gaɪ ten** 'I had been in search of marriage' for.. **gaɪ hʌten**, **waɪ baɪt ɟoɪ kuə̃ɪ maɪ kʌfiʌtiu tiu** 'that thing which you were saying in the well' for ..... **kʌfiʌtiu hʌtiu.** Similar examples have been found in Western Hindi also in abundance

Present Indicative

A. Early Awadhi

§ 301. The following are the terminatians:

	sg.	pl.
1st person	*-aũ*,*-õ*	(*-ahɪ*)
2nd person	*-asi*	*-ahu*
3rd person	*-ahi*, *-ai*, *-u*	*-ahɪ*, *-aɪ*

1st sg. *-aũ* is the termination in all the three texts, *-õ* being found only in a few instances in Nūr Muhammad. For instance:

Jāyasī: *dui māraga dēkhaũ ehi hāṭā* 'I see two paths in this market' (p. 124), *sēva karaũ tehi ṭhāũ* 'I serve at her place' (p. 131).

Tulsī: *tātẽ maɪ tohī barajaũ rājā* 'O king, therefore, I forbid you' (p. 73), *āju saṭhahi haṭhi māraũ ōhĩ* 'to-day I shall forcibly kill the scoundrel' (p. 393).

[1] See Chatterji, p. 936.
[2] Ibid. § 426.

Nūr Muhammad : *kahaũ na pōthī khelaũ khēlā* 'I do not write (lit. say) a book, but I play a game' (p. 4), *sadā karēja sarōnita piyaũ* 'I always drink the blood of the heart' (p. 78), *baranõ rājā kī phulavārī* 'I describe the king's garden' (p. 8).

1st pl.—No instances of 1st pl. active forms are available either in Tulsīdās or Nūr Muhammad, only in Jāyasī we have three instances, *viz.*, *jaũ re jiahĩ mili keli karahĩ* 'if we live, let us sport together' (p. 570), *marahĩ to* 'if die then' (p. 570), *calahu mahēsa dekhahĩ eka gharī* 'let us go, Mahēśa, and see for a moment' (p. 579). In Tulsīdās in *kahahu kahihi kē kīnhi bhalāī* 'tell me, whom shall we mention as having done good (to us)' (p. 288), *kahihi* at the first instance appears as an active form, but it is really passive, standing for *kahia.*

2nd sg.—For instance :

Jāyasī : *kahasi paṃkhi khādhuka mānāvā* 'sayest (thou) that man is an eater of birds' (p. 126), *naina jo dēkhasi pūchasi kāhā* 'why dost thou ask what thou see-est' (p. 468);

Tulsī : *saṃkara bimukha jiāvasi mōhī* 'thou keepest me alive when Śankara is displeased (with me)' (p. 30).

NOTE.—In one instance, *viz.*, *chatrabandhu taĩ bipra bolāī, ghālai lihē sahita samudāī* 'O wretched Kṣatriya, thou killest the Brāhmaṇas after having invited them all' (p. 76), *-ai* appears as th termination of 2nd sg.

Nūr Muhammad : *abahĩ ahasi sarēkhā, jahã cāhasi tahã jāsi* 'now thou art young, thou goest wherever thou wantest' (p. 43).

2nd pl.—Only in Tulsīdās there are a few instances of this form being used as Present, otherwise it is found as Imperative or Conjunctive. Tulsī, for instance, *cāhahu sunai rāma guna gūṛhā* 'You want to hear the great (secret) qualities of Rāma' (p. 25).

3rd sg.—*-ahi* forms are found in Tulsīdās and Jāyasī only as alternating with *-ai* and *-a* forms, in Nūr Muhammad one finds only *-ai*. For instance:

Jāyasī : *āvahi rōi jāhi kai rōnā* 'weeping he comes and weeping goes' (p. 126), *kīnhesi amī jiai jehi pāī* 'He has created nectar by obtaining which (one) revives' (p. 6), *kō sari mō saũ pāvaī* 'who can obtain equality with me' (p. 83), *kharaga dāna sari pūja na kōī* 'not one reaches his equality in sword and charity' (p. 67). In one instance, *tahi para bāju rāja ghariārā* 'on that rings the king's bell' (p. 64), the termination appears as *-u*.

Tulsī: the aspirated form is much less in use than the unaspirated one, *nāhina ḍaru bigarahi paralōkū* 'I have no fear that my other world is spoilt' (p. 239), *uṛai abīra manahũ arunārī* 'the *abīra* (the red powder) is in the air and everything appears red' (p. 85), *ḍagai na saṃbhu sarāsana kaisē* 'how is it that the bow of Śambhu does not stir' (p. 108), *baha samīpa surasarī suhāvani* 'near by, flows the beautiful Ganges' (p. 58).

Nūr Muhammad : *sukha pāvai mānusa sabai saba kō hōi nibāha* 'man gets happiness, and every one's business goes uninterrupted' (p. 2), *tākō sarana tāki jō āvai* 'he who comes aiming at his refuge' (p. 152).

3rd pl.—*ahĩ* only is found in Jāyasī, *-ahĩ* generally in Tulsī but *-aĩ* also sometimes while *-aĩ* generally in Nūr Muhammad, *e.g.*,

Jāyasī : *kīnhesi paṃkhi uḍahĩ jahā cahahĩ* 'He created the birds (which) fly where (they) want' (p. 4), *utarahĩ caḍhahĩ lōga cahũ phērī* 'people get down and get up on all sides' (p. 48).

Tulsī : *basahĩ nagara sundara nara nārī* 'handsome men and women reside in the city' (p. 59), *parama krōdha mījahĩ saba hāthā* 'all wring their hands owing to great anger' (p. 365), *manu kupantha pagu dharaĩ na kāū* 'they do not put their heart or foot on a wrong path' (p. 100).

Nūr Muhammad : *eka disa bādhē turai birājaī* 'on one side the horses, tied down, look beautiful' (p. 8), *dhana kē rōvata rōvaī cērī* 'when the lady weeps, the maid-servants weep' (p. 26), *lēhī dhanī nidhanī pachatāhī* 'the rich take them while the poor feel sorry' (p. 9).

The forms of this tense are regularly used as Present Indicative in Jāyasī and Tulsī but in Nūr Muhammad the Present Imperfect Indicative is taking its place. As shown above [§ 294 (*d*)] the Imperfect participle is alternatively used to denote the Present.

The Present Indicative, like Modern Awadhi, is employed to denote the Present Conjunctive by prefixing some word meaning 'if', *e.g.*, *sāta saraga jaũ kāgada karaī* 'if the seven heavens, He turns into paper' (J. p. 13), *jō bilōki rījhai kũari* 'if on seeing, the princess is enamoured' (T. p. 60), *ēka manuja bhējē jau jāũ* 'If I go when (he) has sent only one man' (N. p. 65).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 302.

Lmp.

	sg.	pl.
1st	**-ʌũ (dɛrkhʌũ)**	**-iɾ (dɛrkhiɾ)**
2nd	**-ʌi (dɛrkhʌi)**	**-ʌu (dɛrkhʌu)** **-oɾ (kurʌwoɾ)**
3rd	**-ʌi (dɛrkhʌi)**	**-ʌĩ (dɛrkhʌĩ)**

I pl. U. and West S. **-iʌi (dekhiʌi)**, Bgh. **ʌn (dɛrkhʌn)**; II sg. Br. **-ɛɾ (dɛrkhɛɾ)**, Bgh. **dɛrkhʌs**; II pl. East Sl. and P. **-jaɾ** or **-aɾ (dɛrkhjaɾ** or **dɛrkhaɾ)**, Br. and P. **-ɛɾ (dɛrkhɛɾ)**, Bgh. **dɛrkhʌn** or **dɛrkhʌb**; III sg. Bgh. **dɛrkhi.**

This tense is no longer used in common speech (except in the case of the substantive verb 'to be') to indicate the Present Indicative. instead the Present Imperfect Indicative is used, *e.g.*, for 'I see' **mʌi dɛrkhʌtị hʌũ** is used and not **mʌi dɛrkhʌũ,** but for 'I am', **mʌi hʌũ.** It, however,

survives in songs (*e.g.*, **soɪwʌu ki ʝaɪgʌu moriɪ aɪdfli bfiʌwaɪni ʝʌgʌto keriɪ raɪniɪ . . . bʌli ʝaɪũ** 'are you sleeping or waking, revered Bhavānī, queen of the world, I bow') as the Present Indicative and in stories as the historic present or habitual past, *e.g.*, **mʌfiotaɪriɪ roɪʝu̯ chʌpɪʌn pʌrkaɪl ke bfioɪʝʌn bʌnaɪwʌi** 'the mother used to prepare food of fifty-six varieties daily', **raɪʝaɪ kʌcefiori sę aɪjeɪ deɪkhʌĩ kaɪ koɪi kę ʝuɪtaɪ dfiʌreɪ** 'the Raja returned from the Court and what does he see—that some one's shoes were there.'

The forms of the Present Indicative are also employed as the Present Conjunctive. The condition is shown by prefixing the sentence by some word meaning 'if', *e.g.*, **ʝoɪ mʌi tum kaɪ dhoɪkhaɪ deɪũ tʌu kʌfieu** 'If I deceive you, blame me', **ʝoɪ uɪ deɪkhʌi tʌu eɪkṳ tʌmaɪcaɪ maɪrị difieu** 'if he sees, give him a slap.'

NOTE.—After roots mentioned in 343 (*d*) (**kurʌ**-etc.) the termination of the 2nd pl. **-ʌu** is found as **oɪ** (*e.g.*, **kurʌwoɪ, naɪoɪ, aɪoɪ kheɪcɪ, dfioɪwoɪ, soɪwoɪ**).

C. ORIGIN.

§ 303. The forms of the Present Indicative are based on the ancient Present tense (*laṭ*), only there has been some levelling in MIA.

1st sg.—Skt. *-āmi*, Pkt. *-āmi* gives Marāṭhī *-eṃ*, Bg. *-i*, *-ɨ*; Gypsy, Gujaratī and Hindi have *-ṽ*, *-ũ*. Can the labial nasal *-m-* become *-ṽ-* *-ũ* and efface *-i*, thus *-mi* becoming *-ũ*? This appears unlikely. It is certain that the plural termination Skt. *-āmaḥ* Pkt. *-āmō* is at the base of the singular. The shifting of the number has to be explained. But we should remember that the 1st person subject is very seldom expressed and that when it was expressed it used to be generally in the plural number. Generally the 1st plural was used in the passive construction. as is clear from the

absence in Awadhi of any active termination (see below). These facts explain the shift.

1st pl.—In Modern Awadhi we find **-ɪɤ** and sometimes **-ɪʌi**. This goes back to the passive MI. *-īai* (*e.g.*, *paḍhīai*). In Early Awadhi we find one form in *-ihi* which can be traced to the above passive. In Jāyasī we find three forms in *-ahɪ*. These should be connected with West. Hindi, modern **-ẽɤ (dɛɤkhẽɤ)**. The same termination is found in the 3rd pl. derived from *-anti*. Is it a case of substitution, but why?

2nd sg.—The termination **ʌi, -ɛɤ** cannot go back to E. Aw. *-asi* directly; there is only one instance of **-ʌi** in E. Aw. One has to assume that side by side with *-asi*, a form in *-ahi* was in use in Early Awadhi; this is found in the Imperative as an alternative with *-asi* in Tulsī and is attested by Apabhraṃśa (Bhavisayattakahā G.O.S., p., 24).

2nd pl.—Skt. *-atha*, Pkt. *-ahu*, Ap. *-ahu*, E. Aw. *-ahu*, Mod. Aw. **-ʌu, -ɑɤ**. The **-ʌu** form is regular from *-ahu*. The change from Pkt. *-aha* to *-ahu* appears to be on the analogy of 1st pl. *-āmō*. Modern **-ɑɤ** < *-aha*, cf. Marāṭhī *-ā* (Bloch, p. 233). Or the accent on the penultimate syllable might be responsible for the dropping out of the final *-u* of *-ahu*, the *h* in **-ɑɤ** is still sometimes heard.

3rd sg.—Skt. *-ati*, Pkt. *-ai*, E. Aw. *-ai* (*-ahi*), Modern **-ʌi**. As shown above (Part I, Chaper II) Awadhi generally retains vowel-combinations, only rarely have they contraction; the final *-i* here is retained after *-a-*. The *-ahi* forms in Early Awadhi further show that there was some emphatic aspiration which also might have been responsible for keeping the vowel-combination here intact. The E. Aw. *-a* form is, in all probability, the past participle used as historic present or habitual past.

3rd pl.—Skt. *-anti*, Pkt. *-anti*, Ap. and E. Aw. *-ahɪ*, Modern **-ɪ̃**. What is this *-h-*? It is attested by Apabhraṃśa.

Past Indicative

§ 304. As shown above various forms of the Perfect Participle are used to denote the past tense both in Early and Modern Awadhi. For instance in Lakhīmpurī :

	sg.	pl.
1st	**-eũ (dɛɾkheũ)**	**-en (dɛɾkhen)**
2nd	**-ɛɾ (dɛɾkhɛɾ), -iʂ̣ (dɛɾkhiʂ̣)**	**-eu (dɛɾkheu)**
3rd	**-iʂ̣ (dɛɾkhiʂ̣)**	**-inị̣ (dɛɾkhinị̣)**

Bgh. has the following forms :

	masc. fem.	mas.	fem.
1st	**dɛɾkhɛßũ**	**dɛɾkhiɾ**	**dɛɾkhen**
2nd	**dɛɾkheh**	**dɛɾkhih**	**dɛɾkheh**
3rd	**dɛɾkhaɾ**	**dɛɾkhiɾ**	**dɛɾkhen**

Lakhīmpurī maintains a distinction between the transitive and intransitive, as shown by the following forms of **mʌr-**

1st	masc.	**-eũ (mʌɾeũ), -aɾ (mʌɾaɾ)** ;	**-en (mʌɾen)**
	fem.	**-iũ (mʌɾiũ), -iɾ (mʌɾiɾ)**	,,
2nd	masc.	**-aɾ (mʌɾaɾ)**	**-eu (mʌɾeu)**
	fem.	**-iɾ (mʌɾiɾ)**	**-iu (mʌɾiu)**
3rd	masc.	**-aɾ (mʌɾaɾ)**	**-ɛɾ (mʌɾɛɾ)**
		-iɾ (mʌɾiɾ)	**-ɪ̃ɾ (mʌɾɪ̃ɾ)**

The dialectal variation has been shown above (§297).

(*a*) This tense refers to a momentary action which happened in the past, *e.g.*, **ɟʌb mʌi huʌ̃ sʂ̣ cʌleũ tʌb tum huʌ̃ɾ naɾiɾ ɾʌßʌu** 'when I started from there, you were not in the place'.

If a continuous action in the past is meant to be indicated, a root indicating continuity is employed, *e.g.* **mʌi bʌiʈßeũ** 'I sat', **mʌi bʌiʈß ɾʌßeũ** 'I remained seated'. The difference between this tense and the Present Perfect Indicative and the Past Perfect Indicative is chiefly this that the effect of the last two lasts after the action while it does not last in the case of this tense. The Past Indicative may, however,

be used to denote an action just completed (for which English uses Present Perfect), *e.g.*, **uɪ mʌnʌiɪ jiɪ kaɪ tum puɪchʌtị rʌfiʌu ʌɪi gʌwaɪ** 'the man about whom you were inquiring has arrived'. Thus, here, the momentary action of 'arriving' is emphasised, not its effect. If the effect were to be emphasised, the Present Perfect would be used.

(*b*) Used conjunctively this tense refers to a future action, *e.g.* **jo mʌi bʌjaɪr gʌeũ tʌu tumfiʌriɪ khaɪtir ʈʌpkaɪ lʌjʌifiʌũ** 'If I go (lit. if I went) to the market, I shall bring mangoes for you'.

NOTE.—In Lmp. in the case of √**laɪ-** 'to bring', the terminations of the intransitive (**-aɪ, -iɪ** etc.) are found in spite of the root being transitive, *e.g.* **mʌi rupʌjaɪ laɪiũ** 'I (fem.) brought money.' Is it that a root involving motion, *i.e. gatyarthaka*, has the same treatment as the intransitive roots?

Future Indicative

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 305. The following are the terminations:

	sg.	pl.
1st	*-ihaũ, -aba, -abaũ abai, abi*	*-aba, abi, -abā, abai, ibē*
2nd	*-ihasi, -aba*	*-ihahu, -aba, -ibī, -abī, -abō*
3rd	*-ihai, -ihi, -ī, -aba,*	*-ihahɪ, (-ihaɪ), -ihɪ, -aba*

1st sg.—In Jāyasī we find *-ihaũ, -aba* and *-abaũ*,; in Tulsī *-ihaũ, -aba* and *-abi* while in Nūr Muhammad *-aba* and *-abai*. For instance:

Jāyasī: *deihaũ bhuguti dehaũ jaya-mālā* 'I shall give enjoyment and the victory-garland' (p. 403), *ghara kaisai paiṭhaba maɪ chũchē, kaunu utara dēbaũ tinha pũchē* 'empty how shall I enter the house? when they ask, what answer shall I give?' (p. 121).

Tulsī: *tasa kahihaũ hiya hari kē prērẽ* 'so shall I say, impelled in the heart by Hari' (p. 18), *hari ānaba [illegible] hari*

nija māyā 'I shall seduce him away by my deceit' (p. 74), *bhāṣā-baddha karabi maī sōī* 'I shall render it in (popular) language' (p. 18).

Nūr Muhammad: *karaba maī sēvā* 'I shall render service' (p. 32), *anta ēka dina hōbai khēhā* 'ultimately one day, I shall be (turned into) ashes' (p. 35).

1st pl.—Jāyasī *-aba*, *-abi*, Tulsī *-aba*, *-abā*, *-abai* and *-ibē*, N. Muhammad *-aba*; for instance:

J. *puni sāsura hama gāvanaba kālī* 'then tomorrow, we shall go to our fathers'-in-law' (p. 96), *kaunu utaru pāubi kita mōkhū* 'what answer shall we get, whence will the deliverance be?' (p. 97).

T. *hamahū kahaba aba ṭhakurasohātī* 'we also shall now say words flattering to the master' (p. 163), *jiyata na karabi savati sevakāī* 'while I am alive, I shall not serve my rival' (p. 165), *dēbā*, *dekhibai*, *dekhibē*.

N. *hama kehi kārana karaba sīgārā* 'why shall we adorn ourselves?' (p. 25).

2nd sg.—the instances are found in Tulsidas only:

jaihasi taī samēta parivārā 'thou shall go (to hell) with thy family' (p. 76), *tinhahī milē taī hōba punītā* 'on meeting them, thou shall be purified' (p. 337).

2nd pl.—J. *-ihahu* and *-aba*, T. *-ihahu* (*iahu*), *-aba* and *-ibī*, N. *-aba*. For instance:

J. *kā kahihahu jaba dekhihahu rōhū* 'what will you say when you will see the herring?' (p. 312), *kaisai dhūpa sahaba binu chāhā* 'how will you bear the sun without shade?' (p. 247).

T. *jaba lagi tumha aihahu mohī pāhī* 'till you come to me' (p. 27), *bhujabala bisva jitaba tumha jahiā* 'when you will conquer the universe by the might of your arms' (p. 63), *ehi rāja sāja samēta sēvaka jānibī* 'know me to be your servant with all the king's equipment' (p. 140), *ē dārikā paricārika kari pālahī* 'please protect these daughters, taking

them as your maids' (p. 140), *aparādha chamibō* 'forgive the fault.'

NOTE.— *-ibi*, *-abī* and *-ibō* are used more as imperatives and are honorific.

3rd sg.—J. *-ihi*, *-ī*, *-ihai* and *-aba*, T. *-ihi*, *-ī* and *-aba*, N. *-ihi*, *-ī* and *-ihai*. For instance:

J. *kaisai nīda parihi bhuṛ māhā* 'how will sleep come, on the ground' (p. 247), *milī so kaunahu phēru* 'then that will come together in some way' (p. 396), *bāura karihai kāhi* 'he will make someone mad' (p. 132), *guna auguna bidhi pūchaba* 'the Lord will ask merit and demerit' (p. 15).

T. *tinhahṛ kathā suni lāgihi phīkī* 'to them the story will appear insipid on hearing' (p. 7), *aba na tumhahṛ māyā niyarāī* 'Māyā will not come near you now' (p. 63), *jehi bana jāi rahaba raghurāī* 'in whichever forest Rāma will go and live' (p. 198).

N. *saba bilāya jāihi eka bārā* 'once all will disappear' (p. 1), *kaisē rahana kaliṃjara hōī* 'how will abode be (possible) in Kalinjar' (p. 23), *puni tō lai apanē ghara jaihai* 'then will take you and go to his place' (p. 41).

3rd pl.—*ihṛ* only is found in J., it and others are found in T.; for instance:

J. *tīnaũ lōka jarihṛ tehi lāgī* 'with that all the three worlds will burn up' (p. 457).

T. *sunihahṛ sujana sarāhi subānī* 'the good people will hear it and admire it in good words' (p. 7), *dekhiahṛ rūpa nāma ādhīnā* '(they) will see the form under the name' (p. 14), *sīya biyāhaba rāma* 'Rāma (honorific pl.) will marry Sītā' (p. 106); *-ihṛ* (*rākhihṛ*) is very uncommon.

NOTE 1.—In Tulsī and Nūr Muhammad two or three instances of *-gē* futures, *e.g.*, *pāvahugē* (T. pp. 62, 384), *karahṛgē* (T. pp. 330, 378), are found but they are borrowed forms.

NOTE 2.—The note under § 306 showing **ɐɪ + i > jaɪ** does not operate in Early Awadhī, *e.g.*, ***deihaũ*** (T. p. 28 line 19). Sometimes the *-i* of the termination is elided, *e.g.*, ***deihañ***, ***dēhaũ*** (J. p. 403).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 306.

Lmp.	sg.	pl.
1st	**-iɸʌũ (dekhiɸʌũ)**	**-ibaɪ (dekhibaɪ)**
		-ib (dɐɪkhib)
2nd	**-iɸʌi (dekhiɸʌi)**	**-iɸʌu (dekhiɸʌu)**
3rd	**-iɪ (dɐɪkhiɪ)**	**-iɸʌ̃ (dekhiɸʌ̃)**

(*a*) There is a dialectal variation with regard to **-ɸ-** or **-b-** forms. Except in the tracts bordering on Kanaujī [where **-iɸʌ̃ (dekhiɸʌ̃)** form is found with 1st plural also, *e.g.*, West Unao], the Western dialects, *viz.*, Lmp., S., L., U., F. and Bgh. have **-b-** forms only for the 1st plur. In the Central dialects, *viz.*, B., Br. and R., the **-b-** forms are creeping into the second person also. In the Eastern dialects (G., Fy., Sl., P., A., M.) **-b-** forms are found in the 1st and 2nd persons regularly, **-ɸ-** forms being found only in the 3rd person.

1st pl.—S., L., U. and F., **-ʌb**, **-ibɐɪ (dɐɪkhʌb, dekhibɐɪ)**, Bgh. **dɐɪkhib, dɐɪkhʌb, dekhəbʌi,** Br. and R. **-ʌb**, B. **-əbʌi (dekhəbʌi)**, G. **-ʌb** commoner than **-əbʌi**, Fy. **-ʌb** or **-əbʌi** and after **-ɑɪ** roots **-ub (ɑɪub, ƀʌtɑɪub)**, Sl. **-ʌb** (and **-ub** after **-ɑɪ** roots only), L. **-ʌb**, so also A. and M.

2nd sg.—Br. and R. **-ibɐɪ,** G. **-əbɐɪ (dekhəbɐɪ)**, Bgh. **dekhiɸɐs;** 2nd pl.—B., Br. and R. have **-iɸʌu**, so also has Gonda largely and S.W. Sultanpur and Fyzabad, else Fy. **boɪ,-bʌo**, Sl. **-bjaɪ** P.,A., M. **-baɪ**, **-ibaɪ**, **boɪ**, S.E.G. **-boɪ**.

3rd sg.—R. **-ɐɪ (dɐɪkhɐɪ)**, so also Fy., Sl., A., M., P. and S. W. Sl. have **iɪ (dɐɪkhiɪ)**, Bgh. **dɐɪkhiɪ**.

3rd pl.—Br. **-iɸɛ̃ɪ (dekhiɸɛ̃ɪ)**; Fy., Sl. and other Eastern dialects **-iɸʌ̃ (dekhiɸʌ̃)**.

NOTE.—In the case of roots **dex** 'to give' and **lex** 'to take', the initial **-i** of **-ifiʌũ, -ifiʌi, -ifiʌu, -ifiʌĩ,** is combined with **-ex, ex+i** thus resulting in **-jax, e.g.**, **djaxfiʌũ, djaxfiʌi, djaxfiʌu, djaxfiʌĩ.**

(*b*) This tense simply refers to a future action, *e.g.*, **hʌm miʈhaxix khʌibax** 'we shall eat sweetmeats'. As compared with this, the Fut. Imperfect Ind. refers to an action which will be in the process of being done (**mʌi miʈhaxix khaxtị hoifiʌũ** 'I shall be eating sweetmeats' and the Fut. Perfect Indic. to an action which will have been completed (**mʌi miʈhaxix khaxex hoifiʌũ** 'I shall have eaten sweetmeats'). In the case of verbs indicating continuous action, this tense indicates merely the beginning of the action, *e.g.*, **jʌb tum ʌifiʌu tʌb fiʌm pʌʈfibax** 'when you come, I shall read', *i.e.*, I shall begin reading after your arrival. The tense can be used conjunctively also (**jo ʌifiʌu tʌu dekhifiʌu** 'if you will come, then you will see'). As such it has a little more probability of the action than in the case of the conjunctive sense indicated by the Past tense [*vide* § 304 (*b*)].

C. ORIGIN

§ 307. The Future Indicative of Awadhi is based on the ancient future (*lṛṭ*) and on the *tavya* participle, the *h*-forms going back to the former while *-b-* to the latter. The development of *-sy-*, as *-ss-* and *-s-* > *-h-* appears to be rather rapid, considering that *-s-* is generally retained in Mod. IA. But the sounds in a suffix might have had a different treatment.

All the dialects of Awadhi have the *-b-* form at least in the 1st pl., the more we proceed to the East, the more we find the *-b-* forms in use. These have a great variety; *-ibā, -ib, ibē, -ibai* etc. all of which may not be strictly derivable from *tavya* (*itavya*): *-abba, -iabba*; it appears that the dialects after adopting this participle to indicate the future

have developed it individually, so that now in Mirzapur **-boɪ** forms are used with the 1st person and **-beɪ** with the second person. No dialects of Modern Awadhi use **-b-** forms in the 3rd person, but in Early Awadhi, these are found optionally with all the persons and numbers. The 3rd sg. form in *-ī* should be connected with *-ihi* > *ii*.

Imperative

A. Early Awadhi

§ 308. The following are the terminations:

	sg.	pl.
1st	*-aũ*, *-õ*	
2nd	*-u*, *-a*, *-asi* *-ahi*	*-ahu* *-ō*
3rd	*-au*, *-ao*, *-ai*	*-ahɪ*

1st sg.—*aũ* is found in all the three texts while *-õ* only in Nūr Muhammad. For instance:

J. *haũ aba banōbāsa kahā jāũ* 'may I now go to an exile into the forest?' (p. 90);

T. *āpu sarisa khōjoũ kahā jāī* 'where should I go and seek one like myself' (p. 67);

N. *āpana auguna kāha sunāvaũ* 'how should I speak of my own demerits' (p. 84), *jñāna manda kimi kahõ bakhānõ* 'my knowledge is little, how should I describe in detail' (p. 15).

2nd sg.—*u* forms are found in all the three texts; in Nūr Muhammad in a few cases we have *-a*; *-asi*, *-ahi* are found only in Tulsīdās. For instance:

J. *mohɪ yaha lōbha sunāu na māyā* 'do not speak to me of attractions and attachments' (p. 249);

T. *rāma-nāma mani-dīpa dharu* 'put the bejewelled lamp of the name of Rāma' (p. 14), *taba lagi janu kachu kahasi bahōrī* 'till then do not say anything again' (p. 171), *bēgi priyā pariharahi kubēṣū* 'my beloved, leave this ugly appearance soon' (p. 167).

N. *māru na chīra bhāta mõ lātā* 'do not strike thy foot in milk and rice' (p. 21), *taja mana cinta baṛhāva hulāsū* 'leave anxiety and increase gladness' (p. 12).

2nd pl.—all the texts have *-ahu* forms, only in Nūr Muhammad *-ō* forms are found sometimes; for instance:

J. *dhāvana tahã paṭhāvahu, dēhu lākha dasa rōka* 'send messengers there and give an amount of ten lakhs' (p. 223).

T. *mãgahu āju juṛāvahu chātī* 'beg (them) to-day and cool your breast (heart)' (p. 166);

N. *hoi dayāla gaurīpatī, puravahu kāja hamāra* 'O lord of Gaurī, be compassionate and accomplish my business' (p. 32), *kai kirapā mohi pāra utārō* 'take pity and put me across' (p. 2).

3rd sg.—*au* is found both in Jāyasī and Tulsīdās while *-ai* only is found in Nūr Muhammad; *-ao* is a variant form of *-au* in Jāyasī and *-ai* is sometimes found in Tulsīdās. For instance:

J. *dahũ vaha rasa kō pāu ko nāhĩ* 'whether any one may get that tasty juice or not' (p. 179), *jāi parā jahã pāo na thāhā* 'went and fell (there) where (he) may not obtain the bottom' (p. 525).

T. *kou nṛpa hōu hamahi kā hānī* 'any one may become a king, what have I to lose?' (p. 163), *jārai jōgu subhāu hamārā* 'may fate burn my habit' (p. 163).

N. *kā jānai sukha bhōga bhulānā* 'what may one who has forgotten (himself) in the enjoyment of happiness, know' (p. 11).

3rd pl.—We find only one or two examples in Nūr Muhammad: *guru jana sõ yaha binatiya mōrī, kōpa na mānahĩ bhaũha sikōrī* 'this is our request to the elders, may they not show anger and frown' (p. 4).

NOTE.—The passive imperative is found considerably used in all the texts, particularly with a first person plural subject [see § 347 (*c*)].

The use of this tense is exactly like that of the Imperative of Sanskrit where 'order' is denoted by a form of the second person and 'permission' is sought by a form of the other two persons.

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 309. The forms of the Imperative are the same as of the Present Indicative, but there is a distinction from the latter in the 2nd person singular, *e.g.*, in Lmp. Pres. Ind. **dɛɾkhʌi,** Imperative **dɛɾkhu,** Pres. Ind. **ɟaɾi,** Imperative **ɟaɾ.** The termination of the 2nd sg. here being **-u** (and zero in the case of **-aɾ -ɛɾ -oɾ** roots) while in the Pres. Ind. it is **-ʌi** (and **-i** in the case of **-aɾ, -ɛɾ, -oɾ** roots). Besides G. 3rd sg. Imp. is **-ʌu** (**dɛɾkhʌu**). This difference of the termination warrants a separate treatment of the Imperative.

The Western dialects and B. and G. have **-u** (and zero) like Lmp., R. and Br. have zero (**dɛɾkh, ɟaɾ**) in all roots, while the Eastern dialects do not possess a 2nd person singular and hence do not show any difference from the Pres. Indic. Bgh. has **dɛɾkhʌs** sg. and **dɛɾkhʌb** pl. The exact Imperative sense is expressed only in the 2nd person, *e.g.*, **tui ɟaɾ** 'go', **bʱlaɾgʌu** 'run away'. In other persons it has a permissive sense, *e.g.*, **mʌi kʌɾʌũ** 'let me do', **uɾ kʌɾʌi** 'let him do'.

Note.—As shown above (Part I § 160) the Imperative is distinguished from the Present Indic. by a difference in tone also.

C. Origin

§ 310. The Imperative shows a difference from the Present Indicative only in the 2nd pers. sing. and 3rd pers. sg. The 2nd sg. form with zero termination goes back to *-a* (*gaccha* etc.) which lost its pronunciation sometime in late MIA. The *-u* termination which occurs in Sindhī as well (see Bloch p. 238) cannot go back to MIA. *-asu* (*kahasu*), nor can it be said that the ancient *-u* (*kuru, śṛṇu*) has survived; we find that Apabhraṃśa has it (*e.g.*, *usaru*, p. 25, Bhavisayatta

kahā G. O. S). Hoernle (p. 338) sees it as 'perhaps a corruption of *-a*'! The 3rd sg. *-au* attested by a dialect in Modern Awadhi also as well as by Bhōjapurī, goes back regularly to *-atu* (*gacchatu*). Other forms go back to the Present Indicative which began to replace the forms of the Imperative as early as the earliest MIA.

Future Imperative

A. Early Awadhi

§ 311. The use of this tense as shown in § 312 is different from the ordinary Imperative. The following are the terminations :

	sg.	pl.
2nd	*-esu*	*-ehu*

For instance :

J. *au mukha saũ baca kahesu parēvā* ' O bird, then thou will say words with (thy) mouth ' (p. 495), *āehu caḍhi so gagana puni sātā* 'then you will come by climbing up the seven skies ' (p. 435) ;

T. *tinhahī dekhāi dihesu taī sītā* 'to them thou wilt show Sītā ' (p. 337), *karehu so jatana bibēka bicārī* ' you will have recourse to that means after a mature consideration ' (p. 27) ;

N. *nisa mõ rākhahu bhōrẽ āehu, dhirja dharehu jaisō phala pāehu* ' put it at night and then you will come early in the morning, and have consolation with whatever fruit you will get ' (p. 17).

Note.—As shown under § 312 the terminations of this tense are not found with roots based on the past participle (*e.g.*, *hōehu* and not *bhaehu*)

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 312. This indicates an imperative of a distant future as compared with the ordinary Imperative, *e.g.*, **dexkhau** 'see ! ' **dexkheu** 'see—future '. The forms in Lakhīmpurī are :

	sg.	pl.
2nd person	**-ɐɾ (dɐɾkhɐɾ)**	**-eu (dɐɾkheu)**

As such they do not appear to differ from the Past Indicative (cf. § 304). But two points should be noted:—(1) that out of the two forms that we have in Lakhīmpurī for the Past. Indic. in 2nd pers. sing., *viz.*, **-ɐɾ** and **-isị̊**, only one, *i.e.*, in **-ɐɾ**, is employed for the Future Imperative, the other one in **-isị̊** is never so used; and (2) with roots that have separate forms for the Present and the Past [§ 297 (*z*)] the Future Imperative has its terminations after the Present root, *e.g.*, **ɟaɾ-** Present, **gʌ-** Past; now **ɟaɾeu** 'go—Future Imperative', **gʌeu** 'went—Past Indicative'. Similarly **hoɾeu** 'be—Future Imperative', **bhʌeu** 'were—Past Indicative'.

This difference warrants a separate treatment of this tense. All the dialects possess this tense. They agree in not employing the **-isị̊** or its corresponding form in **-es, -osị̊** etc. for indicating the Future Imperative and in adding the terminations after the root of the Present where a difference of roots exists. A specimen from Gonda (Balrampur) has two forms in **-isụ̊ (ɑɾisụ̊, kiʃisụ̊)**. Standard Hindi expresses the sense of this tense by what appears to be the verbal noun, *e.g.*, **tum dɐɾkhnɑɾ** 'you will see'.

C. ORIGIN

§ 313. The Future Imperative is found only with reference to the 2nd pers. sg. and pl. Its sense is connoted by the infinitive in W. Hindi (*e.g*, **tum ɟaɾnaɾ** 'you will go') and by the forms derivable from the Future Indicative, in Bengālī, Maithilī and Bhōjpurī (Chatterji § 651). Awadhi, however, has special terminations—sg. **eɾ, esu : isụ̊**, pl. **-eu, eʃu**. These appear to go back to the *-aya* > *ē*, conjugation of MIA in the Imperative, examples of which are quoted by Pischel (pp. 331—32).

Past Conditional

A. Early Awadhi

§ 314. The Imperfect Participle is used to denote this tense and the use is like that in Modern Awadhi (§ 315). The participle is, however, inflected sometimes. The following terminations, thus, after the root, result:

	sg.	pl.
1st	*-ateũ, -atiũ*	
2nd	—	*-atehu*
3rd	*-teu*	—

1st sg.—*ateũ* is found in all the texts, only in Nūr Muhammad *-atiũ* is sometimes found with a subject in the feminine gender, *e.g.*,

J. *anu rānī haũ rahateũ rādhā* 'O queen! very gladly would I have remained (here)' (p. 405);

T. *jaũ janateũ binu bhaṭa bhubi bhāī* 'had I known, brothers, that the Earth is devoid of heroes' (p. 108);

N. *jō mar cahateũ āpana nāũ* 'if I had wanted my fame' (p. 25), *nā tõ cērī hōtiũ tērī* 'or else, I (fem.) would have become thy servant' (p. 79).

2nd pl.—the forms have been found only in Tulsīdās: *jaũ tumha avatehu muni kī nāī* 'had you come like an ascetic' (p. 120).

3rd sg.—the simple Imperfect participle (masculine or feminine) is used in all the texts but J. in addition has *-teu* forms and N. *-tai*. For instance:

J. *kusala hōta jau janama na hōtā* 'It would have been well, if there had been no birth' (p. 314), *dhāi simgha baru khāteu mārī* 'it would have been better, if a lion had attacked and eaten me up' (p. 382);

T. *hōta janama na bharata kō* 'if there had been no birth of Bharata' (p. 284), *jaũ pai jia na hōti kuṭilāī* 'if there had been no wickedness in the heart' (p. 231);

N. *hōtai mukuta hamāra* 'there would have been my deliverance' (p. 16), *mō mahā tā mukha lēta basēraā* 'her face would have resided (for some time) in me' (p. 11), *ātamajā jō hōta eka* 'if there had been a daughter' (p. 16), *mana au prāna doū hara lētī* 'she would have snatched away both life and heart' (p. 18).

NOTE.—The uninflected participle can be used with any person, *e.g.*, Jāyasī: *kai tasi rahati āhi jasa bārī* (Padmāvatī says) 'or I would have remained just I was in childhood' (p. 382).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 315. Lmp.

	sg.	pl.
1st	**-otiũ (dekhotiũ)**	**-oten (dekhoten), -itị (dekhitị)**
2nd	**-Atị (dekhAtị)**	**-otiu (dekhotiu)**
3rd	**-Atị (dekhAtị)**	**-etĩr (dekhotĩr)**

The following are the variations in the districts:

1st sg.—The Western dialects as well as B. agree with Lmp., R. and Br. have **-otũ (dekhotũ)**, Bgh. masc. **dekhotjehũ**, fem. **dekhotihũ.**

1st pl.—the final **-ị** of **-itị** is not found in the Eastern dialects except in G., B. has **-otin** for **-oten**, particularly in Eastern tracts; Bgh. masc. **dekhotjen**, fem. **dekhotin.**

2nd sg.—P., Br. and R. **-otes (dekhotes)**, G. **-otis (dekhotis)**, Bgh. masc. **dekhotjeſi**, fem. **dekhotiſi.**

2nd pl.—**oteu (dekhoteu)** in Fy., G. (except West), P. and Br.; **otjar (dekhotjar)** in Sl., **otur (dekhotur)** in R.; Bgh. masc. **dekhotjẽſi**, fem. **dekhotiſiĩ.**

3rd sg.—**At (dekhAt)** in Br., R., Fy., S., P., G., A. and M. Fy. distinguishes between masc. **-At** and fem. **-Atị**; Bgh. masc. **dekhotjAi**, fem. **dekhotjir.**

3rd pl.—**otẽr (dekhotẽr)** in R., **-oter (dekhoter)** in G. (except West); Fy., Sl. P., A., M., **-oten (dekhoten)** or

-ətin (dekhətin). Fy. distinguishes between masc. **-ətɛr** and fem. **-ətĩr (dekhətĩr)**, Bgh. masc. **dekhətjen,** fem. **dekhətin.**

(*a*) This tense denotes (in a conditional or purpose clause) an action which might have taken place in the past but which never did come off, *e.g.*, **ɟo mʌi ghʌr sɛr ʌrʈh bʌɟɛr cʌldɛrtiũ tʌu hiɛ̃r bʌkhʌt pʌr pʌɦuñɟʌrtiũ** 'had I started at eight from my house, I would have been here in time', **tum ʌis kʌrətiu kį hʌm kʌr hũʌ sę ʈʌrkʌi ko mʌukʌr. milɟʌrtį** 'you should have acted in a manner that I should have got an opportunity to slip off from there'.

Compared with the Past Imperfect Conditional (§ 325) and Past Perfect Conditional (§ 331) this tense does not refer to the aspect of the incompletion or completion of the act, but simply denotes that it did not take place.

C. Origin

§ 316. The Past Conditional in Awadhi, like other Mod. IA. is based on the Imperfect participle. In some forms the enclitic personal terminations, which appear in the past tense also, are found incorporated while in others, they are not used. Awadhi does not present any special feature here.

Present Imperfect Indicative

A. Early Awadhi

§ 317. The following instances have been noted:—

Jāyasī: *haũ jānati haũ* 'I know' (p. 508), *prāna mukuta aba hōta hai* 'life-breath is becoming free now' (p. 561), *khana eka mahã cāhata hahĩ dhāī* 'in a moment, they want to make an attack' (p. 605).

Note.—In *aba kasa hāri karasi hai hẽ hari* 'how now, overcome thou sayest (dost), O Hari' (p. 551), the auxiliary has been combined with the Present Indicative form.

Tulsī: *nīti dharma nai jānata ahaũ* 'I know my duty according to polity' (p. 379), *nisi dinu dēva japata hahu*

jēhī 'O lord, on whom you meditate day and night' (p. 296), *jānati hahu basa nāhu hamārē* 'you know that the lord is in your control' (p. 163), *mānahũ mōri karata hahɪ nindā* 'methinks (they) are speaking ill of me' (p. 316), *kou kaha calana cahata hahɪ ājũ* 'somebody said, they are going today' (p. 144), *prasna karata mana sakucata ahahĩ* 'he is hesitating to ask' (p. 456).

Nūr Muhammad: *rōvata ahaũ bircha para, mitra chāṛi gā pāsa* 'I am lamenting on the tree, the friend has left me' (p. 85), *jehi nisa dina sumirata hai kōũ* 'if any one remembers any one, day and night' (p. 75), *mitra jo haɪ karatāra kē, marata nahĩ haɪ sōi* 'those who are friends of God, do not die' (p. 54).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 318. For instance in Lakhīmpurī:

	sg.	pl.
1st	**dɛrkhʌtị hʌũ**	**dɛrkhitị hʌi** or **dɛrkhitị hʌn**
2nd	**dɛrkhʌtị hʌi** m.	**dɛrkhʌtị hʌu** f. **dekhotiɪ hʌu**
3rd	**dɛrkhʌtị hʌi** m.	**dɛrkhʌtị hʌĩ** f. **dekhotiɪ hʌĩ**

(*a*) This tense refers to an action which is taking place in the Present and has displaced the Pres. Indic. entirely in common speech. The auxiliary is uttered with much less emphasis than the principal verb, and hence appears to have lost ground in several cases. For instance:

Lmp. **tum dekhotiu naɪiɪ hiãɪ kaɪ hoi gaɪ** 'you do not see what has happened here' where **dekhotiu** stands for **dekhotiɪ hʌu**; Fatehpur: **Abʌi tum nʌfĩɪ jʌnteo** 'till now you do not know', Gonda: **hʌm dfioɪtiɪ naɪfĩɪ chãɪṭị sʌkitị** 'I cannot wash *dhōtī*', **hʌm soɪjfi birʌfiaɪ jaɪnitị** 'I know simple *Birahā* (songs)', U. **mʌi nʌfĩɪ lʌi sʌktiũ** 'I cannot take', Allahabad: **hʌm kuchụ naɪiɪ kʌroten** 'I am doing nothing'. In all these instances the auxiliary has very much modified itself, so that the forms appear as if they were of the Past Conditional

Past Imperfect Indicative

A. Early Awadhi

§ 319. Instances of this tense are much fewer than those of the Present Imperfect Indicative. For example :

Jāyasī : *sōvata ahā jahã sukha sākhā* ' I was sleeping there where (one finds) branches of happiness ' (p. 225).

Tulsī : *sundara suta janamata bhaī ōū* ' they also were delivered of handsome sons ' (p. 85), *mātha nāi pūchata asa bhayaū* ' having bowed down, he began to ask ' (p. 324), *rahē kahāvata parama birāgī* ' he was called a great hermit ' (p. 146).

Note.—Greaves (Grammar of the Rāmāyana, p. 33) makes a distinction between the Imperfect Participle with √*rah-* which he calls Imperfect Past and the Imperfect Participle with √*bha-* which is termed by him as Inceptive Imperfect. But no such distinction appears to be justified. √*bha-* is combined in exactly the same sense as √*rah-* and is found so used in Bihārī languages even to-day. The usage in Rāmāyana only shows that both the roots were employed to make the Past Imperfect.

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 320. This tense refers to an action which was being done in the past, the imperfection being emphasised, *e.g.*, **mʌi bʌjʌrʌi jʌrtị rʌɦʌũ** ' I was going to the Bazar ' indicates that the action of going was continuing. The forms, for instance, in Lmp., are :

	sg.	pl.
1st	**dɛrkhʌtị rʌɦʌũ**	**dɛrkhitị rʌɦʌi** or **dɛrkhitị rʌɦʌn**
2nd	**dɛrkhʌtị rʌɦʌi**	m. **dɛrkhʌtị rʌɦʌu** f. **dekhɵtiɛ rʌɦʌu**
3rd	**dɛrkhʌtị rʌɦʌi**	m. **dɛrkhʌtị rʌɦʌĩ** f. **dekhɵtiɛ rʌɦʌĩ**

(*a*) In Unao and Fatehpur where we have **h-** forms of the auxiliary for the past, they are modified generally, *e.g.*,

F. **pandʌrʌfi rupʌjaɪ kʌi ciɪʝ milʌt tiɪ** 'the article was obtainable for fifteen rupees', **khelotiɪ tĩɪ** '(the girls) were playing', **tum kʌfiãɪ geɪ tjoɪ** 'where had you been?', **biaɪfi ke khwaɪʝ kaɪ geɪ ten** 'I had gone in quest of the marriage (of my son)'.

Future Imperfect Indicative

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 321. This refers to an action which will be in the state of duration at some particular time. The forms, for instance, in Lakhīmpurī are:

	sg.	pl.
1st	**deɪkhʌtị hoifiʌũ**	**deɪkhitị hoibaɪ** or **deɪkhʌtị hoibaɪ**
2nd	**deɪkhʌtị hoɪiɪ**	m. **deɪkhʌtị hoifiʌu** f. **dekhotịɪ hoifiʌu**
3rd	**deɪkhʌtị hoɪiɪ**	m. **deɪkhʌtị hoifiʌĩ** f. **dekhotiɪ hoifiʌĩ**

Imperfect Imperative

A. Early Awadhi

§ 322. One instance of Present Imperfect Conjunctive is found in *calā jāta jasa hōi baṭōhī* 'as a traveller may be going' (N. p. 3).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 323. This is found only with the **rʌfi-** root and emphasises the incompleteness of the action wanted to be done. For instance, Lmp. **tui deɪkhʌtị rʌfiu** '(thou) continue seeing', **tum deɪkhʌtị** (fm. **dekhotiɪ**) **rʌfiʌu** '(you) continue seeing'.

Imperfect Future Imperative

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 324. This also emphasises the incompleteness of the action to be done, but with reference to distant future. For

instance Lmp., **tui dɛɾkhʌtị̆ rʌfiɛɾ** 'thou will continue seeing', **tum dɛɾkhʌtị̆** (fm. **dekhotiɾ**) **rʌfieu** 'you will continue seeing'.

Present Imperfect Conditional

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 325. This tense refers to the continuity of an action which did not happen. The forms, for instance, in Lmp., are :

	sg.	pl.
1st	**dɛɾkhʌtị̆ hoɾtiũ**	**dɛɾkhʌtị̆ hoɾten, dɛɾkhʌtị̆ hoɾitị̆**
2nd	**dɛɾkhʌtị̆ hoɾtị̆**	m. **dɛɾkhʌtị̆ hoɾtiu,** f. **dekhotiɾ hoɾtiu**
3rd	**dɛɾkhʌtị̆ hoɾtị̆**	m. **dɛɾkhʌtị̆ hoɾtĩɾ,** f. **dekhotiɾ hoɾtĩ**

Present Perfect Indicative

A. Early Awadhi

§ 326. The following instances have been noted :—

Jāyasī : *jō hai likhā so jāi na mēṭā* 'what is ordained cannot be falsified' (p. 596), *jahã baiṭhu hahĩ rāu* 'where the king is sitting' (p. 583).

Tulsī : *taba lagi baiṭha ahaũ baṭa chāhĩ* 'till then I am sitting in the shade of the banyan tree' (p. 27), *thakita hōhĩ saba lōga lugāī* 'all men and women become stupefied' (p. 89).

Nūr Muhammad : *hama tuma rākhā hai tehi nāũ* 'he has named us and you' (p. 55), *jāni parata rājā sravana, parī na hai yaha bōla* 'it appears that this word has not reached the king's ears' (p. 25), *āe suhāsa banē haĩ cērē* 'he came and smilingly became a disciple' (p. 2).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 327. The forms in Lakhīmpurī, for instance, are:

	sg.	pl.
1st	**dɛɾkhɛɾ hʌũ**	**dɛɾkhɛɾ hʌn**
	dɛɾkheũ hʌi	**dɛɾkhen hʌi**
2nd	**dɛɾkhɛɾ hʌi**	**dɛɾkhɛɾ hʌu**
	dɛɾkhisi̯ hʌi	
3rd	**dɛɾkhisi̯ hʌi**	**dɛɾkhini̯ hʌi**
1st	**mʌɾɑɾ** (f. **mʌɾiɾ**) **hʌũ** **mʌɾɛɾ** (f. **mʌɾiɾ**) **hʌn** **mʌɾeũ** (f. **mʌɾiũ**) **hʌi** **mʌɾen hʌi**	
2nd	**mʌɾɑɾ** (f. **mʌɾiɾ**) **hʌi** **mʌɾɛɾ** (f. **mʌɾiɾ**) **hʌu** **mʌɾɛɾ hʌi** **mʌɾeu** (f. **mʌɾiu**) **hʌi**	
3rd	**mʌɾɑɾ** (f. **mʌɾiɾ**) **hʌi** **mʌɾɛɾ** (f. **mʌɾiɾ**) **hʌ̃ĩ**	

(*a*) The difference between this tense and the Past Indicative lies in the use. This refers to an action the effect of which lasts up to the present while the Past Indicative refers to an action which has no effect at present, *e.g.*, **mʌi kuʌ̃ mɔ giɾi̯ gɑɾ hʌũ** 'I have fallen into the well' *i.e.*, I am still there, while **mʌi kuʌ̃ mɔ giɾi̯ gʌeũ** refers to the momentary action of falling but does not show that I am still there. Compared with the Past Perfect Indicative this tense refers to the recent past while the other to the remote past, *e.g.*, **mʌi gʌ̃ɪwʌi gʌwɑɾ hʌũ** 'I have gone to the village' refers to nearer past than **mʌi gʌ̃ɪwʌi gʌwɑɾ ɾʌɦʌũ** 'I had gone to the village'.

Past Perfect Indicative

A. Early Awadhi

§ 328. The instances are very rare:

Jāyasī: *jaba lagi guru maī ahā na cīnhā* 'as long as I had not recognised my teacher' (p. 540), *āeū marana mīcu hati likhī* 'I have come to die, death was ordained' (p. 121), *ohī dhanukha bēdhā huta rāhū* 'Rāhu had been pierced by that very bow' (p. 171), *dharatī saraga milē huta dōū* 'the Earth and the sky both were united' (p. 474).

Tulsī: *gaī rahī* 'she had gone', *gaē rahē* 'they had gone', *gaī hī* 'she had gone' (p. 379).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 329. As shown above (§ 297 note 1) the uninflected forms (**-ax, -ix, -ex**) of the Perfect Participle are accompanied by the regular auxiliaries of the various persons and the inflected forms (**-eũ, -iũ, iu** etc.) by the 3rd person sg. (**hʌi** and its equivalents **ʌfiʌi, bax** in the Present Perfect Indicative and **rʌfiʌi, rʌfiax** in the Past Perfect Indicative).

As compared with the Past Indicative, the effect of the action denoted by the Past Perfect Indicative lasts beyond the time when the action took place. Moreover, the Past Indicative refers to nearer past than the Past Perfect Indicative, *e.g.*, of **mʌi gãxwʌi gʌjeũ** 'I went to the village', and **mʌi gãxwʌi gʌwax rʌfiʌũ** 'I had gone to the village', the latter refers to remote past.

NOTE.—Unlike English Past Perfect (*e.g.*, I had gone) the Awadhi Past Perfect does not require comparison with another past verb.

Future Perfect Indicative

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 330. This tense refers to an action which will be necessarily completed by some particular time in the future, *e.g.*, **ɟʌlex tum hʌm kax bolaxwʌi ʌifiʌu tʌlex hʌm roxʈi khaxi cukex hoibax** 'I shall have taken my meal before you will come to call me'. It also sometimes is used to denote a possible but uncertain action of the past, *e.g.*, **kaxlfii kax tum ix kursix pʌr bʌiʈhex rʌfiʌu? hãx bʌiʈhex hoibax** 'did you sit on this chair yesterday?' 'Yes, I may have sat (on it)'.

Perfect Imperative

§ 331. This emphasises the completeness of the action wanted to be done, *e.g.*, **tui dexkhex rʌfiu,** 'you continue in the state of having seen.'

Perfect Future Imperative

§ 332. As compared to the Perfect Imperative this tense refers to distant future, *e.g.*, **tui dɛɾkhɛɾ rʌɦiɛɾ** 'thou will continue in the state of having seen'.

Past Perfect Conditional

§ 333. This tense refers to a conditional completed action in the past which did not occur, *e.g.*, **ɟo mʌi sʌbʌi kitaɾbʌi pʌɽɦiɛɾ hoɾtiũ, tʌu aɾɟ cʌin kʌrti hoɾtiũ** 'had I completed reading all the books, I should have been enjoying this day'. The forms in Lakhīmpurī, for instance, are:

	sg.	pl.
1st	**dɛɾkhɛɾ hoɾtiũ**	**dɛɾkhɛɾ hoten, dɛɾkhen hoɾiti̯**
2nd	**dɛɾkhɛɾ hoɾti̯**	**dɛɾkhɛɾ hotiu**
3rd	**dɛɾkhɛɾ hoɾti̯, dɛɾkhisi̯ hoɾti̯**	**dɛɾkhɛɾ hoɾtĩɾ**

C. ORIGIN

§ 334. The periphrastic tenses of Awadhi are formed by combining the Imperfect or the Perfect participle with the various tenses of the auxiliary verb and ḍo not present any peculiarity historically. Their use in Early Awadhi is comparatively rare, but with the progress of the language, greater and greater display of these tenses is found.

The Absolutive

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 335. The Absolutive in Early Awadhi ends in *-i*, only about half a dozen instances in Nūr Muhammad show *-a* for *-i*. This *-a* was merely orthographic. The form is generally used without any postposition; wherever a postposition is present, Jāyasī has *kai*, Tulsī *kai* generally and sometimes *kara* and *kari*, Nūr Muhammad *kai*, *kē*. For instance:

Jāyasī : *augāhi* 'having dived deep' (p. 2), *ṭūṭi* 'having broken' (p. 19), *mili kai* 'having united' (p. 60).

Tulsī : *chāṛi* 'having left' (p. 88), *jāni*, 'having known (p. 191), *sudhāri kai* 'having corrected' (p. 301), *jāi kara* 'having gone' (p. 338), *khāi kari* 'having eaten' (p. 399).

Nūr Muhammad : *samujhi* 'having understood' (p. 3), *cuni* 'having picked' (p. 5), *chāṛa* 'having left' (p. 4), *samhāri kai* 'having arranged' (p. 4), *thira kē* 'attentively' (p. 27).

The use of the absolutive is the same as in Modern Awadhi.

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 336. The Absolutive in Lakhīmpurī is formed by adding **-i̯** to a root ending in a consonant (*e.g.*, **dɛrkhi̯, hɑ̃si̯**) and **-i** to a root ending in a vowel (*e.g.*, **ɟɑri, khɑri**). The form thus arrived at is then used with **kə** or **kʌi** or **-kʌiɦɑ̃ɾ**, *e.g.*, **dɛrkhi̯ kə** 'having seen', **hɑ̃si̯ kʌi** 'having laughed', **ɟɑri kə** 'having gone', **lʌi kʌi** 'having taken', **uɾ sʌb din hɑ̃si̯ kʌi bɑɾt kʌrti hʌi** 'he always talks after smiling, *i.e.*, after having smiled'.

S., L., U., B., Br., R., G. and P. have the **-i** sound distinctively in this form, F., Fy., Sl., A., M. and Bgh. appear to drop it sometimes after roots ending in a consonant (*e.g.*, F. **nihɑɾr kʌi** 'having seen', Fy. **hɑ̃s ke** 'having laughed', Sl. **dɛrkh ke** 'having seen', A. **utɑɾr kʌi** 'having brought down', M. **bɑ̃ɾʈ ke** 'having divided') but retain it always after roots ending in a vowel. The **-i** is sometimes pronounced as **-e** and generally **-jʌ** in the Eastern dialects. The elision of intervocalic **-r-** is witnessed in certain forms of the Absolutive in the Eastern dialects, Lmp. **dɦʌri**, B. **dɦʌi** 'having put', Lmp. **bhʌri**, Sl. **bhʌi** 'having filled, *i.e.*, full', Lmp. **ɖɑɾri**, Fy. **ɖɑɾi** 'having thrown' [Compare Chatterji : *Origin and Development of Bengali*, p. 157 (1)]. The postposition employed by the Eastern dialects is **ɹke** or

kʌi. kʌiñã is restricted to Lmp., S. and B. kʌi is very common.

NOTE.—(1) The absolutive (without the postposition) is used to form compound verbs also (*vide* § 355).

(2) kʌr- 'to do', der- to give' and ler- 'to take' have their absolutive as kʌi, dʌi, lʌi respectively.

C. ORIGIN

§ 337. The Absolutive of Awadhi is based on the OIA. *-ya*, MIA. *-ia*, resulting in Awadhi as *-i* > *i̯* > Zero. In certain usages (*e.g.*, in compound verbs where it is compounded with *sakab*, *pāvab*, *milab*, to show ability or capacity to do an action) the absolutive stands for the old infinitive (Skt. *-tum*, MIA. *-iuṁ*) and the probability is that in such cases it has been derived from the ancient infinitive *-iuṃ*, *-iū*, *-i*.[1]

The Verbal Noun

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 338. The Verbal noun in Early Awadhi has two forms *viz.*, (*a*) *-ana*, (*b*) *-aba* both of which are found in the texts. The direct sometimes ends in *-u*; and the oblique from these is found in *-anē* and *-abē*. An additional oblique form in *-ai* is also found.

The use of the verbal noun is the same as in Modern Awadhi. For instance:

Jāyasī: here we have very few instances of the direct form the oblique ends in *-ai—kita āuna puni apanē hāthā* 'how will return be within our power' (p. 96), *tā kara ihai jo khānā piyanā, saba kahā dēi bhuguti au jianā* 'that he gives enjoyment and life to everyone in his meal and drink' (p. 7); *dīnhesi sravana sunai kahā bayanā* 'He gave ears to

[1] Cf. my paper on 'The Verb in the Rāmāyṇa', Allahabad University Studies, Vol. II, p. 235.

hear word' (p. 12), *pūjai jāi sakala saṁsārū* 'the whole world goes to worship' (p. 360).

Tulsī: *karana cahaũ raghupati guna-gāhā* 'I want to make a narration of the merits of the lord of the Raghus' (p. 7), *calē saṅga himavantu taba pahũcāvana ati hētu* 'then Himālaya started to send them off with great regard' (p. 49), *milaba hamāra bhulāba nija kahahu ta hamahī na khōri* 'I shall not be at fault if you mention my meeting or your missing (the way)' (p. 73); *ṭūṭa cāpa nahī jurihi risānē* 'the broken bow will never be fit by being angry' (p. 118), *hãsibē jōga hãsē nahī khōrī* 'it is fit to be laughed at, there is no evil in laughing' (p. 7), *tōrai lāga* 'began to break' (p. 349), *jarai na pāvā* 'could not burn' (p. 471), *calai kara* 'of going' (p. 228).

Nūr Muhammad: *birtha khāba sōiba au jīvana, piunā jivanā lōhu ka pīvana* 'eating, sleeping and life are useless, drinking and eating is (merely) drinking blood' (p. 35), *jāgaba mohī bairī bhayeu* 'awakening has become an enemy to me' (p. 48); *bāta sunai kahã saravana dīnhā* 'He has given ears to hear' (p. 1); *kahai likhai ūpara cita dīnhā* 'I concentrated my mind on saying and writing' (p. 4).

NOTE. 1.—In Nūr Muhammad one form *roibō* 'weeping' ends in *-ibō* (p. 26).

NOTE. 2.—In Tulsīdās there are a few feminine forms of the verbal noun ending in *-ani*, *e.g.*, *avalōkani bōlani milani prīti parsapara hāsa* 'their manner of looking, speaking, and meeting as well as their mutual affection and laughs' (p. 24).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 339. There are two cases of this—the direct and the oblique. The direct in Lakhīmpurī ends in **-ʌbu̯** (**dɛɾkhʌbu̯** 'seeing'), **-bu̯** (**ɟaɾbu̯** 'going', **hoɾbu̯** 'becoming'), or **-wʌbu̯** (**bʌɟaɾwʌbu̯** 'striking the musical instrument'). All the dialects have this form in the direct, only R., Br., B., Fy. and other Eastern dialects generally have **-ubu̯** instead of

-wʌbu̯ (*e.g.*, **rozubu̯** 'weeping', **luʈazubu̯** 'squandering'); U. has forms in **-ʌn** (**dezkhʌn**) also. The usage is found in such sentences as: F. **un kaz khazbu̯ nizk nʌfĩz lazgʌt** 'eating does not appear good to him', Lmp. **khazbu̯ kaz pezʈu̯ bfiʌrʌbu̯ hʌi** 'it is not eating, it is merely filling the stomach'.

The oblique in Lmp. ends in **-ʌi** (**dezkhʌi**), **-i** (**ʄazi**, **hozi**), or **-wʌi** (**bʌʄazwʌi**). All the dialects (except portions of Lucknow, Unao, Barabanki and Fatehpur) have this form, only in the Eastern dialects generally **-i** is pronounced as **jʌ** and sometimes **-e**. In the tracts mentioned above an oblique in **-ibez** (**dekhibez**, **ʄʌibez**, **bʌʄʌibez**) is found and on the border line of Kanaujī a form in **-ʌn** (**dezkhʌn**, **ʄazn**, **hozn**, **bʌʄazwʌn**) is used.

(*a*) The oblique is used without a postposition to show a purpose, *e.g.*, **mefiʌruaz ɖfiũzʈʌi cʌliz** 'the woman started for the purpose of searching'. It is also used without a postposition to form compound verbs (*vide* § 349). It can take the various postpositions like any other noun, in order to express the various case-relations, *e.g.*, **unkaz pʌʈfiʌi se̯ kaz mʌtlʌbu̯** 'what business has he with reading', **hʌm kaz kuchu̯ khazi ko̯ dezu** 'give me something to eat', **pazniz bʌrsʌi ko̯ bʌkhʌtu̯ azwaz** 'the time of raining has arrived', **iu lʌrikaz dezkhʌi sunʌi mo̯ nizk hʌi** 'this boy is good in seeing and hearing (*i.e.*, to all reports and appearances)', **khazi khaztir rozʈiz lazoz** 'bring loaves for eating'.

C. Origin

§ 340. The Verbal Noun has forms in (*a*) *-n*, (*b*) *-b* and in (*c*) *-ai*. The *-n* forms go back to the suffix *-ana* (*lyuṭ*). Hoernle derives the suffix from *-anīyar* and is supported in his view by Kellogg. I should, however, agree with Beames in deriving it from *lyuṭ*; it sometimes indicates a purpose, a sense which was expressed by the verbal noun

in OIA also, and not by *-anīyar*. The *-b* forms should, like the future, be derived from *-itavya*. The transition of the meaning from 'to be done', for instance, to 'to do' is one more instance of a passive form losing its passive sense and so in effect becoming active.

Forms in *-ai* which are always used in the oblique case appear to be connected with the ancient infinitive of the causative roots, *e.g.*, *karāium* > *karāiũ* > *karai*.[1]

The Noun of Agency

A. Early Awadhi

§ 341. The commonest forms end in *-vāra* (fm. *-vārī*) and *-hāra* (fm. *-hārī*), *e.g.*,

Tulsī: *rakhavārē* 'protectors', *mēṭana-hāra* 'destroyer', *kōṭi manōja lajāvani-hārē* 'one who puts to shame crores of cupids' (p. 203);

Nūr Muhammad: *nirasanahāra aghāi* 'the man who looks is satisfied' (p. 8), *phūlanahũ tē sōhanavārī* 'more beautiful than the flowers' (p. 8).

Other forms end in *-ana* (fm. *-ani*), *e.g.*, *harana* 'one who captivates', *harani*. These are mostly found in Tulsīdās.

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 342. The most general form in all the dialects is in **-ʌijaɪ**, **-wʌijaɪ** (**dekhʌijaɪ** 'one who sees', **khʌwʌijaɪ** 'one who eats'). Besides in Lmp. and P. a form in **-ʌnʌfiʌr** (fm. **-ʌnʌfiʌriɪ** or **ʌnʌfiʌrị**) is found sometimes, *e.g.*, **jʌnʌfiʌr** 'one who goes, *i.e.*, is about to go'; fem. **jʌnʌfiʌriɪ**. The **-eɪ** roots (**deɪ**, **leɪ**) have a form in **-waɪl** found in Lmp., S. and B., *e.g.*, **dewaɪl** 'one who gives', **lewaɪl** 'one who takes'). A form made by adding **-waɪlaɪ** to the oblique of the verbal noun (**-ʌi**) is reported from R., G. and P., *e.g.*, **bfiʌrʌiwaɪlaɪ** 'one who fills', **kʌrʌewaɪlaɪ**

[1] Prof Chatterji, however, sees phonetic difficulty in this derivation. Grierson thinks this to be derived as the oblique of the absolutive.

'one who does'. This appears to be made on the analogy of standard Hindi **bhʌrnex waxlax**, **kʌrnex waxlax**.

The noun of agency has a shade of the future time of the action denoted by it, *e.g.*, **koxix sʌfiʌr jʌwʌijax hoxi tʌu boxlʌi** 'if there be anyone going to the city, let him speak out'.

C. ORIGIN

§ 343. The Noun of Agency has several forms of which **-ʌijax** is most common in Modern and *-vāra* in Early Awadhi. The **-ʌijax** forms appear to be connected with the ancient noun of agency in *-tṛ* + the pleonastic affix *-ka*, *e.g.*, *paṭhatṛkaḥ* : *paṛhai-ō* : *paṛhai-ā* : **pʌʈfiʌijax** [see Hoernle (p. 149) who sees it as *āv* + *aiyā*]. The *-vāra*, **waxl** forms are all combinations of the verbal noun with *pālakaḥ* and the **-ʌnʌfiʌr**, *-anahāra*, *-anihāra* forms are the verbal noun in *-na* + *dhārakaḥ*. Forms in *-ana*, denoting the noun of agency, are *ardha-tatsama* forms, corresponding with *kartari lyuṭ*.

Phonetic Rules for Conjugation

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 344. I have found no instances of the operation of rules (*a*), (*b*), (*c*) under § 345, in Early Awadhi. Other rules are illustrated by the following instances :

(*d*) Jāyasī : *paṭhavā* (p. 16), *niarā-v-ā* (p. 40).

Tulsī : *cita-v-ā* (p. 28, line 22), *pā-v-ā*, *janā-v-ā* (p. 28, line 20).

Nūr Muhammad : *calā-v-ā*, *pā-v-ā* (p. 2, line 16).

(*e*) *wa* > *u*, *e.g.*,

Jāyasī : *bina-uba* (p. 15), *pā-ub*, *āubi* (p. 97).

Tulsī : *pā-uba* (p. 46, line 17), *ā-uba* (p. 74, line 19).

Nūr Muhammad : *pā-uba* (p. 57, line 16).

(*f*) Jāyasī : *khā-ba* (p. 247), *dē-ba* (p. 76), *hō-ba* (p. 254).

Tulsī : *jā-ba* (p. 57, line 16), *dē-na* (p. 168, line 12), *hō-ba*, (p. 67), line 12;

Nūr Muhammad : *jā-ba* (p. 57, l. 13) *lē-ba* (p. 31, l. 18), *hō-bai* (p. 35,.l. 16).

NOTE.—In several instances *-i* appears as *-ya*, *ī* as *-yā* (*jāi* : *jāya*, *jāī* : *jāyā*) and *ē* as *-ye* or *-ya* particularly after vowels (*jagāehi*, *pāyaũ*).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 345. (*a*) All roots ending in **-n**, **-r** or **-l** optionally elide initial **-ʌ** or **-ə** of the terminations, *e.g.*, **maɪn-** 'to acquiesce' **+ʌtį** : **maɪnʌtį** or **maɪnti**, **maɪn- +ətĩɪ -mʌnətĩɪ** or **mʌntĩɪ**, similarly **cʌrʌtį** : **cʌrti**, **haɪlʌtį** : **haɪlti**.

(*b*) All roots ending in **-i** (*e.g.*, **ji-** 'to live') combine **-i** with **-i-** or **ə-** of dissyllabic terminations into **iɪ**, *e.g.*, **ji- -iflʌũ** > **jiɪflʌũ**, **ji -ətiɪ** > **jiɪtiɪ**, but **ji -ib** > **jiib**, **ji -itį** > **jiitį**.

(*c*) All roots ending in **-u** (*e.g.*, **chu-** 'to touch') combine **-u** with initial **u-** or **ə-** of the terminations into **uɪ** (*e.g.*, **chu -u** > **chuɪ**, **chu -ətiɪ** > **chuɪtiɪ**).

(*d*) All roots ending in **-ʌ** (*e.g.*, **kurʌ-** 'to pile', **bflʌ-** 'became'), **-aɪ** (*e.g.*, **naɪ-** 'to pour', **sʌrmaɪ-** 'to be ashamed'), **-eɪ** (*e.g.*, **kheɪ-** 'to steer'), and **-oɪ** (*e.g.*, **ɖflioɪ-** 'to carry', **soɪ-** 'to sleep') add **-w-** between the root and a termination beginning with **aɪ-** (*e.g.*, **kurʌwaɪ**, **bflʌwaɪ**, **naɪwaɪ**, **sʌrmaɪwaɪ**, **kheɪwaɪ**, **ɖflioɪwa**, **soɪwaɪ**).

(*e*) All roots ending in **-ʌ**, **-eɪ** (except **leɪ**, **deɪ**) and **-oɪ** (except **hoɪ**), and transitive roots in **-aɪ** (except **khaɪ**) and **aɪ** 'to come' add **-w-** before a termination beginning with **ʌ-** (*e.g.*, **kurʌwʌtį**, **naɪwʌtį**, **aɪwʌtį**, **kheɪwʌtį**, **ɖflioɪwʌtį**, **sowʌtį**) or **ə-**, **-wə** then becoming **u** (**kurʌutiɪ**, **nʌutiɪ**, **ʌutiɪ**, **kheutiɪ**, **ɖfloutiɪ**, **soutiɪ**).

(*f*) All intransitive roots ending in **-aɪ** (except **aɪ** 'to come') and **khaɪ** 'to eat', **leɪ** 'to take', **deɪ** 'to

give' and **hoɪ** 'to become' elide the initial **ʌ-** or **ə-** of the terminations (*e.g.*, **jaɪ -ʌṭi̯** : **jaɪṭi̯**, **jaɪ -ətiɪ** : **jaɪtiɪ**, **khaɪṭi̯**, **khaɪtiɪ**, **leɪṭi̯**, **leɪtiɪ**, **deɪṭi̯**, **deɪtiɪ**, **hoɪṭi̯**, **hoɪtiɪ**).

The Causative

A. Early Awadhi

§ 346. The Causative in Early Awadhi is generally formed by augmenting *-ā* to the root and then conjugating it like a transitive verb, *e.g.*,

Jāyasī : *sunāvahɪ̃* (p. 16), *milāeũ* (p. 397), *cuāvahɪ̃* (p. 548);

Tulsī : *sunāvā* (p. 17, last line), *janāvā* (p. 28, l. 20), *sicāvā* (p. 33, l. 12);

Nūr Muhammad : *samuj̃hāvaɪ̃* (p. 26, l. 5), *rovāvahī* (p. 26, l. 6), *hākarāyeu* (p. 65, l. 2), *sunāyeu* (p. 65, l. 2).

There are a few instances where the ablaut of the vowel in the first syllable (*a* : *ā*, *i* : *ē*, *u*, *ū*: *ō*) expresses the causative sense, *e.g.*,

Tulsīdas : *ṭārā* (simple *ṭarā*) (p. 124, l. 14), *mēṭē* (simple *miṭē*) (p. 130, l. 12), *bōrahi* (simple *būṛahi*).

In the case of *baiṭhaba*, *baisaba* and *dēkhaba*, *-ār* is augmented, *e.g.*, *baiṭhārē* (T. p. 25, l. 7), *baisārē* (J. p. 193), *dekharāvā* (J. p. 310), (T. p. 88, l. 16). *dēkhaba* makes the causal in the ordinary way also, *e.g.*, *dekhāyē* (T. p. 124, l. 20).

I have not come across any example of the double causative, except perhaps *kahavāvā* 'made to call' (N. p. 25, l. 4), where the simple causative would have done.

Note.—The causative of √*khā-* 'to eat' is *khiā* 'to feed' found in Jāyasī and Nūr Muhammad, *e.g.*, *sabahi khiāvai āpu na khāī* 'He feeds all, but himself does not eat' (J. p. 7).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 347. The causative is formed generally by adding the suffix **-aɪ** to the simple root and then conjugating it like

any other transitive root in **-ɑɪ**, *e.g.*, **hɑ̃sʌb** 'to laugh': **hɑ̃sɑɪwʌb** 'to make one laugh', 'dɛɪkhʌb 'to see': **dekhɑɪwʌb** 'to make one see.'

The following verbs, however, form their causative by modifying the vowel, or the vowel and consonant of the root:

(*a*) lengthening the vowel: **pʌsʌr-: pʌsɑɪr-, ukhʌr-: ukhɑɪr-, nikʌr-** : **nikɑɪr-, khĩc- : khĩɪc**; similarly **kʌʈ-, bɑ̃dʰi-, mʌr-, lʌd-, cir-, buɟh-, ɟʌr-.**

(*b*) changing **i** into **ɛɪ** and **u** into **oɪ**, **phir-: phɛɪr-, khul-** : **khoɪl-**, similarly **ruk-, gʰur-, ɟur-.**

(*c*) modifying both the vowel and the consonant:

(1) alternation of **ʈ, ɽ** and **r: phʌʈ-: phɑɪr-, chuɪʈ-: choɪr-, ɟuʈ-: ɟoɪr-, phuɪʈ-: phoɪr-, ʈuɪʈ-: toɪr-, buɪɽ-: boɪr-.**

(2) alternation of **k** and **c-: bik- : bɛ̃ɪc-.**

In the case of **bʌiʈh-** 'to sit' **ɑɪr** is added (in the Western and Central dialects) after **ɑɪ** to form the causal **bʌiʈhʌb : bʌiʈhɑɪrʌb.**

NOTE.—It should be noted that all the roots mentioned above (except **nikʌr-, mʌr-, ruk-, rʌʈʰ-**) are sets of passive-active verbs rather than simple-causative.

Sometimes, there are found uses of a double causative. This is restricted to consonantal roots, *e.g.*, **hɑ̃sʌb :, hɑ̃sɑɪwʌb, hɑ̃sʌwɑɪwʌb,** and is formed by adding **wɑɪ** to the simple causative.

In the case of a set of simple causative and double causative, the former is generally used in a case where the remote agent actively helps the immediate agent to do the action, *e.g.*, **gopɑɪl rɑɪmu ko pɑɪnir pijɑɪnin̤** 'Gopāl caused Rāmū to drink water' (*i.e.*, Gopāl actively helped Rāmū—perhaps by giving water); and the double when the remote agent is merely the director of the action through another, *e.g.*, **gopɑɪl ʌmbikʌ se̤ rɑɪmu ko pɑɪnir**

pijʌwaxiṇ 'Gopāl caused Rāmū to drink water by the help of Ambikā'. In effect, thus, in a double causative there are more than two agents.

The double causative is, however, very seldom used as the nice distinction between the two causatives is not generally required.

NOTE.—The idea of the causative in some cases is expressed by quite a differernt root, *e.g.*, **jaɪb** 'to go' but **pʌʈhʌwʌb** 'to cause to go, *i.e.*, to send', **aɪwʌb** 'to come' but **aɪnʌb** 'to cause to come, *i.e.*, to bring', **rʌfiʌb** 'to remain' but **raɪkhʌb** 'to keep'.

NOTE.—**khaɪ** 'to eat' makes its ordinary causative in Western and Central dialects (**khʌwaɪ**) but in the Eastern dialects it is found as **khiaɪ**-

C. ORIGIN

§ 348. The suffix *ā* of the Causative goes back to *-ā-p*: *-āv*: *-v* being represented in some forms still in Modern Awadhi by *-w*. In the roots forming their causatives by ablaut, the correspondence with ancient causatives can be seen; Skt. *prasarati*: *prasārayati*, Aw. **pʌsʌrʌi**: **pʌsaɪrʌi**. On the analogy of the ablaut of *a*: *ā*, the ablaut of *i*: *ē*, *ū*: *ō* is also found.

The *-r* is an augment to the suffix *-ā* and is found only in a few roots. It corresponds with *-l* of Western Hindi, and with the *-r* normally found in Sindhi, with the causatives. Its origin is obscure.[1]

The Passive

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 349. (*a*) Early Awadhi attests some roots which are passive in meaning, *e.g.*, *bujhāī* 'is extinguished' (J. p. 375),

[1] See J. A. S. B., 1896 Part I, pp 1—5 where Grierson connects *l*, *r*, *ḍ* etc. to Pkt. suffix *-illa* added to nouns and adjectives; and draws analogy of Skt. *kr—ṇō—ti* etc., which are said to be denominatives by Brugmann.

miṭahĩ 'are effaced' (T. p. 3, l. 11), *ugharahĩ* 'are opened up' (T. p. 3, l. 11), *sūjhahĩ* 'become visible' (T. p. 3, l. 12). Such roots, though they take the active forms, always express the passive sense.

(*b*) Some active roots form the passive by augmenting *-ā*, *e.g.*, *samuda sukhāhĩ* 'oceans are dried up' (J. p. 19), *rahē kahāvata parama birāgī* 'he was called a great hermit' (T. p. 146). Denominative verbs come under this class of the passive, *e.g.*,

Jāyasī: *lajāneu* 'was ashamed' (p. 179), *juḍāna* 'became cool' (p. 346).

Tulsī: *ḍerānā* 'became afraid' (p. 58, l. 5), *juṛānē* 'become cool' (p. 60 l. 20).

Nūr Muhammad: *bhulānē* 'became forgetful' (p. 15, l. 23), *arujhānē* 'became entangled' (p. 15, l. 23).

NOTE.—The augment in the case of the Causative also is *-ā* but these denominatives are treated of as intransitive and so add *-n-* between the root and the terminations of the Past tenses. The context also indicates the difference.

(*c*) Besides the above, Early Awadhi attests some forms of the synthetic passive. The Passive Imperfect Participle has been shown above [§ 294 (c)]. Moreover, we find an impersonal passive present-imperative ending in *-ia*, *-iahi* (*-iai*), *-iē*, *-ījai*, *īija*, *ījiai*, *-ījē*. Of these *-ia*, *-iai* (*-iahi*), *-ījia* and *-ījiai* are found in Jāyasī, *-ia*, *-iahi*, *iē*, *-ījai* in Tulsī and *-ījē* in Nūr Muhammad. In Nūr Muhammad, however, I have found only two instances of this form (*viz. kījē* 'make', *lījē* 'take', p. 27, l. 2).

In Jāyasī and Tulsī there are many more examples. Jāyasī: *jaṃbuka kahā jaũ caḍhiahi rājā, siṃgha sāji kai caḍhia ta chājā* 'If one were to attack a jackal, O king, it will be best if he attacks after making preparation for (the attack of a) lion' (p. 530), *āju kālhi bhā cāhia* 'it should come about to-day or to-morrow' (p. 442), *kharaga dēkhi pānī hoi ḍhariai* 'on seeing the sword, one (or you) should

trickle down as water' (p. 536); *bhalehī āe aba māyā kījia, pahunāī kahā āesu dījia* 'it is well that you have come, be favourable and order (me to put forward) hospitality' (p. 286), *ghāli kasauṭī dījiai* 'give (her) after putting (him) on the touchstone' (p. 610).

Tulsī : *sunia kathā sādara rati mānī* 'let the story be heard with respect and affection' (p. 19), *cahia amiya jaga jurai na chāchī* 'nectar is wanted, but even whey is not available in this world' (p. 7), *jānia bhagati na pūjā* 'neither devotion nor worship is known' (p. 81); *bāyasa paliahi ati anurāgā* 'let the crow be nurtured with great affection' (p. 5), *bēṣa pratāpa pūjiahi tēū* 'they also are worshipped owing to their guise' (p. 6); *gai nisa bahuta sayana aba kījai* 'night has passed sufficiently, let thee sleep' (p. 74). Similarly *kariē*, *hariē* etc.

NOTE.—As shown above these forms of the Passive are sometimes Imperative in sense, and sometimes denote merely the Present tense or the Conjunctive.

(*d*) Besides the synthetic passive, instances of the analytic passive also are found in Early Awadhi, *e.g.*,

Jāyasī : *gagana nakhata jasa jāhī na ganē* 'so many stars in the sky as cannot be counted' (p. 177), *jau pīsata ghuna jāihi pīsā* 'while grinding barley, the insect also will be ground' (p. 487), *sahi na jāi jōbana kara bhārū* 'the weight of youth cannot be borne' (p. 382).

Tulsī : *bidhi karataba kachu jāi na jānā* 'Fate's action is not known at all' (p. 180), *ārati prīti na sō kahi jātī* 'that agony and affection is not described' (p. 195), *khaga mr̥ga haya gaya jāhī na jōē* 'birds, deer, horses, and elephants are not seen' (p. 219), *barani na jāhī mañju dui sālā* 'the two beautiful houses cannot be described' (p. 209); *mohi lakhi parata bharata matu ēhū* 'to me it appears that it is Bharata's opinion' (p. 270), *ehi pāpinihi būjhi kā pāreu* 'what was understood by this sinner?' (p. 175).

Nūr Muhammad : *ḍara sõ uttara jāi na dīnhā* ' owing to fear, the answer is not given ' (p. 58), *nā tō mārī jāū* ' otherwise, I shall be killed ' (p. 58), *sapana na būjhā jāi* ' the dream is not explained ' (p. 5).

NOTE.– see § 354 (5) *paraba.*

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 350. (*a*) Some roots are passive in sense by themselves, *e.g.*, **kʌʈ-** ' to be cut ', **bãdʱ-** ' to be bound ', **jʌɾ lʌkʌɽiɾ ʄʌldiɾ naɾiɾ ciɾʌtị** ' this wood does not split (*i.e.* is not split) soon ', **juɾ gʱʌɽʌɾ bʱʌɾʌi tʌb cʌliɾ** ' let this jar fill (*i.e.* be filled), then we shall go '. Most of such roots have merely a passive sense, their causative expressing the active, *e.g.*, **kʌʈ-** : **kaɾʈ-**. But a few (*e.g.*, **bʱʌr-**) have an active or passive sense according to the context. For instance, in the above instance it has been used as passive, but in **gopaɾl iu gʱʌɽʌɾ bʱʌɾʌi tʌb cʌliɾ** 'let Gopāl fill this jar, then we shall go ' it is active.

NOTE.—**cʌʱ-** ' to want ' is used passively in the case of 3rd person singular only, *e.g.*, **rupʌjaɾ cʌʱiɾ** ' money is wanted '.

(*b*) A passive is formed sometimes by adding the suffix **-aɾ** to transitive roots and then conjugating them like intransitive roots [for distinction see above § 345 (*e*) and (*f*)], *e.g.*, **juɾ ʌdmiɾ ãɾdʱʌr dekhaɾtị hʌi** ' this man appears (lit. is seen) blind ', **tum rãɾɽʌi ʄʌnaɾtiɾ hʌu** ' you appear to be (lit. are perceived) widows '. This passive, however, in Awadhi is found with a restricted number of roots only, mostly such as denote perception or knowledge (**sunaɾb** ' to be heard ', **ʌgʱaɾb** 'to be satiated ') but sometimes with a few other roots (**buʄhaɾb** ' to become extinguished '). Denominative verbs (formed by adding **aɾ-**, *e.g.*, **miʈʰ** ' sweet ' : **miʈʰaɾb** ' to taste sweet ', **loɾn** ' salt ' : **lonaɾb** 'to taste saltish ', **kʰʌʈaɾ** ' sour ' : **kʰʌʈaɾb** ' to appear sour ', **piʌr** ' yellow ' : **piʌraɾb** ' to become yellow ', **hʌraɾ**

'green' : **hʌriaɪb** 'to become green', **lʌflʌr** 'wave' : **lʌflʌraɪb** 'to appear full of waves, thence metaphorically, prosperous') come under this passive.

NOTE.—In **baɪt** 'word' : **bʌtlaɪb** 'to talk a word', there is an addition of **l** before the suffix **-aɪ-**. In the Central and Eastern dialects **-i-** (**bʌtiaɪb**) or **-u-** (**bʌtuaɪb**) instead of **l** is found.

(*c*) It should be noted that the suffix **aɪ** denotes the causative also; but the difference lies in the fact that causatives are transitive and the passive (including the denominative) is intransitive and hence there is difference in conjugation, *e.g.*, **dekhaɪwʌtị** 'shows' : **dekhaɪtị** 'appears'. Where the form does not show the difference, the context indicates it, *e.g.*, **dekhaɪeũ** may mean either 'showed' or 'appeared' according to the context.

(*d*) The analytic or periphrastic passive is formed in Awadhi with the help of three verbs : **jaɪb** 'to go', **aɪwʌb** 'to come' and **pʌrʌb** 'to fall'. For instance: **ʌb sʌb ɖaɪkuɪ maɪrel jʌiβʌĩ** 'now all dacoits killed will go *i.e.*, now all the dacoits will be killed', **jʌb duɪdfiụ piʌi mə aɪwʌi tʌb sewaɪdụ jaɪnị pʌrʌi** 'when milk drinking in comes then taste knowing falls *i.e.*, when milk is drunk then only its taste may be known'. With **jaɪb** the Perfect Participle (the forms changing according to gender or number as required) is employed, and the agent is put in the instrumental case, if it is meant to be indicated. With **aɪwʌb** the oblique case of the verbal noun (followed by a locative postposition) is employed and the agent is put in the genitive. In the case of **pʌrʌb**, the absolutive (without the postposition) is employed and the agent appears in the dative case.

(*e*) A sort of impersonal passive is formed from intransitive verbs (and transitive verbs intransitively used) by employing **jaɪb** with the Perfect participle (3rd sg.) and expresses the additional aspect of ability to do an act, *e.g.*, **ui**

sɛr ɑzwɑr nɑzir ɟɑrtį̃ 'he is unable to come', **kɑr tum sɛr khɑrwɑr nɑzir ɟɑrtį̃** 'can't you eat?' This additional aspect of 'ability' is present sometimes in the case of the transitive verb also, *e.g.*, **tum ʌis durbʌr hoi gɛu ki dɛrkher nɑzir ɟɑrtiu** 'you have become so lean that you cannot be looked at, *i.e.*, the glance turns away from you.'

(*f*) The active construction is the normal feature of the language. The passive is used only to lay an emphasis either on the object of the active construction or on its attribute (**ɟɑr ɖfiorl phurtį̃ ɟʌnɑrtį̃ hʌi** 'this drum appears to be broken') or on the action itself (**mʌi sɛr cilɑrwɑr nɑzir ɟɑrtį̃** 'I cannot shout'). The subject occupies a very secondary place and is mostly understood.

C. Origin

§ 351. The suffix of the Passive, *-ya-*, is represented in MIA. as *-īa* and *-ijja*, and in Early Awadhi (see § 349) as *-i-* or *-ij-* found in the passive imperfect participle and in the passive imperative; the *-iahi* (*-iai*), *-iē* go back to passive MIA. *-īai* (*karīai*), the present tense denoting the imperative. In *-ia*, the 3rd sg. termination *-a* is found after the passive root. Similarly *-ījai*, *-ijē* go back to MIA. *-ijjai* and in *-ījia* and *ījiai*, a sort of double passive is visible from the form, *e.g.*, Pkt. *dijjīai* 'is given.' In Modern Awadhi, the synthetic passive is found in certain root-forms only and in the Imperfect participle of the 1st pl. Besides *cahī* 'is wanted' is passive.

§ 352. The denominative in *-ā* is passive. The origin of this is the ancient denominative affix *-āya-* (*e.g.*, *vīrāyate* 'acts like a brave person'). This is clearly distinguished in Mod. IA. from the causative which is always transitive. Further, in the past tense, the denominative has the augment *-n* (see § 297), *e.g.*, **ʌrmɑɛnɛũ** 'I became ashamed'. This **-n-** does not appear in the causative, *e.g.*, **khʌwɑɛɛũ** 'I fed'; similarly a causative requires *-w-* before

a termination of the imperfect participle (*e.g.*, **sArmaɪwAṭ̥i**) 'putting to shame') while a denominative does not (*e.g.*, **sArmaɪṭ̥i** 'getting ashamed').

353. The analytic passive is the regular passive of the modern language; occasional instances of it are found in Early Awadhi also. It began with the compounding of verbs like *yā* 'to go' with other verbs (*e.g.*, *vēḍhiuṃ jāi* 'is encompassed', *vilihiuṃ jāi* 'is painted', *Karpūramañjarī*, I. 30) and became stereotyped in this sense by and by and ousted the synthetic passive.

Compound Verbs

A. Early Awadhi

§ 354. The use of compound verbs is not very common in Early Awadhi, but it is still found quite frequently. We have found instances of the following verbs, used with the participles, the verbal noun or the absolutive of the principal verb, as compound verbs. The shades of meanings expressed are the same as in Modern Awadhi.

(1) *uṭhaba*, *e.g.*, *jāgi uṭheũ asa dēkhata, sakhi kahu sapana bicāri* 'seeing thus I woke up. My friend, think out and explain the dream' (J. p. 439), *dalaki uṭheu suni hṛdaya kaṭhōrū* 'the hard heart, on hearing, began to break' (T. p. 168).

(2) *cahaba*, *e.g.*, *sunu mati kāja cahasi jau sājā* 'take (my) counsel, if thou desirest to accomplish the business' (J. p. 276), *bhai cāhai asi kathā salōnī* 'the story is going to be so charming' (J. p. 78), *tasa sara sāji jarai caha rājā* 'having prepared such a pyre, the king wants to burn (himself)' (J. p. 457), *nija nayananhi dēkhā cahahĩ nātha tumhāra biyāhu* 'Lord, (they) wish to see your marriage with their own eyes' (T. p. 42), *jō nahāi caha ehi sara bhāī* 'brothers, whoever wants to bathe in this tank' (T. p. 22), *nātha lasana pura dēkhana cahahĩ* 'My lord, Lakṣmaṇa wishes to see the town' (T. p. 95), *karu sōi jō cāhasi kīnhā*

'do what you like to do' (N. p. 68), *āpuhṁ phēra cinhāvai cahā* '(He) desires to make people know him' (N. p. 6).

(3) *jāba, e.g., suni vei bayana lāji chapi jāhṁ* '(they) conceal (themselves) becoming ashamed on hearing her words' (J. p. 186), *janu chui gaeu pāka baratōrū* 'as if a ripe boil (at the point of the breaking of a hair) got touched' (T. p. 168); *chūṭi jāe sumirahu tuma mōhṁ* 'it will be loosened, should you remember me' (N. p. 4).

(4) *dēba, e.g., dāruna sasura na nisarana dīhṁ* 'the harsh father-in-law will not permit (us) to go out' (J. p. 96), *phiri nahṁ jhūlana dīhī sāṁ* 'later, the master will not allow (us) to swing' (J. p. 97), *tinhahṁ dekhāi dihesu taṁ Sītā* 'to them thou wilt show Sītā' (T. p. 337), *rājaṁ rāja kāja taji dīnhā* 'the king's work was given up by him' (N. p. 11).

(5) *paraba, e.g., sūjhi na parata pantha ādhiārā* 'the dark path would not have come to be seen' (J. p. 14), *ehi pāpinihi būjhi kā pareū* 'what was it that came to be realised by this sinner' (T. p. 175), *jāni parata rājā sravana parī na hai yaha bōla* 'it appears that this word has not been heard by the King' (N. p. 25). This gives a passive sense.

(6) *pāraba, e.g., tumha khēvahu jau khēvai pārahu* 'if you are able to ply, ply' (J. p. 314), *tumhahṁ achata kō baranai pārā* 'while you live, who can describe (it)' (T. p. 117), *tabahũ̃ barana na pāraũ̃ tōhṁ* 'even then I cannot describe you' (N. p. 2).

(7) *pāvaba, e.g., chūṭa na pāu mīcu kara bādhā* 'one tied to death cannot be released' (J. p. 394), *kō dēkhai pāvai vaha nāgū* 'who can be allowed to see that serpent' (J. p. 208), *durlabha sāja sulabha kari pāvā* 'was able to gather easily the requisites difficult to obtain' (T. p. 459), *jarai na pāva dēha birahāgī* 'the body is not allowed to burn in the separation-fire' (T. p. 355).

(8) *rahaba, e.g., bēdhi rahā sagarau saṃsārā* 'the whole world remains pierced' (J. p. 177), *rahā lukāi* 'remained in hiding' (T. p. 380).

(9) *rākhaba*, *e.g.*, *kuhū kuhū kai kōila rākhā* 'the cuckoo went on cooing' (J. p. 43), *hōihi soi jo rāma raci rākhā* 'that which Rāma has created, will come about' (T. p. 28).

(10) *lāgaba*, *e.g.*, *lāgī saba mili hēraī, būḍi būḍi eka sātha* 'all of them diving together again and again, began to make a search' (J. p. 103), *rāma nāma siva sumirana lāgē* 'Śiva began to remember Rāma's name' (T. p. 31), *kahē lageu pōthī tabai, pāya tapī kara bāha* 'having obtained the arm of the ascetic, (he) began to compose the book' (N. p. 4).

(11) *lēba*, *e.g.*, *khēli lēhu jō khēlahu ājū* 'if you play, do play to-day' (J. p. 96), *daccha liyē muni bōli saba* 'Dakṣa invited all the hermits' (T. p. 31), *ahai ṭhāṛha mōhi līnha bolāī* '(he) is standing there and has called me' (N. p. 4).

(12) *sakaba*, *e.g.*, *ōhui kō sakai rājā kai bārī* 'who can touch the king's garden' (J. p. 201), *dēkhi na sakahī parāi bibhūtī* '(they) cannot look (with equanimity) at another's prosperity' (T. p. 162,) *kita kai sakaũ vakhāna tumhārā* 'how can I make a description of yours' (N. p. 2).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 355. Compound verbs are in very common use and express various aspects. The helping verb loses its own meaning and merely helps to express a certain shade of the principal verb. The accent being on the principal verb, the helping word is pronounced with less force and has a tendency to lose its sounds. Four forms of the principal are thus compounded :

(*a*) the absolutive (§ 336).

(*b*) the oblique case of the verbal noun (§ 339 *a*).

(*c*) the Perfect participle in **-ax** (§ 297).

(*d*) the Imperfect participle in **-Aṭi, -At** (§ 296).

The absolutive is combined with

(1) **ɟaɪb, cukʌb, leɪb** and **ɖaɪrʌb** to express definite completeness of an action, *e.g.*, **hʌmaɪr gɦʌrɳ ɟʌɪ̯ gaɪ** 'my house burnt down', **ɟʌb mʌi khaɪ cukʌ̃** 'when I finish eating', **mʌi huã̄ɪ aɪi leɪ̃ tʌu bʌtaɪwʌ̃** 'let me come over there then I shall say' **uɪ caɪrɨ̯ gilaɪs paɪnɪr pɪr ɖaɪrɪsɨ̯** 'he drank up four (whole) tumblers of water'.

Of these **cukʌb** expresses thoroughness and **ɖaɪrʌb** an unexpected nature of the action.

(2) **pʌrʌb, uʈhʌb, bʌɪʈhʌb** to express suddenness or surprise, *e.g.*, **uɪ pʌgolaɪ aɪgi mo kuɪdɨ̯ pʌraɪ** 'that mad man jumped down into the fire', **tum etɪeɪ ɟoɪr sɨ̯ bozleu kɨ̯ lʌrikaɪ ɟaɪgɨ̯ uʈhaɪ** 'you spoke so loudly that the child woke up', **atɪe mo mʌi kʌɦi bʌɪʈɦeũ** 'in the meanwhile I spoke up'.

(3) **sʌkʌb, paɪwʌb, milʌb** 'to express ability to do an act, *e.g.*, **mʌi rupʌjaɪ laɪi sʌkʌtɨ̯ hʌ̃ũ** 'I can bring money', **mʌi kʌi pʌɦʌ̃ũ tʌu kʌrɦʌ̃ũ** 'if I am able to do (it), I shall do it', **mʌi kaɪ naɪiɪ kʌi milaɪ** 'I could not do it'.

NOTE.—**ɟaɪb** expresses 'ability' also [see above § 350 (*e*)].

(4) **khaɪb** and **maɪrʌb** to express an offence or infliction of an undesirable thing, *e.g.*, **ui kaɪ kutɪaɪ kaɪʈɨ̯ khaɪisɨ̯** 'a dog has bitten him', **mʌi dʌs pʌnɪʌ ki ciʈɪhiɪ likhɨ̯ maɪreũ** 'I wrote out a letter of ten pages'.

(5) **cʌlʌb** to express the beginning of an action, *e.g.*, **uɪ hʌm kaɪ dekhotʌi maɪrɨ̯ cʌlaɪ** 'no sooner did he see me, than he began to beat'.

(6) **deɪb** to express the intensity of an action, *e.g.*, **moɪrɨ̯ bãɪ̃ɦi chãɪ̃ɪʈɨ̯ deɪu** 'do leave my arm'.

The oblique case of the verbal noun is combined with

(1) **deɪb** to express permission, *e.g.*, **mʌi kaɪ roɪʈɪr khaɪi deɪu** 'allow me to take my meal'.

(2) **laɪgʌb** to express inception of an action, *e.g.*, **ʌb ui hʌmoɪeɪ hiã̄ɪ aɪwʌi laɪg hʌ̃ĩ** 'they have started coming to my place now'.

(3) **cʌfiʌb** to express near completion of an act, *e.g.*, **barrar bʌjʌi cʌfiʌti̯ hʌ̃** 'it is about twelve o'clock.'

(4) **parwʌb** to express the indulgence or permission to do an act, *e.g.*, **ur kʌfiʌi narir parwar** 'he was not allowed to say'.

The Perfect Participle in **-ar** is combined with

(1) **kʌrʌb** to denote frequency of an action, *e.g.*, **hʌm arwar kʌribar** 'I shall come frequently'.

(2) **cʌfiʌb** to denote wish, *e.g.*, **ui jarwar cʌfiʌti hʌ̃** 'they are desirous of going'.

The Imperfect Participle in **-ʌti, -ʌt** is combined with **rʌfi-** to express continuity, *e.g.*, **ur pʌṛfiʌti̯ rʌfiar, borlar narir** 'he continued reading (and) did not speak'.

Note.—Though the root **-rʌfi-** is employed as an auxiliary to denote the past tense, it denotes continuity as a compound verb. If it were merely an auxiliary the form in the above instance ought to have been **rʌfiʌi** and not **rʌhar.**

C. Origin

§ 356. In OIA. the various aspects and shades of meaning were expressed either by suffixing or prefixing the roots. With the disintegration of the system of conjugation and the levelling of terminations these could no longer serve the purpose. Modern Indo-Aryan has, therefore, adopted a method of compounding two verbs where one expresses the main semanteme while the other expresses the shade or aspect. It is interesting to note that Dravidian has a similar use of compound verbs, on which Chatterji remarks: 'It is very likely that here we have another contribution of Dravidian in the formation of Modern Indo-Aryan speeches' (p. 1050).

CHAPTER VII

ADVERBS

§ 357. Adverbs of Awadhi are based on nouns (*e.g.*, **ɟʌldiɪ** 'soon'), pronouns (*e.g.*, **ɟʌisex** 'as'), adjectives (*e.g.*, **pʌfilex** 'at first') or on ancient adverbs (*e.g.*, **ɑɪɟɻ̣** < *adya* 'to-day') or adverbial expressions (*e.g.*, **tʌfi kʌi** : *tasmin kṛtē* 'after that').

PIA. adverbs were mostly formed by suffixes added to pronouns or were merely case-forms of nouns or adjectives (*vide* Whitney : *Sanskrit Gram.*, Chap. XVI). Modern adverbs have either descended from old adverbs or are fresh formations from nouns and adjectives, *e.g.*, *adya* > *ajjō* > **ɑɪɟɻ̣** and **ɟʌldiɪ** < Pers. *jaldī*.

Adverbs of Time

A. Early Awadhi

§ 358. 'now' : *aba* (J. 10, T. 6), *-hĩ* (N. 4); 'then' : *taba* (J. 78, T. 6), +*hũ* (N. 2), *tabai* (N. p. 4), *tabaɪ* (N. p. 37); 'when?' : *kaba*, +*hũ* (J. 346, N. 27); 'when' : *jaba* (J. 40, T. 4, N. 6); 'to-day' : *āju* (J. 196, T. 165), *āja* (N. 3); 'yesterday or tomorrow' : *kāli*, *kālhi* (J. 96, 271, T. 161), *kālha* (N. 52); 'always' : *niti* (J. 111), *nita* (T. 157), *nitta* (N. 7), *nitu* (N. 59); 'formerly' : *agumana* (J. 537), *agamõ* (N. 109), *āgē* (T. 289), *āgehɑ* (N. 85), *pahilē* (N. 13); 'then' : *tahiā* (J. 110, T.); 'when' : (*jahiā* (T.); 'in the morning' : *bhōra* (J. 271, N. 4), *bhōrẽ* (N. 17), 'in the evening' : *sājha* (J. 375, N. 14); 'again' : *puni* (T. 5), *bahuri* (T. 4), *bahōrī* (T. 162), *phiri* (T. 171), *phira* (N. 38), *phēra* (N. 40), 'immediately' : *turata* (T. 324), 'soon' : *bēgi* (T. 161).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 359. (*a*) based on nouns : Lmp. uses **saɪiṭ̣** 'moment', *e.g.*, **iɪ saɪiṭ̣** 'just now', **ui saɪiṭ̣** or **tiɪ·saɪiṭ̣**

'then, at that time', **ɟiz saziṭi** 'when (relative)', **kiz saziṭi** 'when?'. Some dialects use **kfʌn** 'moment' or **berijaz**, **sʌmʌu**, **sʌmʌj**, or even **ʈezm** 'time'; the Eastern dialects generally use **ɟuzn** 'time', *e.g.*, **iz ɟuzn** 'now', **uz ɟuzn** 'then'. Other nouns used adverbially are: **ɟʌldiz** 'lit. haste, but hastily, soon', **phurti**: and **cʌʈkʌiz** also mean 'haste' but are similarly adverbially used; **etziz dezr mo** 'meanwhile', **dezr sę** 'late', **sʌb din** 'always'.

(*b*) based on pronouns: Lmp. has **ʌb** 'now', **tʌb** 'then', **ɟʌb** 'when (relative)', **kʌb** 'when?' The corresponding forms in B., Fy. and other Eastern dialects are **ʌbzʌj**, **tʌbzʌj**, **ɟʌbzʌj** and **kʌbzʌj**. G. has **ʌbfiʌj**, **tʌbfiʌj**, **ɟʌbfiʌj**, **kʌbfiʌj**. Other adverbs of the type are: **ʌb kiz** or **ʌb tiz** 'once again', **ɟʌlez**: **tʌlez** 'till then'.

(*c*) based on adjectives: **pʌfiilez** 'previously', **ʌzgez** 'formerly', **pazchez** 'later', Lmp. **etze mo**, Fy. **jʌtʌre mo** 'meanwhile'.

(*d*) based on ancient adverbs: **ʌzɟų̄** (**ʌzɟ**) 'to-day', **kazlfiį** 'yesterday or to-morrow', **pʌrʌũ** 'day before yesterday or day after to-morrow', **nʌrʌũ** 'two days before yesterday or two days after to-morrow', **bazdį** or **bazdį ko** 'afterwards', Lmp. **phir**, Fy. **phin**, **phun**, M. **puni** 'again'; **ʌgomʌn** 'formerly—in ancient times', **turto** 'at once', **nit** 'always', **bfiorʌfiẽz** 'in the morning', **ɑ̃zsʌũ** 'this year', **pazr sazl** 'last year'.

NOTE.—Sometimes a play upon tone expresses the idea of 'soon', *e.g.*, **azoz** 'come!', but **azoz** 'come soon!' would have a higher pitch on the last syllable and a lengthening also which would appear as **azozo**.

C. ORIGIN

§ 360. (*a*) **saziti**: Ar. *sā'at*, **khʌn**: *kṣaṇa*, **berijaz** < *vēlā* + pleonastic *-ikā*, **sʌmʌu**: *samaya*, **ʈezm**: Eng. *time*,

juɪn : *yōni*? (see *Nēpālī Dic. juni*, p. 220). **phurtiɪ**, **cʌʈkʌiɪ** and **deɪr** are nouns used in the language quite generally. Early Awadhi *bahuri*, *bahōri*, *phiri*, *phēra* are absolutive forms of the roots ; *sājha* : *sandhyā*, *bhōra* 'morning, dawn' ; *bēgi* is derivable from Skt. *vega*.

(*b*) The forms in **-b** (**ʌb** etc.), Early Awadhi *-ba*, appear to be the combinations of the initial pronominal syllables *a-*, *ta-*, *ja-*, *ka-* with *-evva* : *evaṃ* (*vide* Chatterji, p. 856). **ʌbɪʌj**, etc., are fresh formations or possibly the oblique cases in *-hi* resulted as such ; **ʌbfiʌj**, etc., have an emphatic **-fi-**. **jʌleɪ**, **tʌleɪ** show the addition of *lahi* > **leɪ**. Early Awadhi has two forms *jahiā*, *tahiā* (attested by Modern Bhōjpurī) which denote time.

(*c*) **pʌfiileɪ**, etc., are the locative cases of *pahila* < *paḍhilla*, etc.; **etɪeɪ**, **etʌreɪ** also are locative cases of pronominal adjectives.

(*d*) **ɑɪjų** : *adya*; **kɑɪlfii**, **kɑɪli**, *kālha* : *kalyē*, the aspiration being emphatic. The ancient words *hyaḥ* and *śvaḥ* have left no trace. *śvaḥ*, however, appears under **pʌrʌũ** < *paraśvaḥ*. It is interesting to note that *-śv-* > *-ss-* has lost trace in Awadhi, possibly after becoming *-h-* ; **nʌrʌũ** is on the analogy of **pʌrʌũ**. The distinction between past (*hyaḥ*) and future (*śvaḥ*) also has gone out. **bɑɪdį** comes from Arabic *bā'd* 'after'. In *phin*, *phun* we find a curious blending of *phiri* and *puni* both of which exist in some dialects. *agumana*, *agamõ* and **ʌgəmʌn** are connected with *agra-*; **turtə** and **nit** have correspondents in Early Awadhi *tnrata* and *nitta* (*niti*, *nita*, *nitu*) and should be *ardha-tatsama* forms of *tvaritam* and *nityam*.

Adverbs of Place

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 361. 'here' : *ihã* (J. 104, T. 170, N. 2), 'there' : *uhã* (J. 273, T., N. 69), *tahã* (J. 57, T. 324), *tahã* (J. 97,

T. 343, N. 3), *tahawā̃* (J. 113, T. 345); 'where' : *jahā* (J. 24, T. 3), *jahā̃* (J. 80, T. 4, N. 4), *jahawā̃* (J. 225, T. 345), 'where?' : *kahā* (J. 33, 17), *kahā̃* (J. 90, T. 342, N. 8), *kahawā̃* (J. 225, N. 11), 'before, in front' : *āgai* (J. 107), *āgē* (J. 123, T. 324), *āgẽ* (T. 328, N. 10), *agahuṛa* (T. 167), *āgū* (J. 245), *āgẽha* (N. 105), *agāũ* (N. 146), *saũha* (J. 296, N. 11), *sauhar* (N. 79), 'behind' : *pāchē* (J. 138, T. 286), *pāchẽ* (N. 17); 'near' : *niara* (J. 332, N. 14), *niarē* (J.), *niyarẽ* (N. 13), 'far off' : *dūri* (J. 265, T. 289), *dūrei* (N. 159), *dūrū* (N. 14); 'on this side' : *ita* (T. 173), 'on that side' : *uta* (T. 173), 'on which side?' : *kita* (N. 2), 'inside' : *bhītara* (T. 14, N. 7), 'outside' : *bāhara* (T. 14, N. 7).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 362. (*a*) based on nouns : Lmp. combines **waɪr** 'side' with the pronominal adjectives **ɟiɪ, tiɪ, iɪ, uɪ, kiɪ** in order to indicate direction, *e.g.*, **iɪ waɪr** 'on this side, here'. R. combines **kʌĩtiɪ** 'side', *e.g.*, **keɪ kʌitĩɪ** 'whither?' B. and G. have the combinations of **ʌlã̃g** or **oɪr** with the adjectives, *e.g.*, G. **ɟʌuniɪ ʌlã̃g** 'on which side', **wʌfli oɪr** 'thither'. In Fy. and Sl. as well as in parts of Gonda we find some forms where the pronominal adjective and the noun have become incorporated, *e.g.*, **eflʌr, oflʌr, ɟeflʌr, keflʌr,** B. **ʌkolã̃g** 'on one side', G. **kʌflewʌr** 'whither', **eflʌwʌr** 'hither'. In A. and M. similarly we find **eṭhã̃ɪ** 'here', **oṭhã̃ɪ** 'there', **keṭhã̃ɪ** 'where?'.

(*b*) based on pronouns or pronominal adjectives : Lmp. has **hiã̃ɪ** 'here', **huã̃ɪ** 'there', **ɟʌflã̃ɪ tʌflã̃ɪ** 'where...there', **kʌflã̃ɪ** 'where?'. In Eastern dialects we have these as well as elongated forms, *e.g.*, Fy. **kʌflÃ̃waɪ** 'where?'; other dialects agree with Lmp. Besides we have **ʌisiɪ** 'on this side, hither', **wʌisiɪ, ɟʌisiɪ tʌisiɪ, kʌisiɪ;** A. has **eflkiɪ** 'hither', **oflkiɪ** 'thither'.

(*c*) other adverbs : **bflɪɪtʌr** 'within', G., P., Fy. **bflitɪʌr** or **bflitʌreɪ; baɪfler** or **bʌfliriɪ** 'outside', **upɪʌr** 'above', **tʌreɪ** or **khaɪleɪ** or **tʌrkhʌleɪ** 'below',

ɑɪgeɪ 'before', P. **ɑɪgẽɪ**; **pɑɪcheɪ** (P. **pʌchwãɪ**) 'behind', **neɪreɪ** or **nʌgiɪceɪ** (B. **lʌgiɪceɪ**) 'near', **duɪrị̊** (Eastern **duɪr**) 'far', **pʌlɪeɪ** (R. **pʌlɪɑɪ**) 'beyond', **ʌnto** 'elsewhere'.

NOTE.—The multiplicative adverbs 'twice', 'thrice', etc., have been shown above under Numerals (§ 231). The idea of a 'second time' is indicated either by **dosʌrɑɪi ko** or by combining the ordinal number with a word expressive of 'time, turn', *e.g.*, **dosʌriɪ dɑɪr̃**. Similarly **tisʌrɑɪi ko** or **tisʌriɪ dɑɪr̃**.

C. ORIGIN

§ 363. (*a*) **wɑɪr, oɪr, kʌr̃tiɪ** and **ʌlãg** are normal words for 'side' in the language, some of these have already coalesced with the qualifying adjectives. In **eṭhãɪ**, etc., we can see *sthāna* > *ṭhāna* incorporated in the same manner.

(*b*) **ʝʌɦãɪ**, etc., of which we find short (*jahɑ̃*) and long (*jahɑ̃wā*) forms also in Early Awadhi, should be connected with MIA forms in *-ttha* (*ettha* etc.), *-tha* > *-ha* [see Chatterji (p. 858)., also *Nep. Dic.* (p. 81 under *kahɑ̃*)].

(*c*) **bhiɪtʌr** < *abhyantare*, **bɑɪɦer** cf. Skt. *bahiḥ*, **upɪʌr** : *upari* with emphatic elongation of **p-**, **tʌreɪ** : *talē*, *khālē* cf. Skt. *khallaḥ* 'creek' (*Nep. Dic.* p. 121 under *khālci*); **neɪreɪ**, *niara*, *niarē* are connected with *nikaṭe* while **nʌgiɪceɪ** and **lʌgiɪceɪ** may be connected with **laṅghitya* 'that can be crossed, near'. Professor Turner, however, accepts Hoernle's derivation from Persian *nazdīk* (*Nep. Dic.* p. 334, under *nagic*) to which **nʌjik** found in Bgh. and Chattis. is surely related. **duɪrị̊** : *dūra*; **pʌlɪeɪ** may be compared with *pallava* 'extension'. **ʌnto**, *anata* go back to *anyatra*. Early Awadhi *saũha*, *saũhai* are connected with *saṅmukha* and *ita*, *uta* may be learned words corresponding to Skt. *itaḥ* etc., or connected with *atra*, **itra* etc.

Adverbs of Manner

A. Early Awadhi

§ 364. Three varieties of forms, in *-imi*, in *-is* and in *-asa* are found in all the texts, as far as pronominal adverbs are concerned:

imi 'in this manner' (J. 323), *jimi* 'in which manner' (J. 326, T. 4), *timi* 'in that manner' (T. 286), *kimi* 'how?' (J. 91, T. 18, N. 8); correspondingly *asa* (J. 11, T. 9), *tasa* (J. 8, T. 18), *jasa* (J. 17, T. 18, N. 2), *kasa* (J. 96, T. 161, N. 3), and *aisē* (T. 289), *aisai* (J. 103), *aisō* (N. 69), *taisē* (N. 100), *jaisē* (J. 66, T. 166), *jaisō* (N. 69), *kaisē* (T. 166, N. 56), *kaisai* (J. 110). Besides in Tulsidas we find *bhāti* or *bidhi* added to pronominal adjectives in order to indicate manner, *e.g.*, *kehi bhāti* 'in which manner?' (p. 162), *ehi bidhi* 'in this manner' (p. 17). Sometimes *nāī* is found similarly added, *e.g.*, *parabata kai nāī* 'like a mountain' (J. 332), *raurihi nāī* 'like yourself' (T. 158). Other adverbs of this class are: *sajaga* 'alert' (T. 166), *nidharaka* 'fearlessly' (T. 173), *bali* 'forcibly' (T. 174), *bariāī* 'forcefully' (T. 326), *bihālā* 'out of sorts' (T. 326); 'how?' *kita* (J. 56), *kittu* (J. 31), *kata* (T. 163).

Note.—Adverb of quantity 'a little': *maku* (J. 98), *rañcika* (N. 19).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 365. (*a*) based on nouns: the Western dialects, R. and P. as well as a part of B. combine a noun indicating manner (Lmp. and S. **tʌnaɪ**, L., U., F., R., Br. and P. **tʌnaɪ** or **tʌraɪ**, P. **bidfi** also) with some adjective, *e.g.*, Lmp. **iɪ tʌnaɪ** 'in this way', **ʌcɪhiɪ tʌnaɪ** 'well'. Other dialects do not possess adverbs of manner based on nouns.

(*b*) based on pronominal adjectives: Lmp. **ʌisɛɪ** 'in this way', **wʌisɛɪ**, **jʌisɛɪ**...**tʌisɛɪ**, **kʌisɛɪ**, some dialects (B., G., Br., Sl. and part of P.) have **ʌs**, **wʌs**, **jʌs**...

tʌs, kʌs; others (P., Fy., Sl., A., M.) have **ʌisen, wʌisen, ɟʌisen...tʌisen, kʌisen**, or **kʌsʌs** or **kʌsʌk**.

(*c*) Other adverbs: **hɑzliɪ** 'rapidly', **dfiiɪrez** or **dfiiɪmez** (P. **rugus rugus**) 'slowly', **ɟfiʌʈɪo** 'hurryingly', **nifiurez** 'bowingly', Fy. **kʌlɪez kʌlɪez** 'slowly', Lmp. **ewʌ̃** 'in this way'.

NOTE.—Adverbs of quantity are based on the adjectives of quantity, pronominal or otherwise, *e.g.*, 'more': **ʌur**, G. **sʌigʌr**, P. **adfiikaɪr, ʌwʌr**; 'little': **tʌni** or **tʌnik**, Br. **kiɲc, rʌɲc**; 'not at all': **birkulɪi**, Fy. **berkul**.

C. ORIGIN

§ 366. (*a*) **tʌnaɪ** and **tʌraɪ** both go back to Pers. *ṭaraḥ*, *-n-* being a variant of *-r-*, *bidhi* < *vidhi*, *bhāti* < *bhakti* (*Nep. Dic.*, p. 473) and *nāī* < *nyāyēna*.

(*b*) **ʌs** etc., are based on pronominal adjectives [see § 266 (*a*)] only in modern language there are fresh suffixes *-n* and *-k* in some dialects. For Early Awadhi *-mi* forms Hoernle (p. 314) and Chatterji (p. 860) suggest a derivation from Apabhraṁśa forms *jemva* etc. (see Pischel § 261).

(*c*) Other adverbs are either onomatopoetic or *deśī* words (*e.g.*, **ɟfiʌʈɪo**), or are based on nouns, with or without prepositions, *e.g.*, **hɑzliɪ** 'haste' (Ar.), *bali* : *bala*, *bihālā*: Pers. *bēḥāl*. **ewʌ̃** may be compared with *ēvamēva* and may be an *ardha-tatsama* form of it.

Miscellaneous Adverbs

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 367. 'Why?': *kāhē*, *kāhẽ* (N. 65), 'no (prohibitive)': *jani* (J. 142, T. 4), *jini* (N. 55), 'no, not (denial)': *na* (J. 110, T. 4, N. 2), *nahĩ* (J. 90, T. 7, N. 4), *nāhĩ* (J. 112), *nāhīna* (T. 163), 'why not?': *kina* (T. 158, N. 77), 'surely': *abasi* (T. 177), 'without': *binu* (J. 222, T. 4), *binā* (N. 14), *bāju* (J. 222), *bihūna* (J. 323).

NOTE.—Adverbs are compounded and used as in Modern Awadhi (§ 368-69). The postpositions for 'upto' are: *lahi* (J. 107), *laṛi* (J. 61, T. 115), *laga*, (N. 31), *tāī*, (J. 97, N. 66).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 368. **kaɪfiez** 'why?', **hã̃ɪ** 'yes', **naɪiɪ, naɪfiiɪ,** Sl. **naɪj,** Fy. and F. **nʌfiiɪ,** P. **nʌfiin,** R. **naɪfiĩɪ** 'no, not'; **naɪ** 'not—prohibitive', Eastern **ɟin; saɪitị** 'perhaps', **tʌni** 'a little—invitative'.

NOTE.—Adverbs are sometimes compounded, *e.g.*, **ɟʌfiã̃**..... **tʌfiã̃** 'at some places', **ɟʌb . . . tʌb** 'sometimes, frequently', **cʌfiʌi ɟʌb** 'whenever', **cʌfiʌi ɟʌfiã̃ɪ** 'wherever', **cʌfiʌi . . . ɟʌiɪez** 'howsoever'.

§ 369. (*a*) Comparison of adverbs is expressed in the same manner as of adjectives (§ 225), *e.g.*, Lmp. **mʌi iu kaɪm tum sez ɟʌldiɪ kʌi sʌkʌtiũ** 'I can do this thing earlier than you'.

(*b*) Adverbs of time and place can be employed with postpositions **sez (sẹ)** to denote the idea of 'from', with **kaɪ (kə)** to denote the idea of 'of' and with **lʌi, lʌgị (lʌg), tʌkụ, tʌluk** to denote 'upto', *e.g.*, **ʌb sez ʌis kaɪmụ naɪ kifieu** 'do not do such a thing from now', **kʌfiʌ kə aɪmụ laɪeu** 'the mango of which place have you brought?', **kʌb tʌluk ʌifiʌu** 'upto what time will you come back?', **kʌfiã̃ɪ tʌk ɟʌifiʌu** 'up to what place will you go?'.

NOTE.—Where English uses an adverb (*e.g.*, very, much) to modify an adjective, Awadhi employes the ordinary adjective, *e.g.*, Lmp. **iu gʌgoraɪ bʌɽaɪ gʌruɪ hʌi** 'this jar is very heavy', **jaɪ baɪlɽiɪ bʌɽiɪ gʌruɪ hʌi** 'this bucket is very heavy', **ɟʌisị ʌcɪhiɪ waɪ meßʌruaɪ hʌi tʌisị iɪ sʌfiʌr mə erkʌu naɪiɪ** 'no lady is so pretty in this town as that one', **ui aɪdfiez mã̃ɪdeɪ hʌĩ aɪdfiez niɪk** 'he is half ill and half well'.

C. ORIGIN

§ 370. **kaɪfiez** should be connected with some form of *kiṃ* (possibly *kathaṃ*), though the suffix is not clear.

na < *na*; *nahɪ*, *nāhɪ̃* go back to *na* plus an emphatic enclitic which may be a form of √*as-* 'to be'. *natthi* is regularly found in MIA and means 'is not'. Professor Turner suggests contamination of Skt. *nahi* (*Nep. Dic.*, p. 337 under *nahɪ*). The derivation of *jani*, *jin* from *yat na* is suggested by Professor Chatterji. **saɪitḭ** is connected with Pers. *śāyad*; **tʌni** may be compared with *tanuka* 'a little'.

NOTE.—The compounding of adverbs or the use does not show any divergence from that of the earlier stages.

CHAPTER VIII

CONJUNCTIONS

A. Early Awadhi

§ 371. (*a*) Cumulative—'and': *au* (J. 101, N. I), *aru* (T. 326), *auru* (J. 149), *aura* (N. 3).

(*b*) Alternative—'may be': *baru* (T. 165), *baruka* (T. 176), 'or': *ki* (T. 166); 'otherwise, or': *nāhṛ ta* (J. 132, T. 163), *nā tō* (N. 20), *nā tau* (N. 36), *na ta* (T. 346).

(*c*) Adversative—'but': *pai* (T. 5), 'even then': *tadapi* (T. 18), 'though': *jadapi*.

(*d*) Subordinative—'if': *jau* (*jaũ*) (J. 29, 20, T. 9, 7, N. 21), *jõ* (N. 6), *joha* (N. 117), *jo* (N. 16), 'if...then': *jau...tau* (J. 29, T. 11, 165, N. 77); (if)...then: *ta* (T. 165); 'as if': *janu* (J. 107, T. 18), *jānaũ*, *janaũ* (J. 204), *manahũ* (T. 158), *dahũ* (J. 107), *dhaũ* (T. 177).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 372. (*a*) Cumulative—'and' **ʌu**, Fy. **ʌu** or **ʌo**, *e.g.*, **ui ʌu hʌm duɪnʌu ʝʌnez bʌʝaɪrʌi ʝʌibaɪ** 'He and I, both persons, will go to the market', **ui aɪez ʌu chin bfiʌrị bʌiṭhị ko cʌl difiez** 'he came and went away after sitting for a while'. Sometimes a mere **ʌ** (**u** or **o** dropped out) stands in rapid speech.

(*b*) Alternative—'either or' **cʌfiʌi...cʌfiʌi**, **ki**, *e.g.*, **cʌfiʌi hiãɪ bʌiṭhʌu cʌfiʌi huãɪ** 'either sit here or there', **iu ljaɪfiʌu ki uɪ** 'will you take this or that?'. The form of **cʌfiʌi** is **caɪfiʌj** in the Eastern dialects and **caɪfiʌu** in U. and South L; 'neither. . . . nor' is expressed by **nʌ ... nʌ**, *e.g.*, **nʌ hʌm iu lezib nʌ uɪ** 'neither shall I take this nor that'; 'otherwise' is expressed by **naɪi tʌu (naɪfiĩɪ tʌu)**, *e.g.*, **hʌm kaɪ rupʌja dezu naɪi tʌu maɪrib** 'give me money or else I shall beat (you)', **ki** 'or', *e.g.*, **ʌis hʌi ki naɪiɪ** 'is it so or not?'

(*c*) Adversative—'but' Lmp. **ʌkel** or **lɐrkin**, Fy. and Sl. **mulaɪ**, P. **munaɪ**, G. **mudaɪ**, B. **bʌkiɪ**, *e.g.*, Lmp. **ui hʌ̃ĩ tʌu ʌmiɪr ʌkel dɐrti koɪi ko naɪfĩ̃** 'he is rich but he never gives (anything) to anybody'.

(*d*) Subordinate—'that' **ki** (Eastern dialects generally **ke**), north B. and G. **mʌnɐɪ**, *e.g.*, Lmp. **hʌm kaɪ uɪ bʌtaɪisi̯ ki̯ gə̃ɪu mə coɪriɪ hoi gʌi** 'he told me that a theft had occurred in the village', B. **tʌun ʈaɪr difiin mʌnɐɪ kaɪtik mə aɪeɪ tʌb raɪm raɪm sun leɪiɪ** 'he turned him away (saying) that come in Kārtik (month), then I shall hear Rām Rām'; 'so that' **jiɪ maɪ**, **jefii maɪ**, *e.g.*, **uɪ pʌuʈfi̯ rʌfiaɪ jiɪ maɪ pʌʈfiʌi nʌ jaɪi ko pʌrʌi** 'he lay down in bed so that he may not have to go to school', 'if' **jo**, Sl. **jʌu**, 'if then' **jo**. . . . **tʌu**, 'then' **tʌu**, **to**, *e.g.*, **jo mʌi jaɪfũ̃** 'if I go', **jo soɪi jaɪfũ̃ tʌu jʌgaɪi difieu**, 'if I go to sleep, do wake me up', **tʌu kaɪ bfiaɪ** 'what happened, then?'; 'as if' **jʌnʌu** or **mʌnʌu** or **dfiʌũ̃** *e.g.*, **ʌis cupɪiɪ saɪdfiin jʌnʌu mʌri̯ geɪ hoɪĩ̃** 'he kept so quiet, as if he were already dead.'

C. ORIGIN

§ 373. (*a*) The cumulative conjunctions in use in Awadhi are connected with Skt. *apara*, in some cases (**ʌu**) the *-ra* has dropped out while in others (*aru*) the *p* > *v* > *u* has changed place.

(*b*) Early Awadhi *baru* goes back to *varaṃ* and *baruka* may be *baru* plus an enclitic *ka*. I should prefer this derivation to that from Pers. *balke*; **ki** < *kiṃ*. **cʌfiʌi** and **caɪfiʌj** are the Imperative forms of the verb **cʌfiʌb**, **caɪfiʌb** 'to desire'. **tʌu**, **tʌ** etc., should be connected with *tataḥ*.

(*c*) Early Awadhi *tadapi* and *jadapi* are *ardha-tatsama* forms of *tadyapi* and *yadyapi* which also are found in the Rāmāyana. *pai* may be connected with *paraṃ* (see Hoernle: *Gram. of the Gaudian Languages*, § 561)

or may be the absolutive form (*pāi*) of *pāwab* 'to obtain'. *pāi* > *pai* will mean 'having obtained', 'obtaining' and can easily be used in the sense of a conjunction. **ʌkel** (cf. Hindi **ʌkelaɪ** 'all alone') is derived from Pkt. *ekkalla* by a metathesis of the vowels (see *Nep. Dic.*, p. 57 under *eklo*). **lekin** and **bʌkiɪ** are from Persian *lēkin* and *bāqī*. The words **mulaɪ, mudaɪ** and **munaɪ** are connected together and may have some affinity with *mūla* 'root'. We may compare Beng. *moddā* 'main' which Chatterji derives from Arabic.

(*d*) The subordinative conjunction **ki (ke)** is in all probability a borrowing from Persian idiom in modern language. OIA had *yat* in the beginning of a clause or *iti* at the end, with neither of which can *ki* be connected. This *ki* cannot go back to Skt. *kim* which is interrogative and survives as a conjunction in the sense of alternation. **mʌneɪ** (on the borders of Nepal) is connected with Nepali **bhʌne** (*Nep. Dic.*, p. 468) through *mhane*.[1] The word *bhaṇē* 'I say' is found almost similarly used in Pāli also. *jau . . . tau* are connected with *yadā . . . tadā* through *jaō . . . taō*. *janau, manau* etc., are forms of *jānab* 'to know' and *mānab* 'to think' in the sense of 'I know, know' and their use may be compared with *jāne* and *manye* in Sanskrit. *dahũ* and *dhaũ* may be similarly connected with *dhyāwab* 'to think'. That words in such uses have a rapid modification of syllables is amply illustrated, *e.g.*, **kʌjʌni** < **kaɪ jaɪniɪ** 'I do not know' in such expressions as **kʌ jʌni kʌfiÃ se aɪi gʌwaɪ** 'I do not know wherefrom he has come up'.

[1] Prof. Chatterji compares Beng. *mene*—a particle of emphasis or mere indication and derives it from OIA *manāk*.

CHAPTER IX

EMPHATIC FORMS

§ 374. Two varieties of emphatic forms, Inclusive and Restrictive, are obtained by adding terminations to the nouns, postpositions, adjectives, numerals, pronouns, verbs and adverbs. For instance: **haɪthiɪ aɪwaɪ** 'the elephant came' but **haɪthiu aɪwaɪ** 'the elephant *also* came' and **haɪthin aɪwaɪ** 'the elephant *only* came'.

Inclusive Forms

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 375. In Early Awadhi the Inclusive and Restrictive forms are found abundantly. The affix for the Inclusive form is *-hu* (*-u*). The *-hu* forms are very common in Jāyasī while *-u* in Nūr Muhammad; *-u* combined with the previous *-a-* appears as *-o*. Tulsīdās comes between these two. For instance:

(*a*) Nouns—*janamahu* 'throughout life' (J. p. 23), *sapanehu* 'even in dream' (T. p. 163), *gaurihu* 'Gaurī also' (N. p. 17), *phūlanahũ tẽ* 'more than even flowers' (N. p. 8).

(*b*) Adjectives—*bhaleu* 'the good also' (T. p. 5), *aurau* 'others also' (T. p. 18).

(*c*) Numerals—*sātau* 'all the seven' (J. p. 3), *cāriu* 'all the four' (J. p. 16), *dou* 'both' (T. p. 169), *tihũ* (*pura*) 'in all the three (towns)' (T. p. 171), *chatīsau* 'all the thirty six' (N. p. 16), *cāriu* 'all the four' (N. p. 2), *sātō* 'all the seven' (N. p. 12); *chavō* 'all the six' (J. p. 68), *barahō* 'all the twelve' (J. p. 68).

The idea of indefiniteness of a number is signified in Early Awadhi by adding *-ka*, *e.g.*, *cārika* 'about four' (T. p. 234), *pacāsaka* 'about fifty' (T. p. 200), *kōṭika* 'crores' (T. p. 165), cf. *kachu eka* 'a few' (T. p. 343).

(*d*) Pronouns—*mōhũ* 'to me also' (J. p. 363), *hamahũ* 'we also' (J. p. 254), *tēhu* 'they also' (J. p. 19), cf. *tehu* (J. p. 39), *uhau* 'that also', *kaunau* 'somebody' (J. p. 69), cf. *kaunahũ* (J. p. 396); *mahũ* 'I also' (T. p. 259), *hamahũ* 'I also' (T. p. 163), *teu* 'she also' (T. p. 288), *tuhũ* 'thou also' (T. p. 170), *tinhahũ* 'them also' (T. p. 14), *mahũ* (N. p. 76), *hamahũ* (N. p. 59), *sōũ* 'he also' (N. p. 107), *kuchau* 'somewhat' (N. p. 122), *tōhũ* 'thou also' (N. p. 59).

(*e*) No instances of the emphatic forms of the post-positions have been found.

(*f*) Verbs—Examples of the Inclusive forms of the verb are rare: *muehũ* 'dead also' (J. p. 597).

(*g*) Adverbs—*abahũ* 'even now' (J. p. 13), *kabahũ* 'ever' (J. p. 346), *katahũ*, *katahũ* 'anywhere' (J. p. 59); *sãcehu* 'truly' (T. p. 11), *kabahũ* 'ever' (T. p. 5), *ajahũ* 'even now' (T. p. 122), cf. *ajahũ* (T. p. 170), *aisehu* 'even so' (T. p. 289); *kabahũa* 'ever' (N. p. 115), *tabahũ* 'even then' (N. p. 2), *kahũ*, *katahũ* 'anywhere' (N. p. 15), *kaisehũ* 'some how' (N. p. 14).

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 376. The general affix for the Inclusive emphatic form is **-ʌu** after a stem ending in a consonant or **u, uɪ** (the **-u** of the stem changes to **-w** and **-uɪ** becomes short) and **-u** after one ending in any other vowel (the vowel if long or whispered becomes short).

Note.— **-ʌfiuɪ** (instead of **-ʌu**) is optionally added to stems of one syllable or of two short syllables. If a dissyllabic or a long monosyllabic stem ends in a consonant, **-ʌu** and not **-ʌfiuɪ** will be added (**gfiʌr**: **gfiʌrʌu** or **gfiʌrʌfiuɪ**, **paɪr**: **paɪrʌu** *never* **paɪrʌfiuɪ**). For instance:

(*a*) Nouns—**kitaɪb** 'book' : **kitaɪbʌu** 'the book *also*' **gãzu** 'village' : **gãzwʌu, baɪruɪ** 'sand' : **bʌruʌu, raɪɟaɪ** 'king' : **raɪɟʌu, seɪʈhi̥ɪ seɪʈhiu, dfloɪbiɪ** 'washerman' : **dhoɪbiu, pãzɪeɪ** : 'a particular caste of Brāhmaṇa' : **pãzɪeu, kutɪʌn** 'to the dogs' : **kutɪʌnʌu.**

(*b*) Adjectives—**laɪl** 'red' : **laɪlʌu** 'red *also*', **gʌruɪ** 'heavy' : **gʌruʌu, kʌrijaɪ** 'black' : **karijʌu, niɪki̥** 'good' (fem.) : **niɪkiu, bflaɪrriɪ** 'heavy' : **bflaɪriu, piʌreɪ** 'yellow' (pl.) : **piʌreu.**

(*c*) Numerals—**eɪk** 'one' : **eɪkʌu** 'one *also*', **nʌu** 'nine' : **nʌwʌu** 'all the nine', **baɪraɪ** 'twelve' : **baɪrʌu** 'all the twelve', **saɪʈhi̥** 'sixty' : **saɪʈhiu** 'all the sixty', **ʌsɪiɪ** 'eighty', **ʌsɪiu** 'all the eighty', **nʌbɪeɪ** 'ninety' : **nʌbɪeu** 'all the ninety'.

NOTE 1.—To add the significance of *indefiniteness* to a number **-ʌn** (**-n** after a vowel) and **-ʌk** (**-k** after a vowel) are added, *e.g.*, **biɪs** 'twenty', **biɪsʌn** 'scores', **pʌcaɪs** 'fifty', **pʌcaɪsʌn** 'fifties'; **biɪsʌk** 'about twenty', **saɪʈhik** 'about sixty'.

NOTE 2.—**dui** 'two' has **duiu** and also **duɪnʌu.**

(*d*) Pronouns—If there are two forms of a pronoun, one shorter than the other (*e.g.*, **koɪ, kʌun**), the affix is added to the longer form (**kʌun-ʌu**). The personal pronouns and the demonstrative pronouns add **-ʌfluɪ** (**-fluɪ**) instead of **ʌu** (**-u**) as illustrated below:

mʌi	**mʌfluɪ**	
hʌm	**fiʌmʌfluɪ**	
tui	**tofluɪ**	B. G. Fy. etc. **tufiũɪ**
tum	**tumʌfluɪ**	
uɪ, waɪ, wʌfi	**wʌfiʌu**	B. G. Fy. etc. **ufiʌu**
ui	**wʌfluɪ**	
un	**unʌfluɪ**	
iu, jaɪ, jʌfi	**jʌfiʌu**	B. G. Fy. etc. **ifiʌu**
iɪ	**jʌfluɪ**	
in	**inʌfluɪ**	

(*e*) Postpositions—In Lakhīmpurī the Inclusive (or Restrictive) affix can be added either to the noun, adjective or pronoun or to the postposition which follows, *e.g.*, **uɪ gflʌr seɪ gaɪ** 'he went from (his) house', **uɪ gflʌrʌu (gflʌrʌflu) sẹ gaɪ** or **uɪ gflʌr seu gaɪ** 'he went from the house also'.

The Western dialects and R. and Br. agree with Lmp. in this practice while B. and the Eastern dialects do not; they add the termination only to the noun, adjective, pronoun or adverb, not to the postpositions.

(*f*) Verbs—the regular affix (Inclusive or Restrictive) is added to the participles, verbal noun and absolutive, *e.g.*,

deɪkhʌt (deɪkhʌtị) :	**dekhətʌu**	(imperf. part.)
deɪkhaɪ	**deɪkhʌu**	(perf. part.)
deɪkhiɪ	**deɪkhiu**	,,
deɪkheɪ	**deɪkheu**	,,
dekhʌb	**dekhʌbʌu**	(Verbal noun)
deɪkhị	**dekhiu**	(absolutive)

In the case of the simple conjugated tense-forms the sense of the Inclusive (or Restrictive), however, is expressed in a different way, *e.g.*,

uɪ deɪkhʌi 'he may see' :	**uɪ dekhibʌu kʌrʌi** 'he may see also'
mʌi deɪkheũ 'I saw'	**mʌi dekhibʌu kifieũ** 'I saw also'
uɪ deɪkhiɪ 'he will see'	**uɪ dekhibʌu kariɪ** 'he will see also'
hʌm dekhibaɪ 'we shall see'	**hʌm dekhibʌu kʌribaɪ** 'we shall see also'.

In other words, the corresponding forms of **kʌrʌb** 'to do' are combined with a form obtained by adding the suffix **-ib** (in some dialects the suffix is **-ʌb, dekhʌbʌu**) plus the Inclusive (or Restrictive) termination to the root.

If the tense-form already contains the suffix (*viz.*, the **-b** future) the suffix is not added. The periphrastic tenses and

the compound verbs add the regular termination to the participle or the absolutive as the case may be, *e.g.*, **mʌi dɐɪkhʌt hʌũ** 'I am seeing', **mʌi dekhɐtʌu hʌũ** 'I am seeing also', **mʌi kifiɐɪ hʌũ** 'I have done', also **mʌi kifieu hʌũ** 'I have done also', **uɪ giri̯ pʌrɑɪ** 'he fell down' : **uɪ giriu pʌrɑɪ** 'he fell down also'.

(*g*) Adverbs—all adverbs take the regular affix except the following which add **-ʌfiũɪ**

ʌb 'now' :	**ʌb-ʌfiũɪ** 'even now'
tʌb 'when'	**tʌbʌfiũɪ** 'even then'
ʤʌb 'when'	**ʤʌbʌfiũɪ** 'whenever'
kʌb 'when?'	**kʌbʌfiũɪ** 'ever'
kʌfiɑ̃ɪ 'where?'	**kʌfiũɪ** 'nowhere, anywhere'

The aspiration changes place sometimes, *e.g.*, **ʌbʌfiũɪ** or **ʌbfiʌũɪ**. The regular affix is found in such instances as : **ʤʌldiɪ** 'soon', **ʤʌldiu** 'soon also', **ʌbtiɪ** 'this time', **ʌbtiu** 'this time also', **tʌfiʌũ** 'there also', **upɪʌrʌu** 'above also', **ʌsʌu** 'in this way also'. It is found in some dialects with **ʌb** etc., but then the **b** is lengthened, *e.g.*, **ʌbɪʌu** 'even now', **tʌbɪʌu**, **ʤʌbɪʌu**, **kʌbɪʌu**.

C. Origin.

§ 377. The Inclusive emphatic affix **-u** (Early Awadhi *-hu*) goes back to *khalu* and has come down to Modern Awadhi through * *khlu* > *khu* > *hu* (see Pischel § 148). *khalu* was employed in Sanskrit to give an idea of certainty, assuredness. By and by it appears to have assumed the meaning of inclusion. The **ʌ-** before **-u** in Modern Awadhi should be taken as pleonastic, coming from *-ka*. The aspiration is still present in most of the emphatic pronominal forms and may be sometimes heard in a feeble degree in other forms also. The lengthening of *-u* to *-ū* can be explained only by the stress due to emphasis. That the stress was on the last syllable appears to be indicated by the disappearance of *-a* of *khalu*. In the case of the verb, the emphatic form in certain

cases is arrived at by putting the verbal noun with emphasis and then combining it with the required conjugated form of **kʌrʌb**. This device is modern. In adverbial forms the lengthening of a consonant (*e.g.*, **ʌbɪʌu**) also comes in to indicate emphasis.

NOTE.—The **-ʌn** affix added to Numerals appears to be merely a plural of the numeral, while **-ʌk, -k** comes from *-eka*. The latter is attested by Early Awadhi. The last vowel of the numeral is retained where it exists (*e.g.*, **saɪʈhik**) before appending *eka*—*e* going out. In other cases *e* > *a*.

Restrictive Forms

A. EARLY AWADHI

§ 378. The affix for this emphatic form is *-hi* (*i*) generally and *-na* after a stem ending in *-i*, *-ī*.

For instance:

(*a*) Nouns—*gharahi mājha* 'in the house itself' (J. p. 232), *chārahī tat* 'with mere earth' (J. p. 5), *gāūhi gāvā* 'in every village' (J. p. 263), *bārahī bārā* 'many a time' (T. p. 18), *māṭina* 'in the very earth' (N. p. 59).

(*b*) Adjectives—*pahilai* 'at the first' (J. p. 3), *bahutai* 'many a' (J. p. 2), *thōrihi* 'only a little' (T. p. 174), *biralai kōi* 'only a rare person' (N. p. 18), *aurai* (*tana mana*) 'some other (body and mind)' (N. p. 12).

(*c*) Numerals—*ēkai* 'one only' (J. p. 29), *ēkahi bāra* 'only at one time' (T. p. 163), *ēkai ēkahi* (N. p. 8).

(*d*) Pronouns—*tumahī saū* 'with you yourself' (J. p. 247), *uhai* 'he himself' (J. p. 321), *ihai* 'this only' (J. p. 286), *soi* 'he himself' (J. p. 41), *sabai* 'everyone' (J. p. 41); *mahī* 'I myself' (T. p. 259), *soi* 'that very' (T. p. 173), *ihai* (T. p. 160), *tei* 'they only' (T. p. 205), *tumhahī* 'you only' (T. p. 226), *hamārehi* 'ours only' (T. p. 201), *tumharihi kṛpā* 'by your own favour' (T. p. 207); *tuhī* 'thyself' (N. p. 76), *tumahī* 'you yourself' (N. p. 76), *uhai* (N. p. 2), cf. *uhaī* (N. p. 14), *ihai* (N. p. 26).

(*f*) Verbs—Examples are rare, *jiatahɪ* 'while living' (J. p. 479).

(*g*) Adverbs—*jaũhi* 'whenever' (J. p. 484), *jabahi* 'whenever' (J. p. 19), *tahiai* 'at that very time' (J. p. 110), *ājuhi* 'to-day only' (J. p. 101), *turatahɪ* 'at once' (T. p. 343), *bēgihi* 'at once, soon' (T. p. 175), *taisehi* 'similarly' (T. p. 9), *dūrihi tē* 'from the very far off' (T. p. 287), *abahĭ* 'just now' (N. p. 4), *tabaɪ* 'then' (N. p. 37), *dūreha* 'far off' (N. p. 159), *āgehɪ kērī* 'of former times' (N. p. 100), *ṭhīkahɪ* 'just' (N. p. 15).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 379. The affix for this form is **-ʌi** after a consonantal stem, **-n** after a stem ending in **-i, -iɪ** and **e, eɪ** and **-i** after a stem ending in **-e, -eɪ** or any vowel except **-i -iɪ**. The **e, eɪ** stems, thus, have alternative forms in **-i** and **-n**. The **-u** stems add either **-ʌi** (**u** > **w**) or **i**. The long vowel is shortened before the affix.

NOTE.—**ʌfleɪ** (**-ʌfliɪ** in the Eastern dialects) is optionally added to stems of one syllable or of two short syllables. If a dissyllabic or a long mono-syllabic stem ends in a consonant, **-ʌi** only is added (**gfiʌr**: **gfiʌrʌi** or **gfiʌrʌfleɪ, gfiʌrʌfliɪ, paɪr**: **paɪrʌi**—never **paɪrʌfleɪ**).

(*a*) Nouns—**kitaɪb** 'book': **kitaɪbʌi** 'the book itself or only the book', **gãɪu**: **gãɪwʌi** or **gãɪui, raɪja**: **raɪjʌi, seɪʈhi̯ seɪʈhin, dfioɪbiɪ dfioɪbin, baɪruɪ baɪrui, pãɪʈeɪ pãɪʈen** or **pãɪʈei, kutɪʌn kutɪʌnʌi**.

(*b*) Adjectives—**laɪl** 'red': **laɪlʌi** 'red only', **kʌrijaɪ kʌrijʌi, niɪkį̇ niɪkin, bfiaɪriɪ bfiaɪrin, gʌruɪ gʌruʌi** or **gʌrui, piʌreɪ piʌrei** or **piʌren**.

(*c*) Numerals—**eɪk** 'one': **eɪkʌi** 'one only', **baɪraɪ baɪrʌi, saɪʈhi̯ saɪʈhin, ʌsiɪ ʌsiɪn, nʌu nʌwʌi** or **nʌui, nʌbɪeɪ nʌbɪei**.

NOTE.—**dui** has regular **duin** and also **dueɪ** (Eastern dialects **duiɪ**).

(*d*) Pronouns—If a pronoun has two forms, one long and another short, the affix is added to the long one (*e.g.*, **jox jʌunu̯**, restrictive **jʌunui**). The personal and demonstrative pronouns add -**ʌfiex** (-**ʌfiix**) as shown below:

mʌi	**mʌfiex**	R. B. G. Fy., etc.	**mʌfiix**
hʌm	**hʌmʌfiex**	,,	**hʌmʌfiix**
tui	**tofiex**	,,	**tuhix, tufiĩx**
tum	**tumʌfiex**		
ux, wax, wʌfi	**wʌfiʌi**	,,	**ufiix**
ui	**wʌfiex**	,,	**wʌfiix**
un	**unʌfiex**	,,	**unʌfiix**
iu, jax, jʌfi	**jʌfiʌi**	,,	**jʌfiix**
ix	**jʌfiex**	,,	**jʌfiix**
in	**inʌfiex**	,,	**inʌfiix**

(*e*) Postpositions—See § 376 (*e*). **gfiʌr sex gax** 'went from the house', **ux gfiʌrʌi (ghʌrʌfie) se̯ gax** or **ux gfiʌr sei gax** 'he went from the house itself or from the house only'. The dialectal difference noted in § 376 (*e*) is observed here also.

(*f*) Verbs—see § 376 (*f*). The following are the instances of the Restrictive forms:

dexkhʌt (dexkhʌti̯) :	**dekhətʌi** (imperf. part.)
dexkhax	**dexkhʌi** (perf. part.)
dexkhix	**dexkhin**
dexkhex	**dexkhen** or **dekhei**
dexkhʌb	**dekhʌbʌi** (verbal noun)
dexkhi̯	**dexkhin** (absolutive)

ux dexkhʌi 'he may see', **ux dekhibʌi kʌrʌi** 'he may see only'; **mʌi dexkheũ** 'I saw', **mʌi dekhibʌi kifieũ** 'I saw only'; **ux dexkhix** 'he will see', **ux dekhibʌi kʌrix** 'he will see only'; **hʌm dekhibax** 'we shall see', **hʌm dekhibʌi kʌribax** 'we shall see only'; **mʌi dexkhʌt hʌũ** 'I am seeing', **mʌi dekhətʌi hʌũ** 'I am seeing only'; **mʌi kifiex hʌũ** 'I have done', **mʌi kifiei hʌũ** 'I have

done only'; **uɪ giri̯ pʌraɪ** 'he fell down', **uɪ girin pʌraɪ** 'he did fall down, he fell down only'.

(*g*) Adverbs—**ʌb, tʌb, ʤʌb** and **kʌb** add **-ʌfiɛ̃ɪ** (**-ʌfiĩɪ** Eastern): **ʌbʌfiɛ̃ɪ** 'just now', **tʌbʌfiɛ̃ɪ** 'just then', **ʤʌbʌfiɛ̃ɪ** 'just when', **kʌbʌfiɛ̃ɪ** 'just when?' The aspiration may change place, so that we may have **ʌbʌfiɛ̃ɪ** or **ʌbfiʌɛ̃ɪ**. The forms **ʌbfiʌjen, tʌbfiʌjen, ʤʌbfiʌen** are double restrictives—as we find **-n** termination super-imposed—but they have no difference in sense from **ʌbfiʌjɛ̃ɪ** etc. The forms in Eastern dialects are: **ʌbʌfiĩɪ, tʌbʌfiĩɪ, ʤʌbʌfiĩɪ** etc. Here also we sometimes find super-imposed forms **ʌbʌfiin, tʌbʌfiin, ʤʌbʌfiin.** Occasionally one comes across forms such as **ʌbʌfiinʌi** or **ʌbfiʌinʌi** which are further super-imposed forms but have no difference in sense. The regular **-ʌi** is found in such forms as **ʌbɪʌi, kʌbɪʌi** etc. and in **ʤʌldin** 'soon', **ʤʌfiʌĩ** 'wherever', **ʌisei** 'in this very way', etc.

NOTE.—Sometimes a Restrictive form is followed by the ordinary form, both the forms together indicating the Restrictive sense, *e.g.*, **kitaɪbʌi ʤʌrĩɪ** 'the books were burnt', **kitʌbʌin ʤʌrĩɪ** 'only the books were burnt', **kitʌbʌin kitaɪbʌi ʤʌrĩɪ** 'only the books were burnt', **hʌm aɪjen** 'I came', **hʌmʌfiɛɪ aɪjen** 'I only have come', **hʌmʌfiɛn aɪɛn** (double Restrictive) **hʌmʌfiɛn hʌm aɪjen** 'only I have come'.

C. ORIGIN

§ 380. The Restrictive emphatic affix **-i** (Early Awadhi *-hi*) is derived from *-eva* > *ẽ* > *i*, the *-h* in Early Awadhi as well as in some forms of Modern Awadhi may be due to contamination with the particle *hi*. *eva* has possibly a double treatment, one in *evva* which survives as *-b* in the adverbs of time, but another in *ẽ* (cf. Amg. *em* = *evam*, Pischel § 149) which appears to be at the basis of the affix here.

The -n (old *na*) affix should be connected with Pkt. *ṇam* found in Ardhamāgadhī for *nūnam* (see Pischel § 150). The adverb **ewʌĩ** = *evameva* also contains *eva* as *-i*. The ʌ- before the affix *-i* shows that the affix came after a pleonastic suffix in the stem, *viz.*, *ka*.

Repetition, Reduplication, etc.

B. Modern Awadhi

§ 381. Some grammatical forms are repeated and as such denote the sense of entirety, repeatedness, continuity or intensity.

(*a*) Nouns, Pronouns and Adjectives—the idea of entirety or plurality is indicated by repeating a noun, pronoun or adjective, *e.g.*, **hʌm gãɪu gãɪu gɦuɪmen** 'I roamed about in many a village', **kutɪaɪ kutɪaɪ mʌrị geɪ** 'all that were dogs—all the dogs died', **ɟoɪ ɟoɪ aɪwʌi ui kaɪ khaɪi ko deɪu** 'give meals to all those who come', **hʌriʌr hʌriʌr paɪtaɪ biɪn leɪu** 'pick up all the green leaves'.

(*b*) Numerals—the repetition here is merely for emphasis or to denote the groups, *e.g.*, **chaɪ chaɪ ɟʌneɪ aɪjeɪ** 'as many as six—quite unexpectedly—have arrived' or 'people have come in sixes.'

(*c*) Verbs—the Imperfect participle and the absolutive are repeated to indicate the repeated nature, frequency or continuity of an action, *e.g.*, **deɪkhʌdɪeɪkhʌcɪʌleɪ ɟaɪu** 'go on, continuing the action of seeing', **pʌʈɦị pʌʈɦị ciʈɪhiɪ dɦʌrtị rʌɦaɪ** 'he continued putting away the letters after reading them one after another', **rupʌjaɪ girị girị pʌrti hʌi** 'the rupee falls down again and again', **huãɪ ɟaɪi ɟaɪi kaɪmɳ bigaɪreu** 'you spoiled the business by going there frequently'.

(*d*) Adverbs—these are repeated for emphasis, *e.g.*, **ɟʌb ɟʌb** 'whenever', **ɟʌɦãɪ ɟʌɦãɪ** 'wherever', **ɟʌiseɪ ɟʌiseɪ** 'as'.

NOTE.—If a form followed by its postposition is to be repeated, the postposition is not repeated, it comes only after the second form, *e.g.*, **gə̃ɪu mə,** repeated **gə̃ɪu gə̃ɪu mə; dɛɪkhʌi mə,** repeated **dɛɪkhʌi dɛɪkhʌi mə.**

§ 382. The Echo-words or Expletive words begin in Awadhi with **u : wʌ** and **uɪ : wɑɪ,** with the former if the first syllable of the real word is short (**ʌdmiɪ udmiɪ** or **ʌdmiɪ wʌdmiɪ** 'man etc.') and with the latter if it is long (**roɪʈiɪ uɪʈiɪ** 'bread etc.', **khɑɪb wɑɪb** 'meal etc.'). **wʌ** instead of **u** is found in a few dialects, *e.g.*, S. and U., while **wɑɪ** for **uɪ** is found only when the first syllable of the real word ends in **-ɑɪ.** The Echo-word sometimes carries the sense of 'et cet ra' or 'things like that' but more often it is meaningless and appears to give to the speaker only a facility in his current of speech. Generally nouns, adjectives and verbs have the echo-forms.

§ 383. Facility in the current of speech again appears to be at the basis of Reduplication of certain roots. The reduplicated root does not mean anything by itself but its addition to the principal root sometimes does give a shade of intensity of action. In Reduplication, the initial consonant of a root is repeated intact, but the vowel changes. If it is **-ʌ, ɑɪ** in the principal root, the reduplicated root will have **u, uɪ,** otherwise the reduplication-vowel is **ʌ, ɑɪ.** For instance:

bə̃ɪdɦʌb : bə̃ɪdɦʌb bũɪdɦʌb 'to tie completely', **cɑɪʈʌb : cɑɪʈʌb cuɪʈʌb** 'to lick', **hə̃ʌb : hə̃ʌb hũʌb** 'to laugh', **kʌi : kʌi kui** 'having done', **lʌi : lʌi lui** 'having taken', **ɟiɪtʌb : ɟiɪtʌb ɟɑɪtʌb** 'to win', **kuɪdʌb : kuɪdʌb kɑɪdʌb** 'to jump', : **hɛɪrʌb : hɛɪrʌb huɪrʌb** 'to search', **soɪi sɑɪi** 'having slept'.

NOTE.—In actual use we have not been able to detect any marked distinction between the Echo-words and Reduplication. They appear to be two different devices for the same thing.

§ 384. Different from Reduplication are certain forms which go in pairs. Here both the words have independent

meanings, but in combination give an additional idea connoted by both in a general sense, *e.g.*, **hãɪthiɪ** and **ghoɪʈaɪ** separately mean 'elephants' and 'horses', but when brought together they not only mean 'elephants and horses' but also other high class conveyances or paraphernalia of a king. Similar expressions are: **boɪl caɪl** 'companionship', **ɟoɪr toɪr** 'contrivances', **naɪc kuɪd** 'merriments', **'kheɪl tʌmɪsaɪ** 'shows and spectacles', **rupʌjaɪ pʌisaɪ** 'money', **maɪr kaɪʈ** 'slaughter', **deɪb leɪb** 'to give and to take, *i.e.*, mutual help', **hʌgʌb muɪtʌb** 'to ease oneself and to urinate, *i.e.*, affairs not fit to be mentioned in decent society', **nʌflaɪb dfloɪwʌb** 'to bathe and to wash, *i.e.*, to clean oneself', **kaɪnaɪ phũɪsiɪ** 'secret talk', **khaɪb piʌb** 'eating and drinking', etc.

C. Origin

§ 385. Repetition of a word is a normal feature in Sanskrit and MIA, *e.g.*, *deśē*, *deśē* 'in every country', *pītvā pītvā* 'having drunk again and again', *yadā yadā* 'whenever'.

Echo-words are found in Mod. IA throughout as well as in Dravidian (see Chatterji, p. 176) and they serve only as a help in the current of speech. Such a thing is not likely to find a place in literary works, however; we have found only one instance in Early Awadhi: *chanda wanda* (*Awadha Bilāsa*, leaf 9*b*).

Similarly Reduplication is another device taken up for facility in speech and is found in other Mod. IA languages as well (see Chatterji § 775). People do require some such supports (called *takia-e-kalām* in Persian, meaning, literally, 'pillow of speech') and sometimes a whole clause is introduced, *e.g.*, 'isn't it' or 'you know' in English and **mʌi baɪt kʌfleũ** 'I say', **ɟaɪneu ki naɪi** 'isn't it', **hũ waɪfi bfiaɪiɪ** 'O Yes, brother!' in Awadhi. These devices are restricted strictly to spoken languages, mostly to slang, and do not find place in written language.

CHAPTER X

WORD ORDER

A. Early Awadhi

§ 386. Unfortunately no prose works are available. The only prose piece that is found is the arbitration deed said to have been written by Tulsīdās as an arbitrator to settle the dispute about the division of the property of Rājā Tōḍarmal after his death. The language of deeds is generally archaic and formal and so is also of this deed (*Tulsī Granthāvalī*, Part III, pages 36—38). The following sentences show the order:

āgẽ jẽ āgya dunahu janẽ māgā jẽ āgya bhai sẽ pramāna mānā dunahu janẽ . . . . . likhītaṁ ananda rāma jẽ ūpara likhā sẽ sahī 'previously whatever order both the persons wanted (and) which order was put that has been accepted by both the persons . . . written by Anandarāma whatever is written above is correct.'

Here *āgẽ* adverb is quite in order with modern usage. The precedence of the object (*jẽ āgya*) before the subject, as well as the putting of the subject (*dunahu janẽ*) at the end are emphatic in such cases and are similarly found in the modern language as well. The order of words thus does not differ from that found in Modern Awadhi (see below § 388).

§ 387. As in Modern Awadhi so in the old language, the normal order of words is often violated. For instance:

(*a*) subject coming after the verb, *jabahi caḍhahi puhumī pati, sērasāhi jaga-sūra* 'whenever Shēr Shāh, the hero of the world, the king of the (whole) Earth, attacks' (J. p. 19), *mukuṭa bāḍhi saba baiṭhā rājā* 'all the kings sat with their crowns on' (J. p. 72), *bōlī apara kahehu sakhi nīkā* 'the other said: friend, (you) have well said' (T. p. 97), *pura pūraba disi gē dou bhāī* 'both the brothers went to the Eastern part of the city' (T. p. 97), *kaha māruta-suta sunahu prabhu* 'the son of the Air-god said: my lord, hear' (T. p. 375); *dīnhā utara mahīpa biyōgī* 'the love-lorn king gave the answer' (N. p. 25), *kahā ratana sō ēka sahēlī* 'a friend said to Ratana' (N. p. 90), *karaba maī sēvā* 'I shall do the service' (N. p. 32).

(*b*) object after the verb, *kīnhesi dharatī saraga patārū* 'He created the Earth, the sky and the nether world' (J. p. 2), *dēkhī sāsu āna anuhārī* 'saw the mothers-in-law much different' (T. p. 245), *suni siya sapana bharē jala lōcana* 'on hearing Sītā's dream (his) eyes were filled with water (tears)' (T. p. 245), *likhi pālī cētā kahā dīnhā* 'she wrote the letter and gave it to Cētā' (N. p. 73), *lakhai na aiguna dēkhai sōbhā* '(he) does not look at (your) evils (and) sees (your) beauty' (N. p. 167).

(*c*) adjectival epithet after the noun, *pitā hamāra* 'my father' (J. p. 87), *jōbana mōra* 'my youth' (J. p. 87), *dīpa dui* 'two lamps' (J. p. 193), *kou kaha saṅkara cāpa kaṭhōrā* 'some one said that Siva's bow was hard' (T. p. 97), *kānanu kaṭhina bhayaṅkara bhārī* 'the forest is difficult (to pass through), terrifying and huge' (T. p. 181). *muni gyānī* 'the well-versed sages' (T. p. 264), *bōlē bāni sanēha suhāī* '(he) spoke words beautiful owing to affection' (T. p. 277), *hari lei calā parāna hamārā* 'he has taken my life and is gone' (N. p. 25), *auguna bharī sarīra hamārī* 'my body is full of evils' (N. p. 105), *pai tumharī akhiyā matavārī hama kahā khīca surā disa ānaī* 'but your bewitching eyes, draw me and bring me towards wine' (N. p. 176).

B. MODERN AWADHI

§ 388. The Awadhi sentence normally is small; it contains four or five words. Complex ideas are expressed by combining together several sentences by means of conjunctions or adverbial expressions.

The normal order of words is :

Subject, object, verb ; *e.g.*, **mʌi duɪdfiɣ piɪfiʌũ** 'I shall drink milk'. A sentence may contain only the subject and the verb, *e.g.*, **mʌi ʝʌifiʌũ** 'I shall go '. In connected speech any of the above may be understood, so that, in effect, a sentence may contain either the subject only, or the verb or the object. The adjectival adjuncts normally precede the noun or pronoun that they qualify attributively. Predicatively, however, they come after the noun or pronoun qualified as shown above (§ 224). The adverbial adjuncts generally come immediately before the verb, but adverbs of time and place are found, quite frequently, placed after the subject. Normally the indirect object precedes the direct object.

§ 389. The normal order of words in the language is, however, not rigidly fixed. Except for the postpositions which must follow the noun or pronoun concerned, other parts of speech may have a different order for emphasis and for expression of emotion. The subject may come at the end of a sentence, *e.g.*, **tʌ hũʌ te cʌl difiin ui** 'then he started from there', **ʝaɪdaɪ nʌ ljaɪb hʌm** 'I shall not take more'. The vocative generally precedes the subject (*e.g.*, **raɪmiɪ hʌm tʌu pijaɪsei bʌfiut hʌn** 'O Queen, I am very thirsty', **tʌu lʌɾikiɪ boɪliɪ naɪfiiɪ raɪʝaɪ hiɑ̃ɪ nʌ piʌu** 'then the girl said: no king! do not drink water here'), but it may follow the subject sometimes (*e.g.*, **hʌm daɪdaɪ tumʌriɪ bfiaɪgį̈ sę̈ khaɪitį̈** 'Father! I live—lit. eat—owing to your good fortune'). The adjectival epithet normally precedes the noun, but for emphasis it may follow it (*e.g.*, **mʌfiotaɪriɪ kiɪ tʌnaɪ aɪgį̈ laɪgį̈ gʌ̈i jaɪ**

'O Mother, how did this fire come about to catch (the house)', **ui ʈhʌgʌunaɪ saɪtʌu dʌurez cʌlez aɪwʌ̃** 'those *seven* highway robbers were coming on, running'.

§ 390. The object normally comes between the subject and the verb, but for emphasis or when it is the particular topic of talk, it may come at the beginning (*e.g.*, **soɪ haɪr hʌm ezk ʌurʌt ko dʌi dizn** 'that *necklace*, I gave away to a woman') or at the end (*e.g.*, **tʌu mʌi dʌi ɖaɪreũ rupʌjaɪ** 'then I gave away the money', **goɪbʌr bfiʌrɨ kʌj difiisɨ hʌm kaɪ** 'he gave to me filled with dung'). The direct object may, in similar circumstances, precede the indirect, *e.g.*, **kʌfiin nʌ hoɪi laɪo thoɪraɪ khaɪi leɪiɪ thoɪraɪ jʌhu ko dʌi deɪiɪ** '(she) said : let it be, let me eat a little and give a little to this one also'. The adjectival epithet of the object may be separated thus by the intervention of the verb, *e.g.*, **jaɪ iɪ kiɪ khaɪtɨ hʌi kʌmaɪi** 'he earns his livelihood by it' where **iɪ kiɪ** was expected near **kʌmaɪiɪ**.

§ 391. Of all the parts of a sentence, the adverbial adjunct has the least fixed place. In the same sentence one adjunct may be after the subject and another before the verb, *e.g.*, **ui maɪrez gusɪʌ kɐ̨ roɪʈiɪ ɖefiʌrijʌ mo ɖaɪrɨ deɪĩ** 'she, on account of anger, used to throw the bread in the big jar' where **maɪrez gusɪʌ kɐ̨** comes after the subject and **ɖefiʌrijʌ mo** before the verb ; or **choɪʈ bfiaɪiɪ ʝfiʌʈɪo bʌɾez bfiaɪi ko kursiɪ pʌr bʌiʈhaɪrisɨ** 'the younger brother, soon, seated the elder brother on a chair' where **ʝfiʌʈɪo** comes after the subject and **kursiɪ pʌr** before the verb. Sometimes, particularly when the subject is inanimate, the adverb may come even before the subject (*e.g.*, **tʌu hũaɪ bʌɾaɪ hʌlɪaɪ mʌcaɪ** 'then there rose up a great uproar') or after the verb (*e.g* , **gʌi rʌfiʌi ui waɪr** '(she) had gone to that side').

§ 392. The verb normally comes at the end of the sentence, but it may precede the subject (*e.g.*, **rʌfiu tui**

remain thou'), or the object (*e.g.*, **kaɪ kifiisi̯ ki nikaɪrisi̯ tʌrwaɪrɪ̯** 'what did (he) do? that he drew out the sword', **tʌu ʌĩcini̯ tʌrʌwaɪrɪ̯ ki iɪ kaɪ mʌɪɖɪʌribaɪ** 'then (he) drew the sword: that I shall-kill her'). This is merely for emphasis. When there are two verbs in a sentence, that of the absolutive clause normally precedes the principal verb, *e.g.*, **gulgulaɪ ʃfiãɪpi̯ ko dfiʌrɪ̯ difiini̯** '(she) covered up the cakes and put them aside' where the first clause is absolutive and the second principal. The absolutive of **aɪwʌb** 'to come' or **ʃaɪb** 'to go', however, when it is unaccompanied by its postposition always comes after the principal verb, *e.g.*, **hũaɪ khaɪu ʃaɪi** 'go and eat there', **iu kaɪmụ kʌrʌu aɪi** 'come and do this thing'. In compound verbs the principal normally precedes the accessory, but for emphasis the order may be reversed, *e.g.*, **tʌu lifiini̯ chiɪni̯** 'then (he) snatched away', **ʌu ĩɪɽ leɪu lʌi** 'and take up a brick'.

§ 393. The Conjunction (**ki**, **mula**, etc.) or the conjunctive epithet (**tʌfli kʌi** 'then', etc.) introduces a sentence connected with the previous sentence. The reported speech is normally direct and may or may not be introduced by the particle **ki**, *e.g.*, **tʌb waɪ lʌɽikiɪ kʌfiisi̯ jaɪ ãguɪɽhiɪ tʌu hʌmʌreɪ baɪp ki hʌi** 'then that girl said this ring is my father's', **tʌb kʌfiini̯ ki jaɪ ãguɪɽhiɪ hʌm kaɪ deɪu** 'then (she) said: give this ring to me'. In connected narrative speech the last portion of a sentence may be repeated to introduce the next sentence, *e.g.*, **tʌb duɪnʌu pʌrdeɪs ko eɪk eɪk gfloɪɽʌ po cʌɽfli kʌi cʌl difiini̯** 'then both mounted on one horse each and started for foreign land', **cʌl difiini̯ tʌu eɪk ɽhʌgʌn kẹ purʌwʌ mo ʌɽeɪ ʃaɪi** 'then when started, they reached a village of robbers', **un kiɪ sʌrʌflo-ʃin diɪkh** 'his sisters-in-law saw (him)', **tʌu diɪkh tʌu un kʌfiʌi laɪgĩɪ** 'then when (they) saw (him) they began to say'.

Instances of the indirect report are, however, sometimes found, though very rarely, *e.g.*, **gopaɪl hʌri sę bʌtaɪisį ki sʌŋkʌʈaɪ tumaɪr ʧʌpkaɪ coraɪiŋį hʌi** 'Gopal told Hari that Saṅkaṭā had stolen his mangoes' but **gopaɪl mʌfii seɪ kʌfiisį ki tum hʌmaɪr ʧʌpkaɪ coraɪjeu** 'Gopāl told me that you stole my mangoes'.

§ 394. The subject may be a noun, a pronoun, or an adjective (with the noun understood). As noted above (§ 175) a subject may take a plural number (indicated by the verb being in the plural) to show respect. In connected speech the same subject may be in the singular or the plural in clauses side by side, *e.g*, **waɪ ãguɪʧhiɪ lʌi kʌi ʌpʌneɪ gfiʌr gʌi ʌpʌniɪ mʌfiotaɪɪi ko dekhaɪiŋį ʤaɪi** 'she took the ring and went home (and) showed (it) to her mother', where **gʌi** shows a singular subject and **dekhaɪiŋį** a plural one; **tʌu eɪk ʤʌfiʌr ki purijaɪ phiɪį ghoɪɪisį, ʤfiʌʈɪo wʌfiʌi loʈijaɪ gfiũɪgfiuʈų maɪɪį ko raɪʤʌ ko dihiŋį** 'then she again dissolved a small packet of poison, (and) soon drawing the veil she gave the same cup to the king' where **gfioɪɪisį and dihiŋį** show a difference of number. Such instances are quite frequent in every day speech. Not only this, when subjects are understood, different subjects may be understood in different clauses of the same sentence, *e.g.*, **pʌfiileɪ baɪt bʌnaɪi gʌi ʌbti mo ɖaɪɪiɪ maɪɪį** 'at first (she) explained it away, this time (he) will kill (us) outright', where the subject of **bʌnaɪi gʌi** is 'the daughter of the demon' and of **ɖaɪɪiɪ maɪɪį** 'the demon himself'. The difference of number may be visible in the same sentence, *e.g.*, **mʌi goflaɪɪi lʌgaɪi ko pʌkʌɾen** 'I raised an alarm and caught him' where **mʌi** (singular) is connected with **pʌkʌɾen** (plural). The expected verb was **pʌkʌɾeũ**. Such wrong grammar, however, is not frequent.

§ 395. If a verb has a subject in different genders, the gender of the nearest subject is taken up by the verb, and the number is plural, *e.g.*, **mʌfiotaɪɪiɪ puɪt hoi**

rʌfler jʌzi 'the mother and the son reached (the place)' where **rʌfler** agrees in gender with **purt** and not with **mʌflotʌzriz.** Similarly **pʌzrbʌtiz mʌflʌzdezu dunijʌ ki cintʌ ko nikʌrez** 'Pārvatī and Mahādēva started to look after the world', **kumflʌzr ʌu kumflʌzrinị̄ mʌzʈiz nikʌzrʌi ʌzĩz** 'the potter and his wife came to dig out earth'.

§ 396. When two pronouns of different persons stand as the subject, the order is 1st, 2nd, 3rd and the verb also agrees with the 1st in preference to the 2nd or 3rd and with the 2nd in preference to the 3rd, *e.g.*, **ʌzor hʌm tum khʌziz** 'Come let us eat', **hʌm tum bʌjʌzrʌi jʌibʌz** 'You and I shall go to the market', **tum ui pʌkʌreu** 'he and you caught'.

§ 397. The subject of a passive or causal clause is put before the subject of the simple clause, *e.g.*, **uz lʌʈikʌz kuchụ gʌltiz kifiisị̄** 'that boy committed some mistake'—active, **ui lʌʈikʌ sę̣ kuchụ gʌltiz hoi gʌi** 'some mistake was committed by that boy'—passive, where **uz lʌʈikʌz** is the subject of the active construction while **ui lʌʈikʌ sę̣** is the agentive phrase in the passive construction; similarly **rʌzm gopʌzl ko pʌznir piʌzisị̄** '(he) caused Gopāl to drink water through Rām'.

§ 398. In poetry and songs, the normal order of words is found generally disturbed, *e.g.*, **jʌtʌniz bjʌzr hʌri kino kʌz gʌijʌi kino kʌz lʌi kʌi nʌzũ** 'at this time whom shall I sing about, whose name shall I take'—here **nʌzũ** (object) would normally be put before **lʌi kʌi**; **kʌzfi nʌzũ ui guruz tumflʌzrez** 'what is the name of your preceptor?'—here **tumflʌzrez** (adjective) should have preceded **guruz**; **bhitʌr te nikʌsĩz jʌsozmʌti mʌztʌz** 'mother Yaśōdā came out from the inner apartments'—here **jʌsozmʌti mʌztʌz** (subject) would precede **nikʌsĩz.**

C. Origin

§ 399. 'Like all languages that possess a rich store of inflections, Sanskrit affords a comparatively great freedom as to the order of words in the sentence' (Speijer: *Sanskrit Syntax* § 15). In the Sanskrit word the morphemes were combined with the semanteme so that each word was a unit by itself and carried with it its full significance. Hence the order of words did not matter for the connotation of the meaning. In spite of this we find a certain order generally—subject—object—verb; the attribute precedes the noun, the vocative generally heads the sentence (*ibid*, § 16). We find that this general order has been kept up more or less throughout modern Indo-Aryan [see Bloch: *Langue Marathe*, (p. 268), Chatterji: *Origin and Development of Bengali*, (p. 176)]. Only there is this difference between Sanskrit and modern IA, that in the former the terminations expressed the morphemes of case, number, gender, person, tense etc., while in modern IA some of these are expressed by post-positions or other form-words. Just as the morphemes necessarily accompanied the semanteme then (being incorporated in the word), similarly in Mod. IA they accompany the semanteme (closely following it). Granted this, the word-order is the same. For instance:

Skt. *devadattaḥ* | *kaṭam* | *karoti* |

Hindi **devʌdʌtɪə** | **cʌʈaɪɪ** | **bʌnaɪtaɪhʌi** |

'Devadatta | mat | makes'.

Here no harm would be done if the words of the Sanskrit sentence change their places as the morphemes are incorporated in the semantemes; but normally the Hindi sentence would keep the order because the morphemes are not manifest. However, as shown above, the order may change sometimes in poetry, or even in prose for emphasis and there the context will be the only indicator of the syntactical relation. Let us take another case:

Skt. *viṭapāt* | *patrāṇi* | *kṣaranti* |

Awadhi **birʌwʌ sę** | **paɪtaɪ** | **ɟʃʌrʌtį hʌ̃** |

'From the tree | leaves | fall off'.

The three elements of the sentence in either languages may be changed without causing any confusion in sense. Or take another sentence :

Skt. *tataḥ* | *rāmaḥ* | *sitayā sārdham* | *vanaṁ* | *jagāma*

Awadhi **tau** | **raɪm** | **sɪɪtaɪ sʌŋgfi** | **bʌn kaɪ** | **cʌleɪ gʌeɪ**

'Then | Rām | with Sītā | to the forest | went'.

Here also the sense will not be confused if the order of the various parts of the sentence is changed.

The word-order, thus, in essentials has remained the same in modern IA as in OIA.

FINIS

APPENDICES

APPENDIX I

SPECIMENS OF EARLY AWADHI (UNPUBLISHED) TEXTS

(*a*) Awadha Bilāsa

(*b*) Prēma Pragāsa

(*c*) Gura Anyāsa

(*d*) Yūsuf Zulekhā

(a) Awadha Bilāsa[1]

Page 1.

Śrī Gaṇēśāya Namaḥ

Śrī pustaka Avadha Bilāsa likhyatē

dōhā

Bēda ukti anubhava jugati
Jñāna ratana kī khāni
Lāla gupta eha pragata kie
Audha Bilāsa bakhāni.

Audha Bilāsa samudra hai
Sāhu sādhu taṭa jāhi
Ratana kathā Raghubīra kī
Lāla bahuta tā māhi.

Lāla succha trailōka kō
darapana Audha Bilāsa
Jō jaisahi hoi dēkhikai
Tā kaha taisā bhāsa.

Saba hī ruci nahi ēka hai
Kāhū kachū sohāe
Tā tē mai bahu mata racē
Audha Bilāsa banāe.

Pragaṭeu Avadha Bilāsa ghana
Bidyā jñāna apāra
Khulē khajānē lāla kē
Lāla hṛdaya bhaṇḍāra.

Rāga raṅga rata Rāma sō
Nau rasa jñāna prakāsa
Jasa prabhutā jaga maha calai
Tau paṭu Avadha Bilāsa.

[1] Text from a copy (in the Hindustani Academy, Allahabad) of the manuscript described in the Introduction above §6.

Translation

Salutation to Śrī Gaṇēśa

Awadha Bilāsa begins

The Vēdas, apt sayings, experiences, devices, a mine of precious stones of knowledge, Lāla says, these are hidden, (but) he has made these manifest by having composed the Audha Bilāsa.

The Audha Bilāsa is an ocean, whose (two) ends are *sāhu* (the trading class), and *sādhu* (the religious mendicant class). Gems of the story of Rāma, Lāla says, are abundantly found in it.

The Audha Bilāsa is a bright mirror for (reflecting) the three worlds. Whoever will look in it in whatever mood, he will find it reflecting similarly.

All tastes are not alike ; some like certain things (while others like a different thing). This is why I have included in the Audha Bilāsa, many shades of thought.

The cloud of the Audha Bilāsa has made manifest boundless knowledge and wisdom, and has opened in the storehouse of Lāla's mind, treasures of precious stones (of beautiful thoughts).

Love, sport, devotion to Rāma, the nine sentiments, and the light of knowledge, all those qualities which rule the world, have been cleverly incorporated in the Audha Bilāsa.

Koū kāhu kī bāta suni
Lagē sarāhana tāhi
Avadha Bilāsahi enha paḍhai
Tau kā acaraja āhi.

Bhaktanha kaha haya bhakta eha
Rasikanha kō rasa rūpa
Jñānī kō hai jñāna yaha
Audha Bilāsa anūpa.

Bahuta kathā bahu grantha kī
Ukti anūṭha ananta
Paḍhihai jō sō hōihaya
Kahata Lāla gunavanta.

Kāhē kō bahutai cahai
Pōthī bhāra anēka
Saba guna mē kina rākhiyē
Avadha Bilāsahi yēka.

Raghubaṁsī Raghubaṁsa jē
Lavakusa baṁsa prakāsa
Tinha kē Lāla bisēkha
Paḍhibō Audha Bilāsa.

Pōthī Audha Bilāsa kī
paḍhatahi sunata sohāta
Āe milata hai bahuta tahā
Lāla bāta para bāta.

Kamalanha jō ruci māni ali
Taji taji āna nevāsa
Lāla rasika jē hōhigē
Paḍhihai Avadha Bilāsa.

P. 2.

Jō eha Avadha Bilāsa kō
Gāvai kari bisrāma
Tā kē hiya maha hōe kē
Sunihai Sītā Rāma.

Some one begins to admire things on hearing from some one else; what wonder if he reads them in the Avadha Bilāsa.

To the devotees, this unparalleled Audha Bilāsa is devotion itself, to the men of feeling, it is an embodiment of sentiments, and to the wise, it is knowledge.

He, who will read numerous stories from various books, and innumerable apt sayings, says Lāla, will become a man of qualities.

But, why should one so much like the burden of numerous volumes of books? Why should not one keep, for all these qualities, the Avadha Bilāsa alone?

Of all those born in the line of Raghu, Lava and Kuśa were luminaries of the line; in the Avadha Bilāsa, Lāla, you will read about them at length.

As you read the book of Audha Bilāsa, or hear it, you begin to like it, for therein you occasionally meet with numerous apt sayings.

As the black bee likes to dwell in the lotus, leaving aside other abodes, similarly those, who are men of feeling, will read the Avadha Bilāsa (leaving aside other compositions).

In the heart of him who sings this Avadha Bilāsa with ease, Sītā and Rāma will sit and hear (the Avadha Bilāsa).

Bacana racana muktā ratana
Kũda kalā itihāsa
Lāla hēma kutakā racē
Bhūkhana Avadha Bilāsa.

Abhūkhana hai bhagata kō
Rāmadāma guna hīra
Lāla alaṅkr̥ta dēkhi kai
Rījhata hai Raghubīra.

Grantha grantha para saba karata
Lēta grantha kī chāha
Lāla kōī anabhava .....
Rāma kr̥pā kī bāha.

Rāmāena satakōṭi hai
Rāmahi jānata tāhi
Jō kachu pragaṭa na gupatahi
Rākhata nāgari nāri.

Jāni būjhi nāhī dharata
Kaṭhina aratha kō daura
Rāma nāma jō jakta maha
Grantha calaya saba ṭhaura.

Gūḍha kāvya Jayadēva kabi
Tulasī Sūra bakhāna
Kēśava Bidyāpati bikaṭa
Lāla sarala mana māna.

Bātai saba Brahmāṇḍa kī
Racō Lāla mana āni
Bisva rūpa jē bisvamai
Audha Bilāsahi jāna

Adr̥ṣṭa bāta apaṭhita asr̥ta
Alapa jūāna jehi dēka
Tā kō Audha Bilāsa rasa
Aṭapaṭa lāgahi ēha.

With the pearls and precious stones of beautiful sayings, the *kũda* (*kunda* flower ?) of art and history, and the gold of *kũtaka* (probably *kūṭaka* 'tricky compositions' or *kautuka* 'pleasures'), Lāla has prepared this ornament of the Avadha Bilāsa.

This is an ornament for the devotee, being a string of diamonds of the qualities of Rāma. Lāla says, Rāma is pleased to see one decorated with this ornament.

All place one book upon the other (in the matter of authority), and take the shelter of books (in their reasonings), but here is Lāla's practical experience, for Rāma has placed his kind hand upon him.

The Rāmāyaṇa (story of Rāma) is a hundred-crore-fold, only Rāma knows it, as the clever woman gives out something, and always keeps it a secret.

Knowingly and wilfully, I do not compose in it anything hard to understand, so that my book may be popular at all places, like the name of Rāma.

For poetry difficult to appreciate, Jayadēva, Tulasī and Sūra are well-known ; and, Keśava and Vidyāpati are simply prolix, while Lāla is as easy as one would like.

Lāla has commented upon all the subjects of the Universe. Whatever the Universe is, or whatever the Universe is contained of, all that you will find to be identical with the Audha Bilāsa.

To him, who has seen little, read little, and heard little, who has little knowledge in his self the pleasure of reading the Audha Bilāsa seems meaningless.

Paṇḍita hai sō jānihai
Kathā prasaṅga prabīna
Mūrakha mana maha mānihai
Lāla kahā eha kīna.

Tīratha avadha je avadha hai
Rāma avadha autāra
Taisō bhākhā kī avadha
Audha Bilāsa apāra.

Dōe dēha hai Avadha kē
Suksima thūla prakāsa
Dhāma rūpa asthūla hai
Sukṣima Audha Bilāsa.

Jō eha Avadha Bilāsa kō
Avadhahi jānai kōi
Tā kē sunatahi hōta hai
Avadha gaē phala sōi.

kai kou jānata santa jana
Rāma janāvahi jāhi.
.....
... .
Svāratha paramāratha bisavai
Bānī Lāla prakāsa
sō vai bātai kavana hai
Jō nahi Avadha Bilāsa.

F. 3.

Basīkarana mōhana kṛkhana
Sabadāvana guna nēka
.....mantra saṁsāra maha
Avadha Bilāsa hai ēka.

Paranābhī basi mā hṛdaya
Madhyā kaṇṭhahi māhi
...hara pragaṭa su baikharī
Bānī cāri kahāhi.

He, who is wise, and is clever at stories and discourses. will know its worth ; and, he, who is stupid, will think ' what has Lāla done here ?'

As Avadha is the end of all the holy places, and as Rāma is the end of all the incarnations (of the supreme), so also the endless Audha Bilāsa is the end of the vernacular (compositions).

Avadha has two bodies obviously, *sūkṣma* or the inner, and *sthūla* or the outer, and the shrine is the outer one, while the Audha Bilāsa is the inner one.

Whoever accepts this Avadha Bilāsa with the belief that it is Avadha itself, he reaps the advantages of visiting the holy shrine by only hearing the Avadha Bilāsa.

Either certain saints know this fact, whom Rāma makes aware of it, ...

The message of Lāla covers both the fields : egoistic, and the altruistic. What are those subjects that are not contained in the Avadha Bilāsa ?

The art of subduing, of alluring and of attracting, all these have many good qualities ; but in the world of master-charms, the Avadha Bilāsa is unique.

Paranābhī dwells in the heart, *madhyā* in the throat, in . . . (?) appears the *baikharī*, these are said to be the four varieties of the speech.

Bhākhā ārakhī mānukhī
Baikhārī paramāna
Ārakhi kahiē Saṁsakṛta
Bhākhā mānukha jāna.

Suddha pragaṭa laukika bayana
Suni samujhai saba kōi
Kaṭhina sabda hai Saṁsakṛta
Bhākhā kahiē sōi.

Dēsī Prākṛta Saṁsakṛta
Pārasi yārabi jāna
Jaha jaha jākī Lāla kahi
Bhākhā sabahī jāna.

Ihai jāni bānī bimala
Kahata Lāla sudha buddha
Kaṭhina kābya eha Saṁsakṛta.
Bhākhā kahiyē suddha.

Gūḍhahi bhalī na prakāsa
Bānī Lāla biyāja.
.....
.....

Nava Bilāsa diṭha guna bhayō
Patita pāra kṛta kāja
Lāla sindhu saṁsāra maha
Avadha Bilāsa jahāja.

Sai paṇḍita sai sādhu kō
Jē tō saṅga bakhāna
Tā tē Avadha Bilāsa kō
Lāla paḍhē hoi jñāna.

Saṁbata sattraha sai barakha
Sudi Baisākha sukāla
Lāla Avadha madhi rahi racī
Audha Bilāsa risāla.

Baikharī of human beings has got the following varieties. *ārakhī* (S. *ārṣa*) or of the gods, and *bhākhā* or vernacular. *Ārakhī* is otherwise named as Saṁskṛta, and *mānukhī* as *bhākhā*.

Pure and open are the earthly discourses (conducted in *bhākhà*), which everyone understands when he hears them, while Saṁskṛta is full of difficult words. These are called the (two-fold varieties of) language.

Dēsī, Prākṛta, Saṁskṛta, Pārasī, and Yārabi, *i.e.*, the Arabic, know each one (of these) to be a language. Lāla says, wherever whichever (of these) may be in use, that is Bhākhā.

Being aware of this fact, Lāla uses, knowingly, the pure dialect (*i.e.*, *bhākhā*). Difficult poetry is composed in the Saṁskṛta, while poetry of easy construction is done in the *bhākhā*.

It is not proper to make the secret manifest through language. ... ...

The new Bilāsa of substantial worth has proved to be a ship in the ocean of the world, for carrying the fallen across it.

As much as one is said to gain in the company of a hundred wise men, and a hundred saints, the same amount of knowledge he can also gain by reading the Avadha Bilāsa.

In the Sambata year 1700, in the auspicious bright half of Baisākha, staying in Avadha, Lāla composed the tasteful Audha Bilāsa.

caupāī

Prathamahi gura Ganapati sira nāvō
Puni Hari Hara Surasatī manāvō.

Jau ei kṛpā kaṭākṣanha hērē
Tau kachu jñāna hōi jiya mērē.

Brahmā Bēda ādi Mahāmāyā
Pranavō tāhi jakta jinha jāyā.

Sanaka Sanātana Sanayakumārā
Aura Sananda cāri parakārā.

Bālaka rūpa rahai Brahmagyānī
Jīvanmukta nirāabhimānī.

Ādi bhakti jē Śrī Hari pyārī
Bandava tāhi bhagati bistārī.

Pranavō Pāratha Prabhu kē saṅgī
Hari samāna bapu rūpa saraṅgī.

Bandau cāri mukti haya sōī
Pāvata bhagata avara nahi kōī.

P. 4.

Eka salōka sāmīpa sohāī
Eka sājujaśārūpa kahāī.

Indrādika dēvatā jētē
Mō para kripā karahu saba tētē.

Hōhu dayāla dasau dṛgapālā
Graha titha paya tata krama kālā.

Cāri khāni kē jē jata prānī
Siddha sādhu mūrakha aru gyānī.

Aṇḍaja svēdaja jarāeja jānā
Udbhija khāni e cāri bakhānā.

Avadha Bilāsa kathā mana mānī
Baranō tāhi dēhu mohi bānī.

In the very beginning, I bow to my preceptor, and to Gaṇapati; then, I pray to Hari, Hara, and Sarasvatī; for if these looked at me with kindly glances, some knowledge will grow in my heart.

I bow to Brahmā, and the Vēdas, and the basic Mahāmāyā, who begot the world I bow to Sanaka, Sanātana, Sanatkumāra, and Sanandana, the four sages.

Who knowing the Brahma, live in the guise of boys; who are bondless in this life, and who are free from vanity. Then, I bow to the basic Devotion, Śrī, the spouse of Hari, with considerable devotion.

I bow to Pārtha, the comrade of the Lord, whose body and appearance were similar to those of the Lord. I bow to the four-fold scheme of salvation, which devotees alone get, and none others.

One is Sālōkya, or attaining the same region with the Lord, the other is Sāmīpya, or attaining proximity to the Lord, the third is Sāyujya, or being one with the Lord and the fourth is Sārūpya, or being of the same appearance with the Lord. All the gods including Indra, be ye all kind to me.

Ye, all the ten regents of the directions, planets, *tithas* (*tithis*?), *paya* (?), *krama* (?) and Time, be ye all kind to me. All the creatures of the four-fold creation, *siddhas*, and the mendicant class, the foolish and the wise, I bow to you all.

Aṇḍaja or born initially in the form of egg, *svēdaja* or born of perspiration of the body, *jarāyuja* or born from the womb, and *udbhija* or plants, these are the four main types of creatures. I describe the story of the Avadha Bilāsa in my own way, give me voice (for it).

Nārada Byāsa Basīṣṭa bakhānā
Pārāsara Sukadēva sayānā.

Bhāradvāja rikhi Bālamīka muni
Kasi...pa Bisvāmitra Atri puni.

Gautama Saunaka aura Pulastī
Śaubhari Suragura Sukra Agastī.

Durbāsā Bhṛgu Pivana Sudāmā
Inha sabahinha kaha karau pranāmā.

Dhruba Prahlāda bhakti siratājā
Ambarīka Rupamaṅgata rājā.

Bali Jaḍa Bharata au Janaka Bidēhī
Bhagati Bibhīkhana Rāma sanēhī.

Baranau Hanūmāna dukha bādhaka
Rāma bhagata sabahī sukha sādhaka.

Arajuna Udhau Bidura samētā.
Rāmānanda ādi bhae jētā

Bandau gōpa gōpikā nārī
Banakuñjana Hari saṅga bihārī.

Bidhu Maṅgala Jayadēva sayānā
Candrahāsa Hari kē mana mānā.

Jinha kē hiē Rāma bisrāmā
Tinha kē Lāla karata paranāma.

Paṇḍita jē bakatā kabirāī
Aru jō kathā sunaya mana lāī.

Tinha sō binaya karau kara jōrī
Suni mama grantha dēhu jani bōrī.

Jō kachu cūka mōhi hoi pārī
Tau tumha lījahu tāhi sudhārī.

Jo bigarō parakāja savāraya
Te apanō paralōka sudhāraya.

Nārada, Vyāsa, Vasiṣṭha, Parāśara, wise Śukadēva, sages Bharadvāja and Vālmīki, Kaśyapa, Viśvāmitra, and Atri,

Gautama, Śaunaka and Pulastya, Śaubhari, Suragura (Bṛhaspati), Śukra, and Agastya, Durvāsas, Bhṛgu, Pivana (?), and Sudāmā, I bow to these all.

Dhruva and Prahlāda, the crown of the devotees, Ambarīṣa and king Rukmāṅgada, Bali, Jaḍa Bharata, bodyless Janaka, and the devotee Bibhīṣaṇa, the lover of Rāma (I bow to these all).

I appraise the pain-ending Hanumāna, who is a devotee of Rāma, and a means for the attainments of all the comforts. I bow to Arjuna, Uddhava, Vidura, Rāmānanda, and all others who have been devotees.

I bow to the Gopas, and the Gopikā maidens, who roamed in the groves in the company of the Lord. Lāla bows to the Moon, the Mars, the wise Jayadēva, and the Candrahāsa, the pet of Hari, the persons in whose hearts Rāma abides.

To the wise men, the speakers, the great poets, and to those who hear this story attentively, I bow to them all with folded hands, that they may not drown my book when they have heard it.

If I might have committed any mistake, you will correct it, and accept my composition. One who corrects the mistake of another, makes his place secure in the other world.

dōhā

Gyānī guna suni kō karai
Paṇḍitu karaya bicāra.
. . . Lāla bhalē nahī
Jhagarā karahi ki māra.

P. 147.

caupāī

Yā bidhi rājā rikhihi livāī
Nagara Ajodhyā pahucē āī.

Utima māsa devasa jaba jānā
Putra iṣṭa taba jagyahi ṭhānā.

Sāgara chīra jahā̃ ārambhā
Gāḍē jāe jagya kē khambhā.

Baḍē baḍē muni rikhi au rājā
Āe jurē jahā̃ baḍo samājā.

Bēda bihita saba bidhi bistārā
Dāna diē kō ganaya apārā.

Kausilyā Kēkaī Sumānī
Bayaṭhē gāṭhi jōri nripa rānī.

Sundara jagya bēdi mana mohai
Tāpara agini dēvatā sōhai.

Aura jagya samagrīhī sājā
Tē bahutai lē bayaṭheu rājā.

Pañca ratana habi gabi hai jētā
Pañcāmṛta sāmīdha samētā.

Patra puhupa phala basana ānēkā
Patra dhāta gandha bibidhi bibēkā.

Mōtī mūgā kanaku anūpā
Pañca ratana ēi cuni rūpā.

Tila jau dhāna ghīva guḍa lēī
Khīra supāri hēma draba ēī.

Who would bother himself with the qualities of a wise man? Paṇḍita alone ponders over these . . . it is not good . . either to quarrel or to make a fuss over it.

P. 147.

Thus, the king, accompanied by the sage, reached the city of Ajodhyā; when he knew the month and the day to be auspicious, he commenced the performance of the sacrifice, *Putresṭi* (for obtaining a male issue).

Where the sea of milk began from, he fixed the pillars of the sacrifice. In that great congregation, all the great saints, sages, and kings assembled.

The king performed all the rituals as commanded by the Vēdas, and he gave alms to such a great extent that none can make a correct estimate of it. The king sat with his queens, Kauśalyā, Kēkayī and Sumānī (Sumitrā), having tied the ends of his garment to the garments of the queens.

The beautiful platform of the sacrifice attracted the mind; Fire-god was beautifully placed over it. The king had collected also the other constituents of the sacrifice in large quantities, and with these, he sat (to perform the sacrifice).

His collection consisted of *pañca-ratana* or the five gems, oblations, *gavya*, *i.e.*, the products of the cow, the *pañcāmṛta* (mixture of milk, sugar, butter, curds and honey), fuel for the sacred fire, leaves, flowers, fruits, various kinds of garments, plates of metals, and many varieties of perfumes.

He collected pearls, coral stones, unique gold, (rubies) and silver, which constitute *pañca-ratna* (five jewels). Black sesamum, barley, paddy, clarified butter, with molasses, milk and areca-nuts, all these constitute the golden ingredients.

Dūdha ghīva dadhi madhu guḍa lahiē
Ambṛta pāca nāma eha kahiē.

Gōbara mūtra gaū kē hōī
Dūdha ghīva dadhi gabi kahi sōī.

Āvāhana kari kari jo bolāē
Pūjā lēna dēvatā āē.

Bājā bajata bibidhi cahu vōrā
Manu pāvasa gājata ghana ghōrā.

Sāthē sāta saekarē rānī
Gāvata gīta kōkilā bānī.

Nācata naṭī bhaī maga ṭhāḍhī
Dāmini sī damakata duti bāḍhī.

Ṭhaura ṭhaura guni jana lie bājā
Gāvata rāga nṛta kari sājā.

Bipranha Bēda paḍhē aru gāē
Mānahu Bēda dēha dhari āē.

Rājā tahā bhaē Daśāvantā
Muni Baśiśṭa rikhi Śriṅgī santā.

Aura sabai muni sākala lēhī
Vai dou hōma tapasa saba dēhī.

Jagya raccha candaha niḥpāpā
Tinha kō jagya bhītara lai thāpā.

Brahmā Bisna Rudara tahā sōhai
Indra Kubēra Candramā mōhai.

Sūraja Pāvaka au Dṛgapālā
Bidyādhara Gandharba bisālā.

Lōkapāla aru Baruna Ganēsā
Apa āpana disa bayaṭha sudēsā.

Puruba Indra Agini aṅganēē
Dacchina Jama nairitu Racha sēē.

Pachima Baruna bāebyau Bāyū
Uttara bayaṭha Kubēra sohāyū.

Take milk, clarified butter, curds, honey, and molasses these are called *pancāmṛta*; and if the mixture consists of the refuse of the cow, its urine, its milk, its clarified butter, and its curds, it is called *gavya*.

The deities who had been invoked, came to accept the offerings. In all the four directions, various kinds of instruments were being played upon, as though in the rainy season, heavy clouds were thundering.

Seven hundred queens together were singing songs in the note of the cuckoo. The nautch-girls, in the course of dancing, paused in the passage and the increased glow of their persons shone like lightning.

At places, skilled masters with the accompaniment of instruments, sing various melodies, that are being supplemented again by dance. The Brāhmaṇas chanted Vedic hymns in such a manner as if the Vēdas themselves had appeared in person.

There happened to be king Dasavanta (Daśaratha) and sages Vasiṣṭha and Śṛṅgī. While these latter performed the sacrifice, other sages took the charge of offering oblations, warming their body.

The fourteen spotless protectors of the sacrifice were brought in and put in position. Brahmā, Viṣṇu and Rudra were present there, and Indra, Kubēra and Moon-god attracted the attention.

The Sun-god, the Fire-god, and the rest of the regents of the several directions, and the great Gandharvas, Vidyādharas, and the Lords of the (fourteen) worlds, and Varuṇa and Gaṇes'a, everyone sat in his proper place.

In the east was seated Indra, in the south-east, Fire-god, in the south, Yama, in the south-west, Rakṣas (the demon who is the regent of that direction), in the west, Varuṇa, in the north-west the Wind-god and in the north, Kubēra.

P. 148.

Īsānē Śaṅkara sukhadāī
Brahmā sarga Sēkha bhua pāī.
E drigapāla nāma dasa āē
Puni navagraha bayaṭhē jahā pāē.
Jehi jehi ṭhaura dēvatā bhākhē
Tāha tāha bipra Bēdavā rākhē.
Joi joi nāma dēvatā hōī
Biprahi nāma dharata gae sōī.
Dēvanha kē ruci kō jo ahārā
Dēta gaē tinha kō byauhārā.
Kēsari candana phūlanha pūjē
Hōhi prasanya kṛtāratha dūjē.
Sīla chamā khaṭa karmanha māhī
Tē saba brāhmana ṭahala karāhī.
Paḍhai paḍhāvai dei aru lēī
Jagya karai karavāvai jēī.
E khaṭa karma bipra kē hōī
Jāmaha ē khaṭakaramī sōī.
Putra sōi jō Bēda bakhānai
Gāetrī japa tapa brata ṭhānai.
Athavā Bisna bhagata jō hōī
Tā brāhmaṇa sama aura na kōī.

dōhā

Candaṇa phūlai ūkha phala
Khāḍa barai pai māhi.
Lāla bipra puni Bisnabā
Tā sama tula kou nāhi.

caupāī

Hōma karata santuṣṭa hutāsana
Bhaē prasanya jo putra prakāsana.
Dibya rūpa pāvaka adhikāī
Jagya purukha pragaṭē jahā āī.

In the north-east was seated the auspicious Śiva. Brahmā was given the heavens, and S'ēṣa, the earth. These ten regents named (above) came. Then the nine planets sat where they were offered seats.

Wherever I have named deities, at each of those places Brāhmaṇas were seated, who had knowledge of the Vēdas. Whatever were the names of the deities, the same were given to those Brāhmaṇas; whatever food was especially liked by those deities, the same was offered to these.

They were worshipped with saffron, sandalwood-paste, and flowers; they were pleased, and also grateful. Such Brāhmaṇas as performed their six-fold duties with a good disposition and with forbearance, were appointed to serve them.

Studying, teaching, giving (charity) and taking (it), offering of oblations, and helping others in performing sacrifices, these are the six-fold duties of a Brāhmaṇa. One who possesses these qualities is called a *ṣaṭkarmī*.

The same is the son who propounds the Vēdas, who repeats Gāyatrī, and who engages in invocations and penances, or else who is a devotee of Viṣṇu. None is equal to such a Brāhmaṇa.

Although the sandal-tree may bear blossom, and the sugarcane may bring forth fruits, or sugar may burn in water, there is none equal to a Brāhmaṇa who is devoted to Viṣṇu.

When offerings were thrown in the sacred fire, the deity who had the capacity to bestow upon one an issue, was pleased. Sacrifice appeared there with a divine appearance which was accentuated by the fire around him.

Adbhuta rūpa agni maha rājai
Kanaka thāra dou hātha birājai.
Tā maha sundara khīra ahārā
Lēhu lēhu kahi hātha pasārā.
Muni rikhi uṭhi ādara kai lieū
Ubhai bhāga kari rājahi dieū.
Śīsa caḍhāe liē nripa rānī
Dhanya dhanya rikhi kahi muni bānī.
Pūrana jagya bhayō jaba jānā
Dīnha dacchinā kari sanamānā.
Bhūmi bhōga bahutai diyo grāmā
Pāe parai saba kē nripa bāmā.
Āju bhaē saba kāja hamārē
Āvata hī rikhi pāe tumhārē.
Bipra kṛpā kari āvahi jākē
Pūrana hōe manōratha tākē.
Jā ghara bipra dharai pagu āī
Tā ghara kīrati hōi baḍāī.
Bipra prasāda Indra bhae lōgā
Bipra prasāda putra dhana bhōgā.

dōhā

Banitā basana sugandha au
Bhōjana gīta jo pāna
Mandira bājī Lāla kahi
Āṭha bhōga chi jāna.

P. 230.

dōhā

Dhōtī bastū navalakā
Gajakara nētī jāna
Bhāthī sōdhana dēha kē.
E khaṭakarma bakhāna.

His unique appearance shone in the fire; gold-dishes looked pretty in both of his hands, and in those dishes, there was good-looking *khīra* (a preparation of milk). He stretched his hands with the cry, "Take this, take this!"

The sages stood up and accepted it with veneration, and having divided it into two, they offered it to the king. The king and the queens placed it on their forehead and accepted it, and the sages declared, "Blessed are the king and the queens!"

When (the king) knew that the sacrifice was over, he honoured (the Brāhmaṇas) and gave them presents. He gave them many villages to enjoy the blessings of the earth. The queens placed their heads at the feet of all the guests, and said,

"Today, all our desires have been fulfilled, when, sages, your feet came to this place. In whosesoever house the Brāhmaṇas kindly come, his desires are fulfilled.

"In whichsoever house the Brāhmaṇas come and place their feet, that house is highly praised (by all). By having pleased the Brāhmaṇas, they have (in the past) become Indra, and by having pleased the Brāhmaṇas they have been blessed with issues and riches."

Maidens, clothes, perfumes, food-stuff, music, drinks, palaces, horses, know these to be the eight-fold blessings, says Lāla.

Dhōtī, *bastī*, *navalakā*, *gajakara*, *nētī*, and *bhāthī* these are said to be the six processes of bodily purification.

caupāī

Nēṭī ḍōri nāsikā pōvai
Dhōtī basana nīla mala dhōvai.
Navalī nala phērai ju uṭhāī
Udara madhya gura tē lakhi pāī.

Bhāṭhī karai nāka sura aisē
Dhavai sonāra dhātu kaha jaisē.
Aicai ēka ēka svara chāḍai
Ati hī bēgi bēgi hāsi māḍai.

Bastī mūla dvāra jala karakhai
Gajakaranī gaju jyau jala barakhai.

P. 231.

Aba sunu prānāyāma bakhānau
Jōga grantha kē mana mata ānau.
Sādhai sādhu jōga jau kōī
Rahai dēsa jahā dunda na hōī.
Sadā subhaccha rahai tā ṭhaurā
Dharamarāja kaha dhāvana daurā.
Rākhai saṅga ēkaī ēvā
Sārati samujhi karai saba sēvā.
Rahai jāe ēkānta bicārī
Jahā nahī bahutai nara nārī.
Chāḍai saba jañjāla samētā
Rahai sumaṭha suṭhi dvāra sakētā.
Nahi ati nīca nahī ati ūcā
Āsana saina bhūmi kara sūcā.
Prathamahi kusa tāpara mṛga-chālā
Puni kambala ūpara rudramālā.
Ati kōmala sama ruci sukhadāī
Padumāsana baiṭhē mana lāī.

Nēti denotes that process in which a rope is passed through the nose; *Dhōtī* denotes that in which (the outlet for) the filth is washed with a blue cloth; *Navalī* denotes that in which the intestines are moved in the belly—one sees this latter with the aid of a preceptor.

Bhāthī denotes that in which such a sound is produced by the nostrils as is produced by the goldsmith in the course of blowing the metal. The inhalation should be done by one nostril, and the exhalation by the other. This should be repeated in quick succession, and with a laugh.

Bastī denotes that in which water is passed through the anus. *Gajakaranī* denotes that in which water is blown like an elephant. Now I describe the *prānāyāma*, hear the same. I now recollect the opinions of the treatises on *yoga*.

When a mendicant performs *yoga*, the land becomes free from strife. In that land, good eatables are always available, and messengers of Dharmarāja are always on tour in that land.

He (the *yōgī*) should keep only one person with him, who may render all sorts of services befitting the requirements of the ascetic. The ascetic should make his abode in a secluded place, which may not be frequented by men or women.

He (*i.e.*, the ascetic) should renounce everything with its train of cares. He should live in a *maṭha* which should have a narrow opening. He should sit and sleep on the ground (which should be) neither at a very high level nor at a very low level.

He should first prepare a bed of Kuśa-grass, thereon he should spread the skin of a deer, and again thereon, he should spread a woollen carpet. He should wear a rosary of Rudrākṣa (probably in the neck). Thus, having prepared a very soft, even and comfortable seat, he should sit in the posture of the lotus (Padmāsana), with a centred attention.

Uṭhi baiṭhē ita uta nahi ḍōlai
Bala nahi karahi bahuta nahi bōlai.

Kaṭi aru grīva sīsa sama rākhai
Nāsā agra driṣṭi abhilākhai.

Sūchama kachuka rākhi mukha āgē
Dēkhai tāhi palaka nahi lāgē.

Jaba lagi naina sajala bhari hōī
Trāṭika dhyāna kahata hai sōī.

Agya nāsa racchā kari tana kē
Ṭīkā karai kapaṭa taji mana kē.

Jagya dāna japa tapa brata pūjā
Hōma pāṭha saradādika dūjā.

Jōga dhyāna au dānahu diē
Niḥphala hōhi tilaka binu kiē.

Prānāyāma karai tehī ṭhaurā
Aicai pavana dāhinē vōrā.

Iṅgalā piṅgalā karai bicārā
Bāē dāhina nākē dvārā.

Iṅgalā piṅgalā sukhamā nārī
Nāsā madhya rahata sukhakārī.

Dakṣina puṭa nāsā svara jānā
Tāhi piṅgalā kahata sayānā.

Bāē ilā jāniē sōī
Madhya sukhamanā nārī hōī.

Tinha kē tīni dēvatā gāē
Sūraja Candra Brahma taha chāē.

Enha kō bhēda gurū sō jānai
Jōtakha saguna sabai pahicānai.

Bhinna bhinna jau kahau banāī
Bātahi bāta grantha baḍhi jāī.

Khoḍasa bēra pranau mana māhī
Pūrata japai adhika kachu nāhī.

He should sit with his chest forward. He should not roam here and there. He should not apply excessive physical force (in doing the *prāṇāyāma*). He should not talk much. He should keep his loin, neck, and head in a straight line ; and he should concentrate his vision on the tip of his nose.

Placing some subtle thing in his front, he should constantly gaze, without letting his eyelids fall, till the eyes are moisted. This is called *Trāṭika* meditation.

The tip of the nose protects the body. Having done away with mental deceits, he should place the mark on his forehead. Sacrifices, charity, invocations, penances, fasts, worships, oblations, reading of sacred texts, observing the second day of *Śarada* and other seasons,

Practising of *yōga*, meditations, and giving of alms, all these are fruitless without having made a *tilaka* (the mark). There he should practise *prāṇāyāma*. He should inhale by the right nostril.

Through the left and the right nostrils, he should respectively meditate on Iṅgalā, and Piṅgalā. Iṅgalā, Piṅgalā, and Sukhamā (Suṣumṇā) are the relief-giving veins which are found in the nose.

The sound that is produced in the right nostril is called Piṅgalā by the wise ; similarly that produced in the left nostril is called Ilā. In the middle is located the Sukhamanā (Suṣumṇā) vein.

They are said to be ruled by three deities respectively ; the sun-god, the moon-god, and Brahmā are ruling there. When distinctions between these are known with the help of a preceptor, the sciences of astrology and of omens become known.

If I describe the various aspects (of the *yōga* system), the dimensions of the book will easily increase. (Therefore I am brief here.) He should utter the *praṇava* sixteen times in his heart. Having done this he need not utter it any more.

Rākhai mūdi pavana nahi jāī
Causaṭhi mantra japai taba tāī.

P. 232.

Bāē svara chāḍai taba sōī
Bēra batīsa mantra japa hōī

Aicai pavana so pūraka kahiē
Rākhai rōki so kumbhaka lahiē

Chāḍai tāhi so rēcaka jānī
Tāsō prānāyāma bakhānī.

Mantra sahita tehi kahata sagarbhā
Binā mantra soi jāni agarbhā.

Rākhai āni prāna bhū māhī
Tṛkuṭī dhyāna kāla bhau nāhī.

Prānāpāna karai gatirōdhana
Prānāyāma sōi aghaśōdhana

Sanē sanē sādhai ehi bhāṭī
Karu abhyāsa devasa aru rāṭī.

Pūrata tajata rōki jaba dharaī
Pañca sāta rasa rasa saba karaī.

Jaisē nayā ghōra gaja hōī
Dauraba cāla sikhāvai kōī.

Ēkahi bēra karai haṭha ṭhānī
Sō jōgī rōgī hoe jānī.

Prāna apāna bāyu sama dhārai
Nāsā madhya madhya sañcārai.

Mana aru pavana tṛkuṭa kari mēlā
Rahai unamanahi dhyāna akēlā.

Jōgī jahā karai nija bāsā
Dēkhai parama jōti parakāsā

Anahada sunai jōti mana lāvai
Ajapā japai bahuri nahi āvai.

Kāla karma kī kāṭai phāsī
Sō jōgī kahiē abināsī.

He should keep his mouth closed, so that the breath may not escape, and by that time he should utter the spell (of *praṇava*) sixty-four times. Then he should leave the breath by the left nostril, covering a time occupied by thirty-two repetitions of the spell.

The process of inhaling is called *pūraka*, that of holding the breath, *kumbhaka*, and that of exhaling, *rēcaka*. These constitute what is known as *prāṇāyāma*.

When the *prāṇāyāma* is accompanied by spells, it is known as *sagarbha*. When it is devoid of spells, it is known as *agarbha*. The ascetic should store up his vitality in the eye-brows. By the meditations of the *tṛkuṭī*, there is no fear of death.

If one controls the movements of *prāṇa* and *apāna* (two of the life-winds) the same is *prāṇāyāma*, which is a purifier of sins. It ought to be gradually practised thus. It should be repeated day and night.

When inhalation, exhalation, and holding of breath are being practised, they ought to be done each five or seven times. They ought to be done slowly, as one (slowly) teaches a rough horse or elephant the art of galloping or trotting.

If one does it in one stretch by force, know the same ascetic to have become sickly. One should hold the life-winds *prāṇa* and *apāna* in equal quantities, and he should cause them to flow in the nose.

Having brought together the mind and the life-winds in the *tṛkuṭi* he should remain in a detached mood, with a centred meditation. Where the ascetic has made his abode, there he sees the dazzling ray of light.

One who hears the *anahada* (S. *anāhata*) sound, and concentrates his mind at the ray of light, and utters the unutterable and does not come back, and who breaks the tie of Kāla and Karma, he should be called an immortal ascetic.

Dina dina mana tana mē bilamāvai
Rākhai rōki rōki jāha dhāvai.

Tana cañcala tau cañcala pavanā
Pavana capala tē mana kō gavanā.

Mana kē calē bindama cali jāī
Binda calē bahu buddhi nasāī.

Buddhi gaē hoe sabai bigārā
Nityānitya bibēka bicārā.

Bayaṭhē bāraha aṅgula bāī
Nikasai dasa bhītara kō jāī.

Dvai dvai aṅgula ṭūṭata svāsā
Tā tē hōta dēha kō nāsā.

Sōvata calata aṭhāraha jāhī
Causaṭhi dhāvata mithu(na)nha māhī.

Sādhana pavana jōga karu ēī
Rākhai rōki jāna nahi dēī.

Sō jōgī jivai bahu kālā
Dēkhai Lāla jagata kē khyālā.

Halukā alapa ahāra karāī
Bhūkhahi marai na pēṭa bharāī.

P. 233.

Ābila lavana khaṭāī chāḍai
Kēvala dūdha bhāta maha māḍai.

Jāgata rahai na bahutai sōvai
Baiṭhā rahata na phiratahi khōvai.

Rākhai bīda jatana kari lēī
Apanē jāna jāna nahi dēī.

dōhā

Kaḍuka kalaha maithuna saena
Tṛsanā bhōjana sañca
Ghaṭai ghaṭāē Lāla ē
Baḍhai baḍhāē pañca.

He should, day by day, pay his attention to the body, and hold it back when it goes elsewhere. When the body is tremulous, the life-winds will be unsteady, and by the life-winds being unsteady, the mind will be roaming (from one object to another).

By the mind being unsteady, the *bindu* or the seminal fluid begins to move, and by the moving of the seminal fluid, the intellect considerably diminishes. By the vanishing of the intellect, everything goes astray, and especially the power to distinguish between the eternal and ephemeral is lost.

The life-wind diminishes by twelve *aṅgula* (the thickness of a finger) by remaining seated, when you inhale, it diminishes by ten, and when you break your respiration, each time you lose by two. Therefore, the body perishes.

During sleep and during walk, it diminishes by eighteen, and by sixty-four in the course of running and in the course of sexual union. Therefore, you should perform this kind of *yōga*, *i.e.*, of controlling the life-winds. You should hold them and not let them go.

Such an ascetic lives a long life and sees the movements of the world. He should eat very light food, and that also in a small quantity; neither should he starve, nor should he fill his belly.

He should keep away the acid, the saline and the sour food; he should eat only milk mixed with boiled rice. He should (generally) keep awake, and should not sleep much. He should (generally) remain seated, nor should he lose by loitering. He should preserve the seminal fluid with care, and should not lose it in his knowledge.

Ring-worm, quarrel, sexual union, sleep, desire for eating, and storing these five become less by lessening and increase by increasing.

dōhā

P. 281

Nripa kaha asa āgē bhaē
Dātā yā jaga māhi
Lāla putra ehi bidhi diē
Tinha mē hamakō āhi.

caupāī

Aurau sunahu (?) jasa jākō
Śiva ausīna nāma rahō tākō
Jagya bahuta kīnhē tehi rājā
Padabī lēhu Indra kē kājā.
Karau na dāna kari dēva kahāvai
Sau jaga bhaē Indrapada pāvai.
Anta jagya rahe karata bhuālā
Bhau tehi dēkhi Indra kaha jvālā.
Liē Bṛhaspati gurahi bolāī
Hamarī anta avasthā āī.
Jōrē hātha dīna hoe bhākhā
Jau bala hōi kachū tau rākhā.
Suragura kahata calē taha jāī
Jagya karata tehi dēhi ḍigāī.
Rājā dayāvanta suni ata hī
Jīva dayā kachu karata hai tatahī.
Mai kapōta hoi calata hau āgū
Tuma saiyāna pāchu hoi lāgū.
Parihau jāe sarana so daihai
Mārata mōhi bacāe so laihai.
Taba tai kahu eha bhaccha hamārā
Rājā dēhu na karaba bicārā.

P. 282

Pacchī hōi dōu uṭhi dhāyē
Rājā jagya karata taha āē.

P. 281.

The king says, "In the past, such generous men have been in this world, that they have given their sons in this manner. What am I amongst them?"

Hear more about him. His fame was . . . His name was Śiva Ausīna. That king performed many sacrifices with the object of attaining the office of Indra.

(He said to himself), "I do not give alms. One who gives alms is called a deity, and by performing a hundred sacrifices, he attains the office of Indra. (The king with this idea commenced the series of sacrifices.) While he was performing the last of the series, Indra saw it, and was inflamed (with rage).

He summoned his preceptor, Bṛhaspati, and said, "The end of my life has arrived." And with joined hands and in a suppliant mood he requested, "If you have any power, do protect me."

The preceptor of the deities said, "Let us go there, and while the king is performing the sacrifice, let us move him (from the path of virtue). I have heard that he is of an extremely kind disposition, and that whenever any being asks him his protection, he is generous to him (in offering the same).

"I am leading you in the guise of a dove, and you follow me in the guise of a hawk. I shall fall before him (when chased by you), and he will offer me his protection, and will save me from death.

"Then you would say, 'This is my food. King, you should hand it over to me, without any hitch." In the guise of birds, then, they both leapt up, and flew to the place where the king was performing the sacrifice.

Jhapaṭi saiyāna kapōta girāvā
Rājā kē kōchē maha āvā.

Tākō dēkhi dayā jiva āī
Racchā kiyō liyō hiya lāī.

Kahai saiyāna nṛpati taji dēhū
Bhaccha āju pāyō mai ēhū.

Eha ahāra pāvai tau karihai
Nā tau pañca jiva hama murihai.

Mārai pañca ēka kī racchā
Eha kaho kauna dharma hai acchā.

Rājā kahai aura saba sajihai
Saranāgata āē nahi tajihai.

Ēka vōra saba dharamahi kījai
Ēka vōra jiva dānahi dījai.

Jiva dayā bahu bhāti bakhānā
Māsu ahārī ēka na jānā.

Diḍha mata jāni saina asa bhākhē
Apanō māsu dēu ehi rākhē.

Aṛē saiyāna bhalō kahi ētō
Dēhau māsu māgu cahai jētō.

Kāheko adhika lēba hama rājā
Dēhu kapōta samāna so kājā.

Rājā mana utasāha baḍhāvā
Apanī māsu utāri caḍhāvā.

Līni churā.....jyau chōlē
Rāma Rāma kahi saba tahā tōlē.

Taba taha guru kapōta hoi baisā
Palarā adhika adhika hoi taisā.

Brahmā Bisna Rudra tahā āē
Dēva danuja muni dēkhana dhāē.

Chīli chāli nṛpa māsu caḍhāvā
Dēkhi dēkhi saba acaraja pāvā.

The hawk pounced upon the dove, and brought it down. The dove fell into the lap of the king. Seeing the plight of the dove, the king felt compassionate. He offered it his protection, and clasped it to his heart.

The hawk says, "King, leave this dove, for only today I have got my food. After I have got it, I will satisfy my hunger; otherwise five lives including mine, will perish.

"You hereby kill five, and save one. Tell me, what good you are doing by saving the dove." The king said, "I will do everything, but I will not leave one who has sought my protection."

"Place at one end (of the scale) all the virtuous deeds you do, and at the other end the saving of one life (and both will weigh equal). Kindness to the creatures has been praised in various terms, none of which are known to the flesh-eaters."

Knowing the king to be firm in his determination, the hawk said, "If you protect this dove, give me your own flesh." The king said, "You have well said, I will give my flesh however much you may ask for."

The hawk said, "Why should I ask for more? Only give me flesh equal to the weight of the dove, and that will do." The king gathered courage and began to weigh his own flesh.

As soon as he took up the knife to take out flesh from his body, every one present there exclaimed, 'Rāma, Rāma!' On the scale, the dove sat, having become abnormally heavy, and the pan of the scale sank and sank, every time becoming heavier and heavier.

Brahmā, Viṣṇu and Rudra came over there: the deities, the demons, and the sages ran to see (what was going to happen). The king placed his flesh on the pan, having removed it from his bones, and everyone was struck with surprise when he saw it.

Asa kō aura karai kina kīnhā
Yā bidhi tana kāhū nahi dīnhā.

Jā tana sō tana lagē anēkā
Asva gaja nara kō karai bibēkā.

Jō tana bahuta tapani tapi pāyō
Sō tana para tana lāgi gavāyō.

Jō tana bahuta jatana kari rākhō
Rāja dēha durlabha bhai bhākhō.

Bhūkhana basana aragajā lāgā
Sō tana nṛpa tṛna sama kari tyāgā.

Sundara tana jāsō sukha mānī
Banitā bahuta rahata lapaṭānī.

Gārī dēhi risāe risāī
Kaikai tōhi kavana mati āī.

P. 283

Marō Maithirā dusṭa kaṭhōrī
Srāpahi tāhi āguri kari phōrī.

Jinha kē Rāma lagē anabhāē
Tinha apanō paralōka nasāē.

Rāmahi bana enha dīnhā hōī
Aganahi kahana lagē saba kōī.

Srāpahi pasu pañchī sira tarahū
Rōvana marana karai gharabarahū.

Chaṭapaṭāhi jimi jala binu mīnā
Ucharahi mīna hōhi jala hīnā.

Sajjana sukhada mitra rahe kōī
Girē pachāra khāe suni sōī.

Hinahināhi ghōrē dukha karahī
Naina nīra bhari bhari giri parahī.

Rāmahi jāta dēkhi pachatāē
Hāthinha tōri jajīra bahāē.

Who else would do it? Who else has done it? Nowhere has anyone given his body in this fashion, the body with which are attached so many other bodies, like those of horses, elephants, and men—who can count them?

"The body which was obtained after having done many penances, the same body the king spared for another body. The body which you keep with such a great care, and say that it is very difficult to attain the body of a king.

"And the body which was covered with ornaments, and clothes, and which was smeared with perfumed pastes, the same body the king gave away like a blade of grass.

The beautiful body from which numerous maidens derived pleasure, and therefore they clung to it. (Hereafter something seems to have been missed).

They in anger call Kaikēyī by evil names and say, "Kaikēyī, what didst thou think?"

"May extremely wicked Mantharā die!" They curse her by twisting their fingers. They said, "They, whom Rāma was not dear, have lost their heavens."

Pointing to Agana(?), everyone began to say, "This must be the man who sent Rāma to wilderness." Animals, birds, stones ('Sirā'?) and trees, all curse (Kaikēyī), and even the houses wept and lamented.

They were restless like the fish without water, as the fish toss up and down when water (of the tank) diminishes. There were gentlemen who were friends; when they heard the news, they fell aback.

The horses (of the king's stable) neighed and wept; they filled their eyes with water and fell down. When the elephants saw Rāma going (to the wilderness), they felt their helplessness; they broke the chains away.

Ḍārahi dhūri sīsa gaja dhūnī
Jiyaba Rāma binu bāta bihūnī.
Kalasā dhajā na dhīraje dharahī
Mahalanha para tē giri giri parahī.

Ṭhaura ṭhaura murachala bhaharānā
Girē kōṭa Rāmahi gae jānā.
Jinha jaha sunē tahā tē daurē
Kau ratha kau paga kau caḍhi ghōrē.

Panthahi rōki rōki rahe ṭhāḍhē
Calana na dēhi mōha ati bāḍhē.
Keu dē kɀyā paraga jau daihau
Māri hamahi āgē taba jaihau.

Keu mahārājahi kahi samujhāī
Rāmahi ajahu phēri lehu jāī.
Parajā pañca Rāma sāga jaihai
Kāpara amala Bharata nɀpa kaihai.

dōhā

Lāla subhaṭa sēvaka kahai
hōē kōu mahārāja.
Hama na johāraba Rāma binu
rājai kīnha akāja.

caupāī

Dāsī dāsa kahai binu Rāmahi
Aba kō aura sābhārai kāmahi.
Gaḍhata paḍhata rahe dēta jo lētē
Taji taji kāja calē saba tētē.

Bhicchuka gunī kahai kahā jaiē
Rāma samāna dāni kaha paiē.
Lāgata āju Ajōdhyā kaisī
Sūna masāna bhayāvana jaisī.

They, excessively, threw dust on their heads, and said that it was untrue to think of living without Rāma. The jars and banners could not remain unmoved. From the (tops of the) palaces, they fell down.

At various places the *chaurī* came down, and the boundary-walls of the city fell down when they knew that Rāma had gone to wilderness. Whoever heard the news, he ran from the place where he was, either on a chariot or on foot, or again on the horse-back.

They barred the passage, and would not allow Rāma to proceed, so greatly they were feeling (his departure). Some sweared, "If you move a pace on, you will first kill us and then go forward."

Some requested the king, "Do bring Rāma back, even today, for the subjects and the gentry will go with Rāma, then, over whom will Bharata reign?"

The holder of the servants said, "Whoever may be the king, we shall not bow down to any one except Rāma. It is the king who has done the mischief."

The maidservants and the servants said, "Without Rāma, who can take the management (of the state) in his hands?"

All those who were (doing any business) either making vessels, or reading, or were giving, or were taking, left their business and went to the spot.

The beggars and artisans said, "Where are we to go now? Where would we find a man as generous as Rāma. Today, Ajodhyā is looking as lonely and as dreadful as the cremation ground."

Keu kaha rāti dēkhi hama sapanā
Ghara taji taji sabahī calē apanā.

Khāna pāna sāhana sudhi bisarī
Paradē rahata nāri sou nisarī.

P. 284.

Rājā parē sōca kē sāgara
Rānī sabai bhaī dukha āgara.

Jñānī ēka Basiśṭa sayānā
Rāmahi kahū gaē nahi jānā.

Sarajū birahini bhai dukha mānā
Rahi gai bahatē nīra jhurānā.

Thakē gañja kaṭarā bājārā
Uṭhi gai banika bhaī haṭatārā.

Sabakē sōca sōga bhae ēhī
Rahihai kavana bhāti Bayadēhī.

Sahasanha laccha sakhī mē khēlī.
Kaisē bana Siya rahaba akēlī.

Keu kahai Rāma rahana kē nāhī
Sītahi bhalā chāḍi jaū jāhī.

Barajai sāsu kahai samujhāī
Sītā rahu gharahī jani jāī.

Kā jō Rāma pūta bana jaihai
Kusala chēma bēgē phiri aihai.

Jāta hai chāḍi bāpa aru maiyā
Tē kā kahahi rahaigē bhaiyā.

Dēsa bidēsa jāta hai kēū
Tiyau saṅga phirata kā tēū.

Sītā kahati māe sunu bātā
Tiya ko jīva pati kīnha bidhātā

Jenha patibrata nēma kari liē
Tē pati binu kaunē bidhi jiē.

Sēvā karai sadā rahai saṅgā
Agyā kabahu karai nahi bhaṅgā.

Some said that they had dreamt in night that every one had left his home (and accompanied Rāma), that he had forgotten eating, drinking and bathing. Even the ladies who were in *purdah*, left *purdah* and came out.

The king was amidst the sea of cares, and all the queens had become abodes of misery. There was one very wise man Vasiṣṭha who did not think that Rāma had gone elsewhere.

The Sarayū became deserted and felt the departure. Her water evaporated while she was flowing. The quarters, the streets, and the markets of the city looked worn and weary. The businessmen had departed and there was a complete strike (*hartāl*) in the city.

Everyone was lamenting, "How would Vaidēhī stay there? She has played amidst thousands of tens of thousands of playmates, how will the same Sītā live there alone?"

Some said, "Rāma is not going to stay there. It would have been better if he had left behind him his wife Sītā." The mother-in-law of Sītā forbade her (from going to the wilderness) and said, "Sītā, stay at home, and do not go (with Rāma)."

"How does it matter if my son, Rāma, goes to the wilderness? He will soon come back safely. He is going (to the wilderness), leaving his father and mother; vainly do they say that he will stay there.

"When somebody goes to a foreign country, does the wife also accompany him to that land?" Sītā says:

"Mother, hear me. For the wife, the Maker has made her husband her very life-spirit.

"A lady who has taken the vow of *pātibrata*, how can she live without the husband? She should always serve him and keep his company, and she should never disobey him.

Pārabatī Lachamī Brahmānī
Piya kē aṅgahi māha samānī.
Pati kē aradha aṅga rahai sōī
Aradhaṅgī kahiyata kinha kōī.
Jajña dāna tīrathahu Purānā
Banitā sāga lai karaba bidhānā.
Bānaprasta gṛhasta āsramā
Banitā hī sō rahata hai dharamā.
Rāma calata Siya calī sabhāgī
Jaisē chāha saṅga hī lāgī.

dōhā

Pṛtama saṅga banabāsa bhala
Sahaba sīta bhala ghāma
Lāla piyārē piya binā
Indralōka kehi kāma.

.....

Sukula paccha kī pañcamī
Phāguna māsahi jāna
Kiyē payāna Avadha tē
Lāla gamana mana māna.

Pārvatī, Lakṣmī and Brahmāṇī, all are one with the body of their respective lords. They live in the half of the body of their respective lords. Does not everybody call them '*ardhāṅgī*' or occupying half the body (of their lord)?

"It is enjoined (by the scriptures) that sacrifices, charity and visits to holy shrines should be done in the company of the wife. *Vānaprastha* and *Gṛhastha* stages of life are maintained with wife."

With the departure of Rāma, Sītā also made her departure as the shadow goes side by side (with the object).

Exile is a blessing (to a lady) when her lord is with her whether it is cold or it is sunny. Lāla says, 'Of what worth (to a lady) is the *Indra-lōka* without her dear lord?'

... ...

Know the fifth day of the bright half of the month of Phāguna to be the day on which (Rāma), Lāla, made his departure from Avadha, of his own sweet will.

(b) Prēma Pragāsa

BY

DHARAṆĪ DĀSA

[Text from a manuscript completed on 21st date of Bhādõ, year 1281 (Faslī), A.D. 1873, by Mahanta Rāmadāsa of Mājhī for Jānakīdāsī alias Baratā kuāra of the same place.]

Śrī Gaṇēśāya namaḥ

Śrī pōthī Prēma pragāsa

Prathamahi paramēsvara kō nāmu
Jō saba santa karahi bisrāmu.
Alakha akhaṇḍita agama apārā
Jinha kīnhō eha sakala pasārā.
Sakala srisṭi kara bhōjan dātā
Juga juga abicala ēka bidhātā.
Sarba karma sō kartā karaī
Bāura nara aurana sira dharaī.
Jō jana tana mana prabhu rāga rātā
Tinha sō bilaga na rahata bidhātā.

bisrāma 1

Bīśambhara bisarāvai,
sō nara kūra kujāna
Jo hita sō cita lāvai,
pāvai pada nirbāna.

caupāi

Gura mahimā ati agama apārā
Gura binu būṛi marai savasārā.
Gura binu puni puni āvai jāī
Gura binu bhava jala parai bhulāī.
Gura binu pāpa pūni kara āsā
Gura binu parai kāla kē phāsā.
Gura binu dēi (na) dēvā sēvā
Gura binu milai na mukti kai bhēvā.
Gura binu lōkācārahi lāgā
Gura binu saṁsaya bharama na bhāgā.

Translation

Salutation to Śrī Gaṇēśa

The book Prēma pragāsa (Light of Love) (begins).

First (let us utter) the name of the Almighty who gives relief to all saints ; He is Invisible, Perfect, Unfathomable (and) Boundless, He is one who has spread over all this (universe). He gives food to the whole creation, in every cycle of time He is Immovable, the Creator. He, the Doer, does all acts (while) the foolish people attribute them to others. The man who dyes himself in the Lord's colour (affection), from him the Creator never remains separate.

bisrāma 1

The man who forgets the Protector of the universe is an idiot and ignorant, (while) he who puts Him in his heart with regard obtains the place of Emancipation.

caupāi

The greatness of the teacher is unfathomable, unbounded ; without the teacher one may get drowned in the world (-ocean). Without the teacher one comes and goes again and again ; without the teacher one gets lost in the waters of existence. Without the teacher one expects sin and merit ; without him one falls in the snare of Death. Without the teacher, one does not offer service to the deities ; without him one does not reach the secrets of Liberation. Without the teacher, one sticks to worldly affairs ; without him doubts and illusions do not go away.

bisrāma 2

Gura mahimā kō kahi sakē,
Gura dēvana kō dēva
Jō gura tattu lakhāiā
Dharanī sō gura sēva.

caupāi

Taba puni sakala sādhu sira nāvō
Jākō kriyā abhaya pada pāvō.
Jō budhivanta santa jaga māhī
Binatī kareū sakala jana pāhī.
Āpu ukti nahī ākhara kareū
... ...
Sō ākhara jani hāsa laḍāvahu
Jō laghu hōē samujhi sudhārahu.
Mūrakha kē mohi sōca na āvē
Hasē ki bilakhē jō mana bhāvē.

bisrāma 3

Paḍhata gunata sura sādhu jana,
khaṇḍita lēba merāi.
Sughara hātha para pāthara,
mōla bahuta ṭhaharāi.

aslōka

Pañcavaṭī ca udayē purasya
śrīpurē madhyē ma tathā
Jaḥ jānāti caturasthānaṃ
dharanī tasya namaskrita.

caupāi

Harijana sēvaka jahā ke bāsā
Nāma ṭhāma guna karahi pragāsā.
Madhya dīpa mājhī asthānā
Surapura sama kē sarisa nidhānā.

bisrāma 2

Who can describe the teacher's greatness ; he is the god of gods, O Dharaṇī, serve the teacher who has shown the quintessence.

caupāi

Then again I bow my head before all the saints, by their action (favour) I may obtain the place free from fears. Whoever are wise and saintly in the world, to all people I make a prayer. I am not putting down my own ideas in these words . . . . . Please do not laugh at these words, whatever be deficient, please correct it after understanding (the same). I do not mind the fool ; he may laugh or be displeased, whatever he likes.

bisrāma 3

The gods, saints on reading and pondering over this will put in whatever is deficient; a stone placed on beautiful hands fetches considerable price.

śloka

Dharaṇī, bow to him who knows the abode of the wise in the middle of Śrīpura town at the entrance of which there is Pañcavaṭī (?).

caupāi

The servant of the people of Hari reveals the name, surroundings and qualities of the place where he resides. In the middle of the Dvīpa, there is a place Mājhī, like the city of gods.

Cārihu vōra saghana amarāū
Tāla taḍāga kahō (-ō ?) kita nāū.
Jahā tahā puhupa bāṭikā lāū
Byāpī kūpa tahā bahuta badhāū.
Dēva (a-) sthala bahu dēkhie tahā
Harikō caracā nisu dina tahā.

bisrāma 4

Bastu kahā lagi baranō,
jahālagi hāṭa bikāhi.
Ēka devasa jaha dēkha,
janmo na bisarē tāhi.

caupāi

Śrīvāstava śrīpati kō dāsā
Karahī sahita parivāra nevāsa.
Ṭikaitadāsa tahā tapa-āgara
Kāetha kula mahimā ati sāgara.
Parasrāma suta tinha kahā bhaiū
Sujasa bēli jinha basudhā kaiū.
Biṣṇu upāsika ati sura gyānī
Nirmala jasa cahu disā bakhānī.
Patanī tāsu birāmā māī
Purabila karanī bahuta kamāī.
Daā dharma diḍha dūnō prānī
Nirmala jasa cahu disā bakhānī.
Pāca putra bidhi tinha kahā daiū
Pañcana māha ujāgira kieū.
Tina kē nāma kahata hau jānī
Bipra bēda mata kaheu bakhānī.
Tihakē nāma kahō (-ō) bilagāi
Jātē samujhi parē nara lōī.

Which place can equal it ? On all the four sides, there is a thick mango-grove ; the tanks and lakes, how shall I give their names. Here and there are flower-gardens planted, many wells and water-reservoirs have been constructed. One sees many temples there wherein people discourse upon Hari, day and night.

bisrāma 4

How far can I describe the articles that sell there in the market; whosoever has seen it even once, will not forget it throughout life.

caupāi

The Śrīvāstavas, slaves of Hari, reside there with their families. There (lived) Ṭikaita Dāsa, an abode of austerities and an ocean of the greatness of Kayastha family. A son, Paraśu Rāma was born to him, who spread the creeper of good fame on this Earth. He was a devotee of Viṣṇu and had knowledge of the gods; his spotless fame was praised in all the four quarters. His wife was mother Birāmā ; she had earned considerable merit in previous births. Both the living beings were steadfast in compassion and virtue, their blameless glory went about in all the four directions. The Creator gave them five sons and made them prominent amongst the people. I give their names, (as) the Brāhmaṇa elucidates the doctrine of the Vedas. I mention their names individually, so that the people in general may understand (the same).

bisrāma 5

Lachirāma vō Chatrapati,
Dharanī Bēnīrāma.
Kulmani sahita pañca jana,
sādhu sāghati bisrāma.

caupāi

Dharanī kē mana anubhava bhaiū
Prēma-pragāsa kathā eka ṭhaneū.
Sahijahi jīva upajō anurāgā
Sō antahu tē cihuki janu jāgā.
Utapati kahō kathā kichu āgē
Bhagti bhāva amī antara lāgē.
Saraguniā sarguna lai lāvē
Nirguniā nirgunāhi sunāvē.
Saṁmata satrā sō cali gaiū
Tēraha adhika tāhi para bhaiū.
Śāhajahā chōḍī duniāī
Pasarī aurāgajeba dohāī.
Sōca bisāri ātamā jāgī
Dharanī dhareu bhēkha bairāgī.

bisrāma 6

Pukhya pañcamī sukula pacha,
pakha nichatra gura bāra.
Tehi dina kathā arambha bhau
mēhasi nagra majhāra.

bisrāma 257

Sāhasa tē sidhi pāiē,
jō mana niścē hōi.
Binu sāhasa Dharanī kahē,
sīdhi na pāvē kōi.

caupāi

Barisa devasa ehi bidhi cali gaiū
Mili mantrī rājē mata kieū.

bisrāma 5

Lachirāma and Chatrapati, Dharaṇī, Bēnīrāma; with Kulamani they were five men (who obtained) relief in the company of saints.

caupāi

Dharaṇī had an Experience in his mind, the story Prēmapragāsa occurred (in the mind). Naturally love came to the soul, it appeared as if it flared up inside. Now further I describe the genesis of the story, with devotion-nectar within (me). The devotee of the attribute-full (God) brings up the attribute-full while the worshipper of the attributeless talks about the attributeless. The Saṃvat year 1700 passed off, thirteen years over and above it have elapsed. Shāhjahān gave up worldliness and the call of the protection of Aurangzeb went round. The soul gave up all anguish and became awake, Dharaṇī put on the guise of a person disaffected from worldly affairs.

bisrāma 6

The fifth day of Pausha, in the bright fortnight, the Puṣya (?) asterism, Thursday; on that day this story was begun in the city of Mēhasi.

bisrāma 257

If there is a determination in the mind, one's wishes are accomplished by means of courage; Dharaṇī says, no one obtains accomplishment without courage.

caupāi

In this way, days and years passed off; the king and the minister together had counsel.

Kahe rājā aba cētahu rāju
Kuvarahi dēhu tilaka dida rāju.
Rāja kāja aba karī kumārā
Mai nija nāma japō karatārā.
Tehi dina kī bidhivata jata cīnhā
Sō bidhi sakala sampuraṇa kīnhā.
Brāhmana bōli gharī ṭhaharāī
Apanē hātha tilaka dihu rāī.
Pahilē nripati nripati āpu ca nāvā
Tau puni saka(la) śriṣṭi sira nāvā.

bisrāma 258

Citrasēna mahathā bhavō,
saṅginha māna baḍhāi.
Kuarī bhai paṭarānī,
Dharanī jana guna gāi.

caupāi

Jō jana kathā paḍhē mana lāī
Sumati baḍhē durmati bahi jāī.
Jō jana sunē sravana cita lāī
Tākō kartā Rāma sahāī.
Jō paḍhi ānahi kathā sunāvē
Tākī manasā dēva pujāvē.
Likhi likhāi jō ānahi dēi
Tiratha barata phala baiṭhē lēi.
Apanē hātha jē kathā utārē
Tākē bāḍhē gyāna apārē.

bisrāma 259

Rasika paḍhē rasa ūpajē,
mūrakha upajē gyāna.
Kādara nara hō sūruā,
jōgī pada nirbāna.

Pōthī Prēma pragāsa sampūraṇa.

The king says: 'Now look to the kingdom, give coronation to the Prince, give him kingship. The Prince will now perform the king's duties, I shall mutter the name of my Creator.' Whatever ceremonies were recognised for the day, they were all fulfilled. Having called the Brāhmaṇa and settled the auspicious moment, the king coronated (the Prince) with his own hand. The king made the (new) king bow first to himself and then to the whole creatien.

bīsrāma 258

Citrasēna became the Lord, honouring his companions, the princess became the coronated queen; Dharaṇī says the people sang praises.

caupāi

Whosoever mindfully reads the story, his good understanding increases and evil understanding flows away. The man who with his heart hears it, is helped by the Creator, Rāma. He who, after reading it, recites it to another, the God fulfills his aspiration. He who writes it out and hands it over to another obtains the fruit of (visiting) sacred places and of (keeping) vows. He who copies the story in his own writing, his knowledge increases limitlessly.

bisrāma 259

If the man of tastes reads it, he derives pleasure. The fools derive knowledge, the timid become brave and the *yōgī* obtains Emancipation.

The book Light of Love (is) completed.

(c) Gura Anyāsa

BY

ŚIVA NĀRĀYAṆA

[Text collated from two manuscripts:—

MS. A mentions no date of writing but as colophon it has the date of transfer to Rāmsēvak Rām Mahant in the year 1307.

MS. B completed in 1290, Jēṭha, dark fortnight, 14th date, Friday; given to Bābā Saburī Dāsa; written by Ājōra Rāma.]

Santasarana

ṣantapaṭī jī sahāe

Sabada grantha Gura Anyāsa arambha hōta santabacana pramāna.

dōhā

Karatā sabha guna kāra kā
Gunakārana bhanbhāra,
Srisṭi-savārana cāriphala
Cālacalana bevahāra.

Caracā tākī jō sunai
Caurāsī sō bāca,
Gura bina sō nahi pāvai
Bina gura milata na sāca.

caupāi

Gura Anyāsa kahata jaba ānī
Taba gati mukuti hōta hai prānī.

Gura kē sabada pāi hoe santā
Bina gura sabada na pāvata antā.

Gura kē kripā te pari kichu būjhī
Bhau anusāra pantha paru sūjhī.

Kripā kīnha taba ādi kumārī
Kaṇṭhē baisi gyāna deti bhārī.

Gyāna hōta taba agama apārā
Taba Anyāsa kathā anusārā.

Sammata satraha sai ekānabē hōī
(E)gāraha sai sana paitālisa sōī.

Agahana māsa paccha ujiārā
Tithi tirōdasī sukra se bārā.

Translation

Refuge of the saints

May the Lord of saints help

The Book of Word, Gura Anyāsa, begins ; the Saint's word is authority.

Dōhā

The Creator of all qualitative things, the cause of qualities, the genesis (?) of existence, the decorator of the creation, the (bestower of) four fruits and the dispenser of worldly affairs ; one who hears discourse about him escapes the eighty-four (lacs of existences ?) ; without the teacher He cannot be obtained, without him none can obtain the Truth.

Caupāi

When Gura Anyāsa is recited, the living being gets deliverance. By obtaining the teacher's words, one becomes a saint ; without the teacher's word one does not reach the goal. By the teacher's favour something is comprehended, the path according to existence becomes visible. Then the primeval maid took compassion and sitting in the throat bestows weighty knowledge. Then unfathomable, unbounded knowledge comes and the *Anyāsa* story is begun. There was the samvat year 1791 and the Fasli year 1145. The month (was) Agahana, the bright half, the 13th date and Friday.

Tehi dina niramaya kathā punītā
Gura Anyāsa kathā sabha hītā.
Sāha Mahammada Dillī sulatānā
Kāsī chatra Āgarē hai thānā.

dōhā

Tehi samai mō Sīvanarāena
Baṅgadēsa cali āu
Kaṇṭhē baisi Sarōsatī
Kathā Anyāsa banāu.

caupāi

Janmabhumī hai kanauj̇i dēsā
Karma basī sē Baṅga parabēsā.
Tīratha paraāga subā j̇ē hōī
Tehi kē amala Gāj̇ipura sōī.
Gāj̇īpura sarakāra kahāvē
Sube pariāga amala sei pāvē.
Jaharābāda paraganā āhī
Asakarana tappā tehi māhī.
Sē asathāna Cadavāra kahāvē
Sīvanarāena janma taha pāvai.
Janma pāi bhau gura kē māā
Taba Anyāsa asa kathā banāā.

dōhā

Āsapāsa Cadavāra maha
Gāj̇ipura sarakāra
Bunda Naravanī kahata sabha
Bāgharāe kē bāra.

caupāi

Dukhaharana nāma sē gurū kahāvē
Baṛē bhāga sē darasana pāvē.

On that day the *Gura Anyāsa* story, sacred and beneficial to all, was composed. Shāh Muhammad was the Sultān of Delhi. Āgare (Agra?) is the place in the region of Kāśī.

dōhā

At that time Śiva Nārāyaṇa came away to Baṅga country (Bengal), Goddess Sarasvatī sat in (my) throat and I composed the Anyāsa story.

caupāi

The birthplace is Kanauj country, by the force of deeds I entered the Baṅga country. The sacred place Prayāg is the Sūbā (province), under it is Gāzīpur. Gāzīpur is known as Sarkār, it obtains orders from the Prayāg province. There is a *pargaṇā*, Jaharābad, in it there is a *Tappā* (named) Asakarana. Its place is called Cā davār, there Śiva Nārāyaṇa was born. Having been born, he obtained the loving pity of the teacher and then he composed the Anyāsa story.

dōhā

All around Cādavār there is the Sarkār of Gāzīpur; the people of this place, the descendants of Bāgharāi, are called Naravanī (Rajputs).

caupāi

The teacher (of Śiva Nārāyaṇa) is known Dukhaharaṇa by name, by great luck one obtains his sight.

dōhā

Tinha kē carana ke cita dharē
Bhau Sīvanarāena dāsa
Dukhaharana nāma kē sumiratē
pāvata niscala bāsa.

caupāi

Gura kē nāma hiā mahā rākhī
Ehi bica santa sabhai kehu bhākhī.

Gura kē sabada hiā mahā gaeū
Sīvanarāena cali tahā bhaeū.

Cali phiri kē dēkhata sāvasārā
Jānata ghaṭa ghaṭa gurū piārā.

Eka dina santa sabhā maha gaeū
Carcā sabada hōta tahā rahaeū.

Caracā sunata bahuta sukha pāī
Sīvanarāena suni mana lāī.

Sunata sunata mora mana patiāī
Dibbi gyāna taba cita mahā pāī.

Gura kē caracā sunata punītā
Santa kahata gura nāma le nītā.

Sē suni sravana bahuta sukha pāī
Sunē dhyāna kari ante na jāī.

Kahata ki gurū bisna sama jānā
Jānahu aṁsa ēka nahi ānā.

Gura kē sumirata bisna sahāī
Binu gura dāā bisna na pāī.

Jaba gura dāā karata mana māhī
Taba sikha siddha hōta chana māhī.

dōhā

Jē pāā gura sabada tē
Sē kichu likhā banāe
Paṇḍita jana sē mīnatī
Bhulā māpha kari pāe.

dōhā

By meditating upon his feet, Śiva Nārāyaṇa became his slave; as soon as he remembers the name of Dukhabaraṇa, he obtains permanent abode.

caupāi

Keeping the teacher's name in the heart, in the meantime speaking to all the saints, with the teacher's words in the heart, Śiva Nārāyaṇa moved away from the place. He wanders about and sees the world, he knows that the teacher is dear to every body. One day he went to the assembly of the saints, there discourses on the Word were going on. On hearing the discourses Śiva Nārāyaṇa felt very happy and took it to heart. Hearing again and again my mind came to have faith and then in the heart I obtained supreme (godly) knowledge. The teacher's sacred discourse is heard and the saints always utter the teacher's name and talk of it. On hearing it the ears feel very happy ; on hearing meditation does not cease. It is said that the teacher should be taken as Viṣṇu, take him to be His part, nothing else. On remembering the teacher, one is helped by Viṣṇu, without the teacher's compassion one cannot have Viṣṇu. When the teacher becomes compassionate, the pupil in a moment becomes a *siddha* (perfect).

dōhā

Whatever I obtained from the teacher's words, that I have composed and written down ; I pray to the learned : may I obtain pardon for my mistakes'?

Sunata se sīvanarāena
Kahata se gurū hamāra
Paṇḍita jana sē mīnatī
Būjhaba ehī bicāra.

Jē paṛhē se to agama gati
Sunē mukuti kai rāha
Ura antara suni kē dharē
Bhau jala pāu nibāha.

Phēri na āvata jagata sē
Pāvata nihacala bāsa
Kahata santa mana jāni kē
Sīvanarāena dāsa.

Sabhaī khōje na mili sakē
Nahi pāē keu bāsa
Pāeu sīvanarāena
Chūṭi avari kī āsa.

Niraṅkāra kā bhāva asa
Calata dharē sabha aṅga
Sē nau barakha sunna mahā
Kē hoe nāri anaṅga.

Jata andhī sama kandha hai
Bhāga bibhāgi bicāri
Sē tahā hīna adhīna hoe
Jaba kahī baisata hāri.

Jōga jāpa jahā tahā karai
Jahā tahā mārata khāe
Kahi dēkhata parvāna nahī
Kahī rahai bhaṭakā khāe.

Nāma marana savasāra maha
Kahi kahi bācata āe
Gura pratāpa tē Sīvanarāena
sādhu saṅghati maha pāe.

Śiva Nārāyaṇa hears, my teacher speaks, my prayer to the learned is : 'keep this point into consideration.' Whosoever reads obtains the path to the Unfathomable, one who hears comes on the path of deliverance, one who keeps it in heart, after hearing it, is relieved of the waters of existence. He never returns to the world, he obtains the permanent abode. The slave Śiva Nārāyaṇa says so, having read the thoughts of the saints. Everyone is searching but none obtains, none gets the abode. Śiva Nārāyaṇa has got it and has given up the hope of other things.

The feeling of the Formless is such that one moves about endowed with all the limbs. (He remains) (?) in an empty space for nine years or has women and Love. The world (?) is as if blind, considering all matters. When it becomes defeated it sits quite humble and subdued. (People) practise *yōga* and mutter prayers at some places, at some other places they kill and eat. For this (latter) there is no authority; at places they suffer delusion. (People) come and loudly declare that in this world there is Name and Death. (This teaching) Śiva Nārāyaṇa obtained in the company of saints, by the grace of the teacher.

Ghara chāē adhiāra bhau
Ujiārē saba pāe
Nēkī badī ke kāranē
Sabha ghaṭa rahā chapāe.

Raṅga rūpa rēkhā nahī
Karata jagata ūjiāra
Sata gura milai to pāiē
Bina guru pāu na pāra.

Sē guna aparampāra hai
Sīvanarāena dāsa
Disṭi nihārē tāhi kaha
Pāvata niscala bāsa.

Nau nāma bhau ēka tē
Dasō nāma kē hātha
Sīvanarāena tōharē
Sadā rahō mai māth.

Sabada grantha Gura Anyāsa (gyāna dīpaka) sampurana bhaila.
Santa bacana paravāna, sabada kahē so māna.
Santa pāra pāra pāra pāra pāra pāra,
Caupāi aṭṭhāisa sau bāvana (2852)
Dōhā ēka sau sarasaṭhi (167)
Isloka 12.

The house being covered became dark, everyone obtains (Him) in light, (the soul) is enveloped in a body due to deeds, good and bad. He has no colour, no form, no lines (but) gives light to the universe ; one can obtain Him if one has a good teacher, without a teacher, one cannot find any clue. That teacher's qualities are unfathomable, slave Śiva Nārāyaṇa obtains permanent abode, having been seen by Him by a glance. From One, came about nine names, Śiva Nārāyaṇa says : " O tenth name, may my forehead be always in thy hand."

The Book of Word, *Gura Anyāsa* (the Lamp of Knowledge) became complete.

The words of the saints are authoritative ;
one should obey what is stated in the Saint's words.

The saints (are) across, across, across, across, across, across.

(In this book there are) 2852 caupāis,
167 dōhās
and
12 ślōkas.

(d) Yūsuf Zulēkhā[1]

P. 10

Hijarī sana bāraha sai bāvā
Baraneu pēma kathā yaha sāvā.

Aṭṭhāraha sai sattāīsā
Saṁbata Bikrama Sēna narēsā.

Sattraha sai bāraha puna Sākā
Sattraha sai navvē īsā kā.

Sattāvana barakh bītē āāvū
Taba upajeu yaha kathā ka cāvū.

Sāta divasa māha kathā samāpata
Durmata nāma raheu so saṁbata.

Kieu tarana kō tēja umaṅkā
Sāthī kiyē chāḍa sabha saṅkā.

Bāẽ ansa uṭha kē jaga māhī
Bharenha devasa aba kucha rasa nāhī.

Banā janama kō gōrakha dhandhā
Abahū na samujhai yaha mana andhā.

Bāra bayasa ava tarana sohāvā
Gayau bīta tīsara pana āvā.

P. 11

Tēja nagārā kūca kā
karahu so citta sābhāra.
Agama pantha sāthī nahī
Kehi bidhi utaraba pāra.

Biradha bayasa māha kīnha bicārā
Kehi bidhi hōi mōra udhārā.

Kahaū tau tanta kathā ati sāvā
Jo Qurāna mā sunā o bāvā.

[1]Text taken from the manuscript described in the Introduction § 6.

Translation

Page 10

When Hijarī year 1200 was read, I described this true love-story. Then it was the 1827th year of King Bikrama Sēna, and 1712th of the Sakas, and 1790th of the Christ. When fifty-seven years of my life had passed, I entertained the idea of telling this story. The story was completed in seven days. The name of the Sambata was 'durmata.' I indulged in the excesses of youth and leaving aside all cares, I made companions. Having arisen in this world from the left-side (of the supreme ?) I have completed my days, and now nothing substantial remains. The snare of Gōrakha is completed, and still my blind mind does not understand. The childhood and the youth have passed and third part of my life has arrived.

Page 11

Loud is the sound of the drum of departure,
my mind, note it carefully.
The way is unknown, and I have no company,
how will I complete it?

This thought came to me in old age ; in what manner shall I be redeemed ?

That is why I tell this most beautiful story, which I have already heard and read in the Qurān.

Sabha bhākhā maha kathā sohāī
Baranaũ bhāti bhāti guruvāī.

Abarī au Arabī sura bānī
Pārasi au Turakī Nasarānī.

Bhākhā maha kāhũ nahi bhākhā
Mōrē ansa daiu likhi rākhā.

Sō aba kathā kahaũ cita lāī
Jehi tẽ mōkha mukti hoi jāī.

Yūsufa nabī mudita jaga āvā
Tārana gana maha canda sohāvā.

Jahã lahi (ra) hā siddha avatārā
Sabha maha rūpa dīnha ujiārā.

Kathā anūpa jagata maha sōī
Prēma bhagati sata dharama samōī.

Yūsufa nabī anūpa jaga
Parghaṭa bhē sansāra,
Jākī kathā so tanta aba
Baraneũ tēja kartāra.

Jō yaha kathā sunai cita lāī
Nāsai pāpa punya adhikāī.

P. 12.

Bājhini sunai so santati pāvai
Aggita niripa mācha kara āvai.

Nirdhana hōe hōe dhana āgara
Nirguna sunai hōe guna sāgara.

Dukhī sunai tau sukha adhikāī
Bandī sunē mōkha hoi jāī.

Bichuṛai daī so dēya milāī
Rōgī sunai rōga hari jāī.

Nirdāī kaha dāyā āvaī
Jōgī sunai jōga adhikāī.

This beautiful story has been said in all the languages :
and in various laudable ways :
in Ibarī (Hebrew), Arabī (Arabic), Suryānī (Syriac),
Pārasī (Persian), Turkī (Turkish), and Nasarānī (Christian).
But this has not been anywhere said in the vernacular,
and the same was left by the Maker to me as my share of the work,
therefore, I tell the story with all sincerety,
so that I may attain salvation and deliverance.
The prophet Yūsuf came to this earth joyfully,
as though he was the beautiful moon amidst the stars.
As far as there have been incarnations of seers,
the Maker gave him the most shining appearance.
The same story is unique in this world
which is rich in love, devotion and true religion.
Of all the prophets who graced this world
Yūsuf has not been equalled.
Now I describe his mystic (?) story
with the help of the Maker's powers alone.
Whoever hears this story attentively,
he destroys his sins, and adds to his virtuous deeds.

Page 12

A barren lady who hears it, gets an issue
who is respected by the kings (?).
If the hearer is a pennyless beggar, he becomes rich,
and if he is a man of no good, he becomes a man of qualities.
If a miserable man hears it, his share of happiness increases,
and if a man in bondage hears it, he is set free.
It brings them together, whom fate has separated,
and if a sick man hears it, the sickness disappears.
If the hearer is merciless, he takes pity.
And if an ascetic hears it, his powers of *yōga* increase.

Kaisaũ bipata gāḍha jō hōī
Sunē kathā bidhi ḍārai khōī.
Sunai satī dina dina sata bāḍhai
Birahī biraha dīnha dukh ḍāḍhai.
Pēmī sunai pēma adhikāvai
Paṇḍita sunai mahā rasa pāvai.

Jo koi sunai paḍhai likhai
Hōi siddha saṅsāra
Bansa sutana sukh pāvai
Dēya asīs Nisāra.

Kathā anūpa ihai jaga māhī
Dūsara kathā so yahi sāgha nāhī.
Nabī lāgi yaha kathā sohāī
Saraga lōka tẽ Daiu paṭhāī.
Ēka dausa Jibaraila jo āē
Hasana Husēna ko dukkha sunāē.
Mārinha tinha bairī nirdāī
Pānī bũda na dīnha kasāī.

P. 13.

Suni kai marana nabī dukha mānā
Rōē lāga dukhita hoe prānā.
Taba Jibaraila kathā yaha lāē
Āni aratha sabha bãci sunāē.
Jō imāma kāha ummata mārinha
Yūsufa bandha kũpa mātha ḍārinha.
Kathā satta aba kahaũ sohāī
Jehi bidhi saraga lōka tẽ āī.
Cūk hōi tau lēhu sābhārī
Suddha asuddha so likheu bicārī.

However great may be the distress,
if one hears this story, the Maker reduces his distress to nothing.
If a lady devoted to her lord, hears it, her devotion increases day by day.
and if the hearer is away from his beloved, he sets fire to his pangs of separation.
If a lover hears it, his love increases,
And, if a wise man hears it, he finds great pleasure in it.

Whoever hears, reads, or writes it,
he becomes a seer in this world,
his family and his sons get repose,
so blesses Nisāra.

This story is singular in this world,
no other story can vie with it.
For the sake of the Prophet,
the Maker sent this beautiful story from the heavens.
One day, Jibrāil came,
and told the miseries of Hasan and Husain.
Their merciless enemies had killed them,
those butchers did not give them a drop of water.

Page 13

The Prophet was aggrieved to by the news of their death,
he began to weep, and his heart sank.
Then Jibrāil brought this story,
and having brought it, he explained its significance.
How they killed the followers of Imām
and how they inprisoned Yūsuf in a blind well.
The same true and beautiful story, I now say,
and also, how it came to this earth from the heavens.
If I commit any mistake, correct it.
I have written it after having considered the right and the wrong.

Baranau kathā anūpa aba
Prēma bharī au sāca
Mōkha mukata gati pāvahī
Jōrē sunā au bāca.

Kanaā nagara jo Nūha basāvā
Tahā nabī Ya'qūba sohāvā.
Jaga māha lahā siddha avatārā
Pūjai tāhi sakala sansārā.
Lauta nabī kai sutā sohāī
So biyāha Isahāqa ke āī.
Bhē Isahāqa ke dui suta saṅgā
Eka udara dui rabi sasi raṅgā.
Eka Aisa Ya'qūba so dūjā
Tapa japa bidyā kōu na pūjā.
Mahā siddha tā kaha bidhi kīnhā
Isrāīla nāma tinha dīnhā.
Upajē Śāma dēsa dou bhāī
Rahē Kanaāna Ya'qūba sohāī.

P. 14.

Bhējē tāhi so alakha sādēsā
Lāvai nigama pantha sabha dēsā.
Nīca ūca kaha māraga lāvai
Ōkara mūha saba bhēda batāvai.

Karai tapasyā raina dina
Tapa japa nēta au nēma
Jibaraīla āvahī tahā
Āna baḍhāvaī pēma.

Sāta istirī sughara sohāī
Bāraha putra daī adhikāī.

P. 331.

So puni kathā ahāi bistārā
Kahaū kathā Yūsufa kara sārā.

I now describe the unique story,
which is full of love, and is most true.
He attains salvation and deliverance,
who hears and reads it.

In the city of Kanaã (Canaan), which was founded by Nūha,
there lived the good prophet Ya'qūba.
He was in this world, the incarnation of a seer,
he was worshipped as a god by the whole world.
The prophet had a daughter, Lūt by name,
she came to Ishāq in marriage.
Ishāq was blessed with twin-sons,
(as though) the sun and the moon were born together.
One was Aisa and the other was Ya'qūb,
and none could vie with them in the matter of meditation, invocation, or knowledge.
The Maker made them great seers,
and Isrāīl was the man who gave them names.
Both the brothers were born in the country of Śāma (Syria)
and Ya'qūb remained well in Kanaã (Canaan).

Page 14

The Lord used to send through him (Ya'qūb) the divine message. He brought the whole country to the divine path. He brought the high and low to the right path. His mouth emitted all the mystries. All day and night he indulged in meditation, and invocation, and followed a regular course of life. Jibrāil used to visit his place, and whenever he reached there, he would accentuate the divine love. (Ya'qūb had married) seven beautiful wives, who gave birth to twelve sons.

Page 331

That story is, again, a long one,
I tell the essence of the story of Yūsuf.

Dasaẽ barasa āe jamarājū
Yusūfa nabi prāna kē kājū.
Kahā alakha jō agyā kīnhā
Cahaũ parāna tōra maī līnhā.
Yūsufa kahā jo agyā hōī
Sō sabha lēũ sīsa para sōī.
Dēkhi lēũ maī darasa Zulēkhā
Taba hama (?) karahu jo āvai lēkhā.
Taba jamarāja kahā yaha bātā
Agyā nātha lakhau mukha rātā.
Aba tuma tajahu pēma vahi kērā
Karahu pema jō karahi nibērā.
Bahuta bhāti binatī kai hārā
Pāvā na Zulēkhā rūpa tihārā.

Yūsufa cahā bahuta
Lakhai Zulēkhā rūpa
Pai Jamrāja na mānā
Agyā alakha anūpa.

Jaba lahi āī Zulēkhā pāsā
Taba lahi phūla gayau nija bāsā.
Āī nāra jo piu kē tīrā
Dēkhai parā jo sūna sarīrā.
Puni nihāri Yūsufa kāha dēkhā
Raheu na rūpa raṅga nahi rēkhā.
Mũdē nayena khulaī aba nāhī
Bayena harē mukha bōlata nāhī.

P. 332

Hātha pāũ mukha saravana nāsā
Saba tana harata kiē jasa māsā.
Sūna sarīra parā bina jīū
Gā ṭhaga māri dēkhi mukha pīū.

In the tenth year, Death (Jamarāja) came for the life of prophet Yūsuf.
He announced the will of God, and said, " I want to take your life."
Yūsuf said, " Whatever may be your command I will obey it.
Only I want first a glimpse of Zulēkhā,
Then you may do whatever is proper."
Then, Jamarāja said,
" Accept the Lord's will with a brave face.
Now, leave the affection of that lady, and engage in the love that offers salvation."
Yūsuf requested for a glimpse of Zulēkhā in various terms,
but ' could not see your face, Zūlēkhā.' Yūsuf earnestly tried to see the face of Zūlēkhā,
but Jamarāja did not allow him,
for such was the firm command of the Lord.

Before Zūlēkhā came to his side the smell of the flower had departed from the flower (*i.e.*, the life-spirit had departed from the body).
When the lady came to the side of her lord, she looked at the dead body ; she again closely saw Yūsuf and found there neither the beauty, nor the charming complexion, nor again the beautiful lines on the face.
The eyes were closed ; they would not open.
The voice had departed, the mouth would not speak.

Page 332

The hands, the feet, the ears and the nose, the whole body was as if mere flesh.
The empty body lay there life-less.
She was thunderstruck to see the face of her lord.

Dhasaka āhi hie mãhi samānã
Gaeu chāṛa jasa dẽha te prānã.
Murachi rahī nāra jasa phirī
Raheu na cēta hareu jaba sirī.
Nāri dēkhi piu kara tana sūnã
Binā parāna sabha piṇḍa bihūnā.

Kaun hamsa saravara hateu
Kehi disa gayeu parāi
Jehi bina sūna sarīra bhai
Kāhũ na kahā so hāi.

Parī Zulēkhā hoi bina jīũ
Bahuri na dēkhā āpana pīũ.

Taba nahalāi sāja sabha kīnhã
Laikai saũpi chāra kãha dīnhã.

Chāra milāi so chāra uṛāvā
Thātī saũpi lōka paha āvā.

Jō jākara tehi saũpā sōī
Sāthī saṅgha rahā nahi kōī.

Tina dausa dukha raheu apārā
Rahī Zulēkhā nathĩ bekarārā.

Piũ kõpa kucha jānata nãhĩ
Rahī so nāri sūkhi paṭa mãhĩ.

Tisarē dausa bhōra hoi gaeũ
Taba puni cētu Zulēkhā bhaeũ.

P. 333.

Dēkhā khōli naena cahũ ōrā
Kahā ke āja bhaeu kasa bhōrā.
Piu jāgata taba mōhĩ jagāvai
Āja saṅghī kahũ disṭa na āvai.
Aba mat āja bhōra kai jāgī
Gaeu pīu kasa agasara bhāgī.
Piu kara mukha nahi dēkhaũ ājũ
Mohi taja kabahũ karata na kājũ.

Shock violently struck her heart and it seemed as though the life had also departed from her body.
As she turned, she swooned ;
she lay unconscious, and the radiance of her face departed.
The lady saw the body of her lord lying lifeless.
Without life, the whole body lay empty.
" Which goose was in this lake, and to what direction has it flown away, without whom the body is empty ?
Alas, no one tells me that."
Zulēkhā fell unconscious, and did not see her lord again.
They washed the dead body of Yūsuf,
and they adorned it well.
Then they delivered it to the earth.
They mixed that structure of dust with the dust.
And having thus returned the pledge
they came back.
They handed it back to one whose it was
and no companion accompanied him.
For three days, Zulēkhā was extremely pained,
and she could not be made to understand (the real state of things).
She did not know the reason of her lord's displeasure,
and she withered away within doors.
The third day in the morning
Zulēkhā was restored to consciousness.

Page 333

She opened her eyes and saw about her,
and said, " Of what type is today's morning?
When my lord got up, he would wake me up,
but today, my mate does not come before my eyes.
Today I got up very early,
still, how is it that my lord has left all alone ?
Today, I do not see the face of my lord,
he would never do anything without me.

Jaba laga rahaũ sēja para
Kantha na chāṛahi mōhi.
Aba rāja āja kahã gaeu
Lāla so mõhi bichōhi.

Kahã saṅghī vai saraga sidhārē
Tumakã biraha āgi maha jārē.
Suni yaha bāta so khāi pachārā
Phira phira sīsa bhūmi para mārā.
Jahã so pīu hōi nihicintā
Tahã lai calahu jahã mora mintā.
Calī saghai sagha biākula nārī
Jahã kantha sūnē sō nārā.
Tehi kē ḍehara jāi sira nāvā
Pirathama kēsa tōri chitarāvā.
Chitarāesi mōtina kē hārā
Jūrā ṭūka ṭūka kai ḍārā.
Bāra khasōṭi tōri natha ḍārā
Abharana tōri bhūsahē sṛgārā.
Cūrī phōri sīsa taba phōrā
Chāra milāi dīnha vahi cūrā.

P. 334

Parī ḍhēra para chāra uṛāvahi
Bipata bipata mukha bayena sunāvai.

Nayena kāḍhi dō līnhesi
dīnhesi ḍhēra para ḍāri.
Jehi naenani piu tōhi lakheũ
dēkhaũ kāhi nihāri.

Kahã kantha tuma kahavã gaeũ
Naena baēna mukh sūna sabha bhaeũ
Gāta gulāba dēkhi murajhāī
Sō tana chāra līnha aba khāī.

So long as I would remain in bed,
my lord would not leave me.
But, where has my King, my love, now gone,
having left me here?"
Her companions said that he had gone to the next world,
having scorched you in the fire of separation.
When she heard this news, she fell aback.
She would strike her head against the earth, again and
again, and say,
" Wherever may that care-free lord of mine be,
Take me to that place, where my friend is."
Along with her, the sorrowful maidens went
where the dead body of her lord lay.
On the threshold of the tomb she placed her forehead,
and first of all she let her hair loose,
and she scattered the necklaces of pearls,
and then broke her braid of hair into pieces.
She tore the hair and broke the nose-ring,
and having broken her ornaments, she undid her toilet.
Having broken her bracelets, she broke her head
And threw those pieces of bracelets in the dust.

Page 334

She lay on the tomb and scattered dust
and cried, " I am in distress, I am in distress!"
She took out both her eyes,
And threw them over the tomb and said,
" These eyes with which, my lord, I looked at you,
whom should I now look with them?
What, my lord, where have you gone?
All your eyes and your mouth are lifeless.
Seeing the beauty of your body, roses drooped,
but now the same body is being eaten away by the earth.

Jehi mukha bōlahu amrita bānī
Amrita bōla vai kahã herānī.

Nita mō para tuma karata jo dāyā
Kasa aba lā'la bhaeu niramāyā.

Maī pāpina tumha saṅgha na lāgī
Ahaũ karam kī sadã abhāgī.

Mõhi chāṛi kita kīnha sidhārī
Naena ōṭa nā karata piyārī.

Jaba jamarāja parāna tora līnhā
Niṭhura lā'la mõhi khabari na dīnhā.

Maī jama tẽ asa karati nihōra
Lēhu lā'la sāgha prāna so mōrā.

Ēkahu chana nā mõhi bisārehu
Calata bāra kasa mõhi na pukārehu.

Naena ōṭa kahũ hōta raheu
Mõhi tẽ agyā lēhu
Aisẽ gaenha bidēsa kãha
Mōra na khōja karēhu.

P. 335

Cālisa barasa jo jōga kamāvā
Taba prītama maī tuṛa kã pāvā.

Daraba aratha sabha dīheũ luṭāī
Jōbana rūpa anūpa gãvāī.

Kīnha dayā taba alakha gosāī
Dīnhã rūpa soī sukha mãhĩ.

Taba mahimã maī tōra na jānī
Nisa dina rahiũ hiẽ abhimānī.

Sō aba kantha kahã tohi pāyaũ
Carana lāi sira tõhi manavõ.

Tumha nita karahu mōra manuhārī
Maī nā karaũ kucha kāna tumhārī.

Your mouth would emit words like nectar,
but where have now those nectar-like words gone ?
You would always love me,
then, how is it, my lord, that you have become pitiless?
I, sinner, did not accompany you (to the next world)
I have always been unfortunate.
Leaving me alone, where have you gone?
You would never let me be away from your sight.
When Death (Jamrāja) took away your life,
cruel lord, you did not inform me, for otherwise
I should have strongly urged him
that he should have taken my life also along with your life, my lord.
You never forgot me for a moment,
why did you not call me when you were departing (for the next world)?
Whenever you would go anywhere beyond the range of my sight, you would always take my permission.
But this time you went to a foreign land in a singular fashion, for you did not even care for me.

Page 335

When I had practised *yōga* for full forty years,
my dear, then it was that I got you.
When I had squandered all my fortunes,
and wasted my youth and beauty unequalled,
then it was that the Unseen took pity
and bestowed on me that beauty (of yours), amongst rejoicing.
Then I did not know your virtues,
and all day and night, I was haughty.
Now, my dear, where should I get you
that I may make you agreeable, by placing my head at your feet.
You would always beseech me,
but I would never lend my ear's to your request.

Kā aba karahũ manāvõ kaisē
Binatī karahũ kīnha tumha jaisē.
Tumha sāī mat cērī tōrī
Kā aba karahũ āeũ mati thōrī.
Nita sarīra rākheũ tore caranā
Kā aba karahũ daī kara karanā.
Sāta barasa bāda rākheũ
Lāeu dōkha na mõhi
Auguna mōra chapāeu
Kaheu na kachu tuma mõhi.
Sāta barasa rākheũ bāda māhĩ
Mana māha rōsa kiheu kucha nāhĩ.
P. 336
Calata bāra torā rūpa na dekheũ
Bacana na suneu na naena bisēkheũ.
Sō lā'lana taji rahē abhāgī
Gaē lā'la mat sōi na jāgī.
Jaba tõhikã bāhara baharāī
Bairini nĩda kahã tē āī.
Dekheũ jāgi mādira torā sūnā
Nagara kōṭa ghara bhaeu bihūnā.
Āehu phūla chāṛi phulavārī
Kãṭa raheũ bāga mã chāṛī.
Gāeu kantha sō bēgi so bhāgā
Pāchẽ raheu kalaṅka so lāgā.
Dēhu utara mõhi kantha sohāī
Phāṭai bhumi aba jāyũ samāī.
Yaha kalaṅka aba dēhu miṭāī
Uṭhi kai lā'la lēhu sāgha lāī.
Aisā ratana milā jaga,
Chāra samāneu āi
Dhrika jīvana jō lā'la bina
Jaga mã jiyata rahāi.

What should I do now? How should I now make you agreeable?
I now request you as you had previously done.
You are my lord, and I am your bond-maid,
what should I do now? I have little understanding.
Ever did I lay my body at your feet,
what should I do now against the will of the Lord?
I kept you in captivity for full seven years,
but you did not blame me.
You would screen my evil doings,
and never chide me for them.
I kept you in captivity for seven years,
still you did not at all take it ill.

Page 336

At the time of your departure, I did not see your face,
nor did I hear your voice, nor did I see your eyes.
However, you forsook this unfortunate woman,
my lord, you went, and I did not wake up.
That sleep of mine which sent you out,
whence did that enemy sleep come?
When I woke up, I found thy temple lonely,
and the walls of the city, the dwelling, and all else deserted.
Flower, you came here, leaving the flower-bed;
I was a thorn scattered in the garden.
The Lord (the flower) disappeared immediately
while I, a dark spot, lagged behind.
Answer me, my beautiful lord,
may the earth split and I go inside it!
Wipe off this blemish upon me,
and get up and take me with you, my Love.
I got such a gem in this world,
but ultimately that was mixed with the dust;
Cursed be the life that even without the lord
continues to exist in this world.

Yaha ghara bāra so dēsa tumhārā
Bhaeu sūna sabha jaga ādhiyārā.
Kauna batāihi bhēda karama thā
Bhūlē kauna dekhāehi panthā.
Kō tuma bina yaha pahāra uṭhāihi
Nēma dharama dina dina adhikāī.

P. 337

Aba tumha asa jaga upajē nāhī
Kauna so karī dukhī parachāhī.
Tumha samāna jaga phērī na āī
Kō asa rūpa gyāna budhi pāī.
Nibhaiama nīda raheu piu sōī
Nāri sovati cētā nā kōī.
Tumha nihacinta bhaeu piu jāī
Sōca hamāra tajeu sukhadāī.
Sahī lōka hai yaha sansārā
Tumha bina kōu na ahai hamārā.
Kehikā dēkhi mana hulasē piū
Tirakha bujhāi piyāsē jiū.

Vahai basanta vahi pāvasa
vahai phūla phala sōi
Sabha apanē ritu dēkhaba,
tumhaī na dēkhī kōi

Vahai mādira ū saravara tīrā
Karāhi dhamāra sadā jehi tīrā.
Vahai phūla phūlai cahū ōrā
Vahi cāṭaka rāga khaiijana mōrā.
Vahai pavana jō phira phira āvae
Vahai dausa vahi raini dekhāvae.
Ēka na tumha jehi bina sansārā
Hoigā tīna bhauana ādhiyārā.

This household and this country of yours,
all, are deserted, and the world looks gloomy.
Who will now tell (the world) the secrets of Providence,
and who will now guide (it) when it has forgotten the right path.
Who will now, without you, raise this mountain (of duties),
And who will without you lead a regular course of life day by day ?

Page 337

Now none will be born in this world like you.
And, who will now give shelter to the suffering ?
None will again come to this world, who like you,
will get such a good knowledge and understanding.
You were sleeping soundly ;
nobody awakened the wife who was asleep.
You have grown careless since you went
and you have forgotten my reposeful memory.
This world is the real world,
but in your absence, nobody is mine.
Whose sight, my dear, will gladden my heart now
that may quench a thirsty man's thirst ?

Spring is the same, and the same the Rainy season,
the same are the blossoms, and the same the fruits,
all will appear in their respective seasons,
but none will see you.

The same is temple, the same the bank of the lake
on whose banks we played naughtily.
The same flowers even now blossom on all sides ;
the same is the colour of the cātaka and the peacock.
The same wind blows again and again,
the same days and the same nights even now appear.
You alone are not here, for which reason this world,
and in fact all the three worlds look dark and dreary.

Vahi taravara vahi lāta sohāvana
Bhāvai na eka binā mana bhāvana.

P. 338

Eka dina hateu sobhāga sohāvā
Jehi dina tōhi kaha Nāyaka lai āvā.

Bhaī dhūma sabha Misira ke dēsā
Uṭhi dhāvā sabha raṅka narēsā.

Paṭhaeu Nīla karai aśanānā
Nara narēsa sabha dēkhi lobhānā.

Eka dina āja so dekheū,
sō mukha chāra chipāna,
Kā bhā rūpa anūpa vaha
jehi sansāra lobhāna.

Sapanē dēkhi bimōheū tōhī
Upajā biraha tēja lakhi tōhī.

Āihū Misira kantha tōhi lāgī
Kaheū ki kā gūna kīnha abhāgī.

Pēma hamāra sāca bidhi kīnhā
Pāhana sarūpa so hamakā kīnhā.

Jaba prītama hamasē mukha mōrā
Jīvana bhaeu darasa lakhi tōrā.

Cālisa barasa jōga mā kīnhā
Suni kai nāū sabhai kucha dīnhā.

Jaba torā nāu sunāvai kōī
Pāvai lākha dēū jō hōī.

Bīsa barasa raheū darasa adhārā
Bīsa barasa suni nāma sābhārā.

P. 339.

Aba torā darasa harā bhuī māhī
Nāū tumhāra sunaba aba nāhī.

Dēkheū (na?) darasa sunahū nahī nāū
Kehi ke adhāra rahaū yahi ṭhāū.

The same are the trees, the same the beautiful creepers but none attracts me without the charming one.

Page 338

One day I was blessed with good fortune, the day on which Nāyak (God?) brought you (to me). There was rejoicing all over the country of Misira (Egypt). Everyone, whether a beggar in the street, or a king ran (to see you). They sent you to bathe in the Nile, and everyone, whether a layman or a king was pleased to see you.
And another day I find today, when the same face of yours is covered with dust. What has become of that singular beauty of yours which had enchanted the whole world?
When I saw you in a dream, I was at once in love with you,
and when I actually saw you, I was under the pangs of your separation.
For your sake, my lord, I came to Misira (i.e., Egypt) and said, "For what reason have I been unfortunate?"
The Maker proved my love to be sincere,
He made me hard like stone.
When, dear, you turned your face from me,
my life would come back when I saw you.
I spent forty years of my life in *yōga*,
and when I heard your name I gave my all.
Whenever anyone would utter your name before me he got from me a lakh, or whatever there was with me.
For twenty years I lived on your looks, and for another twenty years I lived on the sound of your name.

Page 339

Now, your looks have been covered by dust, and also I shall not hear your name now. Now, neither I have your glimpses nor do I hear your name. On whom should I depend for the purpose of staying here (in this world)?

Nā piu bōla sunāvahu
nā aba darasana dēhu.
Karahu dayā pata rākhau
Yaha jiu āpana lēhu.

Aba pati rahai jo jāī prānā
Dhirika jīva tuma bina jahā mānā.
Jīvana bhalā jaba lahi piu hōī
Binā pīu dhrika jīvana sōhī.
Piu bina sūna sabhai sansārā
Sukha sampati saba piu bina jārā.
Binā piu kōi saṅghātī nāhī
Kehi bidhi rahai prāna ghaṭa māhī.
Jarai jāi sukha sampati sājā
Binā pīu āvai nahī kājā.
Piu kē saṅgha jo hōi bhikhārī
Binā pīu sukha sampati balihārī.
Piu ke saṅgha bhalā bhikasai māhī
Binā pīu sukha bilasai nāhī.
Tuma bina kantha jagata ādhiyārā
Bhaeu ujāra sabhai sansārā.
Niṭhura prāna jō aba lahi raheū
Pāhana hiyā nithura dukha saheū.

P. 340

Khāi pachāra jo chāra para
Karai āha eka bār.
Pañchī prāna so uṛi gaeu
Rahī chāra māha chāra.

Neither do you, my dear, make me hear your voice,
nor you give me your glimpses.
Be kind and save me from blemish,
and accept this life which is yours.
Now, my honour will be saved only if my spirit departs.
Cursed be my spirit if it likes to stay without you.
Life is desirable only as long as the dear one lives,
and the same life is cursed without the dear one.
Without the dear one the whole world is dreary,
and without the dear one, all comforts and riches are worthless.

Without the dear one, none is a companion,
how should then the life spirit stay in the body ?
May the comforts and riches burn away !
For without the dear one, they are of no use.
It is better to be a beggar with the dear one,
but without the dear one the comforts and the riches should be thrown away ;
with the dear one it is better to dwell in miseries
but without him one should not indulge into luxuries.
Without you, my lord, the world is dark,
and the whole world is deserted.
My life spirit is piti-less, that it stays in my body even now,
and stone-like is my heart which has endured this disaster."

Page 340

When falling aback on the tomb
she released a sigh,
the bird-like life spirit of hers flew away,
and the dust was left with the dust.

APPENDIX II

MODERN AWADHI TEXTS

(a) gulgulaːwaːliː kʌthaː (Lakhimpur)

(b) chʌndə (Lakhimpur)

[These two specimens were given to the author by his mother in 1921 and appeared first in the author's monograph on Lakhīmpurī (published in 1923). The old lady spoke pure Awadhi. Alas! she is no more in this world, having breathed her last on June 1, 1931.]

(c) cwaːrʌn ki kʌthaː (Sitapur)

[From Jagannath, V. Jihurī, 2 miles to the south of Ramkōṭ, Dt. Sitapur.]

(d) ʈhʌkurʌn ki bʌfiaːduriː (Lucknow)

[From Ram Sahai of Amausī, Dt. Lucknow.]

(e) ãdfiʌre ki beimaːniː (Unao)

[From an inhabitant of a village, 2 miles to the north of Maurāwān, Dt. Unao.]

(f) lʌrikini ki pʌti-seːwaː (Fatehpur)

[From Sanwal Ahir of V. Catanpur, Pargana Kōṛā, Dt. Fatehpur, a place 4 miles from the boundary of Cawnpore district—by the courtesy of Fatehchand Varma.]

(g) guruː kifieː kə phʌl (Bahraich)

[From Tulsi Gaṛariyā, of Mankāpur, 6 miles to the west of Bahraich.]

(h) baːmfiʌn ʌu bokʌraː keːr kʌthaː (Barabanki)

[Collected by Pt. Lalta Prasad Sukul.]

(i) **sijaɪr ʌu sijaɪrin** (Gonda)

[From Harmohan Singh of V. Mahuābirāhim, Tahsil Utraulā, 28 miles from Gonda.]

(j) **baɪbaɪ ki kʌraɪmʌt** (Fyzabad)

[From Lachiman of V. Bichiā, 5 miles to the south-west of Fyzabad town.]

(k) **kʌcefloriɪ maɪ bʌjaɪn** (Sultanpur)

[Statement of Jagwanti, wife of Ramanand, of V. Gāṛērī, Dt. Sultanpur, in the Court of Mr. Chintamani, Dy. Collector.]

(l) **mukʌdimaɪ kʌi haɪl** (Partabgarh)

[Collected by Pt. Lalta Prasad Sukul.]

(m) **bʌmfiʌniɪ kʌi bʌjaɪn** (Allahabad)

[Statement of a Brahmin woman of a village on the Eastern boundary of Allahabad district, by the courtesy of B. Saligram, Reader, Collector's Court, Allahabad.]

(n) **bfiikhaɪriɪ baɪmfiʌn kʌj kʌthaɪ** (Allahabad)

[Collected by Pt. Lalta Prasad Sukul, from a resident of a village, 32 miles to the east of Allahabad towards Mirzapur.]

(a) gulgulaɪwaɪliɪ kʌthaɪ

eɪkraɪɟaɪ rʌfiʌĩ Au mʌfiɵtaɪriɪ rʌfiʌi Au dulʌfiin rʌfiʌi. mʌfiɵtaɪriɪ roɪɟu chʌpɪʌn pʌrkaɪl kę bfioɪɟʌn bʌnaɪwʌi Au Apnaɪ khaɪi Au Apneɪ lʌrikʌ ko khʌwaɪwʌi. dulʌfiin khaɪtir eɪk beɟfiʌri kį roɪʈiɪ sẽɪkʌi, aɪdfiiɪ roɪʈiɪ Au loɪnu sʌbeɪreɪ deɪi Au aɪdfiiɪ sʌpɟfiʌ ko. ui maɪreɪ gusɪʌkę roɪʈiɪ ɖefiʌrijʌ mo ɖaɪri deɪĩ Au loɪnu gʌgʌri mo naɪi aɪwʌĩ. ʌisʌi kʌrti kʌrti baɪraɪ bʌrsʌi gudʌri gʌĩɪ. tʌb eɪk din buɪʈfiaɪ gulgulaɪ kifiiniį. gulgulaɪ ɟhãɪpi ko dfiʌri difiiniį Au Apnaɪ disʌi cʌliɪ gʌĩɪ. ɟaɪti berijaɪ bʌfiu sę kʌfii gʌĩɪ kį 'duloflinį ʌisiɪ deɪkheɪ rʌfieu.' bʌfiuɪ, ɟʌleɪ ui lʌuʈʌĩ tʌleɪ, tiɪnį gulgulaɪ nikaɪri lifiisį. khaɪisį naɪiɪ, dfiʌri aɪiɪ. tʌleɪ buɪʈfiaɪ aɪi gʌĩɪ. kulɪaɪ ulɪaɪ kʌi kʌi Apʌn ʌʈfiijaɪ deɪkhinį ɟaɪi. tʌu kʌfiinį 'dulʌfiin kaɪ iɪ mo kę gulgulaɪ tum lifieɪ hʌu?' dulʌfiin boɪlĩɪ 'hʌm buaɪ hʌm naɪiɪ lifien hʌi kaɪ maɪlum bilʌijaɪ lʌi gʌi hoɪi, gʌi rʌfiʌi ui waɪr.' tʌu bilʌijaɪ kʌfiisį 'rʌfiu tui, tui kaɪ mʌi tiɪni paɪni se no dfiɔɪi deɪũ tʌu mʌi kaɪfie kį. tui lifieɪ ʌu mʌi kaɪ coɪriɪ lʌgaɪjeɪ.'

tʌfii kʌi ɟʌb sãɪɟfi bfiʌi tʌb raɪniɪ ʌpʌnį khʌʈijaɪ bicheɪiniį, dijaɪ baɪri ko dfiʌriniį. ɟʌb raɪɟʌ kę kʌcefieri sę lʌuʈʌi mo deɪr deɪkhinį tʌu kʌhinį

Translation

(*a*) A story about gulgulās[1]

There lived a certain king with his mother and wife. The mother used to prepare food of fifty-six varieties daily and she and her son used to partake of it. For the daughter-in-law, however, she baked a loaf of millet and gave half a loaf and salt to her in the morning and half in the evening. She, on account of anger, threw the bread into a big earthen pot and poured the salt into a jar. In this way twelve years passed. One day the old lady prepared *gulgulās*. She covered them and having done so she went out to ease[2] herself. While going she said to the daughter-in-law: "Daughter-in-law, keep an eye in this direction." Before the old lady returned, the daughter-in-law took out three *gulgulās*. She did not eat them but put them away. The old lady returned and after rinsing her mouth[3] went and looked at her wooden vessel.[4] Then she said: "Daughter-in-law, is it you who have taken the *gulgulās* from this?" The daughter-in-law replied: "I, mother, I have not taken any. Who knows but that the cat may have taken them, she has been that way." The cat, then, said: "All right, you wretch, I am not a cat if I do not wash you out altogether.[5] You took them and attributed the theft to me."

Thereafter when it became dark,[6] the queen arranged her bedding and lighted the lamp. When she saw that there was some delay in the king's return home from the court

[1] *gulgulā* is the name of a special Indian preparation made of flour and sugar, it is also called *puā* at some places.

[2] 'To go out or to go to the quarters' (literal trans.) is a euphemism for attending to nature's call.

[3] To rinse the mouth, *i.e.*, to wash the mouth, hands and feet.

[4] *aṛhiyā* is a big wooden vessel to put eatables in.

[5] *tīni pāni se dhōi dēũ*—lit. wash you away with three waters, *i.e.*, destroy you completely.

[6] Lit. when it became evening.

'laxox tAlex soxi lexix.' iu kAfli kAi soxwAi laxgĩx. bilAijax kax kifiisi̯. koxi ki̯ pAgijax uʈhaxi laxix Au unkix khAʈijA po dfiAri difiisi̯, koxi ki̯ tArwaxri lAi kAi huAĩ dfiAri difiisi̯, Au koxi kę̯ ɟuxtax uʈhaxi laxix so pAlkA kę̯ tArex dfiArisi̯ axi. Atxax saxmaxn dfiAri kAi bilAijax Apnax cAlix gAi.

raxɟax ɟAb kAcefleri se axjex dexkhAĩ kax koxi kę̯ ɟuxtax dfiArex, koxi ki̯ tArwaxri, koxi ki̯ pAgijax. raxɟax mAn max AnɟaxdeX ki koxix mArdu raxnix tixr axwax hAi. tAu Aĩcinị̯ tArwaxri ki izkax maxḍxAribax. tAu dijax boxlax 'raxɟax sAmuɟfli ko maxreu.' raxɟax tixni daxĩ tArwaxri uʈhaxinị̯ Au dijax tixniu daxĩ tirbaxcAkų̯ difiisi̯. tau raxɟax tArwaxri dfiAri̯ difiini̯ Au loxʈax lAi kAi pAkhaxnex cAlex gAjex.

etxix dexr mo raxnix ɟaxgi pArĩx tAu dijax bAʈfiaxi difiini̯. dijA kę̯ dArwAɟxe po kũãx rAfiAi, raxɟax huĩ̃ kulxax kArti rAfiAĩ. ɟAb dijax Apnex gfiAr pAfiũcax tAu mAfiotaxrix kAfiisi̯ ki 'bfiAijax axɟu bAʈix dexr lAgaxjeu, mAi khaxi ko lifiex bAiʈhi rAfiiũ.' dijax kAfiisi̯ ' mAfiotArijax kuchu pũxchAu nax, raxnix pAr bAʈix bipAti pArix hAi.' raxɟax ʈhaxʈfi hoi kAi sunAi laxg. mAfiotaxrix kAfiisi̯ 'kaxfiex bfiAijax?' dijax ɟAis ɟAis haxlų̯ bfiAwax rAfiAi tAis sAb bAtaxi difiisi̯. raxɟax sAb suni kAi gfiAr kax axjex Au oxʈfli ko pAuʈhi rAfiex.

ɟAb bfiloxru bfiAwax tAu mAfiotaxrix phiri chApxAn pArkaxl kę̯ bfiloxɟAn bAnaxini̯ Au kAfiini̯ 'bfiAijax khaxu axi.' raxɟax kAfiini̯ 'buax pArsAu.' ui exk thArijax pArsini̯. raxɟax kAfiini̯ 'dosAriu pArsAu.' ui doxsAri pArsini̯. raxɟax kAfiini̯ 'tisAriu pArsAu.' buxʈfiax

she said to herself: "Let me sleep for a while." Having said so she went to sleep. And what did the cat do? She brought somebody's turban and placed it on her bedstead and took somebody's sword and placed it there. She also brought somebody's shoes and put them under the bedstead. She put these things there and went away.

When the king returned from the court he saw that there were somebody's shoes and somebody's sword and turban. From it he concluded that some man had come to the queen. On this he drew his sword in order to kill her. The lamp spoke out: "O king, learn the truth before you kill her." The king thrice drew the sword out and the lamp forbade[1] him all the three times. He then put down the sword, took the *lōṭā*[2] and went away to attend to nature's call.

Meanwhile the queen woke up and put out[3] the lamp. There was a well before the door (of the house) of the lamp. The king was rinsing his mouth there. When the lamp reached home, his mother said: "My son, you are very late to-day, I have all along been sitting with the food ready." The lamp replied: "Dear mother, do not ask anything, great calamity has befallen the queen." The king stood there and listened. The mother asked: "What is the matter, dear son?" The lamp related everything that had happened. The king heard everything, came home and having covered himself up, lay down.

When it became morning, the mother again prepared food of fifty-six varieties and asked her son to eat it. The king asked her to serve. She served one dish. He asked her to serve another. She served another. He asked her to serve a third. The old lady said to him: "Come, let us

[1] *tirbācak dihisi*—lit. spoke three times, *i.e.*, in a decisive manner.

[2] *lōṭā* is a small brass or bronze vessel to contain water.

[3] *baṛhāi dihini*—(lit. lengthened or developed) is a euphemism for extinguished.

kʌfliniˌ 'ɑɪoɪ hʌm tum khɑɪiɪ, dulʌfiin khɑɪwɑɪ kɑɪi-fiʌĩ.' tʌu rɑɪʝɑɪ kʌfliniˌ 'nʌɪiɪ tisʌriu pʌɪsʌu.' ʝʌb tisʌriu thʌrijɑɪ pʌɪsi gʌi, tʌu rɑɪʝɑɪ kʌfliniˌ 'rɑɪniɪ khɑɪu ɑɪi.' rɑɪniɪ kʌfliniˌ 'sunʌu rɑɪʝɑɪ bɑɪrɑɪ bʌɪsʌi biɪti gʌĩɪ tʌb nʌ kʌbfiʌũɪ pũɪcheu. ɑɪʝu kɑɪ hʌi ?' iu kʌfli kʌi ɖefierijʌ kiˌ roɪʈiɪ ɑɪgeɪ kurʌi difiiniˌ ʌu gʌgʌri kə loɪnu ãɪgʌn mə nɑɪi difiiniˌ. buɪʈfiɑɪ mɑɪri kə khisijɑɪi gʌĩɪ ʌu wʌfleɪ tiɪr mʌri kʌi rʌfli gʌĩɪ. rɑɪʝɑɪ rɑɪniɪ bʌfiut din rɑɪʝi kifiiniˌ.

ʝʌiseɪ un keɪ din bʌfiureɪ tʌiseɪ sʌb keɪ bʌfiurʌĩ.

take our meal, the daughter-in-law may eat food afterwards." But the king said, "No, serve a third dish also." When the third dish was also served, he asked the queen to come and eat. The queen replied, "Hear, O king, twelve years have passed and never did you ask me (to eat). What is the matter to-day?" Having spoken so, she brought out the bread from the earthen pot and put it all before him and poured out the salt from the jar in the courtyard. The old lady got very much ashamed and died on the very spot. The king and the queen reigned for many a day. May[1] everybody's good days return as did theirs.

[1] This is the prayer with which every story ends. It shows that a story may relate unhappy events but always has a happy end.

(b) chʌndo

soɪwʌu ki ɟaɪgʌu moɪriɪ aɪdfli bfiʌwaɪniɪ ɟʌgʌt keɪriɪ raɪniɪ, ʌkʌbʌr ʈhaɪɽfleɪ duaɪr, hoɪ bʌli ɟaɪrũ. (1)

kiɪ tum ʌkʌbʌr pʌrchʌn aɪjeu, ʌreɪ pʌrchʌn aɪjeu, kiɪ tum dʌrsʌn aɪjeu, bʌli ɟaɪrũ. (2)

naɪ hʌm maɪtaɪ moɪriɪ pʌrchʌn aɪjen, ʌreɪ pʌrchʌn aɪjen, naɪ hʌm dʌrsʌn aɪjen, bʌli ɟaɪrũ. (3)

Translation

(*b*) A song[1] in praise of Bhawānī

Note 1.—Bhawānī is one of the seven powerful goddesses. She is sometimes also identified with Bhawānī, Siva's wife. Her abode is on the hills. The story goes that once Akbar thought of throwing her image (usually of stone) out and so he went to the temple of the goddess. The present song is the dialogue between the two.

Note 2.—For the sake of rhythm the words in a song undergo some changes which are not generally visible in ordinary speech. For instance, a short *a* is added to every word which ends in a consonant, final vowels are often lengthened and the long vowels in the middle of a word are often shortened.

Note 3.—The language of songs is often somewhat borrowed and archaic. For instance, in verse we have the obl. inf. in *-an* (*kaṭan*) side by side with *-ai* form (*jarai*).

1. "Are you sleeping or waking, my Ādhi Bhawānī[2], queen of the world, Akbar stands before your door, I bow to you[3]."

2. "Akbar, have you come here for the sake of *parchan*[4] or for *darsan*[5]?" I bow to you.

3. "My mother, I have come here neither to do *parchan*, yes, to do *parchan* nor to have your *darsan*, I bow to you."

[1] ***chanda*** is the term used for the songs in praise of gods and goddesses, chiefly goddesses.

[2] *Ādhi Bhawānī*—name of one of the seven sisters—the healer of all pains.

[3] *bali jāũ*—I adore, I bow; this is the burden of the song.

[4] *parchan*<Sanskrit *prakṣālana*; this signifies the special rite of pouring water—chiefly Ganges water—over the image of a god or goddess.

[5] *darsan*<Sanskrit *darśana*, visiting, seeing, used only of gods and saints and elders to whom respect is due.

hʌm tʌu maɾtaɾ moɾɾiɾ lʌɽneɾ ko aɾjen, ʌɾeɾ lʌɽneɾ ko aɾjen, nikʌɾi nʌ lʌɽʌu mʌidaɾn, bʌli ɟaɾũ. (4)

tumfiʌɾeɾ tʌu ʌkʌbʌɾ phʌuɟʌi bʌfiut hʌĩ, ʌɾeɾ phʌuɟʌi bʌfiut hʌĩ, hʌmʌɾeɾ tʌu negulaɾ ʌkeɾl, bʌli ɟaɾũ. (5)

tumfiʌɾeɾ tʌu ʌkʌbʌɾ ɖfiaɾl tʌɾwʌɾijaɾ ʌɾeɾ toɾbʌi bʌndukhijaɾ, hʌmʌɾeɾ phuɾlʌn keɾɾiɾ maɾl, bʌli ɟaɾũ. (6)

ɟaɾi kʌfieu ui durgaɾ bʌfiinin aɾgeɾ, ʌŋgaɾɾ maɾtaɾ aɾgeɾ, ui saɾtʌu bʌfiinin aɾgeɾ, tʰ̃ãbuʌn aɾgi uʈhaɾwʌĩ, bʌli ɟaɾũ. (7)

ɟʌɾʌi laɾgʌĩ tʰ̃ãbuaɾ kʌʈʌn laɾgʌĩ ɖoɾɾiɾ, kʌʈʌn laɾgʌĩ ɖoɾɾiɾ, tʌb hʌm aɾdfii bfiʌwaɾniɾ, bʌli ɟaɾũ. (8)

ɟʌɾʌi laɾgeɾ tʰ̃ãbuaɾ, kʌʈʌn laɾgĩɾ ɖoɾɾiɾ, kʌʈʌn laɾgĩɾ ɖoɾɾiɾ, ʌb hʌm aɾdfii bfiʌwaɾniɾ, bʌli ɟaɾũ, ʌb hʌm ɟʌgʌt bfiʌwaɾniɾ, bʌli ɟaɾũ. (9)

ʌkʌbʌɾ bãɾdfii pʌʈijaɾ lʌɾkaɾwʌĩ, pʌʈijaɾ lʌɾkaɾwʌĩ, biɾbiɾ sę̃ daɾnaɾ dʌɾaɾwʌĩ, bʌli ɟaɾũ. (10)

hʌm tʌu ɟaɾniɾ maɾtaɾ kʰ̃ãɾkʌɾ paɾthʌɾ, ʌɾeɾ kʰ̃ãɾkʌɾ paɾthʌɾ, nikʌɾiɾ hʌĩ aɾdfii bfiʌwaɾniɾ, bali ɟaɾũ, nikʌɾiɾ hʌĩ ɟʌgʌt bʌkhaɾniɾ, bʌli ɟaɾũ. (11)

ʌbtiɾ beɾɾ tum pʌlɟfiʌu bfiʌwaɾniɾ, ʌɾeɾ pʌlɟfiʌu mʌfiʌɾaɾniɾ, ʌb naɾfiĩɾ pʌɾbʌt aɾib, bʌli ɟaɾũ, ʌb naɾiɾ pʌɾbʌt aɾib, bʌli ɟaɾũ. (12)

soɾwʌu ki ɟaɾgʌu moɾɾiɾ aɾdfii bfiʌwaɾniɾ, ɟʌgʌt keɾɾiɾ raɾniɾ, ʌkʌbʌɾ ʈhaɾʈfieɾ duaɾɾ, hoɾ bʌli ɟaɾũ.

4. "My mother, I have come here to have a fight with you, yes, to have a fight, why not come out and fight, I bow to you."

5. "You Akbar, you have many armies, yes many armies, while I have the solitary *negulā*,[6]" I bow to you.

6. "You Akbar, you have shields and swords, yes rifles and guns, I have only the garland of flowers," I bow to you.

[Bhawānī now sends her messengers to her sisters and it is not long before they arrive to help her.]

7. "Go before sister Durgā, before Aṅgārmātā, yes before all the seven[7] sisters and ask them to set fire to the tents," I bow to you.

8. "When the tents begin to be burnt, when the strings begin to be cut down, yes to be cut down, then shall I be Ādhi Bhawānī," I bow to you.

9. The tents began to be burnt, the strings began to be cut. "Now I am Ādhi Bhawānī, now I am Bhawānī of the world," I bow to you.

10. They bind Akbar to a beam,[8] yes let him hang there and make his wife[9] grind corn, I bow to you.

11. "Mother, I thought you were only gravel and stone, yes only gravel and stone, but you have come out to be Ādhi Bhawānī, yes come out to be the celebrated goddess of the world, I bow to you."

12. "Be pleased, O Bhawānī, this time, yes pardon, O Empress of the world, never shall I come again to the hills, never shall I come again to the hills, I bow to you."

"Are you sleeping or waking, my Ādhi Bhawānī, queen of the world, Akbar stands before your door, I bow to you."

[6] *negulā*—the name given to the single boy-defender of the goddesses, who remains always with them.

[7] The goddesses are seven in number and all of them are sisters born of the same parents; *Durgā*, *Aṅgārmātā*, *Bhawānī* are three of them. Durgā is the goddess of small-pox, Aṅgārmātā burns everything and Bhawānī is the healing goddess.

[8] *paṭiyā* is the name given to the beams used to make a cot, there are four such in every cot. [9] *bībī*—wife, here the Queen.

(c) cwaɪrʌn ki kʌthaɪ

jaɪksaɪfi rʌfiʌĩ. tʌunkeɪ pichəwaɪreɪ roɪcɪwaɪrə aɪwʌtị rʌfiʌĩ. tʌu phiɪị jaɪk din phiɪị aɪjeɪ. tʌu saɪfi kʌfiin ki "djaɪkhʌu ʝiɪ rupʌjaɪ difieɪ rʌfiʌn tʌun kʌfiãɪ dfiʌrẽɪ." tʌu saɪfiuni kʌfiinị "ãɪgʌn kẹ aɪrem dfiʌrẽɪ." wʌfii maɪ laɪgiɪ rʌfiʌĩ bʌrɪʌijaɪ. tʌu saɪcɪwaɪr rʌfiʌĩ sunti. tʌu phiɪị raɪti ko cwaɪr aɪjeɪ. tʌu phiɪị eɪkụ cwaɪr gʌwaɪ wʌfii maɪ haɪthụ ɖaɪrị difiisị. ui keɪ bʌrɪʌijaɪ kaɪʈị khaɪiniị. tʌ uɪ bfiaɪgaɪ. dwaɪsʌr kʌfiʌi laɪg "uɪ tʌu uʈhaɪjeɪ sʌb lifieɪ ʝaɪti. hʌmʌfiu lʌjaɪjiɪ ʝaɪi." tʌu wʌfiʌu lʌi kʌi bfiaɪʝaɪ. jʌfieɪ tʌnaɪ sʌtʌfiũɪ kifiin. wʌfii din cwaɪr ʌponeɪ gfiʌrʌi cʌleɪ gʌjeɪ.

dwʌsʌreɪ din phiɪị aɪjeɪ. tʌb saɪfi ʌponeɪ ãɪgʌn mo ʌdmi kẹ buʈaɪũ eɪku gʌʈʌfiaɪ khodaɪin, ui maɪ siɪraɪ bfiʌrəwaɪin. tʌu saɪfi saɪfiuni tereɪ boɪleɪki "ui phuɪl kereɪ bʌrtʌn kʌfiãɪ dfiʌreɪ?" tʌu phiɪị saɪfiuni kʌfiin "raɪti ko nʌ buɪʝfiaɪ kʌrʌu. ãɪgʌn kereɪ ɖefiukʌ m dfiʌrẽɪ." tʌ ui saɪtʌu cwaɪr sunti rʌfiʌĩ. tʌb gfiʌr keɪ ʝʌb sʌb ʝʌneɪ soɪi saɪi gʌjeɪ tʌ wʌi cwaɪr saɪtʌu aɪjeɪ, tʌu ãɪgʌn kereɪ ɖefiukʌm eɪkụ pʌfiileɪ pʌiʈhaɪ. tʌb dwaɪsʌr kʌfiʌti "iu tʌu sʌb bʌʈoɪreɪ leɪti hʌmʌfiuɪ bʌʈolɪeɪiɪ." tʌ wʌfiʌu phãɪdi pʌraɪ. jʌfieɪ tʌnaɪ sʌtʌfiũɪ phãɪdi pʌreɪ ui maɪ.

Translation

(*c*) The story of the thieves

There lived a banker.[1] Thieves used to resort to the back side of his (house) daily. Then again one day they came. The banker said: "See, the money that I had given to you, where have you placed it?" The banker's wife replied: "It is in the nook[2] of the courtyard." There were wasps in it. The seven thieves were hearing. At night the thieves came. One thief went and put his hand in it (the nook). The wasps stung him and he fled. The second thief said (to himself): "He is taking all of it away, let me also take it." And he also fled after taking it. All the seven did in this manner. The thieves on that day went to their home.

On the second day, (they) came again. The banker had got a pit dug in which a man could get drowned and got it filled up with molasses.[3] The banker said to his wife: "Where are those vessels made of *phūl*[4]? The banker's wife replied: "Don't ask (such questions) at night. They are in the courtyard's cellar." All the seven thieves were hearing. When all the people of the (banker's) house had gone to sleep, the seven thieves came and one (of them) entered the cellar of the courtyard. Then the second said (to himself): "He is collecting all of them. Let me also pick up." And he also got in. In this manner all the seven went in it (and got drowned).

[1] *sāh*—a banker, moneylender, usually of the *Vaiśya* caste.

[2] *ār*—a small recess in the walls, particularly on both the sides of the doors.

[3] *sirā*—The juice of sugar-cane is boiled first and then the solid part is separated to make sugar and the liquid part remains, this is known *sīrā*.

[4] *phūl*—a metal made by a combination of several base-metals, it is one of the costly metals and makes beautiful vessels.

bflorʌflẽr berrer erkɳ phʌkirrɳ arwar tʌ wʌfli ter sarfluni burɟflini "din bflʌrem tum kʌi pʌserrir narɟu parwʌti hʌu?" tʌ ur kʌflisi̯ "hʌm tirni pʌserrir narɟu pariti hʌi." tʌu sarfluni kʌflini "djarkhʌu ir cwarr ko uʈhari ko tarl mo ɖarri arwor, hʌm carri pʌserrir derib." taur ɖarri arwar. tʌb sarfluni kʌflini̯ ki "tum nʌ marlum kʌiser ɖarri arwʌti u iu tʌu phiri̯ bflargi arwar." jʌfler tʌnar dwarsʌr ɖarrʌi gʌjer tʌpʳhiri̯ kʌflini̯ sarfluni "tum nʌ marlum kʌiser ɖarrʌti hʌu iu derkhʌu phiri̯ gfluʳmi arwar." jʌfler tʌnar sʌtʌflur kʌiflẽr ɖarri arjer tʌpʳhiri̯ ɟʌb sʌtʌwẽr ɖarrʌi gʌjer, tʌu fluẽr erkɳ dflorbir chẽrʈʌti rʌflʌi kʌpʌʈar. tʌu cwarr ko ui tarl mo ɖarrin tʌb ur dflorbir ɖerari ko bflargar. tʌb ur phʌkirrɳ kʌflisi̯ "berr berr sarr bflargi̯ ɟarti rʌflʌi ʌbʌkir sarre k pʌkʌri liflen." tʌ wʌfli kar marri kʌiflẽr wʌfler tarl mʌiflẽr ɖarri diflin. tʌb ur sarfluni tirr gʌwar, kʌflʌi larg "ɟʌun berr berr derrir rʌflʌu tʌun ʌbʌkir sarre ko marri ko ɖarri arjen." tʌ wʌfli kar sarfluni narɟu diflin carri pʌserrir.

At the time of dawn there came a Fakir. Then the banker's wife asked him: "How many *pansērīs*[1] of corn do you get in a whole day?" Then he said: "I get three *pansērīs* of corn in a day." The banker's wife said: "See, lift this thief and throw him in the tank, I shall give you four *pansērīs*." He went and threw him. Then the banker's wife said: "I do not know how you throw, he has fled back again." In this manner, he (the Fakir) went to throw the second. Then the banker's wife said again: "I wonder how you throw, see, he has returned again." In this manner he threw all the seven. When he went to throw the seventh, there was a washerman washing clothes. When the Fakir threw the thief in the tank, the washerman fled out of fright. Then the Fakir thought: "the rascal[2] used to run away again and again; this time I have caught him." And killed him and threw him in the tank. Then he went to the banker's wife and began to say: "Him whom you gave (to me) again and again, I have killed and thrown away." Then the banker's wife gave him four *pansērīs* of corn.

[1] *pasērī*, Hindustānī *pansērī*—a weight of five seers; a seer is of a little over two pounds.

[2] *sāṛ*—lit. 'wife's brother,' thence a term of rebuke.

(d) ʈhʌkurʌn ki bʌfiaɾdurix

gʌdʌr mo hʌm dʌs gjaɾrʌfi bʌrso ke rʌfiʌn. hʌm kaɾ sudfii sʌb hʌi. baɾsɪaɾfi pʌkʌri gʌjeɾ rʌfiʌ̃. ÃgʌreɾJ kʌfiiniˌ "hʌm kaɾ cʌfiʌrɾʌmu̯ deɾu,";baɾsɪaɾfi deɾi laɾg. ÃgʌreɾJʌn deɾkhiniˌ baɾsɪaɾfi naɾcʌi gaɾwʌi mo pʌɾeɾ fiʌ̃ tʌb un kaɾ pʌkʌri lʌi geɾ. goɾɾaɾ sʌbbeɾli mo aɾi gʌjeɾ.

munɾaɾsiŋgfi hʌmaɾɾ caɾcaɾ rʌfiʌ̃. tiɾ baɾsɪaɾfi kẹ kʌrindʌ ki naɾk kaɾʈiniˌ rʌfiʌi. siɾsmʌfiʌl waɾleɾ mʌlifiaɾbaɾd kẹ pʌʈhaɾn bolaɾiniˌ. dʌs sipaɾfiiɾ, eɾkṵ eɾkṵ chuɾɾaɾ ʌu eɾkṵ eɾkṵ ɖʌɳɖaɾ. munɾaɾ ʌu pʌɲcʌm ʌu pʌfiʌlwaɾn biaɾfiṵ kʌribʌi naɾiɾ kifiiniˌ rʌfiʌi. tʌu pʌʈhaɾnṵ ui maɾ eɾkṵ bʌʈaɾ beɾɖfiʌbṵ rʌfiʌi. uɾ kʌfiisiˌ "munɾaɾsiŋgfi sunen rʌfiʌi tum bʌʈeɾ bʌfiaɾdur hʌu, ÃgʌreɾJʌn sẹ lʌʈeɾ rʌfiʌu. hʌmʌreɾ pʌʈhaɾnʌn saɾth nʌ lʌʈeu. dʌs din tumʌreɾ mʌkaɾn mo aɾjeɾ hoi geɾ." un kiɾ cʌupaɾri bʌniɾ rʌfiʌi tefii mʌ teɾ nikaɾri difiiniˌ rʌfiʌi. ʌu ʃeɾkṵ bÃgʌlaɾ rʌfiʌi tiɾ maɾ tiɾniu bfiaɾi rʌfiʌtiˌ rʌfiʌ̃. tau kʌfiiniˌ "kaɾlfii hʌm tum teɾ lʌʈʌb. phiriˌ nʌ kʌfieu ki hʌm kaɾ maɾriniˌ."

tʌu bfioɾrṵ Jʌb bfiaɾ tʌb dʌs ʈhʌ̃ɾ kʌnɾjaɾ bʌmfiʌnʌn kiˌ bolaɾiniˌ. un kaɾ miʈhaɾiɾ khʌwaɾiniˌ. unkaɾ caɾri caɾri pʌisaɾ dʌchinaɾ difiiniˌ ʌu Joɾ kuchṵ bʌcaɾ tʌunṵ ʌponaɾ tiɾniu bfiaɾi khaɾi lifiiniˌ. kʌfiiniˌ "ʌb sudfiʌrʌu hʌmaɾɾ sipaɾfiijaɾnaɾ deɾkhʌu." tʌb maɾri laɾʈhiniˌ tiɾniu bfiaɾi giraɾi difiiniˌ. wʌfieɾ sʌb coʈaɾi gʌjeɾ. tʌu Jʌmaɾdaɾɾ Jʌunṵ bʌʈaɾ tʌbʌrɾaɾ boɾlti rʌfiʌi, kʌfiiniˌ "iɾ kiɾ naɾk hʌm Jʌruɾɾ kaɾʈʌb. juɾ hʌm kaɾ roɾʈiɾ naɾiɾ khaɾi difiisiˌ." wʌfiiɾ naɾk kaɾʈi lifiiniˌ, kʌfiiniˌ "hʌmaɾɾ djaɾkhʌu sipaɾfiijaɾnaɾ ʌb."

Translation

(d) The Bravery of Ṭhākurs

At (the time of) the mutiny I was ten (or) eleven years old. I have every recollection. The Bādshāh was captured. The English said : " Give us one-fourth (of your revenue)." The Bādshāh began to give it. The English saw that the Bādshāh was given to dance and music. Then they caught him (and) the white people occupied the quarters.

Munna Singh was my uncle. He had cut off the nose of the agent of the Bādshāh. (The Nawāb) of Shīshmahal called ten Paṭhān soldiers of Malihabad. (They had) each one knife and one *lāṭhī*. Munna and Pancam and Pahalwan (were bachelors) had not married. Then there was one Paṭhān amongst them who was very naughty. He said : "Munna Singh ! I had heard that you are very brave and that you had fought with the British. (But) you did not fight with us, the Paṭhāns. It is ten days that we came to your house." Their shed it was from which they had been turned out. There was a bungalow in which all the three brothers resided. Then (Munna Singh and his brothers) said : " We shall fight with you to-morrow. Do not say, later, that they killed us."

When it was morning, they called ten daughters of the Brahmins, fed them on sweetmeats and gave them four pice each as gift. And whatever (of the sweetmeats) remained, they ate up. (Then they) said : " Get ready now and see our soldiership." Then the three brothers by their *lāṭhī* strokes brought all of them down. They all got injured. Then the Jamādār who spoke very sharply, (with reference to him) (they said) : " We shall cut off this man's nose. He made it hard for us to eat our meals (lit. bread)." They cut his nose (and) said : " Now see our soldiership."

sʌɪl bfiʌre kį sʌʄaɪ bfiʌi. ʄʌb mʌfiinaɪ bfiʌri chuɪʈʌi ko rʌfiaɪ tʌb ʌdfiaɪr siŋgfi ɖʌɪkodʌr te mili kʌi munɪaɪ siŋgfi ko ʄjeɪl mo ʄʌfiʌr dewʌɪi ko mʌrwaɪi ɖaɪrinį.

They were sentenced for one year. When there remained one month for (their) release, Adhar Singh, in conspiracy with the Doctor, got Munna Singh poisoned in the jail and caused his death.

(e) ãdfiare kị beimaznix

jaxk sAmAi exkụ ãxdfiAr axdmix rAtxax rAtxax cAlax ʝaxti rAfiAi. dexkhAti rAfiÃĩ ki mefiArijax Au mAnsAwax laxɽfii m bAiɽh cAlex ʝaxti rAfiÃĩ. tAu mefierexwÃĩ kAfiax mAnsAwax tẹ ki "jAfii kax laxɽfii m bAiɽhax lexu". kAfiin "ãxdfiAr axdmix beimaxn hoxt hAi jAfii kax nA bAiɽhaxwAu laxɽfii m." kAfiin " naxix bAiɽhaxlxexu, ʝAb beimaxnix kArAi tAb hAm tex bAtaxjeu." un bAiɽhaxlxixn. tA un tex ÃdfiArAux tẹ pũxchin " kAfiãx pAr tum utArifiAu laxɽfiix pAr tex." kAfiin " utAri pArAu ʝo Aisifiix ʝAifiAu." tA un kAfiax "laxɽfiix bAilụ hAmaxr axi, hAm kaxfie ko utArix, tum utAri pArAu." pulis kẹ sipaxfiix rAfiÃĩ tA huãx raxʝA kẹ lAgex un kax pAkAri lAi gex. tAu raxʝax kAfieni "tumfiaxri pexsix axʝu nA hoxix kaxlfii hoxix." tixn koɽhArin mo tifiũ ko jaxk jaxk ko bAndo kAi defiin. tixniu ʝAgax pAr exkụ exkụ sipaxfiix bAiɽhax defiin. ui ʝAxnin nax ki sipaxfiix bAiɽhÃĩ. raxʝax kAfiin " ʝAunụ ix raxti ko kAfiÃĩ tAun sAbexrex hAm kax bAtaxjeu." AurAt raxti ko kAfiAti rAfiAi ki "hAmaxr mAnsAwax kAfiAti rAfiAi ' ix kax nA bAiɽhaxox' mulax hAm bAiɽhaxi lifiin." tA mAnsAux kAfiin ki " mefierijA k kAfiax nA kArAi ko cAfiix, dexkhAu hAm kAfiit rAfii gex ki 'ix kax nA bAiɽhaxox,' beimaxnix kAi gax." ÃdfiArAux kAfiÃĩ "raxʝax axi ʝo nijaxu buxʝfii ʝaxix tAu tixni mo exkụ dewAibAi kArix." raxʝax sAbexrex pAfiAr sipaxfiin te pũxchax ki " AurAt kax baxt kAfiis."

... ...

phirị raxʝax kafiin " ix kax kuchụ nA dexu, ix kax maxri ko khexdxexu."

Translation

(e) A Blind Man's Trickery

At one time, a certain blind man was going on a path. It was seen that a husband and wife, seated in a cart, were going. Then the wife said to the husband: "Take him in the cart." (He) said: "A blind man is dishonest usually, do not give him a seat." (She) said: "No, give him a seat, tell me when he practises dishonesty." He gave (him) a seat. Then (he) asked the blind man: "Where will you get down from the cart? You may get down if you go in this direction." He said: "The cart and bullock belong to me, why should I get down, you may get down." There were policemen, they caught them and took them to the king. The king said: "Your case will be put up to-morrow, not to-day." (He) shut up all the three, one by one, in three rooms. In all the three places (he) appointed a soldier each. They did not know that the soldier was sitting. The king instructed: "Whatever they say at night, tell it to me in the morning." The woman was saying at night: "My man was saying 'do not seat him,' but I gave him a seat." The husband said: "One should not do according to the woman's request, see I kept on saying 'do not seat him;' he did practise dishonesty." The blind man says: "He is a king, if he understands the case, he will cause one of the three (woman, cart and bullock) to be given (to me)." The king, in the morning, asked the soldiers: "What did the woman say?"

[Here follow the three statements of the three persons, one by one; these have been dropped to avoid repetition.]

Then the king said: "Do not give him (the blind man) anything, beat him and turn him out."

(f) lʌrikini ki pʌti-sezwaz

ezk bʌrazmfiʌn rʌfiʌi so wofi mʌfiazdezo kʌi sezwaz kʌi cʌloz. tʌb mʌfiazdezo pʌrsʌndə bfiez. hãz tʌb kʌfien ki "mãzg lezo ʒo mãzgʌi kaz hozi." hãz tʌb bʌrazmfiʌn kʌfiesi ki "hʌm kaz ezk lʌrikaz dezo." tʌb uiz kʌfien ki "djazb tʌu pʌi ʒʌb biazfi hui ʒazіz tʌb lʌi ljazb." tʌb bʌrazmfiʌn ʌpənez mʌn mẽz khjazl kifiesi ki "hʌm biazfi naz kʌrʌb, tʌb kʌisez lʌi ljazfiʌĩ." phir un kez bazlʌk dizmfieni.

hãz tʌb ui bazlʌk sʌjazn bfiez tʌb biazfiez kaz lozg bazg dʌurʌĩ lazg, tab bʌrazmfiʌn inəkazr kizn ki "biazfi nʌ kʌribez." tʌb mʌfiətazriz lʌrikaz kʌi kʌfiʌĩ lazg ki "mʌĩ ʒʌbʌrʒʌstiz biazfi kʌrifiʌũ." tʌb bʌrazmfiʌn mazrez kurezdfi ke nikʌri kʌi cʌli bfiaz ki "jʌfi biazfi ke ʈhʌĩz naz rʌifiʌũ." ʒazj ke ezk kuãz ke pazs pʌfiũci gaz. kuãz ke pazs cazri lʌrikiniz khezlʌti tĩz. tʌb ezk sʌkhiz bozliz ki "kuch bazt kʌfiaz." tʌb ezk bozliz ki "tum ʌpənez sʌsurez ʒʌifiaz to kaz kʌrifiaz." tab waz sʌkhiz bozliz ki "ʒʌb ʒʌifiʌũ tʌb ezk cuzl lʌi ʒʌifiʌũ, to ʒazтʌi ʒazt ʒudiz hui ʒʌifiʌũ." tʌb duzsʌri sʌkhiz bozliz ki "ʒʌb mʌĩ ʒʌifiʌũ tʌb bʌʈhʌniz lʌi ʒʌifiʌũ, tʌb hwʌn sez sʌb bʌʈozri lʌifiʌũ." tʌb tizsʌri bozliz ki "mʌĩ ʒʌifiʌũ tʌb dijazsʌraziz lʌi ʒʌihʌũ. tʌb duʌrfiez te azgiz lʌgʌifiʌũ." tʌb cʌuthi bozliz ki "mwazr kʌɳʈh[1] ʒo ezk pʌfiʌr ʒijʌt hoziz to dui pʌfiʌr ʒiʌifiʌũ."

tʌb waz bʌrazmfiʌn oiz lʌrikiz ke pazs cʌli bfiaz. tʌb lʌrikiz ʌpənez mʌkazn me pʌfiũciz. tʌb bʌrazmfiʌn bʌiʈhi gaz ʒazj. tʌb lʌrikiz ke gfiʌr kez maz bazp azjez tʌb pũzcheni ki "tum kʌfiãz rʌfiʌt fijaz.

[1] Obviously an error for kʌnʈə.

Translation

(f) A Girl's devotion to her Husband

There was a Brahmin. He went to serve Mahādeva. And Mahādeva was pleased and (he) said: "Ask whatever you want to ask." Then the Brahmin said: "Give me a son." He said: "I shall surely give one but when he marries, I shall take him back." At that the Brahmin thought to himself: "I shall not marry him, how then will (the god) take him?" Then a son was given to him.

The boy grew up. People began to run for his marriage but the Brahmin refused (saying): "I shall not marry (him)." Then the boy's mother said: "I shall marry (my son) by force." The Brahmin went out (of the house) out of wrath: "I shall not remain here in place of marriage." Having gone he reached near a well. There were four maids playing near the well. One of the friends said: "Say something." Then one said: "When you will go to your father-in-law's, what will you do?" That friend said: "When I shall go, I shall carry an oven, and as soon as I arrive I shall get a separation (from other people of the family)." Then another friend said: "When I go, I shall carry a broomstick and shall sweep away everything and bring it with me." The third said: "If I go, I shall carry a match-box and shall set everything on fire from the very entrance." The fourth said: "If my beloved would be living for one watch, I shall endeavour to make him live for two watches."

The Brahmin went near that girl. And the girl reached her home. The Brahmin went and sat there. The girl's parents came and asked: "Where do you reside? What

kʌun ʝaɪti aɪfiiu." kʌfiaɪ ki "bʌraɪmfiʌn aɪfiiniˌ." tʌb lʌrikiɪ ko baɪp pũɪchesi ki "tum kʌfieɪ kaɪ aɪjʌu." tʌb waɪ bʌraɪmfiʌn kʌfiesi ki "toɪriɪ lʌrikiɪ ʌu moɪreɪ lʌrikaɪ ki saɪdiɪ hoɪi cʌfiiɪ." tʌb ui lʌrikiɪ ke gfiʌr keɪ ui bʌraɪmfiʌn kaɪ maɪrʌĩ laɪg ʌu kʌfiʌĩ laɪg ki "saɪreɪ hʌm ʌponiɪ lʌrikiɪ kaɪ biaɪfi toɪreɪ lʌrikaɪ ke saɪth nʌ k̃ʌribeɪ." tʌb bʌraɪmfiʌn ʌnɪo paɪniɪ chãɪɽ diɪnfiẽsi ʌu ɖefieriɪ mãɪ laɪt lʌgaɪe kʌi pʌr rʌfioɪ ki 'lʌrikiɪ kaɪ biaɪfi nʌ kʌrifiaɪ to mʌi mʌri ʝʌifiʌũ." waɪ phirijaɪd raɪʝaɪ khijãɪ gʌi.

tʌb raɪʝaɪ un kaɪ bolaɪiniˌ ki "kʌfieɪ kaɪ maɪrjʌu jefi kaɪ." tʌb wofi lʌrikiɪ keɪ gfiʌr keɪ kʌfiʌĩ laɪg ki "saɪfieb jaɪ ʝʌbʌrʝʌstiɪ biaɪfi kʌrʌt hʌi moɪriɪ lʌrikiɪ kaɪ." tʌb raɪʝaɪ kul pũɪchi kʌi kʌfiesi ki "biaɪfi kʌi djaɪ, ʌcɪhaɪ hʌi." tʌb biaɪfi huĩɪ sʌfiiɪ huigaɪ. tʌb bʌraɪmfiʌneɪ ʌponeɪ gfiʌr kaɪ cʌli bfiaɪ. ʌponeɪ gfiʌr mãɪ pʌfiũcoɪ tʌb bʌraɪmfiʌni puɪchʌi laɪg ki "tum kʌfiãɪ geɪ tjoɪ ʌur kaɪ kʌri aɪjoɪ." "lʌrikaɪ keɪ biaɪfi ke khwaɪʝ kaɪ geɪ ten. biaɪfi sʌfiiɪ kʌr aɪjen."

caste do you belong to?" (He) said: "I am a Brahmin." Then the girl's father asked: "Why have you come?" The Brahmin said: "It is necessary that your daughter and my son should marry together." At that the people of that girl began to beat the Brahmin and to say: "Rascal![1] we shall not marry our daughter to your son." The Brahmin, then, gave up eating and drinking and fixing a foot on the threshold lay down (saying): "If you will not marry (your) daughter (to my son), I shall die." The complaint was lodged at the king's.

The king called them (and asked): "Why did you beat him?" The girl's people said: "Sir, he is forcibly marrying our daughter." The king then asked everything and said: "Do marry (your daughter). It is nice." The marriage, thus was settled there. The Brahmin started for his residence. When he reached home his wife asked: "Where had you gone and what did you accomplish?" (He replied): "I went in search of the son's marriage and have settled it."

NOTE.—The story, later on, relates how when the daughter-in-law arrived she was able to prolong the life of her husband by propitiating the deities.

[1] See footnote No. 2 under (c), p. 445.

(g) gurux kiflex ko phʌl

dui ʤʌnex rʌflʌ̃ loxdfl. tʌu unkex gurux axjex tʌu kʌflin " raxm raxm sunlexu, maxlax pʌflilxexu." tʌun ʧaxr diflin mʌnex " kaxtik mo axwox tʌb raxm raxm sunlexix." unkʌi mefloraxrux bflʌgotin bflʌi, ui ʧaxrax dʌi diflinḭ, kʌflinḭ, "maxgfl mʌflijã̄x." tʌb bixc mo mefloraxruijax kexr mʌrdʌwax mʌri gex. phaxgun mo unkex gurux axjex tʌb kex gurux kʌrʌi; gurux kefli kʌi cexlax bʌnaxwʌ̃, ui rʌflibʌi naxix kʌrʌ̃. tʌb ui wʌisen rʌfli gex.

tʌu kudxin baxdi unkʌi mefloraxrux mʌrix tʌu sʌŋguti pʌrix raxm gflʌrex. tʌb ui tʌu raxʤax khijã̄x bexʧix ʤʌlʌmꝑ liflinḭ ʌu ui tʌu haxthix bʌnex. tʌu kudxin baxdi ʤʌb saxdix kʌrʌi ko bflʌ̃x tʌu haxthix suninḭ tʌu khuʧokax kʌrʌi laxgẽx. tʌb bʌflut kaxjʌl. bʌid wʌid bʌflut bʌʧorinḭ, naxfl̃x nixk hox̃. ʤʌb thoxren din bijaxfl ko rʌfli gex tʌu haxthix bʌflut duborijaxn. tʌb puxchinḭ ki " baxp ʤaxn haxthix tʌu mʌrax ʤaxt hʌi." kʌflinḭ " hã̄x bexʧix mʌrax ʤaxt hʌi." tʌu kʌflinḭ " phirḭ koxix ʤʌtʌn nixk kʌrʌu." tʌu haxthix texnex kʌfloja x̃x ki " hʌm bijaxfl̃ uwaxfl̃ nʌ kʌrʌbʌi kuchꝑ, nʌ kʌfl̃ũx ʤaxbʌi kʌrʌb." tʌb kudxin baxdi baxbax axjex. bflʌbfluxti uʧhaxi haxthix pʌr bʌflaxi diflinḭ tʌb ux phirḭ mʌnʌix hoi gex.

Translation

(*g*) The fruit of accepting a preceptor.

There were two persons, Lodh (by caste). Their preceptor came and said: "Hear (the *mantra*) *Rām Rām*, put on the rosary." But (he) put it off, namely: "Come in (the month of) Kātik, then I shall hear *Rām Rām*." His wife became a devotee, he, however, put it off (and) said: "In (the month of) Māgh." Then in the meantime, the woman's husband died. In (the month of) Phāgun, his preceptor came, at that time who would accept the preceptor. Whom would the preceptor make the disciple, he no longer remained. So he remained (uninitiated) as he was.

Then after a few days, his wife died. Both of them came together in the Heavens (lit. Ram's house). She took birth at the king's as his daughter and he became an elephant. After a few days, when she was to marry, and the elephant heard (it), he began to worry (about it). (He was) very ill. Many physicians, etc., were brought together (but) he did not get better. When very few days for the marriage remained, the elephant became very much emaciated. Then (she) asked (her father): "Dear father, the elephant is dying." He (said): "Yes daughter, (he) is dying." Then (she) said: "Do cure him by any means." (She) went and told the elephant: "I shall not marry or do anything like it, nor shall I go anywhere." Then the saint came after some days (and) taking (sacred) ashes threw them on the elephant. At that he again became a human being.

(h) baɪmfiʌn ʌu bokʌraɪ keɪr kʌthaɪ

jaɪrkʌi bʌmfiʌnʌuɪ jaɪ̃rk bokʌraɪ kʌifijãɪ kãɪdfieɪ pę̃ dfiʌreɪ bʌjaɪr mʌifijãɪ bjãɪrcʌi ko liɪnfieɪ jaɪrtį̃ rʌfiʌĩ. rʌtɪaɪ mãɪ tiɪni bʌdmʌswaɪ mileɪ. ui bokʌrwʌ ko deɪkhin ki saɪrį̃ lʌlcaɪj uʈheɪ. mudaɪ bʌmfiʌnʌuɪ rʌfiʌĩ bʌʈeɪ ʈhifiaɪr tʌun un teɪrneɪ bokʌraɪ chʌʈ̃ãɪj ljaɪbu kuchu ʌisų̃ wʌisų̃ kaɪrmų̃ naɪ rʌfiʌi. tʌfiũɪ un bʌdmʌswʌn mãɪ teɪrneɪ jaɪrkų̃ kʌfiʌi laɪrg ki "jʌs mʌi kʌrʌũ tʌisʌi sʌb jʌneɪ kiɪnfieo. tʌ bʌmfiʌnʌuɪ tę̃ bokʌrʌuɪ kaɪ hʌtijaɪj ljaɪb."

etnaɪ kʌfiʌtʌi khʌn bʌmfiʌnʌuɪ ui kʌĩtiɪ teɪ nikʌreɪ. tʌu wʌfiʌi bʌdmʌswaɪ un teɪrneɪ bwaɪlaɪ ki "buʈhʌuɪ baɪbaɪ jʌfiu kuɪkurų̃ kʌpaɪre pę̃ dhʌreɪ kaɪfieɪ cʌleɪ jaɪt hʌo." suntʌi bʌmfiʌnʌuɪ risaɪj uʈheɪ ʌu kʌfiʌi laɪrg "saɪreɪ nʌfii kʌeɪ, kaɪ twaɪr diɪdaɪ phuɪʈi geɪ hʌĩ? jʌfiu kuɪkur aɪj? ʌs kuɪkur kʌbʌũ deɪkheɪ rʌfiʌi? cʌlu iɪ ʈhãɪj teɪrneɪ, nʌfiĩɪ tʌu mʌrifiʌũ swãɪʈaɪ tʌun kʌpaɪr phuɪʈi jaɪriɪ." buʈfiʌuɪ bʌfiutʌi khʌphaɪ bheɪ ʌu ãɪrgeɪ cʌleɪ. etneɪ heɪ maɪ dusʌrkʌu aɪrwaɪ ʌur bwaɪlaɪ "kaɪrkaɪ jʌfiu kuɪkurų̃ kʌfiãɪ teɪrneɪ lʌi aɪrjeo?" etnaɪ suntʌi bʌmfiʌnʌuɪ keɪ aɪrgi laɪrgi gʌi ʌu bʌfiutʌi nʌraɪɹ bfieɪ mudaɪ ʌb bʌmfiʌnʌuɪ bfiitʌrʌi bfiiɪtʌr swaɪrcʌi laɪrgi kį̃ "jetʌnʌfieɪ saɪrį̃ aɪrwʌt hʌĩ sʌbʌi jʌfiĩ kaɪ kukurʌi bʌtaɪrwʌt hʌĩ tʌunų̃ jʌfii kjaɪr kuchu bfijaɪrdʌi nʌfiiɪ sʌmjfiit." etʌnefieɪ mʌifijãɪ tisʌrkʌu aɪrwaɪ ʌu kʌfiʌi laɪrg "dʌdɪuɪ jʌfiu kuɪkur kʌfiãɪ teɪrneɪ lʌi aɪrjeo?" jʌfiu suntʌi buʈhʌunuɪ khʌwkhjaɪj uʈheɪ.

ui saɪreɪ bʌdmʌswʌn kʌifijãɪ buʈhʌuɪ kheɪrdi bfiʌleɪ diɪnfiin mudaɪ mʌn maɪ sʌk pʌri gaɪ ki

Translation

(*h*) The tale of the Brahmin and the Goat.

A Brahmin, with a goat on his shoulders, was carrying it to the market to sell (it). On the way, (he) met three crooks. As soon as they saw the goat, they got covetous (of it). But the Brahmin was very steady and so it was no easy job to snatch the goat away from him. Of the crooks one began to say : " Do as I do. Then we shall lay hands upon the goat."

While they were talking so, the Brahmin came that way. At that, that crook spoke to him : " Grandpa! why are you taking this dog over your head?" The Brahmin, on hearing (this), got angry and said : " Rascal thou ! are you blind[1] ? Is this a dog ? Did you ever see a dog like this ? Get thee away from this place. Or else I shall so strike (you with) the staff, that your head will break." The old man became very angry and proceeded further. In the meantime the second (crook) came and said: " Uncle! where did you bring this dog from ?" Hearing this much, the Brahmin was (as if) seized with fire and he became very wrathful. But the Brahmin began to ponder to himself: " Whosoever, rascals are they, come, they tell this (goat) to be a dog : I do not understand the mystery of this." At this very time the third one came and said : " Brother ! where did you bring this dog from ?" On hearing this the old Brahmin foamed with rage.

Although the Brahmin put those rascals, the crooks, off, but he came to entertain (some) doubt in mind:

[1] lit. are your eye-balls broken.

"ɟʌunʌi djaɤkhʌt hʌi efli kaɤ kukurʌi kʌfiʌt hʌi. tʌunu ɟaɤni pʌrʌt hʌi ki mwaɤr buʈfiaɤpeɤ keɤ diɤdaɤ mʌfli kaɤ dfiwaɤkhaɤ ɟʌruɤr diɤnflin hʌi. jʌflu ɟʌruɤrʌi saɤr kukurʌi aɤj." etnaɤ soctʌi buʈfiʌunuɤ ui bokʌraɤ kʌifiɨjãɤ bʌlɤaɤ hʌs ɟfliʈiki diɤnflin ʌu ʈhaɤʈfli hwʌi kʌi laɤgi gʌrijaɤwʌi. ɟʌbʌi lʌgeɤ iɤ ʈhaɤʈfli hwʌi kʌi laɤgi gʌrijaɤwʌi, tʌbʌi lʌgeɤ ui bʌdmʌswaɤ bokʌrwaɤ kʌifiɨjãɤ uʈhaɤj kę lʌikeɤ bhaɤgi geɤ.

" Whosoever sees this calls it a dog. So it appears that my eyes of old age are surely deceiving me. Surely this wicked (goat) is a dog."

While the Brahmin thought so, he threw the goat away with a jerk like a small stick and, standing there, began to shower abuses. While standing he was showering abuses, the crooks lifted the goat and ran away with it.

(i) sijaɪr ʌu sijaɪrin

eɪk ʝʌniɪ rʌfiĩɪ sijaɪrin. tʌb un kʌi mʌrdu mʌri gaɪ. tʌb wʌi kʌfiin "hʌm okʌreɪ upɪʌr sʌgaɪiɪ bʌiʈhʌb ʝekʌreɪ sʌu ʌkɪili hoɪiɪ." tʌu eɪkɳ mʌfiaɪ bfiʌdʌrgaʈfiijaɪ sijaɪr aɪwaɪ. uɪ kʌfiisi̯ ki̯ "hʌmʌreɪ eɪk sʌi eɪk ʌkɪili hʌi." tʌb okʌreɪ upɪʌr sʌgaɪiɪ bʌiʈhĩɪ.

tʌb wʌi gaɪbfiin bfiaĩɪ. ʝʌb bijaɪi ko bfiaɪ tʌu sijaɪr si̯ kʌfiin "cʌlʌu bʌtʌɪoɪ ʝʌfiãɪ tʌfiãɪ bijaɪiɪ." tʌb uɪ ʝaɪi ko bʌtaɪisi̯ ʝʌfiãɪ eɪk ʈhʌĩɪ baɪgfi rʌfiʌt rʌfiaɪ. tʌfiãɪ bʌtaɪisi̯ ki̯ "jʌfiiɪ ʈhiãɪ bijaɪu." kuch deɪr baɪdi bʌgfiowaɪ aɪwʌi laɪg ʝʌfiãɪ rʌfiʌt rʌfiaɪ. tʌb sijʌriniʌuɪ deɪkhin ʌu sijaɪr si̯ kʌfiin "kʌunʌu ʌkɪil lʌgaɪoɪ ʝefii mãɪ bʌgfiowaɪ cʌlaɪ ʝaɪi." tʌb uɪ kʌfiisi̯ "hʌm kʌun ʌkil lʌgaɪiɪ. hʌmʌreɪ ʌkil naɪfiĩɪ hʌi." tʌb sijʌriniʌuɪ kʌfiin: "tuɪ tʌu kʌfiʌt rʌfieu ' hʌmʌreɪ eɪk sʌi eɪk ʌkili hʌi'." tʌu sijaɪr kafiisi̯ ki̯ " ʝʌb seɪ hʌm toho kaɪ sʌgaɪiɪ bʌiʈhaɪren tʌb seɪ sʌb ʌkil toſiʌreɪ gfiusʌri gʌi."

Translation

(*i*) The Jackal and his wife.

There lived a she-jackal. Her husband died. Then she said : " I shall enter into matrimonial alliance with one who has one hundred wisdoms." At that, there came a very wicked jackal. He said : " I possess one hundred and one wisdoms." She entered into matrimonial alliance with him.

Then she became pregnant. When it was time to be delivered she said to the jackal : " Come and tell me the place where I should be delivered." Then he went and indicated a place where a tiger used to reside. There he said : " Be delivered over here." After some time the tiger began to come to his place of residence. Then the she-jackal saw it and said to the jackal : " Do practise some wisdom, so that the tiger may go away." He said : " What wisdom shall I use ; I have no wisdom." Then the she-jackal said : " You had said that you had one hundred and one wisdoms." The jackal replied : " Since I entered into matrimony with you, all my wisdom has entered you."

(j) baɾbaɾ ki kʌɾaɪmʌt

ɛɾk buʈʃiijaɾ ɾʌʃiɾ waʃi keɾ paɾs ɛɾk lʌʈikaɾ ɾʌʃiaɾ. berkul gʌɾiɾb ɾʌʃiaɾ, bʌʃut gʌɾiɾb, khaɪe begir moʃɛtaɾɟ. uɾ ghaɾs khoɾdi khoɾdi ʌpɛneɾ lʌʈikʌ ko ɟijaɾwʌt ɾʌʃiɾ. tʌu kuch din keɾ baɾdi lʌʈikaɾ sʌjaɪnaɾ bʃiaɾ. ʌpɛneɾ baɾp ki kɐ̃ʈijaɾ (bʌnsiɾ) lʌgaɾwʌi laɾg. phiɾi kɐ̃ʈijaɾ lʌi kʌi cʌlaɾ tʌu kɛ̃cuaɾ (caɪɾaɾ) khoɾdʌj laɾg. ʌu dui roɾʈiɾ beɟʃlʌɾʌ kʌi powaɾisi ʌu lʌʃɛsun ʌu mircaɾ ʌu loɾnu̯. tʌu ɛɾk tʌlaɾu mɐ̃ʃi kɐ̃ʈijaɾ lʌgaɾwʌi laɾg hʌi. giɾʌiɾ mʌcheɾiɾ ɛɾk miliɾ dupʌʃiʌɾ ko. tʌu mʌcheɾi ko bʃiũɾɟi ko bhʌɾtaɾ bʌnaɾwaɾ tʌu bʃiũɾɟi ko khaɾi laɾg tʌu kʌʃiisi dui ʌdmiɾ hoɾiti tʌu bʌtɛlaɾi bʌtɛlaɾi khaɾiti. etʌɾemɛ ɛɾk baɾbaɾ aɾi gʌjeɾ.

baɾbaɾ kʌʃiini "ɛɾku̯ ʈukɛʈaɾ hʌmɛʃiu ko deɾu bʌcɾaɾ tʌu hʌmʌʃiuɾ khaɾi leɾit." tʌu lʌʈikaɾ kʌʃiisi ki "hʌm tʌu caɾhʌti ɾʌʃien ki dui ʌdmiɾ hoɾiti tʌu bʌtɛlaɾi bʌtɛlaɾi khaɾiti." tʌb baɾbaɾ pʌtaɾ ʈhekaɾnaɾ puɾchʌi laɾgeɾ. tʌu kʌʃiisi "baɾbaɾ hʌmʌɾeɾ lʌgeɾ ɾʌʃiʌu." tʌu baɾbaɾ oɾkʌi hʌɟaɾmʌt bʌnwaɾini ʌu kʌpɛʈaɾ pʌʃinaɾini tʌu wʌʃiɾ tʌlaɾu pɛ ɛɾk mʌkaɾn bʌni gʌwaɾ aɾpʌi aɾp. tʌb phini wʌheɾ duɾnʌu hũɐ̃i ɾʌʃiʌi laɾgeɾ.

tʌu baɾbaɾ kʌʃiʌi laɾgeɾ "bʌcɾaɾ hʌm tɛʃiaɾɾ saɾdiɾ kʌi deɾiɾ tʌu kʌɾiʃiʌu?" tʌb kʌʃiini "hʌmʌɾeɾ nʌ mʌʃiɛtaɾɾiɾ nʌ baɾpu̯, hʌm tʌu bʌʃiut gʌɾiɾb hʌn. hʌmaɾɾ bijaɾʃiu̯ keɾu nʌ kʌɾiɾ." tʌu wʌʃiɾ tʌlaɾu pɛ ɛɾku̯ ghoɾʈaɾ aɾpu̯ ruɾpʌi bʌni gaɾ. tʌu wʌʃiɾ gʃloɾʈʌ pɛ wʌʃiɾ lʌʈikʌ ko bʌiʈhaɾɾi ko ʌu dui khuɾɛɟiɾ bʌnaɾi ko duɾnʌu khuɾɛɟiɾ bhʌɾi kʌi pʌisaɾ bʌʃiut laɾdi diʃiini. tʌu baɾsɾaɾʃi kɐ̨ ɛɾk

Translation

(*j*) The Fakir's miracle.

There was an old woman. She had a son. He was very poor, very very poor, wanting in eatables. She used to nourish her son by digging up grass. After some time the boy grew up. He began to use his father's hook (to catch fish). When he started with the hook he would dig up the earthworms (to offer bait to the fish). He got two loaves of millet prepared and (took) garlic, chillies and salt. He just put the hook in a pool. He got one red fish at noon. He fried the fish and mashed it. Having so fried when he began to eat he said (to himself): "If we were two persons, I would eat and talk." At this very time a Fakir arrived.

The Fakir said: "(my) child, if you give a slice to me, I would also have a meal." Then the boy said: "I myself was saying 'if we were two, we would eat and talk at the same time'." At that, the Fakir asked the whereabouts and other details of the boy. He said: "O saint! reside with me." The Fakir got the boy shaved and clothed him. At that very pool a house appeared by itself. The two began to reside there.

The Fakir said: "(my) child, if I marry you, will you marry?" He said: "I have neither father nor mother, I am very poor. Nobody will consent to marry (his daughter with) me." At that a horse showed itself (by some miraculous power) at that pool. The Fakir seated the boy on it and loaded the horse with two bags stuffed fully with pice. (They) went to the city of a king. The king had

nʌgʌr mo gez tʌu baɪsaɪfi ke ezk lʌɣikiɪ rʌfiiɪ. tʌu jʌi ɟʌb gfiʌrez pʌfiũcez tʌu unkiɪ kʌcefiori kę saɪmnez pʌisaɪ luɣʌub suruɪ kʌj difiiniˌ. tʌb gofiorazinˌ ki "baɪsɪaɪfi saɪfieb ʌponiɪ lʌɣiki ki saɪdiɪ hʌmorez sʌŋg kʌrbʌu." tʌu baɪsɪaɪfi saɪfieb boɪlez "naziɪ." tʌu lʌɣikaɪ ʌponez mʌkaɪn ko cʌlez gez.

a daughter. When these people reached the residence (of the king), they began to shower away the pice. And shouted out: "Sire! king! Will you marry your daughter with us?" The king said: "No." The boy returned to his residence.

Note.—The story further tells that ultimately when rupees and *mohurs* were showered, the king, considering these people to be very rich, married his daughter to the boy. Immediately after the marriage, the boy somehow incurred the displeasure of the Fakir and everything vanished as it had come about. The boy again took to his profession of a fisherman. When the husband of the princess did not return, she started with a retinue on a search and to while away her time she used to hear stories from people of the places she went to. At last she arrives at the village of this boy, hears the life-story of her husband and recognises him and joyfully returns to the capital.

(k) kʌcefloriz maz bʌjazn

gflʌr maz hʌmazr sʌsur ʌflʌi, biʈijaz ʌflʌi mʌnsezruz ʌflʌi.

sazfleb tezraz rozʝ ki bazt hʌi, hʌmʌrez pʌrozsez erk buʈfliјʌ ko gflʌr ʌflʌi. u buʈfliјʌ ke lʌgez kʌbʌu kʌbʌu bʌiʈhi ʝaziti hʌi. biʈijaz hʌmazri rozʈiz bʌnazisi̯ tʌu kʌflisi̯ "cʌlʌu maziz khazi ljaz." tʌu hʌm kʌflaz "toflazr dazdaz kʌflɜ̃xʔ" kʌflisi̯ "ʝflɜ̃xʈez gez." hʌm kʌflaz "azwʌi djaz tʌu cʌliz." tʌu biʈijʌu hʌmazr moflazrʌ ke ũzcaz ũzcaz nʌgʌraz hʌi tʌu bʌiʈhi gʌj. phiri̯ ʝflɜ̃xʈez ozʈez se azjɜ̃z tʌu goflazr lʌgazini̯ tʌu hʌm ʌu biʈijaz ciciazi ko dʌuren tʌu mʌflazbizr tezliu pʌhũci gaz. tʌu hʌm nʌ cizнfliz nʌ ʝazniz. tʌu hʌmazr azdmiz ʌu tezliz erk azdmi ko pʌkʌrez rʌflen. hʌm nazix cizнfli sʌkiti. razt rʌfliz ɐ̃dfliјazr. bʌflut ʌdmiz chɜ̃zkez rʌflez. dʌrwʌʝrez pʌr rʌʝaziz miliz rʌfliz.

Translation

(*k*) A Statement in the Court.

In my family, there is my father-in-law, (my) daughter and (my) husband.

Sir, the thing relates to the day, thirteen days off. In my neighbourhood, there is the residence of an old woman. Often I sit by that old woman. My daughter prepared food (lit. bread) and said: "mother come and eat." At that I said: "Where is thy daddy?" (She) said: "(He) has gone out to ease himself." I said: "Let him come and then I shall come." My daughter also sat down on the high platform on my threshold. When (he) returned after easing himself he gave out a shout (of danger) and at that my daughter and I cried and ran (towards the house). Mahabir, a Tēlī[1], also came round. I neither recognise nor know (the thief). My man and the Tēlī were holding a man. I cannot recognise (him). It was a dark night. Many men were obstructing (the view). The quilt was found at the door.

(ا) mukʌdimaɪ kʌi haɪl

ʌchaɪ tʌu sunaɪ eɪk mukʌdimaɪ kʌi haɪl toſi kaɪ bʌtaɪiɪ. eɪk meſiraɪɪuɪ rʌſiɪ tʌniɪ deɪkhʌi maɪ niɪki naɪſiɪ raſiɪ. oɪkʌr mʌnseɪdſuɪ oɪkaɪ liaɪe tʌu gaɪ munaɪ duin tiɪn din maɪ bʌſiaɪj diſisi̱. u becaɪɪiɪ aɪe nʌiſʌɪeɪ mo ɪʌſʌi laɪgi̱. naiſʌɪwʌo mʌ ukoɪeɪ keuɪ naɪſiɪ ʌſʌi. dui caɪɪ din tʌu oɪkʌɪ kaɪkaɪ pitiɪ khaɪe oɪe kaɪ diſiin phin kʌſien ki " ʌb hʌmʌɪeɪ maɪn ko naſĩɪ no cʌſʌi ʌponeɪ mʌnseɪdſuɪ keɪ hijãɪ ʝaɪ. cʌſʌi ʝʌſãɪ mʌn hoɪe tʌſãɪ ʌntʌi cʌliɪ ʝaɪ. hʌm sʌb ʌponʌi eſi kaɪl maɪ bſiuɪkhʌn mʌɪʌtʌſiɪ. tõſi kaɪ khiaɪwʌi kaɪ kʌſãɪ dſiʌɪaɪ baɪʈʌi". iɪ suni keɪ uɪ meſiraɪɪuɪ uɪ gãɪu choɪɪi keɪ oſi keɪ pʌɪoɪseɪ dusʌɪeɪ gãɪo maɪ rʌſʌi laɪgi ʌu in seɪ un seɪ udſiaɪɪ baɪʈſiɪ laikeɪ aɪpʌn din kaɪʈʌi laɪg. ʌisen oɪ kaɪ eɪk bʌɪis biɪti gaɪ. ʝʌu deɪkhisi̱ kiɪ ʌb udſiʌɪʌu baɪʈſiɪ kʌtʌſiũ seɪ nʌſĩɪ milʌt tʌu ʌponeɪ nʌiſʌɪeɪ keɪ eɪk baɪmſiʌn keɪ lʌgeɪ gʌi. ʌu kʌſiisi̱ ki " bſiʌijaɪ ʌb tʌu kʌuniu tʌnaɪ nʌſĩɪ cʌlʌt. kiɪ tʌu tuɪ sʌb keuɪ kʌſiaɪ ʌu hʌm kaɪ kuchụ̈ khaɪj piiʌj kaɪ hʌmʌɪeɪ mʌnʌiwaɪ seɪ dijaɪj djaɪ ki tʌu phiri cʌlaɪ hʌm seɪ sʌrkaɪɪ maɪ eɪk dʌrkhaɪs dewaɪj dejaɪ nʌſĩɪ tʌu ʌb hʌmaɪɪ biɪtʌb muskil baɪ ". baɪmſiʌn deotaɪ kaɪ eɪkʌi haɪl deɪkhi kʌi bʌʈaɪ tʌrʌs aɪje ʌu kʌſien kiɪ " ʌchaɪ cʌlaɪ ʝʌu tʌu hʌmʌɪeɪ kʌſiaɪ maɪneɪ tʌu tʌu hʌm tõſi kaɪ oɪ seɪ khaɪe piiʌj kaɪ dijaɪj deɪbʌi ʌu ʝo raɪkhʌi pʌɪ tʌjaɪɪ hoi ʝaɪe tʌb tõſi kaɪ okʌɪeɪ hĩjãɪ rʌſʌi ko pʌɪeɪ. ʌu hãɪ ʝʌu uɪ naɪ tʌjaɪɪ hoɪiɪ tʌu cʌlaɪ hʌm toɪ seɪ eɪk ʈhi dʌɪkhaɪs ḍipʈiɪ saɪſieb keɪ hijãɪ diaɪj deɪb wʌi ʌs ʌs maɪmileɪ maɪ bʌſiut khijaɪl kʌɪʌthĩɪ".

Translation

(*l*) The Account of a Case

All right, listen, I shall tell you the account of a case. There was a woman, but she was not good to look at. Her husband took her (with himself) (after marriage) but turned her out after two or three days. She, poor woman, came back to her father's and resided there. There is no one at her father's place either. Her uncles gave her food for a few days (lit. two or four days) and later said: "It is no longer within our means. Either go to your husband's or go elsewhere wherever you like. Nowadays, we ourselves are suffering from hunger, where have we got to feed thee?" Hearing this that woman quitted that village and took up her residence in a village near by. And (she) began to spend her days by borrowing from this or that person. When she found that she could no longer get anything by borrowing, she went to a Brahmin of her father's place and said: "Brother! it is impossible to go on now. Either all of you should speak to my husband and make him give me something to eat and drink or come and help me to put in a petition to the Government. Otherwise, it is difficult for me to carry on." The Brahmin-god on seeing her condition had compassion for her and said: "All right come, if he accepts my words, I shall make him give you something for you to eat and drink and if he will be ready to keep you, you will have to live with him. And yes, if he is not ready to keep you, come, I shall help you to give a petition to the Deputy Saheb. He is very considerate in such cases."

(m) bʌmfiʌnix kʌi bʌjaxn

axpus mãx kʌʝiax bfiax. gfiʌrex ke mʌnʌix hʌmkex nisaxr difiin. hʌm ʌponex pʌraxnix ke saxth bʌmbʌe ʝaxe ke ʝãgfiʌix ke ʈixsʌn kax cʌlex. kuch durijax hʌm pʌcex gʌjex to lʌmbex se exk taxrax dexkh pʌrax. ofi mãx hʌm nʌfiaxnex ʌu kinaxrex bʌiʈh ke daxnax bijax kʌrʌi laxgex. itʌnex mãx . . . axẽx ʌur hʌmʌrex mʌnsexdfiu se pũxchin ki " tux kʌfiijax gfiʌrex sex cʌljax ? " phun dʌ kax dʌ kax kʌfii kex un sex pʌdoxrix kʌrʌi laxgen. on hʌrken ki " kʌs bfiʌijax kʌcxix pʌkxix boxlʌt ʌfiax ". tʌb ʌur phuxhʌr paxtʌr bʌkʌi laxgen. hʌm muʈijax ke ugʌrax dfiʌrʌi ke kifiax. on dʌwʌʈ ke hʌmʌrex mʌnʌix ke pʌnʌfiix se maxrʌi laxgen hʌmaxr goʈfiʌrax ɖfiʌrkʌuax, nʌthijax chixn choxr lifien. hʌm pʌcex pupuix lʌgaxwax ʌu gãxw dexs kʌi dofiaxix dexj laxgen tʌb on goʈʌitex bolaxj ke hʌmʌrex mʌnʌix kax dfiʌraxj difien.

Translation

(*m*) The Statement of the Brahmin Woman.

There was a quarrel amongst our people. The people of our family turned us out. I started with my man for Janghai Railway station in order to go to Bombay. When we had gone some distance, from far off a tank came to our sight. We bathed in it and started to eat food sitting at the bank. At this time (the aggressor) came and asked my husband : "When did you start from your home?" Later saying many things which I know not, he began to jest with him (my husband). He forbade : " Brother, why do you talk unbecomingly?" At that he began to speak further obscene words. We bent down and started to get off. He (the aggressor) came running and started beating my husband with shoes. And snatched away my anklets, bracelets and nose-ring. We shouted (for help) and sought protection of the village and the country. At that he (the aggressor) called the watchman and got my husband taken into custody.

(n) bʃikhaɪrik baɪmʃʌn kʌj kʌthaɪ

eɪk ʧhe rʌʃɛ̃ɪ baɪmʃʌn, to din raɪt mɛ̃ɪgʌɪ̃. ʌis mɛ̃ɪg ʤɛ̃ɪc ke kuch dinaɪ khɛ̃ɪen pɪ̃en. to eɪk dinaɪ ʌur mɛ̃ɪgɛ̃ gʌjɛ̃ɪ to wʌ̃ʃi dinaɪ kʌʃi gʌjɛ̃ɪ rʌʃɛ̃ɪ ʌpʌneɪ meʃiraɪriɪ se ki "aɪgiɪ oɪgiɪ ʤiaɪeɪ rʌʃeɪ to ɛ̃ɪʧaɪ oɪʧaɪ mɛ̃ɪgi ke liaɪeɪ rʌʃiʌb". to ʤʌb mɛ̃ɪg ʃɪg ke aɪjen to ʤʌun kʌʃeɪ rʌʃen ki aɪgiɪ oɪgiɪ ʤiaɪeɪ rʌʃeɪ tʌun aɪgiɪ oɪgiɪ ʤiaɪeɪ nʌʃɪ̃ɪ rʌʃɪ̃ɪ. to aɪgiɪ aɪneɪ uʃɛ̃ɪ pʌʧhʌi diʃiin. to ɛ̃ɪɪ̃ɪ lʌi ke aɪgiɪ to oɪ kʌʃen ki "eɪk aɪdmiɪ ko hʌm deɪkhaɪ hʌi ki maɪlpuʌi maɪlpuaɪ khaɪt baɪ". to oɪ kʌʃen ki "tumʃiuɪ bʌnaɪoɪ". tʌb uɪ ʤʌb bʌnaɪwʌi kʌʃen to pɛ̃ɪc pʌseɪɪɪkeɪ maɪlpuaɪ bʌnʌen paɪnʧhʌi. ʤʌb tʌjaɪɪ hoi gʌwaɪ tʌb khaɪe kaɪ bolaɪen. tʌ ɖeɪʧʃi maɪlpuaɪ unkiɪ thaɪɪiɪ me rʌkh diʃiin ʌu pʌlthiɪ tiɪɪ coraɪi liʃen. to oɪ kʌʃen ki "kʌi reɪ pɛ̃ɪc pʌseɪɪiɪ ki pɛ̃ɪcʌi ʧhe bʌnaɪ etʌnaɪ pisaɪn liaɪe rʌʃeɪ". duɪnoɪ ʤʌneɪ seɪ ʤʃʌgʌʧaɪ hoi gaɪ. to kʌʃin ki "ʌisen naɪʃɪ̃ɪ, eɪk ʧheɪ sutʌreɪ ke mʌcʌwaɪ bichaɪwaɪ to dunoɪ ʤʌneɪ oɪʃiɪ pe leɪʧiɪ. to ʤʌun ʤaɪgʌi tʌwʌn khaɪeɪ ʌu ʤiɪ soɪi ʤaɪeɪ tiɪ naɪ khaɪeɪ".

Translation

(*n*) The Story of the beggar Brahmin.

There was a Brahmin. He used to beg day and night. Begging in this way he ate and drank for some time. Then again, one day he went a-begging. (Before he went) he had asked his wife to keep fire lighted (saying) "I shall bring flour etc. by begging." When he returned after begging, (he found that) she had not lighted the fire. He sent her to bring fire (from neighbourhood). When she came back with fire, she said: "I have seen a man, he eats only *mālpuā*[1] and nothing else." Then he said: "You may also make *mālpuā*[1]." When he asked her to make *mālpuā*, she made five out of five seers (of flour). When they became ready, she called (him) to eat and put one *mālpuā*[1] and a half in his vessel and stole away the rest by her side[2]. At that he said: "O! did you make only five; I had brought so much flour?" (And) both of them quarrelled. Then they said: "Not in this way; put a cot woven with cotton-threads[3] and let both of us lie on it. Whosoever keeps awake may eat (all the five *mālpuās*) and one who goes to sleep, should not eat."

Note.—The story is half-told.

[1] ***mālpuā***—a cake of flour leavened with yeast, mixed up with dried fruits and sugar and fried in butter—greater delicacy than ***gulgulā*** [see note 1 under (*a*)].

[2] ***palthī***—a position of sitting, one foot on one thigh and the other under the other thigh.

[3] ***sutarā***—probably "of cotton-thread". This gives a very soft luxurious bed.

INDEX

PART 1. Sanskrit, Prakrit, Early Awadhi words and loan-words from other Indian and from foreign languages.

PART 2. Modern Awadhi and Hindustānī words.

NOTE.—(*a*) Generally derivatives have been put under respective roots, *e.g.*, *hōihi* under *hō*.

(*b*) *ṁ* before mutes has been transcribed as the nasal of the class of the mute, *e.g.*, *saṁga* as *saṅga*.

(*c*) the derivatives begin after the root (*ān* - , - *ahi* = *ānahi*) or after the root less the final vowel of the root (āju, - *ū* = ājū).

PART 1

Early Awadhi, Sanskrit, Prakrit etc.

a

ai 164
aiguna 326
aisa 164, 187, 207; *-i* 306; *aisiya* 207; *aisī* 207; *aiseu* 207; *aisehu* 207, 314; *aisē* 187, 306; *aisō* 306
ai-, -hai 165; *-hahu* 262
au 137, 165, 186, 196, 269, 272, 282-3, 310
augāhi 281
auguna 263, 266, 326
aura 176, 183, 200, 310; *-i* 318; *-u* 200, 313; *-hi* 196, 200
auru 172, 200, 241, 310; *kou* 206
akasara 152-3
akāratha 26
akāsa 137, 187; *-ā* 227; *-ū* 217
akkhī 132-3; *-ī* 132; *-iṃ* 132-3
akṣi 80, 132; *-īṇi* 68, 132
akhiāna 108
akhiyā 326
akhrōṭ 34
agama 182
agamõ 301, 303
agāũ 304
agahuṛa 304
aguā 82
agumana 301, 303
aggī 34, 67, 115; *-ō* 133
agniḥ 115, 118
agyā 26
agyātā 243
agrakē 231
aghāi 285
aghōrahi 26
aṅka 65
aṅga 34, 176
aṅguṭṭha- 37
aṅguṣṭha 63
aṅgū 209
acaraja 207; *acarja* 107
ackan 35
acchai 35
acchara 15
achata 159, 237, 297
achara 15
ajasa 174
ajahũ 314
ajja 36
ajjiā 68
ajñā 121
añcala 35, 207
añjana 187
aṭhāraha 147
aṇajjhāō 36
aṇḍa 51, 65
ati 57, 138, 173-4, 186, 283, 292
ahī 233

ahē 233
atta 199; *-ā* 199
atthi 237
athāī 108
adala 187
adhara 175, 186; *-na* 122 -3, 246
adharama 220
adhāra 164; *-ī* 218
adhika 173, 183
anaṅgā 160
anata 305
anadhyāyaḥ 65
ananda 325; *-ā* 204
anabhala 186, 202
anamani 142
anaratha 158
anātha 187
anāhada 178
anīka 63
anu 271
anugraha 167
anucita 182, 243
anubhaeu 152; *anubhayeu* 182
anumānī 196
anurāgā 292
anuhārī 326
anusaraī 186
anūpa 164, 173
anēkā 219
anta 188, 262
antara-63
andha-79; *-ā* 200
anna 186
anya 46, 65, 205
apajasu 195
apana 197; *-ī* 195, 197; *-ē* 137, 175, 178, 195-7, 202, 263, 282; *-ō* 195, 197
apara 50, 69, 205, 326
aparādha 200, 263
apasāra 72
apaḥ 117
apāna 195; *-ā* 196; *-ē* 195, 197
appa 199; *-ṇam* 40; *-ssa*, 199; *-āṇaṃ* 199; *-o* 199
aba 160-1, 166, 172, 193, 228, 243, 262-3, 266, 273, 292, 301; *-hī* 165, 255, 319; *-hū* 244, 314
abasi 307
abāsū 142
abīra 256
abhiantara 68
abhilāṣu 204, 207; *abhilāsē* 203
abhiṣēkū 138
abhyantara 42, 68
amarāvati 198
amia 43; *amiya* 292; *amī* 246; *amī* 188, 256
amū 179
amōla 176
amba- 41
ambu 198
ambrita-bēli 57
amrita 174
amha 163; *-ē* 163
araghaṭṭa 56, 63

aratha 240
ari 161, *-basa* 188
aru 34, 310
arujhānē 291
arunārī 256
argalā- 46
arghya- 35 ; *-ḥ* 34
artha 226
ardha-caturtha 37
aṛhatālisa 148
aṛhāī 155
alakha 223
alīhā 182
ava 180
ava-ūḍha 73
ava-tīrṇa 73
avatehu 271
avadha 107, 138, 187
avadhi 167
avalōkani 283
avaśyā 73
avasara- 73, 174, 177, 183, 193
avāarāũ 77
avidhavā-tva 56
avēlā 63
avōḥ 180
aśīti 68
aśru 55
asa 160, 172, 176, 183, 186-8, 192, 201-2, 204, 207-8, 243, 245, 275, 306
asau 179
asi 192, 207, 296
asīsa 123-4, 242 ; *-t* 124
asti 237
astuti 123, 167
asmē 163
aha-, -i 142, 177, 209, 233, 298 ; *-t* 121 ; *-u* 233 ; *-ā* 122, 233, 273-4, 277 ; *-si* 233, 255 ; *-hi* 233, 237 ; *-t* 187, 208, 233, 274
ahakaṃ 163
ahā 159, 233, 275, 278
ākhiyā 168
āgūṭhī 218
ādhiārā 297 ; *ādhiyāra* 246

ā

āi 152, 172, 174, 176 ; *-ī* 177 ; *-t* 246
āiũ 243
āutahi 200 ; *āuna* 196, 282 ; *āuba* 286 ; *āubi* 286
āū 160, 166, 183
āũ 158
āe 277, 292
āeu 244 *āeũ* 243, 278 ; *āehu* 269
āesu 292
āē 177, 241
ākhēṭa 56, 71
āgai 124, 171, 304
āgama 209
āgamanu-sūcaka 121
āgari 137, 160
āgila 138 ; *-i* 138
āgū 173, 304
āgehā 301 ; *-t* 319 ; *āgēha* 304

āgē 183, 301, 304 ; *-ē* 173, 304, 325
āgya 325
ā-cām- 63
*ācha-*233 ; *-i* 27, 35 ; *-hī* 57, 222, 233
āju 182, 202, 254, 267, 291, 301 ; *-hi* 319 ; *-ū* 158, 198, 245, 274, 298
āṭha 146, 173
āṭhava 153
ātamajā 272
ātman 199
āthi 237
ādarasa 226
ādarśa 51
ādika 209
ādihu 188
ādhīnā 263
āna 43, 138, 173-4, 200-1, 326
ān-, -aī 326 ; *-ata* 175 ; *-aba* 261 ; *-ahi* 200-01 ; *-ā* 201 ; *-i* 177, 182 ; *-eu* 197
āpa 195-7 ; *-na* 195-7, 271 ; *-ni* 195-7 ; *-nī* 195-7 ; *-nē* 195 ; *-nō* 195-7
āpu 195-9, 204, 266 ; *-na* 195-6, 198, 266 ; *-nu* (*āpa*) 195 ; *-nū* 197 ; *-sa* 197, 199 ; *-hi* 195-6 ; *-hī* 195-7 ; *-ū* 195, 198
ābhīra 66
āma- 64
āmalaka- 69 ; *-ḥ* 65
āmra 41
āyesu 160, 171, 186
āyē 187
ārati 292
ārana 107, 122
ārdrikā 64
ārya- 64 ; *-ā-* 68
ālaya 64
ālasya 50, 55, 63
ā-loḍ- 63
āv-, -ai 177, 203, 256 ; *-atahi* 241 ; *-ana* 167 ; *-ahi* 256 ; *-ahī* 159 ; *-ahu* 183 ; *-ā* 165, 171, 176, 184, 188, 193, 242 ; *āwā* 158
āśā 55
āṣāḍha 63
āsa 173, 202 ; *-ā* 160, 193
āsramani 125
āh-, -ai 160 ; *-i* 201, 223, 233, 237, 272 ; *-ī* 209
āhō 243
ākusa 26, 122
ākhina 168, 177, 183 ; *ākhī* 132, 138, 160-1
āṭa 197
ābahi 123
āsū 123
āhai 233

i

ikaīsa (*-ā*) 148
ikṣu 70
icchā 161

ita 304-5
itē 208
itvara- 66
idam 185
ina 181, 184-5; *-hī*, 181, 183, (see *inha*)
indra-aś- 66
indrāvati 220
indhanaṃ 68
inha 181, 183, 185; *-hī* 181, 183, 185
imi 306
iha 182; *-i* 57, 152, 182, 282, 318
ihā 198, 303
ihi 68, 183
ṙbilī 137

ī

ī 181, 185
īsa 57

u

uē 82
ukhārī 26, 168
ugharahī 219, 291; *ugharī* 24
ucita 183
uj̈ārā 192
uj̈āri 138, 142
uj̈jvala 69
uṭh-, *-ai* 58; *-ata* 240; *-aba* 296; *-ā* 242; *-āī* 186; *-eu* 296; *-eū* 243, 296; *-ē* 222
uḍ-, *-ahī* 256; *-āī* 124; *-ē* 172, 200
uḍḍēi 51
uṇa 180, 191
uta 304-5
utara 120, 193, 261, 326; *-hī* 256
utaru 172, 262
utāila 188
utārō 159, 267
uttara 293
udāsī 161
udeti 69
ud-ghaṭ- 69
udyama 67
una 170, 172-3
unha 170, 172, 175, 177, 181; *-ī* 170, 176-7; *-hī* 176-7
upakāra 208
upadēsa 219
upadēs-, *-ia* 174; *-inhi* 246
upama 203
uparātu 227
uparāhā 226-7; *-ī* 164, 204, 225-7
uparitra 227
upariṣṭha 227
uparōhita 121; *-hī* 122
upaśālā 72
upāī 244
upāū 246
upādhyāya- 73; *-ḥ* 65
upāya 200, 203
upāsaka 208
uppajjai 40
upphaṇāi 41

upari 227
umā 242
ura 182-3, 204, 242-3
uṛai 256
ulūkhala- 73
uvaviṭṭha 41
usaru 268
uha 171; *-i* 171, 318; *-ī* 318; *-u* 314
uhā 303
ūjiāra 207; *-ā* 77, 159, 172, 186; *-ē* 137-38

ū

ū 181
ūkha 107
ūpara 58, 159, 177. 225-7, 283, 325
ūbhi 28
ũkha 137
ũca 122, 142, 218, 222; *-ī* 142

ṛ

ṛṣi 228

e

eka 222, 242, 255, 257, 263, 272-3, 298
ekā- 155
ekādaśa 34
egayāraha 146
etad 185
etan-, *-ai* 208; *-ā* 208; *-ia* 208; *-ī* 208
ettha 305
eṣaḥ 185
eṣā 185
eṣo 66
eso 185
eha 181-2, 185
ehi 58, 181-3, 208, 241, 243, 254, 262, 292, 296-7
bidhi 306
ehu 181, 183-6

ē

ē 121, 181-2, 185, 262
ēka 146, 175, 182, 196, 242, 257, 326; *-i* 125, 318; *-hi* 58, 318; *-hu* 174
ēkū 182
ētehu 208
ētē 185
ētō 208
ēhā 182-3
ēhi 183
ēhū 182-3, 292
ēhō 66

o

okhli 73
onāhĩ 124
oṣṭha 73
ohi 170, 173-4, 177, 181, 201-3, 240-41; *-ī* 58, 278
ohu 181

ō

ō 170, 172-3, 181; *-ū* 172, 275
ōtī 208

ōdhā 173
ōra 172
ōṣada 159
ōhī 58, 174, 177; *-ī* 254

k

ka 175, 188, 202, 208, 216, 218, 283, 322
kai 121-2, 125, 153, 160, 173-5, 183, 188, 201-2, 218, 244, 256, 267, 272, 281, 286, 291, 298
kaikaī 187; *kaikai* 122
kaira 221
kaisai 261-3, 306; *kaisehũ* 314; *kaisẽ* 240, 263, 306; *kaisō* 208
kau 216
kauna 195; *-u* 137, 314; *-hu* 263; *-hũ* 314; *kauni* 193; *kaunu* 193, 261-2; *kaunẽ* 193
kaũ 166, 215-6, 221
kakṣa 221; *kakṣyaka* 221
kakhu 222
kaṅkaṇa 79
kaṅkata 79
kaṅkha 34
kacchapa 69
kachu 159, 166, 171, 182, 184, 201, 203, 206, 223, 228, 266, 292; *eku* 314
kañcuki 245
kaṭa 197; *-m* 332
kaṭaka 172
kaṭu 51
kaṭhina 326; *-āī* 167
kaṭhōra 207; *-ā* 326; *-ū* 296
kaṇikā 66
kaṇṭaa 36
kaṇṭha 188
katahũ 120, 314; *-ũ* 203, 314
kati 210
kath- 56
kathā 122, 203, 207, 219, 241-2, 249, 263, 292, 296
kadama 57
kadalī- 72
kanaka 26, 121, 160
kanahārā 187
kaniā 208
kanta 168
kanthā 164
kandaranhi 122
kapaṭa 166
kaparda- 69
kapāṭa- 71
kapāsu 121
kapittha 37-8, 66
kabahũa 314; *kabahũ* 301, 314
kabi 120, 241; *-tanha* 122, 217
kabilāsā 193
kabīṭh 37
kabbura- 41
kamala 219
kamalā 71
kamānaī 242
kamāva 26
kampa- 79; *-i* 40

kambala- 41
**kayara* 72
kayalī 72
kayā 196, 208
kara 121-2, 158, 163-4, 172-3, 175-6, 182, 186-8, 192, 198, 202-4, 217, 243, 246, 280-3, 292, 297-8
kar-, *-ai* 122, 168, 196, 200-2, 285; *-ar* 168, 257; *-aũ* 171, 192-3, 254; *-ata* 123, 165, 172, 240, 274; *-ateũ* 203; *-aba* 159, 262, 301, 326 *-abi* 262; *-abu* 192; *-asi* 164; *-asi hai* 273; *-ahi* 260; *-ahī* 218, 255; *-ahĩ* 196; *-ahu* 165, 186; *-ahũ* 209; *-ā* 122, 137; *-i* 158, 166, 174, 217-8; *-iẽ* 292 *-ihai* 134, 202, 263; *-ihi* 134; *-ehu* 269; *-ẽhũ* 183
kara-, *-kamalani* 125; *-gata* 167; *-tala* 174
karatuba 292
karatā 187, 246
karatāra 274; *-u* 108; *-ū* 121
karatūti 183; *-ī* 142, 208
karana 283,
karanī 123, 154, 173, 175, 186, 197, 241
karanīyā 193
karabalā 158, 242
karama 188
karāiuṁ 285; *karāiũ* 285
karissai 134
karī 160-2, 280-1, 297
karu 296
karui 137, 142, 158
karēja 255; *-ā* 240
karotu 332
karōri 151; *-ī* 151
karṇa 46
kartārū 108
karpūra 70
karṣati 55
karhāvaũ 167
kalatram 117
kalasa 263
kalīñjara 263
kalī 165
kalya- 52; *-e* 67; *-ẽ* 303
kavana 191, 193; *-i* 193; *-u* 193, see *kauna*
kavāla 192
kaviṭṭha 37
kaścid 206
kasa 196, 273, 306
kasauṭī 292
kasi 207
kasya 195
kah-, *-a* 274, 326; *-ai* 196, 203, 283; *-au* 192; *-aũ* 166, 203, 255; *-aṁ* 166; *-ata* 161, 208, 240; *-ana* 228; *-aba* 262; *-avāvā* 288; *-asi* 255, 266, *-asu* 268; *-ahī*

182; *-ahu* 165, 255, 283; *-ā* 122-3, 167, 174, 182, 188-9, 200, 203, 269, 326; *-āvata* 275, 291; *-āvata* 158; *-āvā* 175; *-i* 208; *-ia* 192, 255; *-iyata* 240; *-ihai* 176; *-ihahu* 262; *-ihaũ* 261; *-ihi* 255; *-ī* 123, 125, 164-5, 177, 201, 222, 240, 292; *-u* 193, 296; *-e* 192; *-eu* 159, 208; *-eũ* 183, 243; *-eū* 243; *-esi* 244; *-esu* 269; *-ehu* 182, 326; *-ẽ* 298; *-õ* 266

kahaneã 304

kahã 121-2, 159, 165-6, 172-3, 175, 177, 183, 187, 192, 196, 202-4, 215-6, 221, 223, 228, 241, 245-6, 282-3, 291, 293, 304, 326

kahãnī 108, 167

kahẽ 159, 186, 208, 304, 305

kahũ 121, 174, 215-6, 221, 314

kaḥ 194

kaha 215

kā 124, 160-1, 164-7, 172, 175, 183, 186, 191-2, 194-5, 262, 267, 292, 297

kāū 58, 202, 245, 256

kāgada 257

kāja 107, 267, 296-7; *-ā* 183; *-u* 138

kāṭā 183

kāṭha 120

kāḍhai 186; *kāḍhī* 202

kādẓśa 66

kāna 171, 192

kānanu 326

kāmini 165, 182

kāya 209

kāyara 221

kāraja 187

kārana 159, 167, 183, 262; *-u* 193

kāri 142

kārẽ 137

kārya 33, 72, 221; *-ka* 221

kāṛha 202; *-i* 27

kālī 158, 262, 301

kālha 301, 303; *-i* 245, 291, 301

kāvṛnī 47

kāsu 192

kāha 120, 163, 191, 193, 195, 218, 266; *-ā* 255

kāhi 191-2, 195, 201-2, 263

kāhu 173, 201-2, 215; *-hi* 201-2; *-ū* 174, 201-2, 221-2

kāhẽ 307; *-ẽ* 307

kākara 77

kādau 81, 108

kādhai 245; *kādhī* 173

ki 99, 120, 127, 153, 160, 165, 172, 177, 195, 201, 244, 258, 295, 299, 310-12, 324, 329-31

kici 206
kicchi 206
kichu 172, 201, 203, 206; *-ū* 203
kita 158, 173, 196, 262, 282, 298, 304, 306
kitāb 119
kittu 177, 306
kina 307
kinhesi 137, 243
kiṃ 195, 206
kimi 266, 306
kirapā 267
kī 121-2, 174, 184, 189, 255, 271
kījai 176, 292; *kījia* 192, 292; *kījē* 291
kīṭa- 51
kīnha 43, 138, 167, 171-2, 174, 187, 195, 197, 202, 242; *-hu* 245; *-ā* 123, 186-7, 197, 209, 296; *-i* 255; *-ihu* 245; *-esi* 171, 173, 188, 256; *-ehu* 245; *-ē* 242
kīrati 123, 125, 223
kuāhi 123
kukṣi 74
kucāli 182
kucha 201, 206; *-u* 314
kuṭilāī 271
kuṭūba 173, 245
kuṭhāū 244
kupantha 256
kubēsatā 207; *kubēsū* 266
kubhāti 228
kumāra 69; *-ḥ* 145; *-ī* 228
kumbhaāra 42, 47
kumbhakāra 65
kuru 268
kula 183
kusaṅgati 192
kusala 271
kuhū 298
kūara 26, 120; *-i* 257
kūvā 107
**kūao* 115
kūpakaḥ 115
kṛ- 64
kṛpā 58, 197, 203, 245, 318
kṛṣṇa- 46, 64
kei 191-2, 194
keu 26
kelikō 208
kedāra 71; *-ikā* 50, 66
keli (*kēli*) 26, 121, 255
kehi 159, 177, 188, 191-4, 262, 306
kehu 201-2
kē 71, 124, 159, 164, 173, 175-7, 180, 182-4, 188-9, 191, 194, 201, 204-5, 218-9, 255, 261, 274, 280-1
kētana 208
kētika 208-9
kētē 209
kēra 121, 202, 217-8; *-ā* 168, 177, 217, 220; *-i*

122, 218; -*ī* 177, 187, 217, 220, 319; -*ē* 189
kēlā 218
kēsa 208
kēhari 164
kēhī 206
koi 142, 173, 201-2
kou 142, 200-03, 267, 274, 326
koṣṭhāgāra 65
kō 71, 123, 159-60, 166, 175, 177, 181-2, 186, 191-2, 195, 200-02, 209-10, 221, 245, 256, 267, 271, 297
kōi 160, 166, 206
kōila 298
kōī 82, 153, 172, 182, 196, 201-03, 256, 318
kōū 82, 192, 201, 203, 245, 274
kōṭi 285; -*ka* 314
kōpa 267; -*i* 205; -*u* 165; -*ehu* 202
kōlanhi 126
kõ 216
krośa 33
krōḍa 151
krōdha 256
kṣaṇa 66
kṣapa-73
kṣaranti 333
kṣura- 70
kṣetra 34, 71
qalam 33

kh

khaga 292
**khaṭṭiā* 115
khaṭvikā 115
khaṇḍa 26, 153
khana 273
khabariyā 116
khambha 107, 187
kharaga 256, 291
kharihāna 107
kharī 26
khāgā 192
khāḍa 225
khā-, -*i* 26; -*ī* 195-6, 200, 204, 281; -*teu* 271; -*nā* 182, 282; -*ba* 283, 286; -*vā* 172
khāṭī 115
khādya 34
khādhuka 255
khālē 305; -*ei* 305
khācī 172
khāḍa 123
khiāvai 195, 204
khijira 172
khiranī 137
khīca 326; -*hai* 26
khēta 242
khēla-, -*ū* 255; -*ta* 26 -*nā* 208; -*hū* 208, 298; -*ā* 172, 255; -*i* 298
khēva-, -*hu* 297; -*ā* 188, 297
khēhā 262
khōja 168, 243; -*ū* 266
khōri 283; -*ī* 283

khōl-, -ata 153; *-esi* 244
khõca 77
khvāja 172
khabar 116
kharāb 139
khāṭir 213, 230

g

gaaē 72
gai 292; *-hu* 245; *-ī* 160, 183, 197, 242, 278
gairika- 71
gaila 246
gaura 73
gaurihu 313; *gaurī-patī* 267
gacu 297; *gaē* 81, 242, 278
gagana 244, 292
gaṅga 186
gacchatu 269
gaja 122
gaḍha 218, 222; *-ī* 192
gaṇ- 45
gaṇṭhī 37
gata- 34, 72; *-ḥ* 65, 136
gati 186
gana 178
ganē 292
gandha 27, 176
gabbhiṇī 42
gabhīra 56, 66
gaya 292
gayeu 171, 176
garajai 26
garaba 26, 160, 188, 219
garu- 64; *-āi* 219
garbhahi 15
gaṛha 225, 242; *-t* 121
gala 176
gavana 171; *-ta* 177; *gavanaba* 158; *gavānā* 202; *gāvanaba* 262
gavāi 158
gā 242, 246, 274
gāi 107; *-ī* 123, 125
gāūhi 318; *gāñ* 197
gāḍha 52; *-ī* 138; *-ē* 121, 218
gāmō 116
gāya 107, 121
gāla 192; *-u* 108
gāvahī 161; *-ī* 209
gāvā 318
gāvī 67
gāṛha 142; *-ā* 142; *-ī* 166
gāṭha 107, 138, 166; *-i* 26
gāva 187
giddha 39
girā 240
giribhava 182
gilāvā 107
gīā 172
gīu 108, 220, 226
gīdha 125
guṭar 232
guna 159, 223, 255, 263; *-gāhā* 283
gunahi 123
gunavārē 26
gunī 196
guputa 161

gumān 34
gumpha- 41, 74
gura 223
guru- 64, 159, 195, 242, 267, 278; *-jana* 182; *-ū* 165, 173, 175
gulāba 168
guli 107
gūṛhā 255
gṛhāya 136; *gṛhē* 136
geu 295; *gē* 242, 326
gēha 197; *-ū* 182
godhūmaḥ 70
gopāl 117
gopāliyā 117
gosāī 26, 121 164, 171, 218, 222, 242
gōī 171
gyāna 198; *-ī* 165, 326
grabhahi 15
grahaṇa 35, 66
grāma 50, 116; *-ḥ* 34, 69, 116
grēha 197
garīb 34

gh

ghaurī 218
ghaṭai 166
ghaḍī 186
ghana 137
ghanī 137
ghamaṇḍa 26
ghamma 46
ghara 107, 134, 137, 165, 172, 183, 196, 225, 241, 261, 263; *-bāra* 123; *-sa* 134; *-ssa* 134; *-ha* 134; *-hi* 167, 318
ghariārā 256
ghaṛī 26, 171, 218, 255
ghāo 82
ghāyala 159
ghālai 255; *ghālā* 172; *ghāli* 26-7, 292
ghiu 118
ghuna 292
ghṛta 34, 69, 189; *-u* 66
ghōra 107

c

cauguna 155
cauthā 153; *-i* 153; *-ē* 152-3
caudasi 152, 186
caudaha 147
caupāī 203, 218
caubisa 147
caurāsī 150
cakra- 35
cakravākaḥ 65
cakhu 122, 187
cañcuḥ 74
caḍh-, -ai 81; *-ahi* 326; *-ahī*; -177, 256; *-i* 269; *-ia* 291; *-iahi* 291; *-āī* 152; *-āehu* 245
caṇakaḥ 65
catura-mukha 189
caturtha 37, 156

catvāriṃśat 52
candū 153
candini 142
caracā 168
carana 208, 219; *-paṇkaja* 109
carita 122
carma-kāra 50
caṛhai 222; *caṛhi* 242 see *caḍh-*
cal-,-ai 283; *-aũ* 181, 244; *-ata* 197, 202; *-ana* 274; *-ahu* 200, 255; *-ahũ* 197; *-ā* 171, 276, 326; *-āvai* 204; *-i* 177; *-ī* 228; *-ĩ* 246; *-eu* 196; *-eũ* 27; *-ehu* 245; *-ẽ* 283
cavẽilī 77
cah-,-a 168, 296; *-aũ* 283; *-ata* 240, 274; *-ateũ* 271; *-aba* 296; *-asi* 296; *-ahṛ* 296; *-ahĩ* 256; *-ahũ* 196; *-ā* 171, 297; *-ia* 175, 292
cahũ 176, 256; *-ũ* 223, 242
cāu 155
cāṭukara 73
cāpa 283, 326
cāra 146; *-ā* 164
cāri 120, 146, 174, 186, 219, 222; *-u* 81, 146, 313; *-ka* 314
cāridasa 147
cālai 181, 186, 188
cālisa 148
cāh-,-ai 197, 203, 296; *-ata* 166, 273; *-asi* 255, 296; *-ahu* 165, 255; *-i* 186, 222 *-ia* 122, 291; *-ī* 209
cāṭahṛ 122; *cāṭā* 107; *cāṭī* 107
cāḍa 207
cāpā 124
cikkaṇa 33
citavata 240; *citavā* 286
citērā 72, 107, 133, 175, 197; *-ē* 72, 133
cittayara- 72; *-ē* 72, 133; *-ō* 133
citra 197; *-kara* 72; *-karakaḥ* 133; *-karakān* 133; *-karakāḥ* 133; *-kētu* 172
cid 206
cinta 267, 283; *-ā* 138, 203
cinhāvai 297
cihna 46
cīnhā 160, 177, 197, 216, 278
cua 82; *cuāvahṛ* 288
cuni 281
cumb- 46
cūka 142, 161
cūrṇa- 70
cētā 177, 326
cēri 108, 168; *-ī* 108, 122, 160, 257, 271
cērē 173, 209, 220, 277; *-ō* 108
cēlā 107, 195-6
cōrahṛ 122
cyavati 35

ch

cha 146
chaṭaẽ 153
chaṭha 153 ; *-i* 152 ; *-ẽ* 153
chatīsa 148 ; *-u* 313
chatrabandhu 255
chana 172, 225
chanda 324 ; *-wanda* 324
chapana 149 ; *chappana* 149
chapāia 27 ; *chapārā* 241 ; *chapi* 297
chabi 207
chamibō 263
chaya 246
chala 164 ; *-u* 174
chavō 313
chāṛi 281
chāchī 292
chājā 167, 175, 188, 291
chāḍenhi 245
chātā 124 ; *-ī* 267; *-ẽ* 122, 124
chārahī 222, 318
chāṛa 281 ; *-ā* 202 ; *-ũ* 27; *-i* 274
chāhā 262 ; *-ẽ* 277
chāḍi 183
chānabai 151
chāha 177
chijjai 232
chidyatē 232
chidra 72
chinna- 46
chījai 232
chīra 267
chuai 82 ; *chui* 297-8
chūṭa 297 ; *-i* 297
chũchẽ 261
chedana- 35
chōṭa 142 ; *-ī* 27
chōbhā 160

j

jaita 209
jaisa 53, 210 ; *-ī* 207 ; *-ẽ* 306 ; *-ō* 207-8, 269, 306
jaihai 263 ; *jaihasi* 262
jau 166, 171, 227, 244, 257, 271, 292, 296-7, 310 ; . . . *tau* 310, 312
jauna (*javana*) 185, 189; *-hi* 189
jaũ 121, 158, 166, 202, 255, 257, 271, 291, 310
jaũnā 225
jakta 15
jaga 121, 177, 184, 186-7, 192, 195-6, 201-3, 208, 215, 220, 225, 227, 242, 292 ; *-sūra* 326
jagata 15, 165, 200, 223, 245-6
jagya 26
jaṭā 67, 116
jata 208
jatana 269
jadapi 311 ; *jadyapi* 182
jana 267
janau 312; *-ũ* 125, 193
janaẽ 135

janaka 123
janateñ 271
jananī 164
janaba 171
janama 174, 219, 228, 271; *-hu* 313
janamata 172, 275
janāvā 201, 288
jani 183, 202, 307, 309
janu 142, 172, 208, 266, 297, 310, 319
janẽ 325
japata 122, 189, 273
jaba 122, 173, 197, 201, 228, 241, 243, 262, 278, 301; *lagi* 227; *-hi* 319, 326; *-hĩ* 171
jama 218
jamaç 36
jambuka 291
jambū 42, 118
jaya-mālā 261; *jayaḥ* 118;
jayu 116; *jayō* 116
jar 116; *-a* 107, 220
jarai 283, 296-7; *jarani* 189
jarāū 82
jari 67, 107; 116, 168; *-hĩ* 263
jaṛatāī 197
jala 240, 326
jaldī 301
javani 189
jasa 164, 173, 195, 198, 201, 207, 223, 272, 276, 292, 306; *-i* 207
jasu 209
jassu 191
jahawā 304; *jaha* 166, 18. 255-6, 267, 304-5; *jahau* 305; *jahā* 275, 277, 304
jahiā 262, 301
jā 165, 172, 185, 187-8, 191 207, 219, 240, 245-6
jāi 82, 124, 171, 187, 246 263, 267, 277, 281, 283, 292-3; *-hi* 263, 292; *-ĩ* 189, 195, 205, 240, 246, 266; *-ũ* 175, *-ū* 240; *jāñ* 158, 257, 266, 293; *jāe* 297
jāisa 210
jāesa 82
jagai 207; *jāgaba* 283; *jāgi* 243, 296
jāla 193, 205, 222, 240, 276; *-i* 161; *-ī* 292
jāna 160, 182, 203; *-i* 192, 196, 267, *-ũ* 310; *-la* 161, 273; *-li* 161, 240, 273-4; *-b* 312; *-hĩ* 208, *-hũ* 192; *-ā* 123, 292; *-i* 196, 277, 281, 297; *-ia* 292
jānāti 45
jānibī 262
jānu 188; *jāneu* 246; *jānẽ* 246
jāba 28, 158, 287, 297
jāyehu 121
jārai 267; *jārā* 196
jāri 120

jāvata 209 ; *āvāta* 203, 208, 210
jāsi 255
jāsu 185, 188-9, 191, 195 ; *-ū* 189
jāh 191 ; *-i* 185, 188-9, 191, 256
jāhṛ 121, 292, 297 ; *jāhṛ* 159, 188 ; *jāhĩ* 188-9
jāhu 191
jia 271, *-i* 188, 256 ; *jiu* 168, 186, 203, 240 ; *jiu-lēvā* 177
jiatahṛ 319
jiana 161, 177 ; *-ā* 282
jiahṛ 255
jiāvai 188 ; *-si* 255
jiu (see *jia*)
jitaba 262 ; *jitē* 209
jina 164, 185, 187, 191 ; *-hṛ* 185, 189 ; *jinha* 172, 185, 187, 189, 191 ; *jinhahṛ* 185, 189, 191 ; *jinhahĩ* 189
jini 307
jibbhā 42
jimi 306
jiya 200 ; *-ta* 262
jivanā 283
jisu 189
jihvā 35
jīu 176 ; *-ū* 183
jītā 166
jībhā 107, 167, 223, 241
jīva 173, 241
jīvana 283
juga 225
juḍāna 291
jubarāju 121
jurai 292
jurihi 283
juṛānē 291 ; *juṛāvahu* 267
jūthaḥ 53
jūrī 125
jūhī 123
jei 81, 137, 182, 185-7, 191
jeṛ 185-7, 191
jena 187, 189, 191 ; *-ha* 191
jemva 307
jehi 58, 159, 167-8, 173, 185-6, 188, 191, 206, 246, 256, 263, 274 ; *jehṛ* 188
jē 161, 176, 187, 191, 200, 325
jētā 208 ; *-ē* 208-9, *-ō* 208
jēhī 274
jẽia 165
jo 27, 165, 175, 182, 186, 200-1, 241, 245, 255, 261, 265, 273-4, 280, 282, 298, 310-1
joi 187
joha 310
jō 122, 161, 171-3, 175, 177, 185-7, 196-7, 200, 203, 206, 243, 245-6, 256-7, 271-2, 277, 296, 298
jōē 292
jōga 155, 167, 172, 182, 192, 203, 228, 240, 283 ; *-i* 26,

182, 209, 243, 245 ; *-u* 267 ; *-ū* 208
jōti 168, 173, 208
jōni 188
jōbana 160, 292, 326
jōrā 165
jōri 240, *-ē* 164
jōhahṛ 124
jõ 310
jñāti- 45
jñāna 34, 266
jyeṣṭha 36
jyotsnā- 46, 72
jvalati 36

jh

jhalakata 123
jhalakā 123
jhaṭṭa 36
jhākā 27
jhīnai 207
jhūṭha 167, 196; *-i* 27, 142, 241
jhūlana 297

ṭ

ṭarā 288
ṭārā 288
ṭīkā 26, 122, 183
ṭuṭṭai 36
ṭūṭa 27, 58, 283; *-b* 233, *-i* 281
ṭẽi 81

ṭh

ṭhakurasohātī 27, 262
ṭhagī 183
ṭhāī 159, 177
ṭhāũ 188, 254 ; *-ũ* 82, 108
ṭhāẽ 242
ṭhāḍha 142
ṭhāḍhē 138, 176, 246
ṭhāna 305 ; *-i* 244
ṭhāṛha 142, 298 ; *-ā* 142, 202 ; *-i* 142 ; *-ī* 142
ṭhīkahī 319

ḍ

ḍagai 27, 256
ḍaṅka 159
ḍaṇḍa 51
ḍara 183, 293, *-i* 189
ḍaraēṇa 135
ḍarapahṛ 175
ḍaru 165, 256
ḍahaki 245
ḍābha 123
ḍārā 192
ḍārō 159
ḍi-aḍḍha 72
ḍiṭhiyārū 108
ḍīṭhī 122
ḍerāũ 158 ; *-nā* 291
ḍora- 37
ḍolāu 186
ḍōlaṛ 175 ; *ḍōlā* 186

ḍh

ḍhaukatē 38
ḍharahṛ 123, 189
ḍhariai 291
ḍhērī 174

ḍhōṭā 182
ḍhōla 27, 58

t

ta 89, 283, 291, 310
taila 71
taisa 175 ; *-ī* 207; *-ehi* 319 ; *-ẽ* 306 ; *tayasa* 207
tar 160, 163-6, 170, 173, 193, 255, 262, 269, 297, 318
tau 158, 172, 183, 200, 333
tauna 170, 177-8
taja 267 ; *-ũ* 200; *-i* 200-1, 227, 297 ; *-ī* 160
tat 179 ; *-punaḥ* 180
tata 208
tadapi 242, 310-11
tana 159, 203, 244, 318
tanaya 168
tanu 173, 182, 189 ; *-ka* 309
tanta 172
tapiya 203 ; *tapī* 122, 220, 298
tapta 38
taba 121, 159, 167, 241, 266, 277, 283, 301 ; *-i* 298, 301 ; *-ɪ* 301, 319 ; *-hũ* 314 ; *tabhũ* 297
taṃ 180
tambūla- 41
tayasa (see under *taisa*)
tara 226-7
tarā 186
taru 226; *-bara* 183; *-baranha* 225
tarunāpā 107
tarē 226 ; *-ẽ* 226-7
talē 305
tava 167, 170, 186-7, 192
tasa 168, 176, 203, 207, 261, 296, 306 ; *-i* 207, 272
tasya 180
tahawā 304 ; *tahã* 120, 167, 196, 246, 255, 303 ; *tahã* 167, 181, 245-6, 267, 303
tahi 256 ; *-ai* 319 ; *-ā* 301
tā 124, 170 172-4, 176-7, 180, 182, 186, 192, 200, 204, 218, 272, 282,
tāɪ 227, 308
tāū 174
tākā 172; *-i* 256; *-ē* 173 ; *-ẽ* 174
tāta 165-6 ; *-ā* 202
tāpala 246
tāpasa 219
tāpaḥ 69
tāra 107, 124, 137
tārā 244 ; *-ē* 124, 138
tāla 209 ; *-hɪ̃* 177
tāvata 209, 210 ; *tãvata* 209
tāsu 170, 174-5, 180 ; *-ū* 174
tāhi 170, 173-5, 180, 203 ; *-ī* 174
tiāgī 81
tithi-vāra 71
tina 170, 175-6 ; *-hɪ* 170, 177 ; *tinh* 180; *tinha* 138, 170, 172, 175-7, 180,

187, 215, 225, 261 ; *tinhai* 170, 176; *tinhahṛ* 170, 176-7, 187, 262-3, 269, 297 ; *tinhahũ* 314
tiu 254
timi 306
tiya 152, 171
tisarai 152 ; *tisarẽ* 152-3 ; *tīsara* 153 ; *tīsari* 153
tihāra 167 ; *-õ* 168
tihũ 313
ṭṭisa 148
tījai 153
tīna 146 ; *-ũ* 263 ; *tīni* 146
tīya 57
tīra- 66, 245
tīsa 148
tīsara (see *tisarai*)
tīhũ 243
tui 165, 169-70, 248-50, 268, 277, 279-80, 315, 320, 328 ; *tuṛ* 163-4, 170
tuma 160, 163-6, 228, 242, 277, 297 ; *-hi* 164, 167 ; *-hṛ* 164, 166 ; *-hĩ* 318
tumaṃ 170
tumha 43, 163-6, 170, 241, 245, 262, 271, 297 ; *-i* 164, 167, 228 ; *-hṛ* 164-7, 170, 172, 197, 263, 297 ; *-hĩ* 318 ; *-ẽ* 170
tumharī 168, 326 ; *-ihi* 318 ; *-ehi* 168 ; *-ẽ* 168
tumhāra 164, 168, 170, 201, 296 ; *-ā* 168, 178, 186, 298 ; *-i* 168 ; *-ī* 168, 178 ; *-ẽ* 27, 168 ; *tomhārā* 168
turai 257
turata 301, 303, *-hṛ* 319
tuhĩ 318, *-ũ* 314
tũ 164 ; *tũ* 163-4, 170
tṛtīyā 68
tei 159, 170-2, 180, 186, 318 ; *-ṛ* 171, 186 ; *-u* 314
tena 170, 177 ; *-ha* 180
tehi 57, 121, 170, 173-5, 177, 180, 184, 186, 189-90, 195, 201-2, 204, 218, 226, 241, 254, 263, 277 ; *-u* 314
tehāra 167 ; *-õ* 167
tẽ 170, 172, 177, 180, 285, 313, 319 ; *-i* 172 ; *-ũ* 292 ; *-hu* 314 ; *-hũ* 186 ; *tẽ* 121, 174, 183-4, 187-8, 197, 242
tẽtā 208 ; *-ẽ* 209 ; *-õ* 208
tẽraha 147
tẽrā 168, 170, 192 ; *-ī* 168, 271 ; *-ẽ* 182, 209 ; *-õ* 168
tẽsari 152
tomhārā (see under *tumhāra*)
tora 164, 167 ; *tōra* 164, 167-8, 170, 188 ; *tōrai* 167, 283 ; *tōri* 167 ; *tōrī* 167 ; *tōrẽ* 167
tohāra 164, 167 ; *toharā* 167

tohi 161, 164-6, 170, 182, 197, 200 ; *-ī* 164-6 ; *-ī* 254 ; *-ĩ* 166 ; *tōhi* 166 ; *tōhĩ* 166, 203, 297 ; *tō* 164-6, 170, 172, 263, 293 ; *-hū* 314 ; *tõ* 271
tōra (see under *tora*)
tōrab 233
tōhi (see under *tohi*)
tyāgī 158
trīṇi 38
trīyā 226
trīsaṭha 149
truṭy- 70 ; *-ate* 233
trētā 225
tvam 170 ; *-yā* 170
tvarita- 69
ṭaraḥ 307

th

thakita 277
thākī 161 ; *-en* 246
thāhā 267
thira 27, 281
thōrihi 318; *thōrī* 161

d

daiu 174
daiva 188
daī 81, 107, 121, 186, 192, 241
dauṛē 39
daṃśaka 37
daccha 298
daṇḍa 36-7 ; *-vata* 43
dadhi 39, 56, 66
danta 79 ; *-o* 38
dampatihĩ 242
dayā 159, *-la* 164, 267 ; *dāyā* 161, 165-6, 223
darapana 177
daraba 188, 201
darabānī 108
darasa 160, 187, 200, 246
darśana 55, 168, 175
dalaki 296
davaï 39 ; *-ḍai* 39
davasa 222
dasa 146, 167, 182, 267; *-ĩ* 153 ; *-ũ* 152
dasaratha 182
dasā 183, 207, 219
dahiu 118
dahini 160
dahũ 192, 267, 310, 312
dāg 232
dāna 201, 256
dāma- 69 ; *-āni* 135
dāyaku 186
dāyā (see under *dayā*)
dārikā 262
dāru 201
dāruna 297
dāsā 175 ; *-ī* 218
dāhina 138 ; *-i* 138 ; (see *dahini*)
diā 172; *diyā* 207; *dīā* 81
diē 81
diṇṇa 57, 135, 167, 172, 176-7, 186-8, 203, 262, 274

dinu 273
dinhala 135; *dinhā* 183
dipā 27
diya (see *diā*)
dirisa 218
disa 152, 176, 223, 242, 257, 326; *-i* 326
disiṭa 175; *-i* 204, 218
dihenī 246; *dihesu* 269, 297
dīā (see *diā*)
dījia 57, 292; *-i* 292
dīna 187-8; *-ha* 159, 165, 172, 177, 186, 200, 242; *dīnhā* 120, 175, 186, 201, 223, 283, 293, 297, 326; *dīnhi* 125, 242; *dīnhiũ* 166; *dīnhī* 123; *dīnhesi* 188, 282; *dīnhẽ* 192
dīpa 124, 218, 326; *-ka* 137, 241; *-paṭṭikā* 66
dīpāvalī 65, 71
dīhī 297
duau 82
duārā 152
dui 82-3, 137, 146, 152, 154, 201, 219, 241, 245, 251, 254, 292, 315, 319, 326
duija 153; *-hī* 208; *dūīja* 152
dukān 33
dukha 167, 173, 188, 208, 223, 242; *-ī* 164; *-u* 138
duddha 39
dunahu 325
duniāī 81
dubbala 41
durajana 242
durāva 223
duri 171
durlabha 297
dusarē 153
duhitā 39
duhũ 186, 218
dūaũ 81
dūija (see *duija*)
dūjā 152, 183; *-ī* 152; *-ẽ* 152-3, 182
dūra 305; *-i* 304; *-ihi* 319; *-ī* 171; *-ū* 304; *-ei* 304; *-eha* 319
dūsara 152-3; *-i* 153
dṛṣṭi 240
deihai 160; *-ũ* 261, 264
deotanha 125; *-i* 81, 125
dekharāvā 288
dekhāi 269, 297; *-eu* 187, 246; *-yē* 288; *-vai* 207
dekhiahī 263; *dekhibai* 262; *dekhibē* 262; *dekhihahu* 262
devakī- 69
devatā 69
dē 196; *-i* 81, 182, 241, 282; *-ihi* 160; *-ī* 186; *-u* 160, 174; *-ū* 176, 203
dēo 245; *dēotanha* 43
dēkh-, *-a* 27, 122, 241; *-ai* 173, 222, 297, 326, *-aũ* 167, 254; *-ata* 296; *-ana* 296; *-antē* 252; *-aba* 288;

-asi 255; *-ahī* 255; *-ahu* 165; *-ā* 158, 166, 177, 186, 242, 296; *-i* 26, 138, 176, 197, 200-1, 242, 291, 298; *-iata* 240; *-iā* 253, 313; *-in* 253; *-ī* 158, 164; *-ī -aũ* 253; *-ĩ* 326, *-u* 58, 202, 261; *-eũ* 188, 207, 243, 253; *-en* 253; *-ĕ* 209, 253, *-ē han* 253

dē-,- na 121, 166, 287; *-ba* 286, 297; *-baũ* 261; *-bā* 262; *-haũ* 264; *-hi* 164; *-hī* 195; *-hĩ* 201; *-hũ* 121

dēva 116, 273; *-āṃ* 135

dēśa 53, 159, 175, 193

dēṣi 53 (misspelt for *dēkhi*)

dēsū 173

dēha 160, 297, *-ā* 189

dou 82, 161, 226, 313, 326; *-ū* 175, 272

doṣaḥ 34; *dōṣa* 168, 173, 196, 202, 223

dōū 182, 223, 278

dōsara 152, 186; *-i* 152, 173

dōhā 107

dyūta- 36, 69

dravati 39

driṣṭi 159

droṇa- 39

dvandva- 69

dvādaśa 41, 50, 65

dvāra 153, 216; *-kē* 136; *-ā* 220; *-ē* 136

dvi-ardha 37

dvi-guṇa 70

dh

dhaũ 193, 310, 312

dhana 165, 192, 197, 245, 257; *-kōrā* 120; *-pati* 171; *-i* 27; *-ī* 257

dhanuka 26; *dhanukha* 278

dhandhā 107

dhanya 244

dhar-, -aī 256, *-ahu* 189; *-āyeu* 177; *-i* 167, 189; *-ĩ* 245; *-u* 266; *-ehu* 269

dharatī 107, 208, 278, 326

dharanī 176

dharama 174-5, 195, 217; *-ī* 187; *-u* 152, 183

dharma 51, 166, 273

dhāai 39; *dhāi* 39, 271; *dhāī* 273

dhānya 39

dhāma 120

dhāri 218; *-a* 198

dhāv- 39; *-ati* 39; *-ana* 267

dhirja 269

dhītā 39

dhūā 240

dhūpa 262

dhūma 137

dhṛṣṭa 38
dhyāna 189, 192, 200, 202

n

na 120-23, 132, 152-3, 159, 160-1, 164-7, 171-6, 182-4, 187-9, 192-3, 195-6, 200-04, 207-08, 222, 240-2, 244-6, 255-6, 262-3, 266-7, 271, 277-8, 283, 292, 297-8, 307, 309, 326
naina 168, 255
naṛ 273
nau 146, *-u* 82; *naũ* 121, *naã̃* 108
nauḥ 118
naeu 81
nakula 69, 71
nakṣatra 45, 63
nakha 56
nakhata 27, 107, 292, *-nha* 225
nagara 183, 256, *-u-banāva* 121, *-u-banāvā* 176
nacāvā 120
nata 310
nadī 174
nabha 186
nama 219, *-ni* 135
nayana 182, 201 (see *naina*); *-ni* 126, *-nha* 123; *-nhi* 296; *-nhṛ* 123, *-āhā* 125
nayanīaō 116
nara 256
naraka 222
narēsā 200; *-ũ* 181, 193
navau 218; *-ũ* 137, 152
navanīta 45; *-kaḥ* 70; *-kō* 116
navamallikā 71
naṣṭa- 52
nasāī 192
nahāi 296; *-hī* 228
nahi 203, 309; *-ĩ* 152, 161, 166, 168, 174, 183, 192, 200, 202, 208, 283, 297, 307, 309; *-ī* 243, 246, 274
nā 138, 158, 171, 173, 175, 201, 242, 271, 293
nāi 275
nāiaō 116
nāṛ 306
nāī 81
nāĩ 122, 228, 231, 271, 307
nāũ 108, 121, 159, 186, 277
nāã̃ 174-6, 220, 246, 271
nāē 172
nāga-, *-phāsa* 172; *-mati* 174; *-sura-nagara* 187; *-ini* 174; *-ũ* 297
nātō 310
nātha 158, 165, 167, 187, 197, 296
nāpita- 65; *-kaḥ* 70, 116
nāma 69, 122, 168, 197-8, 225, 246, 263, 298, *-ũ* 189

nārada 168, 219
nāraṅga 192
nārikela 64
nārī 122, 176, 186-7, 196, 256
nāva 161
nāvai 122 ; *nāvā* 116, 118
nāsā 192
nāhī 152, 159; *nāhina* 256; *nāhɪ ta* 310 ; *nāhɪna* 307 ; *nā tau* 310; *nāhī* 188, 267, 307
nāhu 161, 274
nāghehu 26
nāca 177
niara- 72, 168, 171, 304-5; *-ē* 304-5 ; *nīarē* 47
niu 45, 66
nichāvari 242
nija 123, 125, 172, 187, 197, 242, 262, 283, 296
nita 160, 167, 175, 228, 230, 240, 243, 301, 303; *-i* 301, 303; *-u* 301, 303; *nitta* 301, 303
nindahɪ 43, 196
nirakhata 26
nisa 188, 269, 274, 292 ; *-i* 202, 218, 273
nīarē (see *niara*)
nīū 81
nīka 186, 196; *-ā* 326; *-ē* 182
nīci 142
nīti 174, 273 ; *-ī* 207
nīpāvalī 71
nīda 202, 263
nībū 108
nṛpa 121, 182, 201, 203, 219, 267
nemi 45, 71 ; *-ḥ* 66
nēṭī 192
nēha 188 ; *-u* 196 ; *-ū* 166
nyāyī 231
nyāyena 231, 307
nhāi 43

P

pai 168, 188, 227, 271, 310 -12, 326
paiṭhata 183 ; *paiṭhaba* 261; *paṭṭhaba* 158
pauñchai 35
pauri 137, 152; *-i* 218
pauṣa 55
pakkhī 34
pakva 33
pakṣa 227 ; *-ē* 215
pakhaṇḍī 120
pakhurinha 122
pagu 173, 177, 256
paṅkha 161 ; *-i* (*paṃkhi*) 164, 255-6 ; *-inha* 122
pacāsa 149; *-ka* 314
pacīsa (*-ā*) 147
pachatāhɪ 257
pachalagā 217
pachitāu 181
pachilē 138
pañca 120

pañjara 36, 66
paṭa 165, 187
paṭavā 107; *-na* 123
paṭhaē 187
paṭhatɣkaḥ 286
paṭhāvahu 267
paḍivēsiō 68
paḍhai 52; *paḍhī* 27; *paḍhiai* 259; *paḍhianta* 252
paḍhilla 156, 303
paṇḍita 164; *pāḍitanha* 122
patāra-hɪ 124
patālū 326
pati-jhārī 242
patiyāva 166
patrāṇi 333
patrī- 40; *-iya* 209
padāratha 174
paduma 176
padumanī 177
pana 152, 197
panihārī 188
pantha 159, 172, 182, 193, 217, 241, 297; *-ā* 167
para 122, 137, 159-60, 165-6, 171-4, 176, 184, 186, 188-9, 192, 195-6, 205, 208, 226-7, 242, 246, 256, 274
par-, *-ai* 166; *-ata* 277, 292, 297; *-aba* 297; *-ahɪ* 228; *-ā* 159, 200, 267; *-ihai* 208; *-ihi* 263; *-ī* 175, 202, 277, 297; *-eu* 292; *-eū* 183, 297
paragaṭa 161, 177, 196, 223
paraghaṭa 27
parabata 306
parama 168, 182, 187, 256, 275, 291; *-āratha* 182
paralōkū 256
para-santakō 224
parāi 201, 298; *-ē* 201; *-ya* 201; *-vā* 201
parāna 164, 326
parāya (see *parāi*)
parāvā (see *parāi*)
parāhɪ 183
paricārikā 262
paricehu 245
parichāhɪ 77
paripākā 186
parivārā 262
pariharahi 266
parīchā 158
parēvā 164, 267
paryaṅka 52
parvan 42
parśu- 55
parsapara 283
paṛhai -ā -ō 286
paliahi 292
pavana 193
pavārī 142
pasārā 187
pasīja 168
pasēu 108
pahara 138, 150, 155, 196
pahā 228
pahārā 142; *-ū* 108

pahi 242 ; *-ɪ* 228 ; *-ĩ* 122
pahicānā 124 ; *-õ* 196
pahirasi 164 ; *pahirā* 187 ; *pahirāvā* 187
pahila 143, 152-3, 303 ; *-i* 121, 318 ; *-ī* 143, 153, 220 ; *-ē* 301
pahunāī 292
pahũcāvana 283
pākhā 208 ; *-i* 208
pãcaẽ 153
pā-, *-i* 182, 192, 312, (*ya*) 298 ; *-ita* 240 ; *-ihi* 186 ; *-ī* 158, 173, 188, 192, 241, 256 ; *-u* 82, 200, 267, 297 ; *-uba* 286 ; *-ubi* 193, 262 ; *-eũ* 173, 203, 222 ; *-ehu* 269 ; *-ē* 172, 187 ; *-o* 267 ; *-yaũ* 287 ; *-yā* 47 ; *-yeũ* 203 ; *-yẽ* 120 ; *-va* 187, 196, 222, 297 ; *-vai* 171, 176, 256, 297 ; *-vaī* 159, 191, 256 ; *-vab* 282 ; *-vaba* 297 ; *-wab* 312 ; *-vā* 123, 165, 172, 186, 208, 223, 242, 283, 286, 297 ; *-võ* 174
pāū 198 ; *pāya* 161 ; *pāyanha* 123 ; *pāyā* 228
pāṃsu 67
pāka 297
pāchẽ 304 ; *-ẽ* 304
pāḍhata 137, 187
pāṇḍeya 116
pātisāha 165
pātī 326
pādāni 135
pāna 218
pānī 291
pānīyaṃ 116
pāpa 175, 201 ; *pāpinihi* 183, 292, 297
pāya see *pā-* (and *pāū*)
pāra 159, 240, 267
pārai 192, 202 ; *-ũ* 297 ; *-ba* 297 ; *-hu* 297
pārā 122, 297
pārśva 227, 231
pālakaḥ 286
pāl-, *-abī* 262 ; *-i* 246
pālava 164, 183
pāvaku 120
pāvāru 197
pāsa 202, 226, 228, 231, 274 ; *-ā* 57
pāhī 159, 227-8, 262
pākhā 241
pãca 146
pãva 226
pi-, *-anā* 182 ; *-aht* 81 ; *-eu* 83 ; *-yaũ* 255 ; *-yanā* 282 ; *pīvana* 283
piārā 164 ; *piyārā* 138, 167, 172 ; *piyārī* 138 ; *piyārẽ* 77
piu 196 ; *-nā* 283
pikka 33, 68
pitā 160-1, 167, 171, 181, 198, 326

piya 167, 192, *-hṛ* 122
pisuna 201
pīu 108 ; *pīya* 167
pūṭhī 218
pūḍ- 66
pīḍhanha 123
pīra 171, 192
pīsata 292 ; *pīsā* 292
puñja (*puṃja*) 43
puṭa- 51
puṇya 45, 218
putta-, *-mmi* 136, *-hi* 136 ; *-ē* 136 ; *-o* 38
putthau 74
putra 123 ; *-vadhū* 56, 73
punaḥ 191
puni 175, 196, 208, 242, 262-3, 282, 301-3, 313
punīta 182 ; *-ā* 262
pura 187, 198, 209, 296
puravahu 160, 267
purāna 122
purukha 167 ; *-nha* 122, 177 ; *-hi* 122
puṣya 55
pustaka- 74 ; *-m* 119
puhupa 120
puhumi 217, 222 ; *-īpati* 326
pūch-, *-aũ* 166 ; *-ata* 275 ; *-aba* 183 ; *-asi* 255 ; *-ahu* 165 ; *-ā* 203 ; *-i* 173 ; *-eũ* 174, 176
pūja 201, 256 ; *-i* 160, 171, 283 ; *-ā* 152, 292 ; *-i* 245 ; *-iata* 240 ; *-ihi* 167, 292
pūjya 198
pūniũ 122
pūraba 326
pūr-, *-ahu* 161 ; *-i* 27
pũch-, *-ai* 191 ; *-aba* 263 ; *-ahu* 161 ; *-ā* 123 ; *-ē* 261 (see *pūch-*)
pñjia 207 ; *-ya* 161
pṛcch- 40, 70
peṭārī 174
peṭṭa 36
pellai 52
pēḍu 183
pēma 222
potikā 73
potthakaṃ 65
pōī 165
pōthī 255, 298
pyārī 209
pratipadā 72
pratāpa 292 ; *-ī* 246
prativāsin 73
prativeśikaḥ 68 ; *prativeśin* 73
pratyabhijānāti 56
prathama 125, 173, 187, 201
prath -illa 156
prapā-śālā 50
prabhāū 171
prabhu 160, 166, 198, 326
pramāna 325
pramudita 159
prayāga 182
prayoga 242

prasar- 40
prastara 39
prasna 219, 245, 274
prahlād- 57; *-ayati* 53
prāghūrṇa- 69
prāna 172, 246, 272-3 ; *-i* 182
priya 40, 172, 182, 187, 189, 192, 198, 204 ; *-ā* 266
prīta 167-8, 176, 208 ; *-i* 158, 173-4, 223, 240, 283, 292
prēma 142, 166, 188, 202, 223 ; *-iya* 209 ; *-ī* 177
prerayati 52
prērẽ 261

ph

pharakai 160
phala 40, 123, 152 186, 200, 209, 259 ; *-āhāra* 56 ; *-u* 118, 174, 176, 186, 241
phalaka- 51
phalati 50
phalendra- 42
phābī 207
phālguna 40
phāda 176, 226
phira 301
phirata 197; *phiri* 158, 174, 297, 301, 303; *phirē* 172
phīkī 263
phura 167, 188 ; *-i* 142
phulavārī 122, 220, 255
hūla 177, 209, 218 ; *-i* 120 ; *-nahũ* 285, 313
phēra 297, 301, 303; *-ī* 189, 256 ; *-u* 263
phōrai 27

b

baia 186
baiṭha 122, 242, 277; *-na* 174; *-ba* 288 ; *-ā* 326 ; *-ārē* 123, 288 ; *-i* 183 ; *-u* 242, 277 ; *-eu* 195
baitaranī 174
baidēhī 168, 176
bairāgi 183
bairi 202 ; *-na* 161 ; *-ī* 28, 283
baisaba 288 ; *baisārē* 288
baurānī 245
baṃsa 182
bakucanha 123
bakhāna 107, 168, 175, 220; *-ā* 195 ; *-i* 183, 222 ; *-ū* 26, 167, 218 ; *-ē* 223 ; *-õ* 175, 266
baca 186, 269
bacana 138, 174, 177, 187, 196, 207, 223, 243 ; *-u* 161
bajara 218 ; *-hi* 124
bajjai 232
bajāī 57
bañcehu 189
baṭa 277 ; *-chāhī* 122
baṭāū 108

baṭōhī 276
baḍa 123
baḍahara 173
batiyā 107
batīsa 148
badana 175
badal 232
badi 228, 230
badhāvā 107
bana 121, 153, 172, 183, 187, 200, 263; *-hī* 124
banāwā 161; *banihi* 200; *banē* 277
banija 27
banobāsa 266
bandaū 219
bandar 79
bandhai 40
bandhu 186
babūrahī 123
bamhaṇa- 47
baya 176
bayana 297; *-ā* 282
bayara 161; *-ā* 246
bayāli 115
bayeū 166
bara 152, 159, 165, 186, 228; *-hī* 228; *baru* 241, 271, 310
barai 124; *barihi* 201
barajaū 254; *barajeū* 243
baratā 203
baratōrū 297
baran 297
baran-, -ai 297; *-aū* 121, 186, 192; *-i* 292; *-ī* 197, 241; *-eū* 228; *-ō* 255
baraṣā 183
barahō 313
barābhā 189
bariāī 306
baruka 310
barōka 192
baṛa 27, 138, 142; *-bhāgini* 196; *-i* 138, 142, 161, 167, 193; *-ī* 161; *baṛehī* 138; *baṛē* 183
baṛāī 200
baṛhai 27; *baṛhāva* 267
bala 186, 307; *-u* 192
bali 306-7
balī 222
baldab 232
basa 161, 168, 183, 188, 274
bas-, -ai 172, 175; *-ata* 192; *-ahī* 187, 256; *-ahu* 176; *-ā* 159; *-āhī* 176
basana 187, 242
basanta 192
basēṛā 272; *-ē* 222
bastu 174
baha 256
bahila 246
bahu 123, 137, 240
bahuta 160, 166, 173, 189, 245-6, 292; *-i* 318
bahuri 301, 303
bahōri 303; *-ī* 266, 301
bāisa 147

bāura 192, 200, 202, 263
bājai 232
bājana 107
bājā 189
bāju 256, 307
bāṭa 124; *-i* 124
bāta 138, 165, 173, 181-2, 184, 197 203, 220, 283; *-ā* 138, 142, 200-1, 204, 208
bāna 174; *-hi* 177
bānī 121, 142, 174, 326,
bāmhaṇa 42
bāyasa 292
bāra 174, 318
bāraha 147
bārahi 318
bārā 208, 263, 318; *-ī* 108, 122, 196, 226, 245, 272, 298
bālaē 135
bālaka 187
bāvarī 107
bāsa 183
bāsuki 124, 218
bāsū 175
bāhara 187, 304
bāka 201
bāṭā 203
bādhā 297; *-i* 326; *-ē* 242, 257
bāha 220, 298
biāhā 123; *biyāhaba* 263; *biyāhu* 296
biōgī 81; *biyōgī* 202, 326
bikāi 202
bikha-cārai 183
bigarahi 256
bigāsā 192
bica 27
bicāri 182, 269, 296
bicāru 182, 201
bichurahi 177
bichōhā 218
bithā 207
bidā 218
bidita 166
bidhātā 164
bidhi 138, 159, 164-8, 173, 183, 231, 263, 292, 306-7; *-hi* 193
bina 187, *-ā* 307; *-u* 176, 181, 189, 192, 262, 271, 307
binauba 171, 286
binatiya 182, 267; *binatī* 167; *binātī* 245
binaya 164
bindu 70
bipati 137, 161, 166, 193
bipra 255; *-nha* 122
bibudha 174
bibēka 159, 269
bibhītaka 64
bibhūtī 201, 298
bimala 182, 219
bimukha 202, 255
biyāhaba (see *biāhā*)
biyōgī (see *biōgī*)
biraṅci 208
biralai 318

biraha 160 ; *-āgī* 297
birāgī 275, 291
birājat 242, 257
birāsū 173
biridha 176
bircha 274
birtha 283
bilamba 246
bilāya 263
bilōkati 176 ; *bilōki* 161, 167, 257
bilōcana 219
bilva 52, 72
bisāla 53
bisēkhī 166
bisēṣi 53
bistārā 176
bisva 262
bihāna 241
bihālā 306-7
bihūna 307
bīca 177, 184, 228
bīci 240
bīja-66, 166
bīju 108, 173, 225, 288
bītē 172, 177
bīthinha 228
biricha 226
bīsa 147
bugcā 33
bujjhai 36
bujhāī 290
buddhasēna 174
buddhi 158 ; *budhi* 107, 161, 183, 188, 196, 200, 223
budhya- 41
būjha 166 ; *-ā* 293 ; *-i* 159, 292, 297
būḍi 298
būṛahi 288
būṛha 244
būda 208
bṛnda 246
berkul 307
besāhanā 202 ; *besāhā* 182
bēgi 186, 266, 301, 303 ; *-hi* 319
bēṭā- 66
bēdhā 278 ; *-i* 297
bēli 137
bēṣa 292
bēharā 171
bēhāl 307
bolāī 167, 255, 298
bovāī 108
bōeā 234
bōdhu 242
bōrahi 288
bōla 208, 277, 297 ; *-ā* 158 ; *-ni* 283 ; *-i* 188, 208, 298 ; *-ē* 196, 326
byādha 177
brāhmaṇa 41, 64

bh

bha-, *-i* 160, 208, 222, 233-4, 242, 246, 296, 325 ; *-ā* 171, 174, 177, 182-3, 187, 233-4, 237, 241-2.

291; *-ila* 234; *-ɪ* 172, 233-4, 275; *-ɪna* 234; *-ī* 164, 197, 241; *-ɪ̄* 246; *-e* 58, 187, 242; *-eu* 167, 177, 233-4, 246; *-eū* 233; *-eū* 81; *-ena* 234; *-ehu* 269; *-ē* 142, 158, 233-4; *-yaū* 275; *-yasi* 244; *-yeu* 168, 182, 201, 233, 283; *bhē* 242
bhaiyā 108, 121
bhau 220
bhaūhaɪ 107, 124, 267
bhakti 307
bhakhadātā 203
bhagata 164, 187, 200; *-na* 228
bhagati 219, 292
bhagavanta 219; *-ā* 176
bhaginī 63, 66-7
bhagnaḥ 232
bhajana 168, 189; *bhajā* 122
bhaṭa 271
bhadra- 52
bhayaṅkara 326
bhayāvani 240
bhar-, *-ai* 233; *-aba* 233; *-i* 167, 193, 227, 240; *-ī* 326; *-ē* 326
bharata 121, 138, 166, 174, 182-3, 192, 200, 208, 271, 292
bharīai 233
bharōsa 176
bhala 192, 197; *-āī* 192-3, 197, 255; *-ī* 138, 142, 242; *-eu* 313; *-ehɪ* 292; *-ɔ* 183, 200
bhavāra 77, 159, 165, 176
bhavāhī 176
bhavitavyatā 207
bhaḍārī 27
bhāinha 123, 244; *bhāī* 108, 121, 192 271, 296, 326; *bhāya* 122
bhākhai 186; *bhākhā* 223
bhāga 161, 168
bhāgab 232; *bhāgē* 175
bhāṇḍa- 56
bhāta 267
bhādra-pada 39
bhābī 207
bhāya (see *bhāinha*)
bhāyē 161
bhāra 186, 218
bhāria 186; *-ī* 326
bhārū 292
bhāva 186; *-i* 175; *-ā* 122; *-e* 242
bhāṣā 226; *-baddha* 262
bhāti 174, 188-9, 193, 242, 306
bhikhāri 142
bhikhiyā 108, 197
bhikṣā 42
bhintara 68
bhinna 240
bhīkha 161 (see *bhikhiyā* also)
bhītara 304
bhuāla 182, 188

bhuī 107, 263
bhuguti 202-3, 261, 282
bhujabala 262
bhubi 271
bhulānā 192, 267; *-eu* 246; *-ē* 291; *bhulāba* 283
bhū- 56
bhūkha 107, 175
bhūta 237
bhūmi 42, 59
bhūri 187
bhūlaũ 28; *bhūlā* 241; *bhūlē* 200, 241
bhūṣaṇa 43, 53, 187, 242
bhṛgupati 219
bhēje 257
bhẽṭata 174
bhōga 122, 192, 202, 205, 267; *-inī* 160; *-u* 200, 208, 240
bhōjana 186
bhōra 142, 172: 301, 303; *-ī* 197; *-ē* 138; *-ẽ* 201, 269, 301
bhramahĩ 188
bhrātṛ- 42; *-jāyā* 68
bhrāṣṭra 42

m

mai 142; *mat* 122, 157-8, 163, 166-8, 173, 175, 183, 197, 207, 228, 241-2, 254, 261-2, 271, 278, 326
mauktikaṃ 118
mauḍa 64
maut 119
maula 64
maẽ 163
maku 219, 306
magana 197
magu 165
maṅgala (*maṃgala*) 43, 203
maccha- 35, 107
macchiā 35
macharī 107
majjha-illa 156
majhāra 226; *-ā* 175, 226; *-ī* 225
mañju 292
maṇḍalī 225
maṇḍī 4
matavārā 182; *-ī* 168, 326
matā 197, 292
mati 168, 174, 189, 193, 207, 296; *-hīni* 165
matī 193
madana 244
madhu 142; *-makṣikā* 46
madhūka 56, 69
madhya 156, 215, 225, 227
mana 107, 159-60, 164-5, 172, 175-6, 188-9, 192, 201, 203, 219, 240-42, 267, 272, 274, 318; *-bhāvata* 138; *-bhāvati* 138
manau 312; *manahũ* 256, 310
manāihu 245
mani-dīpa 266

manu 123, 256
manuja 257
manōja 285
manōratha 161, 240
manda- 39, 266
mandira 176
mama 73, 163
mayā 163, 183
mar-, *-ai* 186, *-ata* 241, 294; *-ana* 244, 278; *-ahṛ* 255
marajāda 197
marama 165, 168, 188, 246
marica- 66
malina 242; *malīna* 122
maśaka 46, 55
mazaḥ 36
maha 226-7; *mahā* 122, 126-7, 172, 174-5, 188, 196, 200, 207, 225-7, 272-3
mahā 125; *mahi* 159, 186; *mahĩ* 158, 226, 318; *mahu* 122; *mahū* 122, 176, 225, 227; *māha* 122
mahatārī 108
mahari 107
mahādēo 81
mahimā 197
mahiṣa- 42; *-ī* 55
mahī 176; *-pa* 326; *-pati* 220
mahũ 314
mahēsa 255
mājīra- 67
mājhārī 225; *mājhiārā* 225
māḍapha 168
mādira 203, 218
māsa-khavā 172
māī 142, 158
mākhī 107, 189
māga 26; *-ā* 325
māgha 56, 228
māṭina 318
mātā- 46
mātū 121, 168, 242
mātṛ-ṣvasā- 69
mātha 220, 275
māna 120, 193; *-ū* 161
mān-, *-ata* 183; *-ab* 312; *-ahṛ* 267; *-ahũ* 274; *-ā* 123, 325; *-i* 161; *-ī* 292; *-eũ* 167
mānāvā 255
mānuṣa 200; *mānusa* 158, 256
māyā 198, 241, 262-3, 266, 292
mār-, *-ai* 176; *-aũ* 254; *-ā* 171-2; *-i* 124, *-ī* 271 293; *-u* 267; *-esi* 244
māraga 26, 231, 254
māruta- 326
mālia 116
**māliō* 116; *mālikaḥ* 119
mālin 116
mālinikā 119
māha 188; *-a* 225; *-ā* 173; *-ã* 188, 225-6, 263; *-ĩ* 165, 175, 187, 189, 192, 195, 225-7, 240; *māha*

226 ; *mãhã* 225- (also see *maha*)
mãhura 43
mãi 79
mãg-, *-ahu* 267 ; *-ã* 241 ; *-i* 219 ; *-u* 175
mãjha 167, 225, 227, 318 ; *-ã* 225
mãthai 27, 123 ; *-r* 160
mãsa 186
micu 108
miṭ-, *-ahr* 291 ; *-ẽ* 288 ; *-ãi* 172
mitra 161, 164, 197, 219, 274
miradaṅgũ 209
mirtaka 173
mil-, *-ai* 207, 245 ; *-ana* 159 ; *-ani* 283 ; *-ab* 282-3 ; *ahr* 172 ; *-ã* 171 ; *-ãeũ* 288 ; *-ãya* 223 ; *-i* 245 -6, 255, 281, 298 ; *-ĩ* 263 ; *-ehr* 225 ; *-ehu* 165 ; *-ẽ* 262, 278
misa 182
mĩcu 278, 297
mĩjahr 256
mĩṭha 137-8, 142 ; *-ã* 142 ; *-ĩ* 137 ; *-ẽ* 196
mita 120
muehũ 314
mukuṭa 64, 272-3, 326
mukuta 161
mukula 41, 64
mukha 56, 69, 124, 186, 226, 269, 272 ; *-ni* 123, 125
muni 123, 189, 223, 225, 245, 271, 298, 326 ; *-nha* 123, 125 ; *-rãja* 186 ; *-hi* 201
muratar 124
mula 329
mulla 74
musala- 51
muhamada 120
muhi 159
mũṭhĩ 107, 177
mũrata 124, 153, 192, 220 ; *-i* 164
mũla 220 ; *-ã* 158
mũlya 74
mṛga 292
megha- 56
merãihi 167
mẽṭana-hãra 285 ; *mẽṭã* 277 ; *mẽṭẽ* 288
mẽḍhra- 42
mẽrae 81
mẽrã 161, 163 ; *-i* 161 ; *-ẽ* 123, 161 ; *-õ* 161, 166
mẽli 123 ; *-ĩ* 172
mottiõ 118
molla 74
mohi 159, 175, 182, 201, 226, 267, 292, 298 ; *-r* 53, 158-9, 168, 172, 201, 262, 266 ; *mõhr* 159 ; *mõhi* 159, 189 ; *mõhr* 159, 177, 244 ; *mõhĩ* 165, *mõhĩ* 203, 255, 297 ; *mõhũ* 314
mõ 73, 158-9, 163, 191, 222,

240, 256, 272 ; *kaṙ* 159
mōkhū 262
mōti 123 ; *-hi* 122 ; *mōtī* 202
mōra 158, 160-1, 166, 188, 196-7, 326 ; *-ā* 160, 164, 246; *-i* 160, 274; *-ī* 160-1, 182, 267; *-ē* 123, 160-1, 176
mōha 201
mõ 167, 171, 184, 197, 209, 226-7, 242, 246, 267, 269
mrakṣaṇa 46
mhane 312

y

yauvana 36
yajñopavīta 72
yati 210
yatna 36
yaṣṭi- 52
yasya 191; *yaḥ* 191
yaha 47, 160, 181-2, 184-5, 192, 223, 243, 266-7, 277, 297 ; *-u* 181-2, 185
yā 181, 183-5, 200
yād 50
yādṛśa 210
yār 50
yāhī 184 ; *-ū* 184
yuvarāju 166
yūkā- 69
yei 181-2, 185; *yehi* 183; *yehu* 181
yē 180-2, 185, 191
yēhi 183
yoktra 73
yōga 208, 229, 240

r

raini 107, 177, 207
raurihi 306 ; *raurē* 198
rakata 208
rakhavārē 285
raghu-, -nātha 125; *-pati* 283; *-pati-prabhutāī* 166 ; *baṁsinha-* 122 ; *bara-bimala-jasu* 186; *-rāī* 263
raṅkahi 193
raṅgā (*raṁgā*) 175
rac-, -i 298 ; *-enhi* 246 ; *-esi* 244
raja 177
rañcika (*raṃcika*) 175, 306
ratana 121, 326 ; *-sēna* 181
rati 292
ratha 246
randhai 40
rabi 246
ravatũ 158
raśmi- 55
rasa- 174, 188, 202, 267 ; *-bharī* 137; *-vatī* 73; *-ika* 117, *-ikiyā* 117
rasanā 175, 186
rah-, -ai 161, 171, 188, 195, 207, 246; *-aṙ* 122; *-ata* 183 ; *-ati* 272 ; *-ateũ* 271; *-ana* 263 ; *-aba* 263,

297; *-ahṛ* 203, 218; *-ā* 142, 201, 207, 209, 297; *-iyē* 183; *-ihahṛ* 120; *-ihu* 245; *-ī* 177, 233, 278, *-u* 164, 174; *-eni* 245; *-ē* 158, 173, 233, 242, 275, 278, 291
rahaṭa 218
rāi 176; *-u* 108, 240, 277; *-ū* 168, 198
rāura (*rāvara*) 186, 197-9, 228; *-i* 198, 199; *-ī* 198
rākh-, *-ai* 193; *-aba* 298; *-ahṛ* 173; *-ahu* 269; *-ā* 47, 175, 277, 298; *-ihṛ* 263; *-ehu* 243; *-ē* 192
rāja 142, 166, 171, 175, 188, 226, 256, 262, 297; *-i* 123; *-ṛ* 123, 297; *-kuāra* 121; *-kũara* 175; *-kula* 199; *-putra* 65; *-hṛ* 166
rājā 122, 142, 164-5, 171, 173, 176, 195-6, 203, 209, 220, 228, 240, 254-5, 277, 291, 296, 298, 326; *rājan* 199; *rājana* 198; *rājanha* 123
rāta 107, 143, 153, 220, 242; *-ā* 123
rāti 122, 142, 152, 203; *-ī* 240
rātri 50
rāni 108, 142; *-ī* 108, 120-1, 177, 188, 201, 207, 228, 241, 271
rāma 117, 121, 160, 165, 183, 189, 195, 298, 325; *-abhiṣēka* 138; *-nāma* 266; *-pēma-bhājana* 183; *-priya* 165; *-sam-mukha* 123; *-hṛ* 122, *-u* 121, 242; *-uā* 117
rāwal 199
rāhũ 278
rādhā 271
rijhāi 122
ritu 242
rini 202
ripu 246
riṣi 58
risa 171, 196
risāni 142; *-ē* 283
rījh-, *-ai* 257; *-ā* 174
ruda 209
rupavantai 124
ruṣyati 55
rūpa 121, 165, 175, 186, 188, 208, 218, 222, 243, 263; *-ā* 160, 173, 201
rē 172
remo 117
rēkha 172
roibō 283
rovāvahi 288
rō-, *-ahṛ* 82; *-ā* 82; *-i* 256; *-nā* 256; *-vaṛ* 257; *-vata* 257, 274

rōā 168, 173 ; *rōva* 208
rōka 267
rō-dana 196
rōma 203 (see *rō-a*)
rōṣū 160, 192
rōhū 262

l

lai 176, 197, 263
lauha 73 ; *-kāra* 56
lakṣa 52
lakh-, *-āi* 326 ; *-āē* 82 ; *-i* 292
lag-, *-a* 308 ; *-āē* 202 ; *-āvai* 159, *-āvahī* 161 ; *-i* 158, 182, 202, 228, 241, 262, 266, 277-8 ; *-eu* 298
lagana 142
laghu- 56
laṅgh- 46 ; *-ai* 35
lacchana 209
laǰāvani-hārē 285
laǰāneu 291
laǰjā 52, 116
laṭa 197
larata 165
larikā 188
lavaṇa 46
laṣana 53, 177, 195, 296; *-u* 120
laharai 182
lah-, *-i* 227, 244, 308; *-ia* 186
lāi 183, 242 ; *-ī* 165 ; *-uba* 172 ;
lākha 151, 174, 267
lāg-, *-a* 240, 242, 283 ; *-ati* 240; *-aba* 298; *-ahī* 123, 174; *-i* 121, 142, 168, 227-8 ; *-ihi* 263, *-ī* 245, 263 ; *-ī* 203, 298; *-u* 160 ; *-ē* 298
lāja 116, 123 ; *-i* 297
lāṅgūla- 46
lātā 267
lābha 165, 189
lāyaka 165
lāyaq 139
lāl 139
lāvā 123, 227
lāhā 173
lāba 138
likh-, *-ai* 175, 283 ; *-anī* 138, 142, 158 ; *-ā* 277, 325; *-i* 192; *-ī* 26, 278, 326 ; *-ītani* 325
liṅga-paṭṭa 73
liya 228 ; *-ē* (*liē*) 298 ; *liheū* 120 ; *līǰē* 291 ; *līnha* 182, 298 ; *līnhā* 158, 160, 167-8, 183, 186, 193 ; *līnhi* 53, 242 ; *-līnheū* 183 ; *līnhesi* 202 ; *līnhē* 242
līlē 208
lui 323
lukāi 297
lugāī 277
lunia 186
lei 121, 166, 193, 227, 326 ; *lēī* 186 ; *lēta* 272 ; *lētī* 272 ; *lēba* 287, 298 ; *lēbā*

158 ; *lēvai* 203 ; *lēhṛ* 257 ; *lēhu* 47, 219, 298
lēkin 312
logāṛ 246
lōi 177
lōka 120, 243, 263
lōga 245, 256, 277 ; *-na* 123; *-nha* 122
lōcana 326 ; *-lāhū* 186
lōni 158
lōbā 107
lōbha 160, 266
lōha 176 ; *-u* 283

v

vaṅka 33
vai 170, 173
vakīl 50
vakhāna 298
vakra 33
vaqt 34
vaggha 35
vaṭṭai 36
vaḍḍhai 52
vappha 41
varayātrā 65
varaṣahṛ 53
varṇa- 46
varṣ- 55
vallī 52
vas- 55
vasiṣṭha 53
vaha 47, 164, 170-1, 173, 175-7, 203, 207, 240, 267, 297 ; *-i* 175, 177, 200 ; *wahi* 181, 229, *wahu* 181
vā 170, 174 ; *wā* 181
vāāvalī 115 ; *vāyāvali* 115
vāta 67; *-ākula-* 65; *-āvali* 41, 63 ; *-āvaliḥ* 115
vādyatē 232
vārana 203 ; *vāri* 117
vārtā 118
vālukā 70, 116
vāvailā 242
vāsṭē 230
viaṇa 72
vijñapti 45
viṭapa 51 ; *-āt* 333
viḍāla 51, 53
vitasti- 68
vidyā 223
vidhavapana 195
vidhi 307
vipādikā 71
vilihiuṃ (*jāi*) 296
vivahāra 71
vismar- 41
vismṛ -55
vīṇā 67
vuḍḍha 52
vṛddha 70
vṛnta 71
vṛścika 68
vei 170-2, 177, 187, 200, 297
vē 181 ; *-tika* 209
vēḍhiuṃ (*jāi*) 296
vēda 167

vēlā 302
vontisa 147
voha 176; *-i (vahi)* 170, 174 -5
vō 177; *-hi* 177; *-hī* 175
vōrā 200
vyaǰana 72
vyathā 67
vyartha 192
vyavahāra 71
vyāghra 41, 65
vritti 58
wahi (see *vahi*); *wā* (see *vā*)

śaivāla 71
śatāni 135
śayyā 71
śikhā 56
śītala 68; *-āya* 71
śuka 69
śuṇḍā 55
śūkara 69, 73
śṛgāla 64
śṛṅga 55
śṛṇu 45, 268; *śṛṇoti* 69
śōdha-kāra 72
śobh- 56
śmaśru 46, 74
śyāmāka 55
śyāla 55
śrāpa 53
śrāvaṇa 55
śrutikīrti 53
śreṣṭhī 67, 115

ślakṣṇa 156
śvasura 55
śvāsa 55

ṣaṭ 35
ṣaṣṭhaka 156
ṣoḍaśa 55

sai 151; *sau* 151, 181
saiada 81
saila 209
sattālisa 77, 148
sattdhi 72
sautukai 171
saubhāgya 72
sauhat 304
saũ 120-22, 159, 165-6, 173, 181, 187, 191-2, 222, 227, 241, 256, 269 318
saũha 304-5; *-i* 305
sāō 180; *sau* 180; *sakaḥ* 180; *sasmin* 179
saṃsārā 166, 177, 297; *-ū* 283
sak-, *-ai* 298; *-aũ* 298; *-ab* 282; *-aba* 298; *-aht* 201, 298; *-u* 120
sakala 158, 161, 172, 283
sakucata 274
saktu 55

sakhā 182
sakhi 296, 326; *-na* 122-3, 197; *-nha* 123; *-yana* 124; *-ī* 153, 246
sagarau 297
saguna 53, 124, 152; *-iai* 124
saghana 56
saṅkara (saṁ-) 255, 326
saṅga 227-8, 230, 283; *-ī* 182
saṅghārē 27
saṅmukha 305
saciva 228
sacētanha 123
saccaṃ 35
sajaga 306
sajana 203
sajāī 160
sañchēpahi 122
sañjhā 36
saṭha 246; *-nhi* 123, 126; *-hi* 254
saḍḍha 52
saṇka 156
sata 196, 222, 244; *-ē* 153;
satasaṅga 171
satī 222, 241
satta 38, 240
sattara 149
sattāvana 149
satya 182
satraha 147
sadana 168
sadā 172, 222, 255
sadṛśa 231
sana 159, 165-6, 208, 222-3, 240-2; *-u* 174
sanamukha 202
sanātha 158
sanēha 197, 326
santakēna 224; *santakō* 224; *santē* 230
santanha 218
santāp- 64; *-ayati* 79
sandhi 72
sapata 124, 177
sapatnī 50, 55
sapatha 138, 166, 201
sapana 167, 228, 293, 296, 326; *-ā* 124, 184, 207, 242; *-ehu* 165, 183, 313; *-ē* 124, 171, 220, 242
saptati 50
saptadaśa 50
sappa 40; *-m* 132; *-ā* 132-3; *-ē* 132; *-ō* 116, 132-3
safaid 139
saba 124, 142, 161, 164, 167, 172, 175, 183, 188-9, 197-8, 203-4, 206-7, 215, 217-8, 241, 243-6, 256, 263, 277, 282, 298, 326; *-i* 187, 256, 318; *kēhī* 206; *kāhū* 206; *kichu* 206; *kou* 206; *kōū* 206; *-hi* 195, 197, 203-4, 206; *-hṛ*

182; -*hī* 198, 216; -*nhi* 126; -*u* 203
sabada 174
sabarai 223
sabarī 125
sabbadhi 133
sabhā 125, 218, 226
sama 166, 174, 182, 198, 201, 240; -*ḥ* 224; *samēna* 224
samai 177
samayo 302
samartha 51
samarpay- 69
samāja 187; -*ā* 209
samāna 166
samīpa 256
samujha 183; -*ta* 182; -*āina* 246; -*āvaī* 288; -*i* 27, 175, 196, 243, 281; -*eu* 245
samuda 291; -*hī* 122
samudāī 255
samēṭahu 197
samēta 198, 246, 262
samputa 244
sambhu 196, 219
sammata 43, 121
sammuha 46
samhāri 281
saya 151 (see *sai*)
sayana 292
sayāni 142; -*ī* 246; -*ē* 176
sara 296
saraga 175, 227, 257, 278, 326
sarana 167, 256
sarabari 186
sarāh-, -*ana* 198; -*ā* 196; -*i* 196, 263; -*iata* 240
sari 159, 191, 201, 228, 256
sarisa 121, 192, 231, 266
sarīra 177, 326
sarēkhā 174, 255
sarōnita 255
sarpa 80; -*ṃ* 132; -*ḥ* 116, 132; -*ān* 132; -*āḥ* 132
sarva 206
sarvana 283
salōnī 296
savati 107, 122, 168, 244, 262
savāraū 121
savārā 186
savinaya 174
sasi 186
sasura 297
sah-, -*ai* 173; -*aba* 262; -*ā* 167; -*i* 292; -*īū* 243
sahaja 182
sahasa 151
sahāya 207
sahita 255; -*ena* 224,
sahī 325
sahēli 326
saḥ 179-80, (see *saō*)
sāga 227-8, 230
sāvārā 187; -*ē* 241
sā 179
sāī 297
sāuja 107

sākhā 275
sāgara 220
sāja 262, 297; *-ā* 122, 296; *-i* 291, 296; *-ī* 173, 218; *-u* 173
sājhuā 156
sāṭha 149
sāta 146, 257; *-u* 313; *-va* 153; *-ō* 313
sātha 168, 202, 218, 298; *-ā* 166, 243; *-ī* 121, 161, 218
sādara 292
sādhai 175
sādhu 187; *-mahimā* 240
sāna 156
sānē 58
sāṭ 41
ṣārā 202
sārī 245
sārtha 39, 64
sālā 292
sāsu 326; *-ra* 262
sāci 182; *-ehu* 314
sājha 301, 303
sāpa 116, 132; *-ā* 132; *-ini* 142; *-u* 116, 132
sikōrī 267
siktha 38, 68
sikha 107, 121, 166; *-ē* 137, 187
siṅgha 271, 291
siṅghala 26, 218; *-dīpa* 171
sicāvā 288
siddha 178; *-nha* 123
sidhāē 124, 240
sidhi 189
sindhu 225-6, 246
siya 326
sira 177, 208
sirajanahārahĭ 243
sirāti 240
sitā 218
siva 298; *-ā* 223
sihāhĭ 187
sihiṭi 107
sĭgārā 159, 262
sīu 108
sīv 66
sīkani 126
sītā 269, 297; *-nātha* 223
sīpa 171, 176
sīya 263
sīla 167
sīsa 172, 225; *-ni* 125
sĭcā 164
su 180
suaṭā 108, 164; *suā* 53, 108, 176, 241, 244
sukha 158, 165-6, 173, 175-6, 192, 197, 202, 256, 267, 275
sukhāī 171; *-hĭ* 291
sukhārī 188
sugati 125
sugandha 73, 202, 222; *sugādha* 120
sugāi 197
sugharāi 208; *-hĭ* 26

sujana 263
sujasa 166
sujānā 200
suta 172, 275, 326; *-nha* 246; *-ā* 166
sudhāri 281
sudhi 107, 182, 197
sun-,-ai 178, 215, 255, 282-3; *-ahu* 168, 326; *-ā* 123, 241, 326; *-āu* 266; *-āeu* 167, 203; *-āē* 187; *-āyeu* 288; *-āyehu* 245; *-āvaũ* 166, 266; *-āvahɪ* 288; *-āvahũ* 177; *-āvā* 288; *-i* 45, 171, 182, 201, 207, 243, 263, 296 -7, 326; *-ia* 292; *-ihahɪ* 263; *-ī* 123, 242; *-u* 296; *-ehi* 246
sundara 167, 172, 256, 275; *-tā* 209, *-i* 43
sufaid 40
subānī 263
subhāu 108, 246, 267; *-ū* 142; *-vā* 142
sumir-,-ai 192; *-ata* 189, 203, 274; *-ana* 204, 298; *-ahu* 297; *-eũ* 243; *-ena* 246; *-ehu* 165
sura 226; *-na* 123
surañga 120, 164
surasarī 256
sulabha 189, 297
suvarṇa 69, 73
susēvakani 125
suhā-,-ī 58, 176, 204, 326; *-ē* 138, 182; *-vani* 256; *-vā* 138
suhāsa 277
sūā 245
sūkara 242
sūcikā 70
sūjha 166, 173; *-hɪ* 291; *-ā* 203; *-i* 159, 183, 297
sūdha 142; *-i* 204
sūraja 121, 216
sūlā 243
sejiā 108
sejo 156
sevakāī 262
sē 166, 172, 180, 325
sēu 81
sēṭhi 115
sērasāhi 326
sēva 254; *-ā* 160, 165, 168, 181, 262, 326
sēvaka 158, 262; *-ni* 126
sēti 222
so 171, 176, 186, 192, 196, 200, 242, 263, 269, 277; *-i* 168, 176, 186, 188-9, 246, 298, 318
sonārā 121
sohāī 175; *-tī* 174; *-hī* 58 (see *suhā-*)
sohāga 160
sō 53, 170-1, 173-4, 176, 179-80, 186, 188, 196, 222, 240, 243, 292; *-i* 186, 274; *-ī* 172, 186,

246, 262, 296, *-u* 82; *-ū* 314
sō-,-iba 283; *-vai* 120; *-vata* 275; *-vati* 176
sōnai 122, 217
sōbhā 244, 326
sōraha 147
sōha 165, 207; *-navārī* 285
sõ 121-2, 161, 165-6, 168, 176, 182, 187, 192, 200-1, 242, 267, 293, 326
skandha 33
skambha 34
stana 38
stāgha 56
strī 67
sthā- 155; *-na* 305
sthālī 38
sthiti 68
snā- 45, 57
spand- 40
sphuṭ- 40
sphoṭa 70
sravana 277, 282, 297
srotas- 55
sva 197
svara 55, 69
svāmī 55

z, ƶ

zōr 74
zulm 36

h

ha-,-i 53, 142, 161, 165, 168, 171, 176, 187, 193, 195, 202-3, 208, 233, 273-4, 277, 297; *-ɪ* 168, 177, 182, 274, 277; *-u* 161, 253; *-ũ* 158, 163, 175, 182, 217, 233, 240, 253, 266, 271, 273; *-na* 253; *-hɪ* 233, 274; *-hu* 233, 253, 273-4; *-hũ* 233, 273-4, 277
hajarata 172
haṭhi 254
hata 233; *-ḥ* 232; *-ā* 164; *-i* 278; *-ẽ* 209; *-ẽ* 233
hatiā 152, 245
hatyāre 182
hama 159-60, 163, 183, 209, 241-4, 157-9, 262, 277, 326; *-hi* 160, 267; *-hɪ* (*-ɪ*) 158, 160, 163, 186, 283; *-hĩ* 160, *-hũ* 262, 314; *-hũ̃* 314
hamār-,-a 158, 160-1, 163, 203, 267, 272, 283; *-ā* 161, 267, 326; *-i* 161; *-ī* 161, 326; *-ehi* 318 *-ẽ* 161, 274; *-ẽ* 161
haya 292
hara 272
haraṇa 285
harani 285
haraṣapada 183
harasāni 242
harā 186, *-ī* 164
hari 116, 121, 160, 164, 200,

241, 261, 273, 326; *-kīrati* 125; *-yā* 116
kariara 137
karīē 292
karidrā 56
kariphāreuri 27
karu 58; *-ē* 137
kaliddā 39
kasi 142, 233, 253
kasta 56, 232; *-ḥ* 118
kākarāyeu 288; *kākārai* 188
kās-,-ā 186, 242; *-ibē* 283; *-ī* 123; *-ẽ* 283
kāṭa 173, 182, 218, 220, 226, 243, 254
kātha 161, 172, 184, 201; *-na* 123, 226; *-ā* 196, 198, 256, 282
kānī 160, 267
kāri 273
kārū 183
kāsā 283
kiāū 122
kiē 121, 188
kita 168, 177, 198, 219, 228, 245; *-kārī* 188; *-kānī* 189; *-u* 166
kimavantu 283
kimācala 209
kiya 107, 261; *-ā* 107, 188, 207; *-ō* 108
kilagi 47
krchā 160
kī 219, 233, 278
kīna 168
kīrāmani 159, 164
kīrē 176
kukum 97
kuta 173, 222, 233, 237, 278; *-i* 222; *-ē* 177; *-ẽ* 223
kudūr 36
kulāsū 267
kṛdaya 168, 296; *-ṃ* 66
kē 273
kētu 219, 283
kēr-,-ahṛ 122, 172, 187; *-ahu* 207; *-ā* 165; *-ī* 298
ko- 56; *-i* 82-3, 171, 177, 195, 267, 274, 291, 295, 311, 330-1; *-ihai* 173, 201, 234; *-ihi* 193; *kontēna* 225
kō- 121-2, 164, 245; *-ai* 234; *-i* 82, 123, 138, 142, 171-3, 178, 186-7, 192, 200, 203, 208, 234, 256, 276; *-ihi* 168, 196, 234, 298; *-ī* 167, 186-8, 207-8, 263; *-u* 201, 267; *-ū* 158; *-ehu* 269; *-ta* 171, 175, 202, 271-3; *-tai* 161, 272; *-tā* 271; *-ti* 271; *-tiū* 168, 271; *-nī* 123, 125; *-ba* 234, 262, 286-7; *-bai* 234, 262; *-hṛ* 182, 188, 277; *-hu* 234; *-hū* 158, 183; *-hiht* 234

PART 2

Modern Awadhi and Hindustani Words

ʌ

ʌis 209, 273, 295, 308, 310-11; -ʌi 99; -iɪ 304; -ei 321; -en 307; -eɪ 210, 306

ʌiflʌu 265, 279, 308; -ũ 261

ʌĩcinḭ 329

ʌu 251, 310-11, 329, 331; ʌo 310

ʌutiɪ 287

ʌur 50, 69, 89, 99, 152, 198, 204-5, 210, 307; -i̯ 204; -iɪ 204; -eɪ 204; koɪiɪ 206; sʌb 206; ʌwʌr 307

ʌurʌt 140, 328

ʌuflaɪt 56

ʌũraɪ 65, 69

ʌo *see* ʌu

ʌkolʌ̃g 304

ʌkaɪl 60

ʌkiɪn 50

ʌkel 312

ʌkeɪlaɪ 312

ʌkɪʌis 147

ʌkhʌroɪʈ 34

ʌgomʌn 302-3

ʌgflaɪb 293

ʌckʌn 35

ʌcɪhaɪ 141-2; -iɪ 141, 308; -ʌn 142; -en 141-2; -eɪ 141-2, 144, 214

ʌɲɟaɪd 64

ʌɲɟflaɪ 36, 65

ʌʈeɪ 329

ʌʈɪimiɪ 154

ʌʈhʌtɪʌr 150; -i̯ 150

ʌʈhaɪrʌfl 147; -aɪ 147

ʌʈhaɪsiɪ 150

ʌʈhe 154

ʌʈɪhaɪnbeɪ 151; -veɪ 151

ʌʈɪhaɪwʌn 149

ʌʈɪhaɪsiɪ 150 *see* ʌʈhaɪsiɪ

ʌʈɪhaɪis 147; -iɪs 147

ʌtibaɪrɳ 64

ʌtɪaɪ 209; -eɪ 299

ʌdomiɪ 112-3, 126, 230; ʌdmin 144, 205; ʌdmiɪ 205, 293, 323; ʌdmiɪ udmiɪ 323

ʌdobʌdaɪi ko 89; ʌdb- 89

ʌdɪflaɪ 155

ʌdflikaɪr 307

ʌnaɪɟ 224

ʌniɪ 63

ʌnto 305

ʌnflaɪriɪ 40

ʌponaɪ 60, 85, 99, 198-9; -eɪ 99; ʌpʌn 40, 198; ʌpʌnaɪ 198; ʌpʌnḭ 127-8, 198; ʌpʌniɪ 198, 330; ʌpʌne 198-9, 330; ʌpnaɪ 60

ʌpaɪ 199
ʌpunʌi 198
ʌb 140, 294, 299, 302-3, 308, 317-8, 321; -ʌi 274; -ʌβin 321; -ʌβinʌi 321; -ʌβĩɪ 321; -ʌβẽɪ 321; kiɪ 302; tiɪ 302, 317 330; tiu 317; ʌbɪʌj 302-3, 321; ʌbβiʌi 302; ʌbβiʌũɪ 317; ʌbβiʌj 303; ʌbβiʌjen 321
ʌbaɪɟ 3
ʌbeɪr 63
ʌmiɪr 311
ʌmoɪl 49
ʌmkhorʌwaɪ 127
ʌmbikaɪ 289
ʌrʌgu̯ 34, 64
ʌrøgβiɪ 35
ʌraɪm 64-5
ʌreɪ 214
ʌroɪrʌb 63
ʌrgʌniɪ 46
ʌrdaɪwʌnu̯ 92
ʌrsʌʈβu̯ 149
ʌrɪβiɪ 49, 59, 87
ʌrsiɪ 60, 85
ʌʈtaɪlis 148
ʌʈtis 148; ʌʈtiɪs 148
ʌʈsʌth 149 *see* ʌrsʌʈhu̯
ʌʈβiʌijaɪ 155; ʌʈβiaɪiɪ 92, 155
ʌlʌg 94
ʌlɑ̃g 304-5
ʌlɪaɪ 85
ʌwʌr *see* ʌur
ʌs 306-7; -ʌu 317
ʌsaɪʈβ 63
ʌsiɪ 68; ʌsɪiɪ 150, 315, 319; ʌsɪiu 315; ʌsɪin 319
ʌsturaɪ 64
ʌβ-, -ʌi 6, 56, 140, 234, 279; -ʌɪ̃ 129; -ʌu 234; -ʌn 234; -ʌsi 234; -ʌĩ 234; -aɪ 234; -in 234; -iɪ 234, 250; -ĩɪ 234; -eu 234; -eɪ 319, -ẽɪ 234; aɪj 234; aɪβi 56, 234; aɪβiɪ̃ɪ 234
ʌβir 66, 216, 250
ʌβisaɪnu̯ 64
ʌβeɪr 56, 71
ɑ̃guʈhaɪ 37, 63
ɑ̃guɪʈhiɪ 329, 30
ɑ̃cʌwʌb 63
ɑ̃tʌraɪ 63
ɑ̃dβiʌraɪ 77
ɑ̃bijaɪ 41

aɪ

aɪ- , -i 141, 261, 299, 312, 329; -iu 84; ijeɪgaɪ 199; -isu̯ 270; -iɪ 83, 132, 204, -ĩɪ 143, 230, 331; -u 61; -ub 250, 264; -eu 199; -en 321; -e; 115, 131, 144, 310-11; -oɪ 83, 97, 258, 302, 331; -oɪo 302; -jeu 131; jen 251, 321; -jeɪ 112, 115, 143, 184, 206, 214, 224, 322; -jẽɪ 250; -waɪ

112, 115, 131, 141, 194, 204, 230, 284, 295, 299, 313, 322; -wʌi 141, 294; -wʌĩ 99, 328; -wʌtᵢ̣ 94, 141, 287; -wʌb 290, 294, 329
ɑɪkhʌt 59
ɑɪgᵢ̣ 34, 67, 115, 118, 327; -i 216, 299; -iɪ 128, 133, 216
ɑɪgeɪ 230; -ẽɪ 305
ɑɪcheɪ 6
ɑɪʝ 36, 280, 302
ɑɪʝaɪ 64; -iɪ 68
ɑɪʝu 301; -u̯ 301-3
ɑɪʈh 146, 273
ɑɪdiɪ 64
ɑɪdᵢ̣ 50
ɑɪdmiɪ 139 *see* ʌdəmiɪ
ɑɪdfiaɪ 155; -iɪ 99, 250; -eɪ 308
ɑɪdfii 258
ɑɪn 46, 65, 204-5, -eɪ 204
ɑɪnʌb 290
ɑɪp 199; -ʌn 199; -u 199; -ui 198-9; -u̯ 198-9
ɑɪmu̯ 308; -e 141
ɑɪj 234 *see* ʌfi-
ɑɪrʌs 55; -u̯ 50, 63
ɑɪrʌsiɪ 51
ɑɪru̯ 64
ɑɪluɪ 114
ɑɪs 55
ɑɪfii *and* ɑɪfiĩɪ *see* ʌfi-
ãɪu 64; -ũ 109
ãɪk 65
ãɪkhᵢ̣ 77, 80, 109, 126, 130, 132-3; -in 130; -iɪ 31, 68, 126, 129, 132-3
ãɪgaɪ 34
ãɪc 109, 118
ãɪcʌr 35
ãɪʈaɪ 210
ãɪt 62
ãɪdfiʌr 79, 293
ãɪsʌu 302
ãɪsuɪ 55
ãɪʈiɪ 49, 51, 65

i

iaɪr 50
iu 62, 66, 85, 144-5, 184-5, 284, 293, 308, 310, 315, 320, 329
ikʌtɪiɪs 148
ikɪiɪs 147
iktaɪliɪs 148
ikɪjaɪnweɪ 151
ikɪjaɪwʌn 149
ikɪjaɪsiɪ 150
iksʌʈh 149
ikhʌtɪʌr 149
iʝɪʌtᵢ̣ 67
itəraɪb 59
in 85, 184-5, 315, 320; -ʌfiiɪ 320; -ʌfiuɪ 315; -ʌfieɪ 320
inaɪm 67
78

ilɤʌtị̊ 59
isaɤiɤ 67
istaɤm 65, 67
istiriɤ 67
ifiʌu 315
ĩdʌrsaɤ 66, 77-8 ; **ĩndʌrsaɤ**

iɤ

iɤ 85, 131, 140-1, 144-5, 184, 279, 301-2, 304, 306, 308, 315, 320, 328-9
iɤʈfliɤ 58
ĩɤgur 78 ; **ĩɤŋgur** 78
ĩɤʈ 329
ĩɤdfiʌn 78 ; **-u̯** 68

u

uʌi 69 ; **ueɤ** 83
ui 99, 100, 128, 131-2, 141, 144, 178-9, 198, 247, 249, 294, 299, 301, 304, 308, 310-1, 315, 320, 322, 327-8, 331 ; **sʌb** 206
ukilaɤb 61
ukiɤl 50
ukhaɤrʌb 34
ugfiʌrʌb 69
uʃʌr 36, 69
uʃaɤr 139
upcaɤs 148
uʈhʌb 299 ; **uʈhaɤ** 298 ; **uʈhaɤi** 92, 128 ; **uʈhaɤoɤ** 130
utaɤr 281
udɤim 67
un (unfi) 28, 99, 178-9, 221, 250, 284, 315, 320, 329 ; **-ʌfiiɤ** 320 ; **-ʌfiuɤ** 315 ; **-ʌfieɤ** 320 ; **unfiʌi** 179
unɤaɤsiɤ 150
unɤiɤs 147
untaɤliɤs 148
untiɤs 147
unsʌʈh 149
unfiʌtɤʌr 149
upəʃʌi 40
upɤʌr 28, 304-5 ; **-ʌu** 317
uphənaɤi 41
ubəfiʌnị̊ 61
umiɾị̊ 70
uʈ- , **-ʌi** 51 ; **-aɤwʌtị̊** 154
ulʈaɤ 85
ufi 178 ; **-ʌu** 315 ; **-i** 178, 320
ũɾɛɤlʌb 78

uɤ

uɤ 85, 96, 127, 139, 144, 162, 178-9, 248-9, 258, 261, 268, 281, 300, 302, 310-11, 314-7, 320-1, 323, 331
uɤbʌb 61
uɤsʌr 61
ũɤkh 70
ũɤʈ 78

e

euʃiɤ 59
ekotaɤlis 148
ekotis 148
ekəsʌʈhị̊ 149

ekəsʌr 156
ekəfiʌtɪʌrị̊ 57; ekhʌtɪʌrị̊ 149
ekʌis 147
ekʌ- , -waɪ 153; -iɪ 153
ekaɪnbeɪ 151; ekɪʌnɪʌjeɪ 151; ekɪaɪnbe 151; ekɪjaɪnbeɪ 151
ekaɪsiɪ 150; ekɪaɪsiɪ 150; ekɪjaɪsiɪ 150
ekɪʌn 154
ekɪʌmpʌcaɪs 148
ekɪaɪwʌn 149; ekɪjaɪwʌn 149
egjaɪraɪ 146, 155; egɪjaɪraɪ 146, 155
eʈhã̄ɪ 304-5
etʌnaɪ 209-10
etʌraɪ 210; -eɪ 210, 303
etɪaɪ 59, 209; -iɪ 302; -eɪ 210, 299, 302-3
en (enfi) 184
ewʌ̃ 307, 322
efiʌwʌr 304
efii 184
efiu 57
efikiɪ 304
ẽʈuaɪ 78

ei

ei 184
eɪk 62, 85, 96, 99, 115, 146, 152, 315, 319, 328-30; -ʌi 154, 319; -ʌu 308, 315; -ə 101; -ụ̊ 115; -u 258
eɪkaɪ 59
eɪraɪpheɪriɪ 59
ẽɪʈiɪ 78

o

oinaɪ 61, 73
okhʌriɪ 73
oʈhã̄ɪ 304
oɲcaɪs 148
otʌnaɪ 209-10
otɪaɪ 85, 209; -iɪ 210; -eɪ 210
on 179; onfi 179
onʌis 147, 155; onɪʌis 147
onʌtɪis 147; ontis 147; wʌntis 147
onaɪsiɪ 150; onɪaɪsiɪ 150
ontaɪlis 148
onsʌʈh 149; -ị̊ 149
onfiʌtɪʌrị̊ 149
oriɪ 130; -eɪ 130
oʈfiənaɪ 73
osəriɪ 61; osʌriɪ 73
osaɪr 72
ofi 179, 304; ofie 179

oi

oɪ 179, 251
oɪɟfiaɪ 65, 73
oɪʈ 85
oɪp 60
oɪr 304-5
oɪs 60, 73
õɪʈh 73, 78

k

kʌi 178, 210, 217, 281-2, 299, 301, 308, 323, 328 -31; -kui 323; kʌj 221
kʌithaɪ 37-8, 66
kʌis 66, 209; -iɪ 304; -en 307; -eɪ 250, 306
kʌiflãɪ 217, 221, 224, 282
kʌĩtiɪ 304-5
kʌiɪ 194
kʌun 141, 193-4, 315; -ʌu 315; -i̯ 194; -iɪ 194, 230; -u̯ 204; -eɪ 132, 194; kʌwʌn 194
kʌuɾiɪ 69
kʌkʌnaɪ 79
kʌkʌwaɪ 79
kʌkɪaɪ 98, -uɪ 98
kʌceflərir 92, 258
kʌchuaɪ 69
kʌɟʌni 312
kʌʈ- 293; -ʌti̯ 232; -ʌb 66; -aɪuni̯ 251; -aɪwʌb 232
katik 209
kʌthaɪ 39, 99
kʌnkʌijaɪ 43
kʌnchedənaɪ 43
kʌnʈoɪp 43
kʌɳɖaɪ 29, 37
kʌnpʌʈiɪ 43
kʌnflʌijaɪ 44, 46, 79, 117
kʌnɪeɪ 43
kʌpoɾaɪ 29
kʌpuɪr 70
kʌb 302, 317, 321; -ɪʌi 321; -ɪʌu 317; -ɪʌj 302; -ʌflũɪ 317; -ʌflẽɪ 321; kʌbflʌj 302
kʌbisaɪ 28
kʌbutɪʌr 112; kʌbutʌriɪ 112
kʌbuɪliɪ 92
kʌbraɪ 41
kʌm 144, 152
kʌmʌriɪ 41, 79
kʌmaɪiɪ 328
kʌj *see* kʌi
kʌr 64, 221, 251-2; -ʌi 268, 320; -ʌu 132, 329; -ʌũ 268; -neɪwaɪlaɪ 285-6; -ʌb 140, 316, 318; -ʌbu̯ 232; -ətiu 273; -ətən 274; -aɪini̯ 92; -ibaɪ 316, 320; -iflʌũ 299; -iɪ 68, 134, 190, 220, 316, 320; -eũ 252; -eɪ 184, 221; -ti 99, 280-1
kʌriaɪ 98, 139, 144; kʌrijaɪ 315, 319; kʌrijʌi 319; kʌrijʌu 315
kʌriflãɪu 92
kʌruaɪti̯ 92
kʌruɪ 51, 61, 139; -uiɪ 139
kʌroɪʈ 151; -ri̯ 151
kʌʈuaɪ 139; -iɪ 139
kʌlʌm 33
kʌlɪuɪ 98
kʌlɪeɪ kʌlɪeɪ 307
kʌlchul 88

kʌlɟugʌfiiz 140
kʌlsiaz 88
kʌlzfii 88
kʌwʌn *see* kʌun
kʌs 209, 307; -ʌk 307; -ʌs 307
kas, -ʌi 55, -ʌb 54; -ibaz 92
kʌfi-, -ʌi 139, 207, 329; -ʌtị 94, 98; -ʌtiu 254; -ʌb 56; -az 78, 129, 250; -i 132, 194-5, 299; -in 94, 178, 328; -inị 198, 329; -isị 91, 96, 178, 329-30; -eu 258; -eũ 324; -en 251
kʌfiazr 110, 115 130; -ʌu 130; -ʌn 130; kʌfiʌrʌwaz 110; kʌfiʌrəwʌi 130
kʌfiãz 54, 77-8. 254, 304, 308, 317; -ʌ̃ 308, 312; -ʌ̃waz 304; -ũz 317; -ewʌr 304
kʌ̃dfiʌijaz 64; kʌ̃dfiʌiz 79
kʌ̃bʌriz 41, 79
kə 96, 127-8, 132, 141-4, 162, 169, 176, 178, 184, 190, 194, 198, 204, 216-7, 267, 273, 281, 289, 308, 310-1, 322, 328, 330
kaz 28, 96, 126, 128, 132, 162, 169-70, 184-5, 187, 190, 193-4, 198, 205, 216-7, 224, 254, 258, 261, 273-4, 279, 284, 295, 299, 308, 310-1, 329, 331, 333
kazɟ 33
kazʈ 119, 293, 324, -ʌb 66, 232; -ị 250, 299; -iz 140; -en 103
kazʈh 31
kaztik 311
kazn 46, 109; -e (m) 132
kaznaz phũzsiz 324
kazm 110, 308; -ụ 129, 210, 308, 322, 329; -ez 132, 229
kazlị 49; -i 303; kazlfiị 52, 67; kazlfii 279, 302-3
kazfi 194, 331
kazflez (-e) 77, 89, 94, 96, 193-5, 224, 226, 308, -eu 205
kãz 217
kãzkhị 34
kãzc 109
kãzʈaz 36
kãzdfi 30, 33, 79, 109; -e (pʌi) 111
kãzp 79; -ʌi 40
kipc 307
kitazb 85, 112, 119, 129, 199, 210, 314, 319; -ʌi 129, 280, 319, 321; -ʌu 315; kitʌbʌin 321
kin 193-4; -ə 331; -fi 193-4; ken 194
kinəkiz 66
kinazriz 29
kijazriz 66; ke- 50, 71
kirʌwaz 51; kirəwaz 94

kiſi- 251; **-inị̊** 205; **-isị̊** 329, 331; **-isą̊** 270; **-ei** 320; **-eu** 210, 308, 317; **-eũ** 252, 320; **-en** 205; **-ez** 317, 320
kị̊ 273, 299, 311, 330
kiz 98, 193-4, 302, 304, 327, 328
kizn 252; **-ſi** 252; **-ſiosị̊** 251
kuãz (**-ã̃**) 108, 254, 278
kukur 114; **-i** 114
kuchu 206; **-ų̊** 97, 131, 205, 216, 274, 284, 331; **-uz** 205
kutʌwaz 28, 111, 126; **-ʌn** 128; **kutʌunaz** 111; **kutʌunʌi** 129; **kutʌunuz** 111; **kutiaz** 111; **kutiʌuz** 111; **kutijaz** (**-ʌ**) 61, 111, 162, 169; **kutijʌwaz** 111
kutzaz 85, 87, 91, 299, 322; **-ʌi** 319; **-ʌu** 315; **-ʌn** 315, 319
kudazrị̊ 91
kundaz 85
kumezʈiz 119
kumſiazr 47, 65, 331; **-inị̊** 331
kurʌ-,-utiz 287, **-wʌtị̊** 287; **-waz** 287; **-woz** 257-8
kursiz 279, 328
kũaz (**-ʌ**) 115, **-ãz** 111, 130; **-ʌn** 83; **-ã̃n** 130; *see* **kuãz**
kũazr 69, 143-5; **-ị̊** 141, 143; **-iz** 141, 143-4; **-ez** 143-4
kũbſiazr 42; *see* **kumſiazr**
kuzkur 87, 162, 169; *see* **kukur**
kuzd 324; **-ʌb** 29, 323; **-ʌb kazdʌb** 323; **-ị̊** 299
kuzraz 51
kuzʈaz 51
ke 59, 128, 254, 257-8, 281, 284, 329, 331; **kę̊** 210, 258, 328-9
keũlaz 71
keʈhãz 304
ketʌnaz 209-10
ketʌraz 210; **-ez** 210
ketzaz 209; **-iz** 210; **-ez** 210
kethaz 194-5
kethuaz 194-5
ken *see* **kin**
kejazriz *see* **kijazriz**
keſiʌr 304
keſiaz 194
keſii 193-4, 216; **-ị̊** 71
kẽwazʈaz 71
kez 61, 99, 194, 217, 304; *also see* **ke**
kezuz 205; **kezſiuz** 205
kezr 72, 199; **keriz** 258
kezraz 72
koʈhazr 65
koſiazrinị̊ 114
koz 6, 193-4, 315; **koſii** 195
koziz (**-i**) 95, 204-5, 210, 258, 286, 311. **-uz** 205

kozkhị 74
kozʈfi 49
kozs 33
kozfiuz 205
kõzch 32, 109
kjʌn, kjʌnfi, kjʌfii 194, *see* **kin.**

kh

khʌʈzaz 141, 293, **-ez** 141; **khʌʈazb** 293; **khʌɳʈaz** 85
khʌʈijaz (-ʌ) 94-5, 108, 115; **khʌʈkirəwaz** 88
khʌɳʈaz *see* **khʌʈaz**
khʌn 302
khʌbʌrị 116, 250
khʌmbfiaz 30, 34
khʌrazb 139, 141; **-ʌn** 141
khʌrtir 213, 230
khaz 287, 290; **-i** 71, 99, 127, 139, 190, 214, 216, 269, 279, 281, 284, 299, 322, 328; **-itị** 154, 327; **-inị** 91, 198; **-isị** 94, 299; **-iz** 331; **-u** 70, 329; **-e** 71; **-eu** 84, 91; **-ez** 83, 265; **-o** 70; **-tị** 96, 127, 236, 247, 265, 288, 328, **-tiz** 288; **-b** 299; 323-4; **-b wazb** 323; **-bụ** 284; **-j** 251; **-jen** 210; **-waz** 250, 295 **khʌiʌtị** 247; **khʌibaz** 265; **khʌifiʌ̃** 129, 190; **khʌuaz** 84; **khʌwʌijaz** 285; **khʌwaz** 290; **khʌwazeũ** 295; **khʌwazoz** 184, 205; **khʌwazwʌi** 99; **khiaz-** 290
khazjaz 34
khaztir 94, 99, 128, 213, 217, 228-30, 261, 284
khazni 76
khazlez 304
khãzciz 32
khiaz- *see under* **khaz**
khirkijaz 29
khisiazb 90; **khisijazi** 96
khizsaz 207
khez-, -u 61; **-eu** 83; **-ez** 82; **-oz** 258; **-wʌtị** 287; **-waz** 287; **kheutiz** 287
khezt 34, 71, 96, 109, 226
khezdị 128
khezl 324; **-ʌtị** 113; **-ʌb** 59; **-tiz** 254
khoɲcaz 44, 87
khopʌriz 221
khoz- 73
khozlʌb 31
khwazʃ 254

g

gʌ- 251-2; **-i** 112, 127, 140, 162, 169, 184, 250, 252, 311, 327-8, 330-1; **-iu** 249; **-iũ** 248-9; **-in** 248, 250; **-iz** 248-9, 252; **-ĩz** 78, 99, 112, 248-9, 251;

-eu 248-9, 270; -eũ 248-9, 261, 278; -en 248; -ez 72, 83, 248, 252, 333; -jeu 169; -jeũ 162, 279; -jen 162, 249; -jez 141, 198, 204; -waz 94, 169, 184, 248, 252, 261, 278-9
gʌiaz 111, 126; gʌijʌn 129
gʌuz 83
gʌijʌi 331
gʌunʌiz 130, 205
gʌgəraz 308; gʌgʌraz 114; gʌgəriz (-i) 99, 114, 140; gʌgʌriz 114
gʌŋɖaz 37
gʌnʌb 45
gʌndßi 118
gʌrijazwʌi 217
gʌrizb 34
gʌruz 64, 308, 315, 319; -uʌi 319; -uʌu 315
gʌl 103
gʌlti 331
gʌlphʌr 88
gʌßir 56, 66
gÃu 109
gÃwazr 48, 50
gaz 34, 65, 72, 97, 112, 126, 131, 162, 169, 220, 252, 254, 274, 278, 299, 316, 320; gen 131; gez 96, 126, 129, 131-2, 143, 198, 230, 252, 254, 322
gazi 67, 109, 111-2, 126, 129, 178, 226; -n 178; -iz 126-7, 129
gazoz 130; gʌwazoz 205
gazbßiniˌ 42
gazʈiz 119
gazʈßi 52
gãzu 34, 69, 91, 97, 116, 129, 204, 230 311, 315, 319, 322-3; -i 319; gãzũ 109, 130, 134; -wʌi 131, 278-9, 319; -wʌu 315; -wʌn 128, 130
gãzʈhiˌ 30, 37, 77
gir-, -iu 317; -in 321; -iˌ 143, 278, 317, 321-2; -ĩz 224; -ez 127
giroßʌn 66
gilazs 299
gizdßi 39
gizliˌ 76, 139-40
guʃʌr 36; -ʌb 70
guɲcazlizs 155
gudʌr-, -ʌb 232; -iˌ 99
guðar 36
gun 155; -az 155
guntizs 155
gunzizs 155
gumazn 34
gurur 113, 331; -uazinˌ 113
guʈʌwaz 114; guʈijaz 114
gulgulaz 329; -wazliz 99
gusraz (-ʌ) 99, 328
guz 109
genʌwaz 79

gɛɪrʌfl 57; **gerʌflʌwãɪ** 153; **gerʌflĩɪ** 153; **gɛɪrɑɪ** 34, 72, 146, 153, 155
gɛɪruɪ 71
gẽɪd 29, 78-9, 114
gopɑɪl 289, 293; **gopʌilɛ** 117; **gopale** 117
gorəflʌr 145
goflɑɪri 330
gõʈhibɑɪ 78
goɪphɑɪ 41, 74
goɪbʌr 328
goɪbflɪɪ 30
goɪr 73, 141, 144-5; **-e** 141
goɪʈ 49, 52
goɪflũɪ (**-ũ**) 29, 89, 70, 78; 89
gjɑɪn 34
gjɑɪrrʌfl 146; **gjɑɪrrɑɪ** 146
see also **gɛɪrʌfl**

gh

gflʌn 103
gflʌr 103, 126, 128, 134, 198, 210, 216-7, 273, 314, 316, 319-20, 330; **-ʌi** 131, 319-20; **-ʌu** 314, 316; **-ʌfluɪ** 314, 316; **ʌflɛɪ** (**e**) 319-20; **-ʌflẽ** 216; **-u** 112, 126, 299; **-ɛɪ** 131
gflʌrijɑɪ 94
gflʌʈɑɪ 293
gflʌʈiɪ 103
gflʌl 103
gflʌliɪ 103
gflɑɪrgfl 31, 109
gflɑɪn 35
gflɑɪm-, -e (m) 132
gflɑɪs 80
gflãɪs 80
gfliu 34, 66, 68-9, 82, 109
gflĩɪc 35
gfluiɪ 83
gflunɑɪ 91
gflũiɑɪ 84
gfluɪm-, -en 128, 322
gflũɪgfluʈu 330
gflerÃudɑɪ 31
gflẽgflʌrijɑɪ 31
gflẽʈuɑɪ 35, 78
gfloɪr-, -isu̯ 330
gfloɪʈɑɪ (**-ʌ**) 60, 89, 109, 111, 127, 216, 324, 329; **-ʌunɑɪ** 111; **gfloʈʌwɑɪ** 110-11, 127; **gfloɪʈãɪ** 135; **gfloɪʈõɪ** 135; **gfloʈiʌuɪ** 111-2; **gfloʈiʌwɑɪ** 111-2

c

cʌin 280
cʌilɪɪ 58
cʌuʌn 149
cʌuɑɪlis 148
cʌuk 154
caugunɑɪ 155
cʌuth 37, 153, 156; **-i** 154
caudɑɪ 147
cʌubis 147; **cʌuɪbis** 147
cʌurɑɪrnbeɪ 151
cʌurɑɪsiɪ 150
cʌufluɪrʌru̯ 149
cʌkʌwɑɪ 65

cʌkiaɪ 35
cʌkɪuɪ 154
cʌʈaɪiɪ 332
cʌʈ-,-ibaɪ 33, 62
cʌʈoɪr 60, 73
cʌʈkʌiɪ 302-3
cʌnaɪ 32, 65; -ʌu 103
cʌndʌn 79; cʌnɪʌn 79
cʌmaɪr 48, 50; -inį̊ 92
cʌr-,-ʌtį̊ 287; -ti 226, 287;
cʌʈʃi-,-i 329
cʌl- 310, 327, 329; -ʌu 82, 90, 94, 103; -ʌb 299; -aɪ 94, 96, 140, 250, 299; -aɪoɪ 128; -į̊ 94; -iɪ 284, 293; -eũ 260; -eɪ 322, 328, 333; -ɛ̃ɪ 198; -deɪtiũ 273
cʌʃi-,-ʌi 198, 310-11; -ʌb 300, 311; -iʌtį̊ 247, 300; -iɪ 204, 293
cʌʃiʌi 198, 311;—...cʌʃiʌi 310; -ɟʌiseɪ 308; -ɟʌb 308; -ɟʌʃiɑ̃ɪ 308
cÃũtis 148
cÃũsʌʈhį̊ 149
caɪʈ-, -ʌtį̊ 62; -ʌb 323; -ʌb cuɪʈʌb 323; -aɪ 78
caɪr 146, 152; -į̊ 97, 126, 146, 152, 299; -iu 220, 250
caɪl 49, 110, 324
caɪlʌtį̊ 86
caɪlis 52, 148; caɪlisɪ 148
caɪʃi-, -ʌu 310; -ʌb 311; -ʌj 310-11
cɑ̃ɪʈaɪ 78
cɑ̃ɪdiɪ 39; caɪniɪ 39
ciʈɪhiɪ 299, 322
ciraijaɪ 113; -ʌn 128
cir-,-ʌtį̊ 293
cilʌm 43
cilɪaɪ-,-waɪ 295
ciɪkʌn 33, 140
ciɪɟ 139
ciɪnʃi 46
cuʌi 35
cuk, -ʌb 299; -eɪ 279; -ʌũ 299
cuɪnaɪ 70
cuɪmʌb 46
coʈɪaɪ 32
coɾəwaɪ 129; -ʌi 129
coraɪ-, -inį̊ 330; -eu 198; -jeu 330; -wʌtį̊ 127
coɪr 97, 216
coɪriɪ 198, 311
cõɪc 74
cɔdʌʃi 147
cɔbiɪs 147
cɔraɪnveɪ 151
cɔraɪsiɪ 150
cɔwʌn 149
cɔwaɪlis 148
cɔʃiʌtɪʌr 149
cɔ̃tiɪs 148
cɔ̃sʌʈh 149

ch

chʌkaɪ 154
chʌgəriɪ 32, 127

chʌʈɪhaɪ 153, 156; chʌʈhʌwãɪ 153; chʌʈhʌĩɪ 153
chʌʈhi 154
chʌtɪis 148; chʌtɪiɪs 148
chʌpɪʌn 99, 149, 258
cintaɪ (-ʌ) 331
chʌpkijaɪ 113, 118
chʌbɪis 42, 147; chʌbɪiɪs 147
chʌrɪaɪ 128
chʌʈiɪ 140
chaɪ 35, 146, 322; -k 154
chʌcɪhaɪ 154
chaɪnbeɪ 151
chʌɪsʌʈhi̯ 149; chãɪchʌʈhi̯ 149
chãɪʈ-, ʌb 32; -i̯ 274, 299
chãɪʈ-,-i̯ 198
chin 66, 310
chinaɪɾi̯ 46
chijaɪnveɪ 151
chijaɪlis 66, 148; chijaɪliɪs 148; chijãɪlis 148
chijaɪsʌʈh 149
chijaɪsiɪ 66, 150
chiflʌtɪʌɾi̯ 66
chiɪn-,-i̯ 329
chunʌu 103
chuɪ 287, 322; -tiɪ 287
chuɪɾaɪ 70
chũɪch 32
chedaɪm 60
chefi 146 *see* chaɪ; cheɪ 146
chefiʌtɪʌr 150
chefiʌtɪʌɾi̯ 150
cheɪnɪɪ 35
cheɪmiɪ 79
chẽɪd 72
choʈkʌuɪ 89; choʈɔkʌuɪ 89; choʈɔkiɪ 154
choɪʈ 139, 141, 154, 328; -i̯ 139
choɪʈi̯ 140

J

ȷʌi 109, 118, 184, 210; ȷʌj 116
ȷʌiʌti̯ and other derivatives of ȷaɪ-, *see under* ȷaɪ-
ȷʌis 190, 209-10; -i̯ 308; -iɪ 304; -en. . . tʌisen 307; -eɪ 99, 301, 306, 322
ȷʌu 311
ȷʌun 32, 131, 189-91; -i̯ 190; -iɪ 190; -u̯ 320; -ui 319
ȷʌgʌtɔ 258
ȷʌgaɪ-,-i 311
ȷʌtʌn 38
ȷʌtʌniɪ 331; ȷʌtʌreɪ 302
ȷʌnʌu 311
ȷʌnʌfiʌr 285; -iɪ 285
ȷʌnaɪ 115, 131, 135; -eɪ 72, 94-6, 115, 131, 135, 145, 154, 310, 322
ȷʌnaɪ-, -ti̯ 295; -tiɪ 293
ȷʌneɪu 72
ȷʌnwaɪseɪ 132
ȷʌb 60, 94, 96, 260, 265, 294, 299, 302, 317, 321-2; -tʌb 308; -ʌfiin 321;

-ʌfiix 321; -ʌfiũx 317; -ʌfiẽx 321; -xʌu 317; -ʌj 302; -fiʌen 321; -fiʌj 302
ɟʌbʌrɟʌstix 128
ɟʌbaxb 3
ɟʌmax 36; -u 113
ɟʌmunax 118
ɟʌmunix 41, 118
ɟʌr-, -ʌi 36; -ị 112; 299; -ĩx 321
ɟʌlex 279, 302-3;—... tʌlex 302
ɟʌldix 293, 301-2, 308, 317; -iu 317; -in 321
ɟʌwʌn 190; -kuchụ 207; ɟʌwnix 190; *see* ɟʌun
ɟʌs 209;—... tʌs 306
ɟʌfiʌr 330
ɟʌfiãx 304-5, 322; -ʌ̃... tahʌ̃ 308
ɟax-, -i 59, 83, 210, 251, 268, 281, 284, 322, 329-31; -itị 85; -ib 28; -ijex 199; -u 83, 199, 322; -ũ 258, 311; -eu 270; -tax 6; tị 76, 85, 96-7, 126, 254, 273, 275, 288, 295; -tiu 254, 295; -tiũ 273; -tix 126, 288; -tu 6; -n 284; -b 290, 294, 299, 329; -bụ 283; ɟʌ-, -iʌtị 247; -ibax 310, 331; -ibex 284; -ifiʌĩ 190, 294; -ifiʌu 308; -wʌijax 286; *also see* ɟʌnʌfiʌr
ɟaxg-, -ʌu 258; -ị 299
ɟaxdax 144, 327
ɟaxn-,-ʌi 45; -ʌt 207; -ax 270; -ị 294; -itị 274; -ix 312; -eu 324; -ex 250; ɟʌnteo 274
ɟaxr-, -ʌu 126
ɟãxgfi 32
ɟi-,-ʌu 83; -ʌũ 198; -ʌtị 85, 220; -ax 82; -itị 287; -ex 82; -ixtix 287; -ixfiʌũ 287, 327
ɟiu 109, 134
ɟindʌgix 140
ɟix 116, 134, 189, 190-1, 261, 302, 304, 311; sʌb 206; ɟin 189-90, 308-9; ɟinfi 189-90; ɟinfiʌi 190; ɟen 190; ɟenfi 190; ɟjʌnfi 190; ɟjʌfii 190
ɟixt 119
ɟixt-, -ʌu 127, -ʌnax 98; -ʌb 323; -ʌb ɟaxtʌb 323
ɟixbfi 30, 35, 42, 110
ɟuãx 36, 78
ɟulum 36
ɟũax 69, 78
ɟux 293
ɟuxtax 95, 258; -ʌn 128
ɟuxn 302-3
ɟuxʈ 140-1; -ix 140; -ex 141
ɟeʈhaxnix 114
ɟetʌnax 209-10; -rax 210; -rex 210; ɟetxax 209; ɟetxix 210; ɟetxex 210

ɟen ɟenʃi *see* ɟix
ɟeʃʌr 304
ɟeʃi 189-90, 311
ɟex 6, 190-91, 311, -keux 207
ɟexʈh 36, 114, 141
ɟonʃʌijax 40, 46; ɟõdʃʌijax 40, 72
ɟox 6, 127, 189-91, 254, 258, 320, 322; -koxix 206; -koxux 207; -tʌu 311
ɟoxt 73
ɟoxbʌn 36
ɟoxr 299, 324
ɟjʌnʃi, ɟjʌʃi *see* ɟix

ɟʃ

ɟʃʌʈ 36; -xo 307, 328, 330
ɟʃʌr-, -ʌtį 330; -ex 128
ɟʃʌlorax 32
ɟʃãxɟʃ 32, 109
ɟʃãxp-, -ʌi 92; -į 329
ɟʃĩgowax 77; ɟʃĩxgax 32
ɟʃothʌrį 250

t

tʌʈuax 29
tʌpkax 261, 330
tʌrkʌi 273
tãxg 30, 36
tipʌn 154
tuxʈ- 70; -ʌi 36
texm 37, 72, 302
tẽxu 29
toxpix 40
toxbʃi 80

ʈh

ʈhʌĩ 152, 155
ʈhaĩʈhax 96
ʈhʌur 31, 152, 155
ʈhʌkurowax 129; ʈhʌkurwʌi 129
ʈhʌg 39; -ʌunax 328; -ʌn 329
ʈhʌɳɖ 29; -ʃi 38, 44, 109, 140
ʈhʌɳɖʃiaxix 31
ʈhʌʈʃijaxwʌb 31
ʈhaxkur 37, 103; *see* ʈhʌkurowax
ʈhaxʈh 109
ʈhaxʈʃi 97, 139; -į 67; -ex 67
ʈhix 152, 155
ʈhixʃiax 68
ʈhexʈh 37
ʈhoxs 54

ɖ

ɖʌgʌr 128
ɖʌɳɖax (-ʌ) 105, 127, 224
ɖʌren 131, 135
ɖaxkux 130, 294; ɖʌkuax 130; ɖʌkuʌn 130
ɖaxr- 37; -ʌu 126; -ʌb 299; -į 97, 99, 328; -inį 250; -isį 299; -ix 330; -eũ 328; ɖaxi 281; ɖʌribax 97
ɖãxʈʌb 36
ɖãxʈ 51

ɖɑ̃ɪʈaɪ 37
dɑ̃ɪʈɻ 131
ɖɑ̃ɪs 37
ɖiʌʈ̥i 48, 66 ; ɖijʌʈ̥i 48
ɖibɪiɪ 110
ɖeuʈʃ 155 ; -eɪ 29
ɖebijaɪ 29, 110
ɖeraɪi 96-7
ɖeʃʌriaɪ (-ʌ) 99 ; -jaɪ (-ʌ) 92, 328
ɖeɪʈʃ 37, 72, 155 *see* ɖeuʈʃ
ɖõɪgiɪ 37
ɖoɪraɪ 37
doɪlɻ 86

ɖʃ

ɖʃʌkuliɪ 38
ɖʃiɪʈh 38
ɖʃɯ̃ɪr-,-ʌi 284 ; -ʌtʲ̥i 96
ɖʃɯ̃ɪʈʃʌ 38
ɖʃeɪr 38, 97
ɖʃoɪaɪ 83 ; ɖʃoɪwaɪ 31, 38, 287
ɖʃoɪl 38, 295 ; -ʌk 31, 103
ɖʃõɪg 74

t

tʌ 89, 327 ; tə 311
tʌi 210
tʌis 190, 209 ; -i̯ 308 ; -iɪ 304 ; -eɪ 99
tʌɪ̃ 170, 229, 234 ; tɪ̃j 169
tʌu 83, 89-90, 94, 99, 127, 154, 198, 258, 261, 265, 273, 280, 286, 299, 311, 327-30
tʌun 180, 189-90, 311 ; -iɪ 190
tʌk 308 ; -ɻ 308
tʌnaɪ 98, 230, 306-7, 327
tʌni 307-9 ; -k 307 ; -kʌi 128
tʌb 96, 99-100, 139, 260, 265, 293-4, 302, 311, 317, 321, 329 ; -ʌʃin 321 ; -ʌʃɪ̃ɪ 321 ; -ʌʃɯ̃ɪ 317 ; -ʌʃɛ̃ɪ 321 ; -ɪʌu 317 ; -ʃʌi 302 ; -ʃʌjen 321
tʌmʌɲcaɪ 44
tʌmaɪcaɪ 258
tʌmaɪsaɪ 324
tʌrəwaɪrɻ̥ 89 ; tʌrwaɪrɻ̥ 89, 329 ; -iɪ 92
tʌraɪ 194, 230, 306-7
tʌreɪ 304-5
tʌrkhʌleɪ 304
tʌluk 308
tʌleɪ 279, 303
tʌlphʌtʲ̥i 30
tʌwʌn 190 ; -en 190 ; -eɪ 190 ; tʌwniɪ 190
tʌs 209
tʌʃi 99, 301, 329
tʌʃɑ̃ɪ 304 ; -ʌɯ̃ 317
tɐ̃boɪliɪ 41
taɪu 69
taɪk 29
taɪt 38
taɪr 311
tigunaɪ 155
tin 180, 189-90 ; -ʃ 189-90 ; -ʃʌi 190

tijãɪ 154; **tijaɪĩɪ** 154
tirʌkɪaɪ 154
tiraɪnbeɪ 151; **-veɪ** 151
tiraɪb 66
tiraɪsiɪ 150
tirɛɪpʌn 149
tirɛɪsʌʈh 149
tirchaɪ 32
tirtaɪlis 148, 155
tirpʌn 149
tirsʌʈhi̯ 149
tisʌraɪi(kə) 305
tisʌriɪ 305; **-kaɪ** 154; **-kiɪ** 154; **tiɪsʌr** 153, 156
tiflʌtɪʌr 149; **-i̯** 149
tiɪ 180, 189-90, 301, 304
tiɪɟ 68, 154
tiɪn 38, 94, 146; **-i̯** 28, 94, 146, 154
tiɪr 96, 128, 228
tiɪs 148
tum 120, 131-2, 169-70, 198, 210, 236, 247—50, 254, 258, 260-1, 265, 270, 273-4, 276-7, 279, 295, 299, 315, 320, 330-1; **sʌb** 206; **-ʌriɪ** 169, 327; **-ʌreɪ** 169; **-ʌfluɪ** 315; **-ʌfleɪ** 320; **-aɪr** 169-70, 215, 330; **-aɪri̯** 169; **-fi** 169; **-fiʌriɪ** 261; **-fiʌreɪ** 210; **-fiorɛɪ** 229; **-fiaɪrɛɪ** 331
turʌt 28; **turto** 69, 302-3
tufli 169; **-iɪ** 320; **-ĩɪ** 320; **-ũɪ** 315; *see* **toi** *and* **twʌi**
tuɪ 169; **tũɪ** 120, 169-70, 237, 250-1
te 327, 331
teufiaɪr 71
tetʌnaɪ 209-10
tetʌrɛɪ 210
tetɪaɪ 209; **-iɪ** 210; **-eɪ** 210
teɪ 180, 190, 207; **tenfi** 190
teɪis 72, 147; **teɪiɪs** 147
teɪɟ 72
teɪrʌfi 147; **-aɪ** 72, 147; **tjaɪraɪ** 147
teɪl 71
tẽɪtaɪlis 72, 148; **tẽɪtaɪliɪs** 148
tẽɪtis 72, 148; **tẽɪtiɪs** 148
toi 169; **tofiʌĩ(-ãj)** 169-70; **tofiorɛɪ** 229; **tofiaɪr** 169-70; **tofiuɪ** 315; **tofieɪ** 320; **tõfi** 170; **toɪ** 170; **toɪr** 6, 169-70, 215, 324; **toɪriɪ** 169; **toɪrɛɪ** 169; **teɪr-** 6; *see* **tufli, tuɪ** *and* **twʌi**
tõɪd 29, 109
tjʌfli 190
tjoɪ (from **hʌtjoɪ**) 254
twʌi 169-70; **-ĩ** 169-70, 237, 251; **twaɪr** 169; also *see* **toi**

th

thʌn 38
thʌpʌraɪ 51; **thʌpʌʈaɪ** 39; **thʌpɪʌʈ** 51

thʌbʌiz 109
thʌmfiʌraz 79; thʌ̃bfiʌraz 79; thʌ̃bhoraz 30
thʌrijaz 38
thazkul 103
thaznerdaxr 141
thazfi 56
thuzkᵩ 30; -u 80; thũzku 80
thuzthun 39
thozraz 139, 328; -iz 139; -ez 204

d

dʌur-, -ʌb 39; -ez 328; dʌwʌr 154
dʌndaz 103
dʌphez 154
dʌrosʌn 55
dʌrkhazs 152
dʌrwazjez(-e) 227
dʌrozgaz(-ʌ) 97
dʌs 60, 96, 146, 299
dʌsmiz 154
dʌsazwʌn 154, 229-30; dʌfiazĩz 154
dʌfiiu 39, 56, 66, 109
dazĩ 134-5, 154; -ũ 134, 154; dãzi 94, 131; dãzu 69, 127; dãzũ 109, 131, 154
dazgʌb 232
dazdaz 327; dʌddur 98
dazrᵩ 94-5
dãzt 38, 79
diaz(-ʌ) 95, 108
dikro 90
din 85, 96, 99, 154, 210, 281
difiazt 67
duazrez 131-2, 136, 226
dui 83; -u 315, 319; duiz 319; duez 319
duiȷ 154
dukazn 33, 227
dugun 155; -az 155
dunijaz (-ʌ) 331
dundiz 69
dundu 247
durijazi 142
dulʌfiaz 28; dulofiin 91, 99
dusʌrkaz 154; -iz 154
dufiʌu 126
duzdfi 39, 61; -ᵩ 54, 127, 294, 327; -u 229
duzn 70; -ʌu 310, 315, 329; -iz 154
duzbʌr 41, 295
duzr 305; -ᵩ 305
deukaz 69, 83
deutaz 69, 92
dewazriz 65, 71
dez 251-2, 285, 287; -ĩ 99, 328; -iz 3, 82, 99, 311, 328; -u 82, 95, 97, 126, 132, 141, 162, 190, 216, 284, 299, 310, 322, 329; -ũ 258; -tᵩ 288; -tiz 288; -b 299, 324; dʌi 282, 328; difiaz 94; difiin 311, 327; difiinᵩ 128-9, 329-30, difiis 3, 328;

difiisi̯ 28, 95, 127, 162; difieu 141-2, 258, 311; difieũ 169; difien 169; difiex 310; dixn 140, 199, 252, 328; dixnfi 57, 135, 252; dixnfiosi̯ 251; dewaxl 285; djaxfiʌi 265; djaxfiʌĩ 265; djaxfiʌu 265; djaxfiʌũ 265

dexkh- 268, 281; -ʌi 204, 257-8, 268, 284, 316, 320, 323; -ʌĩ 257-8; -ʌu 62, 257, 268-9, 316; -ʌũ 257; -ʌt 247, 272, 316-7, 320, 322; -ʌti̯ 98, 249, 257, 272, 274-7, 316, 320; -ʌn 257, 284; -ʌb 62, 162, 239, 257, 264, 268, 289, 316, 320; -ʌbu̯ 283; -ʌs 257, 268; -ax 248, 250, 260, 316, 320; -iu 316; -it 247; -iti̯ 247, 272, 274-6; -in 320; -ini̯ 248, 260, 278; -ib 264; -isi̯ 248-9, 260, 278, 280; -ifi 260; -i̯ 210, 281, 316; -ix 248, 257, 260, 264, 316, 320; -u 268; -ei 320; -eu 89, 248-9, 260, 269-70, 316; -eũ 92, 248-9, 260, 278, 316, 320; -en 132, 178, 248-51, 260, 278, 280, 320; -es 251; -efi 260; -efiũ 260; -ex 248, 250, 257, 260, 264, 270, 278-80, 295, 316, 320; -ẽx 259; -jax 257; -nax 270; dekh-, -ʌijax 285; -ʌtix 247; -ʌbʌi 320; -ətʌi 299, 320; -ətʌu 316-7; -ʌtiu 272, 274; -ətiũ 272, -ətin 272-3; -ətifi 272; -ətihĩ 272; -ətifiũ 272; -ətix 274-7; -ətĩx 272-3; -ətũ 272; -ətux 272; -əteu 272; -əten 89, 272; -ətex 272; -ətjax 272; -ətjix 272; -ətjen 272-3; -ətjehũ 272; -ətjẽfi 272; -əbʌi 264; -əbex 264; -axini̯ 330; -axeũ 294; -axti 294; -axti̯ 95, 293; -axwʌti̯ 294; -axwʌb 289; -axwax 250; -iʌi 257; -ibʌi 320; -ibʌu 316; -ibax 59, 62, 264, 316, 320; -ibex 264, 284; -ifiʌi 264; -ifiʌĩ 264; -ifiʌu 264-5; -ifies 264; -ifiẽx 264

dexr 302-3

dẽxfi 54

dosʌraxi (ko) 305; dosəraxi 61

dosʌrix 305

dox 146

doxkhu̯ 34

doznaz 39
dozsʌr 153, 156

dß

dßʌurʌb 39
dßʌũ 78, 311
dßʌn 204
dßʌr- , -i 281; -i̯ 94, 329; -iz 95, 250; -ez 98, 258; -ti 127; -ti̯ 322; -ʌi 281; -ʌe 127
dßʌrʌm 51
dßazn 30, 39
dßijaz 39; dßiz 39
dßizmez 307
dßizrez 31, 307
dßũazraz 128
dßuzm 40
dßezlaz 59
dßoz-; -ʌnu̯ 83; -i 126; -eu 84; -ez 83; -oz 83; -wʌti̯ 287; -wʌb 324; -woz 258; dßo- , -utiz 287; -unaz 83; -waziz 30
dßozkhaz 258
dßoztiz 274
dßozbiz 109, 111-2, 315, 319; -iu 315; -in 319; dßobiʌwaz 111

n

nʌ 310, 327-8; -ßin 308; -ßĩ 284; -ßiz 308; -ßĩz 199, 274; no 126, 128, 141, 204-5, 247
nʌinuz 45, 70, 109
nʌiz 83
nʌu 146, 315, 319; -i 319; -wʌi 319
nʌumiz 154
nʌkhʌt 45, 63
nʌgic 305; nʌgizcez 305; nʌjik 305
nʌdziz 89, 91, 109-11, 130
nʌbzez 150, 315, 319; -ei 319; -eu 315; nʌvzez 150
nʌrʌũ 302-3
nʌriʌr 45, 64-5, 110-11, 130, 154, 216, 315
nʌwazsiz 150
nʌwãz 154
nʌß 56, 110, 128
nʌßaz- 57; -b 45, 324
naz 308; -i 99, 310, 324; -i tʌu 310; -iz 98-9, 127, 205, 210, 260, 274, 293, 295, 299, 300, 308, 327; -j 308; -ßĩ 311; -ßĩ tʌu 310; -ßĩz 247, 308
naz-, -oz 258; -wʌti̯ 287; -waz 287; nʌutiz 287
nazu 109, 116, 118
nazuz 61, 65, 70, 83, 109-11, 113, 130; -un 130; -uni̯ 110, 113; nʌunijaz 110; nʌuwaz 65, 95, 111; nʌuwʌu 95
nazũ 130, 134, 331; -ĩ 134-5; nãzi 131; nãzu 69; nãzũ 109, 111, 131;

nʌ̃ũwaɪ 111 ; nãɪʷʌn 130
naɪgfl- , -ʌb 46 ; nãɪgflʌi 35 ; nãɪghʌb 31
naɪc 32, 324 ; -ʌi 95
naɪt 43
naɪth 109
naɪp 28, 110
naɪraɪ 91
nikʌr- , -ʌu 132 ; -i̯ 132 ; -eɪ 331 ; nikaɪr- , -ʌi 331 ; -isi̯ 329
nikʌs- , -ĩɪ 331
nikəflaɪ *see* nɪrk
nit 302
ninɪaɪnʌjeɪ 151; ninɪaɪnbeɪ 151; ninɪjaɪnveɪ 151
niflaɪr 281 ; -ʌi 56 ; -ʌb 64
niflureɪ 307
nɪrk 29, 138-41, 145, 284, 308 ; -ə 129 ; -iu 315 ; -in 319; -i̯ 138-9, 315-6; nikəflaɪ 3
nĩɪd 108-9
neiaɪ 84, 87 ; neijaɪ 71, 87
neuraɪ 43, 69, 71, 113
newaɪʃʌb 232
newaɪri̯ 71
nẽgulaɪ 46
neɪreɪ 72, 305
noɪk 109
noɪn 46

p

pʌi 227 ; -j 227
pʌiʈhi 251
pʌin 28, 128
pʌinflʌb 79 ; pʌĩdflʌb 79
pʌisaɪ 324
pʌuaɪ 87, -waɪ 87, 155
pʌun 155
pʌuʈfli̯ 311
pʌusʌraɪ 50
pʌkʌr-, -eũ 330-1 ; -en 330 ; -ti 127
pʌgʌflaɪ 92
pʌgolaɪ 299
pʌcaɪs 54, 96, 149, 315 ; -ʌn 315
pʌcaɪsiɪ 150; picɪjaɪsiɪ 150
pʌciɪs 91, 96, 147 ; pʌcɪiɪs 147
pʌceɪ 154 ; pʌɲceɪ 154 ; pʌɲʃeɪ 154
pʌchʌtɪʌri̯ 150 ; pichʌtɪʌr 150
pʌchpʌn 149 ; pʌɲcaɪwʌn 149
pʌchwãɪ 305
pʌɲc 115, 119-20 ; -ʌn 115
pʌɲcaɪnbeɪ 151 ; pʌc- 151 ; picɪjaɪnveɪ 151
pʌɲcimiɪ 154
pʌɲchaɪ 44
pʌɲʃaɪ 44
pʌʈhʌwʌb 290
pʌɳdaɪ 37
pʌɳdit 114 ; -aɪini̯ 114
pʌtɪaɪ 33
pʌturijaɪ 28

pʌtoɪfl̃ 56, 73
pʌthəriɪ 58
pʌnaɪrʌn 128
pʌnthiɪ 43
pʌndʌraɪ 147; -pʌndrʌfl̃ 147
pʌnsɛrriɪ 79; pʌsɛrriɪ 79
pʌnɪaɪ (-ʌ) 299
pʌr 128, 226, 273, 279, 328; -ifl̃ãɪ 226
pʌr-, -ʌi 294, 311; -ʌb 294, 299; -aɪ 131, 299, 317, 321; -ti 322
pʌrʌũ 302-3
pʌraɪt 28
pʌraɪr 204-5, 215; -iɪ 204; -ɛɪ 204
pʌrɛɪwaɪ 72
pʌroɪʃʌnɳ 204
pʌroɪsiɪ 68, 73
pʌrkaɪl 99, 258
pʌrdɛɪs 329
pʌrbiɪ 42
pʌʈaɪiniˌ 114
pʌʃfl̃-, -ʌi 52, 284, 311; -ʌijaɪ 286; -ʌtiˌ 300; -aɪ 248; -iniˌ 248; -ibaɪ 265; -isiˌ 248; -iɪ 248, 322; -eu 248; -eũ 248; -en 248; -ɛɪ 248, 280
pʌlokaɪ 29; pʌlkaɪ 52, 88; pʌlkijaɪ 130
pʌlɪaɪ 305; -ɛɪ 305
pʌlfl̃aɪ-, -wʌi 53; -wʌb 49, 57
pʌsʌr- 40; pʌsaɪrʌi 290
pʌsijaɪ 54
pʌsuriɪ 55
pʌfl̃iɑ̃ɪ 221
pʌfl̃icaɪn-, -ʌi 56; pɑ̃fl̃i-caɪniˌ 32
pʌfl̃iniˌ 94; pʌfl̃iriˌ 94
pʌfl̃il 140, 153, 156; -ɛɪ 301-3, 330
pʌfl̃unaɪ 69
pʌfl̃ũc-, -ʌu 229; -iˌ 95; -iˌ ʃaɪũ 95; -iˌ ʃaɪtiũ (pʌfl̃uɲʃaɪtiũ) 273
pɑ̃itaɪlis 148; pɑ̃̃taɪlisɪs 148
pɑ̃itis 148; pɑ̃̃tisɪs 148
pɑ̃ĩsʌʈhiˌ 149; pɑ̃̃sʌʈh 149
pɑ̃cʌwɑ̃ɪ 153; pɑ̃cʌĩɪ 153
po 226, 329
paɪu 131, 155
paɪk 33; -ɳ 95
paɪchɛɪ 32, 59, 302, 305
paɪtʌr 139-41; -iˌ 139, 141
paɪtaɪ 28, 33, 127-8, 322; -iɪ 32, 40, 78
paɪthʌr 30, 39
paɪdiɪ 32
paɪniɪ 94, 109, 116, 140, 284, 289, 299, 331
paɪr 314, 319; saɪl 302; -ʌi 319; -ʌu 314; -ʌfl̃uɪ 314; -ʌfl̃ɛɪ 319
paɪlkiɪ 130
paɪw-, -ʌb 299; -aɪ 250; paɪiɪ 2, 131, 190, 250; pʌifl̃ʌũ 299

pãzu 129; -i 129; pazĩ 135
pãzkhiz 34
pãzc 32, 97, 115, 120,146, 153-4, 179; -o 97; -chaz (pazɲchaz) 95; -ʈhʌur (pazɳʈhʌur) 152; 95; -sazt (pazɳsazt) 95
pãzɟʌr 36
pãztiz 78
pãzʈez 109, 114, 116, 130, 315, 319; -ei 319; -eu, 315, -en 130, 319
pãzsi̯ 67
pi-, -ʌi 294; -ʌu 327; -ʌb 324; -azisi̯ 331; -azs 48; -iz 82; -jʌwazini̯ 290; -ini̯ 198; -jazini̯ 289; jazs 48; -jazsʌn 131; jazsen 131; -jazsez 327; piz 94, 299; -pizfiʌũ 327
piʌr 293; -azb 293; -eu 315; -en 319; -ez 315, 319
piʈh 33
piɳɖiz 87
pijaz 40
pirazb 66
pilowaz 59
pisazn 91, 140
pĩɟʌraz 66
pizʈisi̯ 128
pizʈh 33
pizʈhaz 68
pizpʌr 28
pizseũ 58
puaz 48, puwaz 48
punzi 45
purʌnifiaz 3, 143
purʌwaz (-ʌ) 329
purijaz 51, 330
puzch 40, 70; -ʌti̯ 261
puzt 330-1; -u̯ 38
puzs 55
pezʈ 36, 40, 109, 111; -u̯ 284; peʈʌwaz 111
pezlʌi 52
pozi 59, 73
pozt 74
pozthaz 65, 74, 119
pozthiz 119
põzchʌi 35

ph

phʌŋgez 44
phʌrofiʌr 56
phʌrikaz 30
phʌrez 50
phʌrẽzdaz 42, 118
phʌrzaz 51
phʌl 40
phÃ̃sazwʌb 77
phazgun 40
phãzd- 40
phin 302-3
phir 302; -i̯ 210, 330
phirazk 220
phun 302-3
phurtiz 302-3
phulʌuriz 49
phuzʈ 40; -i̯ 295
phuzlʌn 128

phũɪkʌb 62 ; phũkibaɪ 62
pheɪɪaɪ 154
phẽɪʈaɪ 41
phoɪɪʌb 30

b

bʌiʈh- 41, 131, 251, 260 ; -ʌu 210, 310 ; -ʌb 289, 299 ; -aɪɪʌb 289 ; -aɪɪisi̯ 328 ; -i̯ 251, 310 ; -iɪ 251 ; -eũ 260, 299 ; -ɛɪ 251, 279
bʌib 110
bʌisʌwãɪ 153 ; bʌisʌĩɪ 153
bʌunʌu 315
bʌur 41, 64
bʌuraɪ 63
bʌkoraɪ 113, 119, 127 ; -iɪ 113, 119
bʌkiɪ 311·2
bʌkucaɪ 33
bʌkhʌt 34, 273 ; -n̥ 284
bʌgiaɪ 128 ; -jaɪ 30
bʌgfiʌwaɪ 65
bʌchʌwaɪ 113, 119 ; bʌchijaɪ 113, 119
bʌjaɪɪ 129, 261 ; -ʌi 129, 275, 310, 331 ; -i̯ 41, 63, 109, 115
bʌjaɪ- , -wʌi 284 ; -wʌbn̥ 232, 283 ; -wʌn 284 ; -ɛɪ 273 ; -ʌi 300 ; -ʌibɛɪ 284
bʌʈuiɪ 140
bʌɳʈaɪ 45 ; -dfiaɪɪ 44
bʌnduɪkh 61
bʌɳɖaɪ 45
bʌtaɪ- , -ini̯ 94 ; -isi̯ 311, 330 ; -ub 264 ; -wʌũ 299 ; -wʌti̯ 144 ; -waɪ 250 ; -iaɪb 294 ; -uaɪb 294 ; -laɪb 294
bʌtaɪsaɪ 103 ; bʌtaɪchaɪ 103
bʌtɪis 148 ; bʌtɪiɪs 148
bʌdi̯ 229
bʌn 198, 333
bʌnaɪ- , -i 330 ; -taɪ 332 ; -wʌi 99, 258 ; -wʌb 43, 63 ; bʌnʌub 63 ; -iɪ 95
bʌniʒ 36
bʌnijaɪ 113 ; bʌninˌi̯ 113
bʌnsiɪ 43
bʌpɪaɪ 85, 98
bʌbɪuɪ 98
bʌmbaɪ 87
bʌjaɪlis 148 ; bʌiaɪlisɪ 148
bʌjaɪsiɪ 150
bʌraɪt 65, 132
bʌrɛɪ 229
bʌroɪʈh 60
bʌrɔmfiaɪ 44 ; bʌrmfiaɪ 88
bʌrɔsʌi 129 ; bʌrs (bʌrʌs) 114 ; 129 ; bʌrsiɪ 87 ; bʌrsʌi 99
bʌrchiɪ 85
bʌrti 87
bʌrdfiu 112
bʌrphiɪ 87

bʌrwʌʈ 87
bʌrs- , -ʌb 55; -ʌi 284
bʌɽʌk- , -ax 143; -ix 143; -ijax 143; -wax 143; -rax 143; -rix 143; bʌɽkax 33
bʌɽax 33, 112, 139-41, 143, 154, 328; -ix 112, 139-41, 143, 154; -ex 61-2, 101, 141, 143-4, 328
bʌli 258
bʌldix 88
bʌs 85
bʌs- , -ʌb 55
bʌsto 139
bʌstix 88
bʌflʌtxʌr 149; -i̯ 149
bʌflʌtrix 88
bʌflaxi 141
bʌfliɲi̯ 42, 63, 66-7, 91
bʌfliriz 304
bʌfliut 96, 113, 139, 144, 198, 327
bʌflur- , -ʌĩ 92, 99; -ex 99
bʌflexrax 64
bʌ̃dʌrəwʌn 194
bˇdflax 79; bʌnflax 79
bʌ̃sphoxr 88
bax 234, 249, 279
baxi 67
baxis 60, 91, 147, 153; baxixs 147
baxgfi 35; -u̯ 41, 65
baxʈ- , -ʌi 6, 234, 238, 249; -ʌ̃j 234; -ex 36; -en 234-5
baxʈfi 109; -ʌi 52; -i̯ 49
baxlix 52
baxlʈix 86, 88, 308
baxwʌn 149
baxsʌʈh 149; -i̯ 149
baxsxaxfi 220
baxsu 118
baxfier 304-5
baxʄix 154
baxt 118, 128, 132, 254, 281, 294, 324, 330
baxdʌr 224; -u̯ 29
baxdi̯ 95, 139, 302-3
baxdfi 109
baxnʌbex 151; baxnxʌbex 151; baxnxʌjex 151; baxnbex 151; baxnvex 151
baxp 28, 95, 329
baxph 30, 41, 110
baxbux 98
baxmfiʌn 41-2, 47, 64, 79; bʌ̃xbfiʌn 42, 79; bʌmfiʌnʌn 128
baxr 111, 154
baxr- , -ʌi 319; -ʌu 126; -ʌti̯ 86; -ti 86
baxrʌfi 147; baxrax 41, 50, 65, 99, 147, 300, 315, 319; baxrʌi 319; baxrʌu 315
baxrax 135; -ex 135
baxrux 70, 109, 116; -ui 319; bʌruʌu 315
baxʈ- , -ʌj 238; -ex 6

bãɪkaɪ 33
bãɪʈ 281
bãɪʈi 3
bãɪdʌr 79
bãɪdfɬ 30; -ʌi 40; -ʌb 30, 323; -ʌb bũɪdfɬʌb 323; baɪnfɬʌi 40; -i̯ 95
bãɪs 110, 141
bãɪʃɬ 78, 110, 299
bəd 60
biaɪ 66
biaɪfɬ 254; bijaɪflex 132
bigaɪr-, -i̯ 129; -eu 322
bixchix 68
biʈijaɪ 28, 66, 220; -ʌn 141
bithaɪ 67
bidfɬi 213, 230, 306
bintix 45
biɪʌwaɪ (-ʌ) 51, 127, 229, 333; -ʌn 128; biɪəwaɪ 96, 143, 226
biɪʌfɬaɪ 274
birkulɪi 307
bilʌijaɪ 110; bilɪix 110
bilaɪɪix 51, 53
bisʌr- 41; -ʌb 55
bixtaɪ 68
bixn 67, 322
bixs 58, 147, 152, 315; -ʌk 315; -ʌn 315; -ix 152
buaɪ 83
bundaɪ 43, 47
buraɪ 198
buɪʃɬ- 41; -ʌi 36; buʃɬaɪb 293
buɪt 114; -aɪ 114
buɪʈɬ 49, 52, 70, 139; -aɪ 111-2; -i̯ 139; -iɪ 139; buʈɬiaɪ 111; buʈɬijaɪ 113
bũɪd 70, 79; -iɪ 224; buɪn 79
beuɬaɪɪ 71
beʃhʌriɪ 99
beʈʌwaɪ 251
beraɪm 48
berijaɪ 154, 302
beɪnaɪ 72
beɪɪ 154
beɪl 52, 72
bẽwaɪiɪ 71
bẽɪʈ 71
bolaɪ-, -eu 194; -oɪ 143-4, 190; -wʌi 279; -wʌb 63; bʌlaɪwʌb 63; bʌlaɪwaɪ 250
boɪkaɪ 33
boɪl 324; -ʌi 286; -aɪ 300; -iɪ 327; -eu 299; -eɪ 100
bjaɪɪ 331
bwʌkoɪʌu 199

bɬ

bɬʌ- 251·2; -i 83, 128, 252, 281; -iɪ 252; -eu 270; -eɪ 252, 302; -waɪ 91, 252, 287; bhaɪ 139, 250, 252, 311; bɬeɪ 94, 252
bɬʌĩsaɪ 42; -i̯ 55, 126; -iɪ 126-7

bflʌuɟaxiz 68, -ɟʌijʌn 129
bflʌgʌt 64
bflʌʈhiaɪraɪ 114; bflʌʈhijaɪriṇ 114; bflʌʈhijaɪren 114
bflʌtəraɪ 140
bflʌne 312
bflʌbɪflʌr 42
bflʌr 199, 293; -ʌi 293; -ʌi waɪlaɪ 285; -ʌbṵ 284; -i 281; -ị 205, 231, 310, 328; -eɪ (e) 154, 230-1; -neɪwaɪlaɪ 286
bflʌrtaɪ 91
bflʌlaɪ 52, 198
bflʌwaɪniɪ (-i) 92, 258
bflÃɟʌb 32
bflÃʈijaɪ 92
bflaɪiɪ 30, 42, 91, 95, 139, 198, 250, 324, 328; -i 328; -j 250; bflʌiaɪ 84-5; bflʌijaɪ 102
bflaɪu 91, 109
bflaɪg-, -ʌu 268; -ʌtị 96; -ị 94, 327; -eɪ 113
bflaɪɟ- , -ị 94, 97
bflaɪʈhaɪ 42
bflaɪt 29, 109; -ṵ 94-5
bflaɪdʌũ 39
bflaɪriɪ 139, 315, 319; -iu 315; -in 319
bflãɪg 30
bflãɪʈaɪ 91
bflãɪʈaɪ 56
bfliɳḍiɪ 85
bflitʌr 331; -eɪ 304; bflitɪʌr 304; bfliɪtʌr 42, 68, 304-5
bflinʌfleɪ 90
bfliɪkh 42
bfliɪɟʌb 30
bfliɪtʌr *see* bflitʌr
bhiɪr 42, 113
bfluĩ 42, 69
bfluʈɪaɪ 85
bflurkaɪ 87
bflurɟiɪ 87
bfluɪkh 31, 109, 210; -ʌn 131; -en 131
bflẽɪʈiɪ 42, 49
bfloneflez 90
bfloɾəflẽɪ 61, 78, 90, 92
bfloɪɟʌn 99, 258
bfloɪrṵ 76

m

mʌi 128, 162-3, 198, 248-50, 257-8, 260-1, 265, 268, 273-5, 278-80, 295, 299, 308, 311, 315, 317, 320, 324, 327-8, 330; -ĩ 126-7; -fli 162-3, 330; -fliɪ 320; -fluɪ 315; -fleɪ 320; mʌj 162; mofli (mwʌfli) 163; mwʌflĩ 199
mʌinaɪ 113, 118
mʌiflãɪ 226-7
mʌukaɪ 273; -eɪ (e) 95
mʌut 38, 119

mʌur 64
mʌusiɾ 69, 114; -iaɾ 114
mʌcaɾ 328; -oɾ 247
mʌcheriɾ 35, 127
mʌɟaɾ 36; -eɾ 224
mʌɟuɾr 126
mʌɳʈhaɾ 31, 44
mʌɳɖiɾ 29, 44
mʌtlʌb 205; -u̯ 198, 284
mʌdʌrsʌi 131
mʌnʌiɾ 112, 141, 204, 261
mʌnʌu 311
mʌneɾ 311-2
mʌnsʌwaɾ 90
mʌnseɾdfiuɾ 90; mʌnseɾruɾ 90
mʌmaɾkhiɾ 35, 46
mʌr-, -ʌũ 198; -ʌb 239; -aɾ 248, 260, 278; -i 126, 169, 220; -iu 260, 278; -iũ 248, 260, 278; -in 248; -is 251; -i̯ 127, 129, 131, 162, 311, 322; -iɾ 248, 260, 278; -ĩɾ 248, 251, 260; -eu 248, 260, 278; -eũ 260, 278; -en 248, 260, 278; -eɾ 248, 260, 278
mʌrd 216
mʌɽʌi 3
mʌfiʌkʌti̯ 128
mʌfiʌ̃ 227; -iaɾ 213, 221; -ijãɾ 227
mʌfiotaɾriɾ 60, 95, 99, 258, 327, 330-1; mʌhtaɾriɾ 60
mʌfiotijaɾ 89; mʌhtijaɾ 89
mʌfiinaɾ 43
mʌfiuaɾ 56, 69
mʌ̃gʌtaɾ ((-ʌ) 127
mʌ̃ɟiɾraɾ 67
mʌ̃ɟfiilʌkiɾ 154
mʌ̃ɟfioɾlaɾ 32
mə 115, 127, 144, 154, 226, 247, 278, 294, 299, 302, 311, 323, 328-9
maɾ 134, 144-5, 210, 213, 227, 254, 311; -ãɾ 227
maɾiɾ 45-6, 79, 250
maɾkhʌn 46
maɾchiɾ 35
maɾʈiɾ 94, 140, 331
maɾtaɾ 331
maɾth 30; -eɾ 59, 131
maɾn-, -ʌti 287; -i̯ 46; -ti 287; mʌnətiu 89; mʌnətĩɾ 287; mʌntiu 89; mʌntĩɾ 287
maɾph 30
maɾr 324; -ʌu 141, 184, 205; -ʌb 299; -ʌti̯ 76; -aɾ 185; -in 162; -ini̯ 220; -ib 310; -isi 216; -isi̯ 162, 224; -i̯ 96-7, 258, 299, 323; -u 118; -u̯ 190; -eu 127; -eũ 127, 299; -eɾ 99, 131, 229, 294, 328; -ti 76, 127
maɾʈeu 96
maɾliɾ 68, 112-3, 116; 119; -ini̯ 113, 119

maɪlfi 110
maɪsaɪ 46, 55
maɪfi 56
mãɪgeu 126
mãɪɟfiil 154, 156
mãɪdaɪ 39; **-eɪ** 308
miaɪnaɪ 43
miʈhaɪiɪ 140, 265
miʈhaɪb 293
mircaɪ 59, 66
mil 273; **-ʌb** 299; **-aɪ** 299
miɪʈh 293
mĩɪɟeũ 32
mukhijaɪ 31
muɟfi 224
mudaɪ 311-2; **munaɪ** 311-2; **mulaɪ** 311-2
mudɪeɪ 229
muraɪuɪ 48
muſi 56, 69; **mũfieɪ** 131
muɪtʌb 324
muɪsʌrụ 51
mũɪg 78, 109
mũɪɟ 32
methʌuriɪ 30
mefiʌruaɪ 90, 112, 127-8, 141, 204-5, 221, 284, 308; **-ʌu** 130; **-ʌn** 205; **mefiəraɪrɪuɪ** 90, 139, **mefieɾʌruʌi** 130; **mefiaɪrɪuɪ** 140, **mefieruaɪ** 43; **mefiraɪrɪuɪ** 250; **mefiruaɪ** 112; **mẽdfiaɪruɪ** 90
mefiaɪb 56
meɪl 110
meɪlaɪ (-ʌ) 113
mofiəreɪ 229
moɪtiɪ 118
moɪm 43, 46, 110, 162, 299
moɪr 6, 162-3, 215; **-iɪ** 258; **-eɪ** 162; **mwaɪr** 163
moɪl 74
mõɪch 74

j

jʌ-, -i 185; **-n** 184; **-nfi** 184; **-fi** 184, 320; **-fiʌi** 320; **-fiʌĩ** 321; **-fiʌu** 315; **-fii** 184, 320; **-fiu** 47, 50, 184, 315, 328; **-fieɪ** 320; **jaɪ** 184, 251, 268, 293, 295, 303, 320, 327-9
jaɪk 146 *cf.* **eɪk**

r

rʌuãɪ 199; **-wãɪ** 199
rʌkʌt 64
rʌɟiaɪ *see* **raɪɟi̯**
rʌɲc 307
rʌɳḍiɪ 140
rʌsʌriɪ 55
rʌsɪaɪ 114; **-iɪ** 114
rʌsoriɪ 73
rʌstaɪ 88; **rʌfiʌtɪaɪ** 88
rʌfi-, -ʌi 96, 99, 127, 235, 247, 250-1, 275, 279, 300, 328; **-ʌĩ** 99, 113, 139, 194, 205, 235, 250, 275; **-ʌu** 235-6, 260-1, 275-6,

279; -ʌũ 235, 275, 278; -ʌtị 101; -ʌn 204, 235, 275; -ʌb 224, 290; -ʌwãɪ 235; -ʌsị 250; -ar 60, 94, 235-6, 300, 311, 322; -in 235; -is 235-6; -isị 235; -ị 230; -ir 140, 152, 235; -u 236, 276, 279, 328; -eu 235-6, 277; -eũ 235, 260; -en 235, 250-1; -er 141, 235-6, 277, 280, 331; -ẽr 250; -jar 235-6, 250
rÃfiʌʈar 56, 63
rarut 65
rarkhʌb 290
rarʃ 32
rarʃar (-ʌ) 36, 61, 96-7, 99, 101, 115, 126, 132, 141, 214, 250, 258, 315, 319, 327, 330; -ʌi 319; -ʌu 315; -ʌn 214
rarʃị 109, 111, 139; rʌʃiar 111
rart 250; -ị 50
rãɪʈ -ʌi 293
rãɪdfi -ʌi 40
rarnir 258, 327
rarb 110
rarm 60, 127, 141, 198, 311; -u 289; -ụ 85
rarrị 51
rarfi 110
risʌfiir 139
rirfi 49, 57, 110
rĩɪdfi -ʌb 48 *cf.* rãɪdfiʌi
rugus rugus 307
rupʌijar 152; rupʌjar 261, 293, 299, 310, 322, 324, 328
ruɪir 83
ruɪsʌi 85
rer 126
rerl 119
rogiñar 143
roʃke 117
roɪʃu 94-5, 99, 258
roɪʈir 99, 210, 279, 284, 299, 323, 328; urʈir 323
ror, -wʌi 198; -ubụ 284
rõɪwãɪ 48

l

lʌi (lʌj) 97, 229, 261, 274, 281-2, 308, 323, 329-31
lʌuʈ-ị 250
lʌũʈiar 127; -jar (-ʌ) 139, 143-4, 190, 194, 210, 220, 230; -jʌn 144
lʌkʌʈir 232, 293
lʌg- 308; -ari 330; -areu 198; -i 308; -er 217, 229; -wʌibar 92
lʌgircer 305
lʌʃarb 232
lʌɳɖ 29, 109
lʌmbar 43, 138, 140-1; -ir 139-41
lʌrikar (-ʌ) 92, 97, 99, 113, 127, 131, 139-41, 143-5, 152, 178, 184, 199, 210,

220, 284, 299, 331; -ʌi 129; -ʌn 128, 144, 178, 184-5; -ʌwaɪ 126, 194, 230; -inix 113, 140; baɪraɪ 131; baɪrex 131; lʌɽikix 327, 329; lʌɽkix 132; lʌɽkijãɪ 132
lʌɽaxix 128
lʌɽfiijaɪ 119
lʌfiʌr 294; -aɪb 294
lʌfiuraɪ 56
lʌ̃goɪʈ 73
laɪ 251; -iũ 261; -in 250; -eu 126, 308; -o 328; -oɪ 284; -waɪ 128
laɪkh 52, 151
laɪg 139, 251, 299; -ʌt 284; -ʌb 299; -aɪ 251; -isụ 251; -i̱ 67, 251, 327; -iɪ 251; -ĩɪ 139, 329; -en 251; -ex 67
laɪɟ 52, 109, 116
laɪʈhix 52, 141
laɪdi̱ 94
laɪjʌk 139
laɪʈ 78
laɪl 139, 315, 319; -ʌi 319; -ʌu 315
laɪlaɪ 113; lʌlaɪin 114; lʌlaɪini̱ 113
lãɪb 141
lãɪʈ 78
likh-, -aɪ 221; -i̱ 299
lifi- 251; -ini̱ 329; -isi 96; -isi̱ 94; -eũ 54, 59; -en 205; -esi̱ 127; lixn 252; lixnfi 252
luʈaɪubụ 284
luɪʈʌb 49
lefiẽgaɪ 30
leɪ 214, 251-2, 285, 287, 303; -ix 94, 139, 311, 328; -u 126, 322, 329; -ũ 299; lewaɪl 285; -ti̱ 288; -tix 288; -b 299, 324; ljaɪb 327; ljaɪfiʌu 310
leɪkin 311
loiaɪ 84
loʈijaɪ 29, 330
lofiaɪr 56
loɪg 115, 119-20, 154; -ʌn 115
loɪʈaɪ 140
loɪn 43, 293; -ụ 99; lonaɪb 232, 293
loɪfi 73
lõɪdaɪ 49

w

wʌi 178-9, 251; -j 250-1; wʌn 179 *cf.* ui *and* un
wʌis 209; -i̱ 210; -ix 304; -en 307; -ex 306
wʌkixl 115
wʌntis *see* onʌtxis
wʌs 209, 306
wʌfi 178-9, 315, 320; -ʌi 320, 330; -ʌu 315; -i 178, 224; -ix 320; -u 48, 50, 178, 315; -ex 320;

waɪ 132, 178-9, 248-50, 254, 308, 315, 320, 323, 329-30; woɬi 214, woɬi 178; woɪ 178-9
wʌɬʌtɪeɪ 229-30
waɪɪ 48, 304-5, 328
waɪɬ 324
wotʌraɪ 210; -eɪ 210

s

sʌi 131, 135, 151
sʌigʌr 144, 307; -i̯ 140
sʌin 43
sʌĩti 96
sʌĩtis 148
sʌu 131, 151
sʌũpʌb 69
sʌk-, -ʌti̯, -ʌtiũ 274, 308; -ʌb 299; -iti̯ 274
sʌgaɪiɪ 92
sʌŋkʌr 44
sʌŋkh 44-5
sʌŋgɬ 33, 87, 229; -ʌtiɪ 44
sʌɲʃɬaɪ (-ʌ) 44, 99
sʌɲʃɬil 154, 156
sʌtəɬʌtɪʌr 150
sʌtɪʌr 149; -i̯ 50, 149
sʌtɪʌraɪ 50, 147; sʌtʌraɪ 147; sʌtɪrʌɬ 147
sʌtaɪ-, -wʌi 79; -wʌb 64
sʌteɪ 154
sʌtɪaɪiɪs 147, 150
sʌtɪaɪnbeɪ 151; sʌtɪaɪnveɪ 151; sʌntaɪnbeɪ 151
sʌtɪaɪwʌn 149
sʌtɪaɪsiɪ 150; sʌtaɪsiɪ 150
sʌtɪimiɪ 154
sʌthʌtɪʌri̯ 150
sʌneɪs 79
sʌntiɪ 229-30
sʌnduɪkh 31, 91
sʌponeɪ 132
sʌpeɪt 139
sʌphaɪ 30, 41
sʌb 96, 99, 129, 144-5, 154, 162, 170, 179, 205-6, 214, 217, 281, 302; -ʌi 205-6, 280; -ʌn 145; kuchʌu 207; keuɪ 162; koɪiɪ 206; -ɪʌi 205; -ɪʌj 205
sʌbeɪɪeɪ 99
sʌmʌi 140; -u 302; -j 302
sʌmʌrʌth 51
sʌmʌɬeɪ 46, 132, 230-1
sʌmbaɪɪ 48
sʌrʌɲʃaɪmu̯ 132
sʌrəɬʌʃʌi 139
sʌrmaɪ- 251; -tu̯ 296; -n 251; -naɪ 251; -nu̯ 251; -neũ 295; -wʌtu̯ 296; -waɪ 287
sʌrsʌʈh 149; -i̯ 149
sʌwʌijaɪ 155
sʌwʌtu̯ 48, 50, 55
sʌwaɪu 155
sʌwaɪɪiɪ 113
sʌsur 55
sʌɬʌn 56
sʌɬʌr 286, 308

sʌfionaɪiɪ 68
sÃkiaɪ 111
sÃɟfiilʌkiɪ 154
sÃdeɪs 79 *cf.* sʌneɪs
saɪitḭ 301-2, 308-9 ; -i 302
saɪiɪ 78
saɪĩɪ 55 ; sãɪiɪ 78
saɪkh 109
saɪgn̤ 94
saɪɟfiaɪ 91
saɪʈh 149 ; -ḭ 149, 315, 319; -iu 315 ; -ik 315, 318 ; -in 319
saɪt 28, 38, 94-5, 146; -ʌu 328 ; sʌtʌwãɪ 154 ; sʌtʌĩɪ 154
saɪth 30, 96, 229 ; -n̤ 64 ; -eɪ 220, 229
saɪthiɪ 39
saɪdfiuɪ 91, 113 ; -in 311 ; -inḭ 113
saɪn -, -inḭ 94 ; -iɪ 140
saɪb 206
saɪmaɪn 194
saɪr 55, 97, 110
saɪʈfieɪ 52
saɪwʌn 55
saɪfi 54
saɪfieb 154
sãɪk 111
sãɪcn̤ 35, 97
sãɪɟfi 32, 36, 109 ; -ḭ 76
sãɪp 40, 80, 96, 110, 113, 129-30, 132-3, 250 ; -ʌn 130 ; -n̤ 69, 76, 129, 132-3
sãɪʈ 109 ; -n̤ 76
sãɪwaɪ 55
sãɪs 55, 110
sijaɪr 64
siɪʌfiʌneɪ 92
sifiaɪb 56
sĩʌb 66
sixth 38, 68
siɪʈfiiɪ 49
sizl 68
sĩɪg 55, 109, 130 ; -ʌn 130
sĩɪc-, -ʌb 62 ; sĩcibaɪ 33, 62
suʌɪ 69, 114, 119 ; -iɪ 114
suaɪ 69, 111, 113, 118 ; -ʌnaɪ 111
sukhʌjeũ 61
sukhdeɪu 111 ; -eunaɪ 111
sun- 311 ; -ʌi 69, 284 ; -ʌu 103 ; -ʌb 45 ; -aɪb 293 ; -i 45, 171, 182, 201, 207, 243, 263, 296-7, 326 ; -ti 45
supeɪd 40
sur 55, 69
suɪiɪ 70
suɪkh 34, 141 ; -iɪ 141 ; -eɪ 141
suɪɟfiʌb 32
sũɪgfiẽu 31
sũɪʈḭ 55
se 59, 194, 198, 205, 312 ; -i 320 ; -u 316 ; -n̤ 126-8, 210, 214, 258, 260, 273, 284, 289, 299, 308, 316, 320, 327, 330-1, 333 ; sei 96, 144, 198, 204-5, 273, 295, 308, 316, 320, 330

setuaɪ 55
serʌuɪ 111-2; -waɪ 111-2
seraɪ- 71; -b 68
sewaɪdn̥ 294
sewaɪɪ 71
seɦɵlaɪ- 71
seɪɟ 71, 109
seɪʈhi̥ 67, 109, 112, 115, 315, 319; -iu 315; -in 319
seɪmiɪ 43, 79; sɵ̃ɪbiɪ 79
sɵ̃ɪkʌi 99
sɵ̃ɪti̥ 54
sɵ̃ɪdɦ 72; -i̥ 30
sonaɪɪ 114; -ini̥ 114
soɪɵɦĩɪ 60
soɦaɪg 72
soɦaɪb 56
soɦraɪwʌb 72
soɪ 179-80, 189-90, 328
soɪ-, -i 311, 323; -i saɪi 323; -wʌu 258; -wʌti̥ 287; -waɪ 48, 287; -woɪ 258; soutiɪ 287; sowaɪisi̥ 92
soɪɟɦ 274
soɪt 55
soɪn 73, 109; -n̥ 69
soɪrʌɦ 54; -aɪ 55, 147; -s 155; soɪlʌɦ 147; swaɪraɪ 147
soɪriɪ 73, 114, 119
sõɪcʌti̥ 62; sõcibaɪ 62
sõɪʈhi̥ 78
sõɪdɦ 73
sɵ̃taɪliɪs 148
sɵ̃tiɪs 148
sɔ 151
swɑ̃ɪʈaɪ 140

h

hʌ-, -i 6, 56, 95, 97-8, 115, 126-8, 140-1, 144-5, 152, 154, 194, 204, 226, 232, 234, 247-51, 274, 278-9, 281, 284, 293, 295, 308, 310, 322, 328-30; -ĩ 98, 101, 113, 126, 128, 131, 140-1, 144, 154, 184, 204, 210, 220, 234, 247, 249, 274, 299, 300, 308, 311, 333; -u 98, 234, 247-8, 254, 274, 278, 293, 320, 327; -ũ 234, 248-9, 257, 274, 278, 299, 320; -tʌi 3; -taɪ 3, 235; -tiu 254; -tiɪ 3, 235; -tĩɪ 254; -ten 254; -teɪ 235; -tjoɪ 254; -n 234, 247-8, 274, 278; -wʌi 234; -wʌĩ 234; -wʌo 234; -s 234; -si̥ 234; hʌ̃ĩ 115; -hʌ̃w 234
hʌgʌb 324
hʌɟaɪɪ 151; hʌzaɪɪ 151
hʌɟuɪɪ 36
hʌnaɪ- 57
hʌnɪaɪ 112-3; -iɪ 112
hʌm 54, 56, 97, 100, 115, 120, 126-7, 131-2, 140, 154, 162-3, 185, 198,

Readers may kindly make the following corrections :

Page	*For*	*Read*
6	jaɪtaɪ	ɟaɪtaɪ
	jaɪtu	ɟaɪtu
12 (7th line)	Awadhī	Awadhī
19 (4th line from bottom)	here all specimens	here are all specimens
32	Jßʌləraɪ	ɟßʌləraɪ
35	nãɪghʌi	nãɪgßʌi
	gß˜ʈuaɪ	gßə̃ʈuaɪ
	aṅcala	*añcala*
42	chʌbbis	chʌbɪis
	gaɪbhiṇ̣	gaɪbßiṇ̣
	bßʌbbßʌr	bßʌbɪßʌr
43	seɪmi	seɪmiɪ
46	sʌmʌheɪ	sʌmʌßeɪ
49	ʌrrßiɪ	ʌrɪßiɪ
51	dhʌrʌm	dßʌrʌm
	rh	rß
52	bhʌlaɪ	bßʌlaɪ
53	pʌlhaɪwʌi	pʌlßaɪwʌi
55	*srāvaṇa*	*śrāvaṇa*
56	lohaɪr	loßaɪr
	muh	muß
	mʌhuaɪ	mʌßuaɪ
	nihaɪrʌi	nißaɪrʌi
57	-ai	-ʌi
60	soɾəhĩɪ	soɾəßĩɪ
64	ʌhisaɪnṳ	ʌßisaɪnṳ
66	ghiu	gßiu
	āhhīra	*ābhīra*
67	uddim	udɪim

Page	*For*	*Read*
68	bfiaujuɪiɪ	bfiʌujaɪiɪ
69	*sɣn̥oti*	*śɣn̥oti*
	mafiuaɪ	mʌfiuaɪ
	tãɪu	taɪu
76	ɟãɪtį̣	ɟaɪtį̣
78	ĩɪŋgur	ĩɪŋgur
79	pʌseriɪ	pʌsɛɪriɪ
85	bʌr/chi	bʌr/chiɪ
90	bfiinʌfiɔɪ	bfiinʌfiɛɪ
98	bʌbbuɪ	bʌbɪuɪ
	kʌlluɪ	kʌlɪuɪ
	dʌdduɪ	dʌdɪuɪ
	kʌkkuɪ	kʌkɪuɪ
	bʌppaɪ	bʌpɪaɪ
	kʌkkaɪ	kʌkɪaɪ
99	dulfiin	duləfiin
109	ghui	gfiui
113	bfiaɪgɪe	bfiaɪgɪɛɪ
119	laɽfiijaɪ	lʌɽfiijaɪ
126	ɖaɪɪau	ɖaɪɪʌu
127	məfiʌruaɪ	mefiʌruaɪ
	larikaɪ	lʌrikaɪ
130	nãɪun	naɪun
	kʌfiarəwʌi	kʌfiʌrəwʌi
	məfiərʌruʌi	mefiərʌruʌi
131	baiɽh	bʌiɽh
132	sʌrʌnjaɪmų̣	sʌrʌɲjaɪmų̣
135	*namani*	*nāmāni*
139	risʌfii	risʌfiiɪ
140	kʌljugəfiiɪ	kʌljugʌfiiɪ
141	suɪkhe	suɪkhɛɪ
146	yaɪk	jaɪk
148	ontʌɪlis	ontaɪlis
	uncaɪs, oncaɪs	uɲcaɪs,oɲcaɪs

Page	*For*	*Read*
150	sʌtaɪsi	sʌtaɪsiɪ
151	ekkʌnɪʌjeɪ	ekɪʌnɪʌjeɪ
152	paɪɲtʰʌur	paɪɳtʰʌur
154	satʌĩɪ	sʌtʌĩɪ
155	guncaɪlɪs	guɲcaɪlɪs
159	*dṛiṣṭi*	*driṣṭi*
163	§ 237	§ 236
184	yaɪ, yʌfi	jaɪ, jʌfi
	janfi	jʌnfi
185	larikʌn	lʌrikʌn
	yʌi	jʌi
191	*jen*	*jena*
210	lʌũɽija	lʌũɽijaɪ
222	*satasaũcaṛhai*	*satasaũcaṛhai*
237	tvʌĩ	twʌĩ
250	kaiseɪ	kʌiseɪ
	dhʌriɪ	dfiʌriɪ
260	deɪkheh	deɪkhẹfi
	deɪkhih	deɪkhifi
	deɪkheh	deɪkhefi
262	*paricārika* .	*paricārikā*
273	pʌfiuñɟaɪtiũ	pʌfiuɲɟaɪtiũ
276	dekhətḭɪhoifiʌu	dekhətiɪhoi-fiʌu
277	dekhətiɪhoɪtĩ	dekhətiɪhoɪtĩɪ
280	deɪkheɪ hoten	deɪkheɪhoɪten
	deɪkheɪhotiu	deɪkheɪhoɪtiu
281	nihaɪrkʌi	nifiaɪrkʌi
287	sowʌtḭ	soɪwʌtḭ
293	buɟhaɪb	buɟfiaɪb
299	atɪemə	etɪemə
304	keɪkʌitĩɪ	keɪkʌ̃itĩɪ
305	nʌjik	nʌɟik
	saũha	*saũha*

Page	*For*	*Read*
308	kʌfiʌkɔ	kʌfiɑ̃kɔ
315	karijʌu	kʌrijʌu
316	dekhʌb	dɛrkhʌb
	dekhiu	dɛrkhiu
	uɾdekhibʌu kariɾ	uɾdekhibʌu kʌriɾ
320	tuhiɾ	tufliɾ
	dekhei	dɛrkhei
331	bhitʌr	bfiitʌr

204-5, 210, 224, 247-51, 265, 273-4, 279, 284, 299, 310, 311, 315, 321, 327-9, 331; -ʌi 162-3, -ʌrix 162; -ʌrex 6, 134, 162, 210, 230, 247, 329; -ʌfiix 320; -ʌfiux 315; -ʌfien 321; -ʌfiex 320-1; -orix 229; orex 131-2, 229, 299; -axr 6, 134, 140, 162-3, 215, 250, 299, 330; -axrį̊ 162, 210; -axrex 6; sʌb 206; -fi 162; -fiaxr 162; -xʌi 162
hʌr 85
hʌrax 293
hʌri 331
hʌriʌr 322
hʌriaxb 294
hʌrdix 39, 56
hʌlxax 328
hãs 281; -ʌb 289; -ʌb hũsʌb 323; -ʌwaxwʌb 289; -į̊ 281; -eu 97
haxthix 313; -iu 313; -in 313; hʌthinix 113; hãxthix 113, 324
haxthų 76; hãxth 56, 109, 118
haxr 110, 328
haxrix 127
haxru 118
haxlʌtį̊ 287; haxlti 287
haxlix 307
hãx 102, 279, 308
hãxkix 194
hãxphʌb 41
hãxɽ 49, 109
hãxɽix 56
hiãx 97, 201, 221, 273-4, 299, 304, 327; hĩjãx 224
hijax 66
hisaxb 97
hĩxg 78; -o 78
huãx (-ʌ) 54, 194, 204, 260, 299, 304, 310, 322; hũax (-ʌ) 273, 327-9
hũ 324
hũxɽhax 37
hexrʌb, huxrʌb 323
hore 116
hox- 60, 236, 251; -i 56, 83, 139, 207, 235-6, 240, 284, 286, 328; -it 237; -itį̊ 236, 277; -ib 235; -is 236; -ĩ 311; -ix 234, 276; -u 83, 236; -ũ 250; -eu 236, 270; -eũ 236; -ex 236; -t 111, 237; -tiu 236-7, 251, 277, 280; -tiũ 277, 280; -tis 237; -tį̊ 128, 236, 277, 280; -tix 288; -tĩx 236-7, 277, 280; -tux 237; -teu 237, 250-1; -teũ 236-7; -ten 236, 277, 280; -tex 236-7; -tẽx 237; -tjax 237; -b 235; -bʌi 235-6; -bų 232, 283; -box 236; -bjax

236; -jaɪ 236; -waɪ 236; ho-, -ibʌi 235; -ibaɪ 235, 276, 279; -iflʌi 235; -iflʌĩ 141, 235, 276; -iflʌu 235, 276; -iflʌũ 235, 265, 276; -ifles 236; hõiflʌĩ 236; hwaɪu 236; hwaɪs 236; hõɪʧh 109